

GOVERNMENT OF INDIA  
ARCHAEOLOGICAL SURVEY OF INDIA

CENTRAL  
ARCHAEOLOGICAL  
LIBRARY

ACCESSION NO 23677

CALL No. Sa. 2V6/Kei

D.G.A. 79

Vol a

~~D2808~~

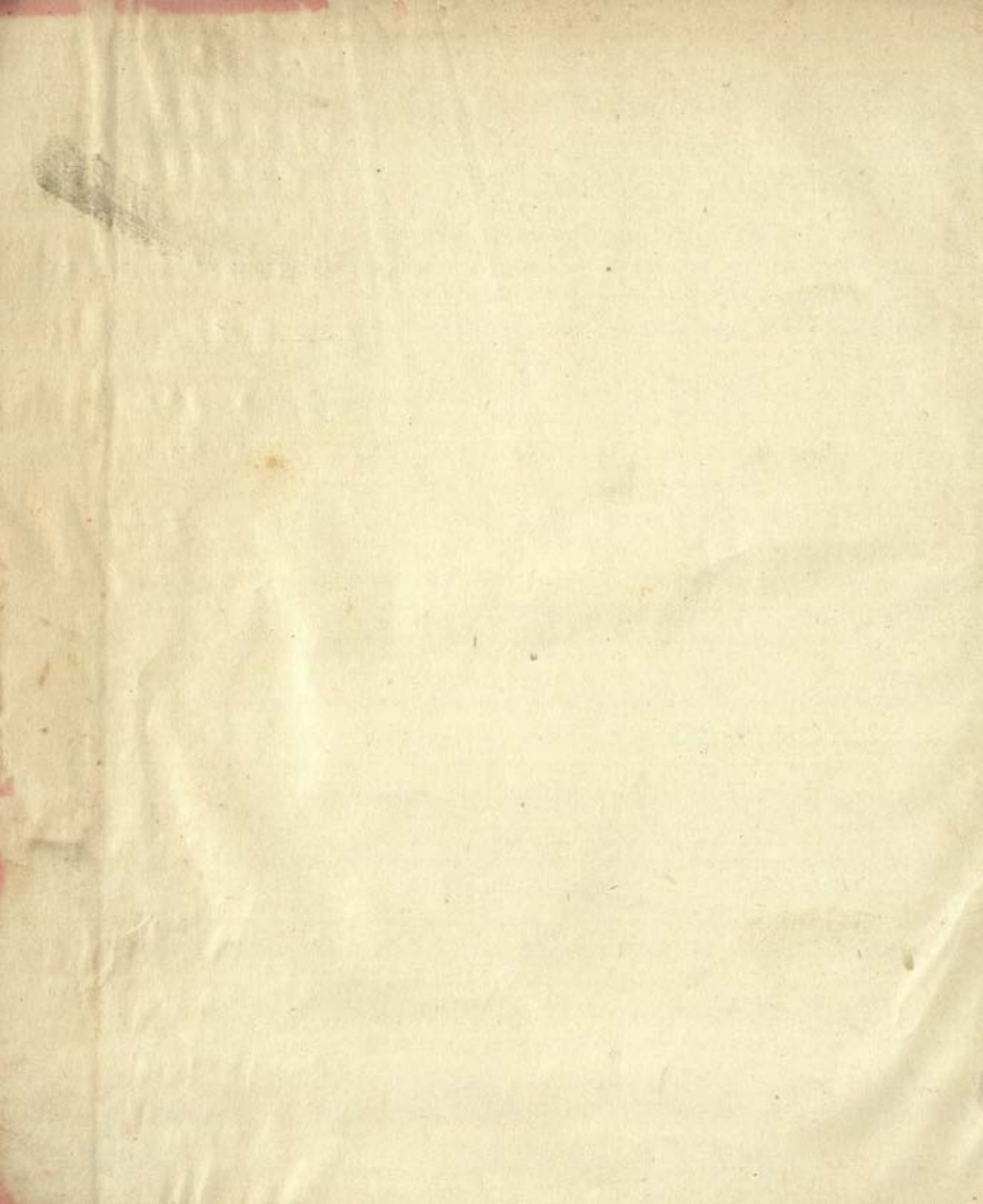
vr



[illegible]



Handwritten text in Devanagari script, appearing to be a manuscript page. The text is arranged in approximately 20 horizontal lines. The script is somewhat faded and the paper shows signs of age and wear, including a large tear at the top left and a smaller tear at the bottom left. The text is written in a cursive style typical of older Indian manuscripts.





A.N.  
3997  
D2208  
40  
Aneecdota Oxoniensia  
THE  
AITAREYA ĀRANYAKA ✓

EDITED FROM THE MANUSCRIPTS  
IN THE INDIA OFFICE AND THE LIBRARY OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY  
WITH INTRODUCTION, TRANSLATION, NOTES, INDEXES  
AND AN APPENDIX CONTAINING THE PORTION HITHERTO UNPUBLISHED  
OF THE ŚĀNKHĀYANA ĀRANYAKA

BY  
ARTHUR BERRIEDALE KEITH  
OF THE COLONIAL OFFICE



23677

Oxford

AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

1909



Sa2V6

Kei

HENRY FROWDE, M.A.  
PUBLISHER TO THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD  
LONDON, EDINBURGH, NEW YORK  
TORONTO AND MELBOURNE

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL  
LIBRARY, NEW YORK.

Acc. No. 23677 .  
Date. 26 . 4 . 56 .  
Call No. 5a2v6 / ki

## PREFACE

THIS book owes its existence to the Boden Professor of Sanskrit, Dr. A. A. Macdonell, who suggested to me the writing of it, and who secured its acceptance for publication by the Delegates of the Clarendon Press. Professor Macdonell was also so good as to read the proofs of the first three sheets before he left England in 1907 for his tour in India, and for this and all the other help he has given me in the course of my Sanskrit studies I desire to express my most sincere thanks.

The editing of the text has been rendered possible for me by the liberality of the India Office and of the Royal Asiatic Society, which lent to me the manuscripts on which the text is based. To the Secretary of the Society, Miss Hughes, and to the Librarian of the India Office, Mr. F. W. Thomas, I owe grateful acknowledgements of the assistance afforded me in this and other ways.

I have tried by the translation and commentary to extract as much as possible from the Aitareya Āraṇyaka, as I recognize that a text of this class should as far as practicable be made by its editor to yield all that can be derived from it for the knowledge of the period when it was produced. With this end in view I have added a series of Indexes which contain in great fullness the lexical material of the work, while the material will also serve for grammatical purposes, as in each case the precise form which occurs is specified. I need make no apology for the distinction made between the Mantra, the Āraṇyaka, and Sūtra forms; not to distinguish the different strata of the text would be merely misleading.

In the commentary I have tried to avoid repeating what can easily be found in such standard works as the *St. Petersburg Dictionaries*, Colonel Jacob's *Concordance* to the Upaniṣads, and Deussen's treatise on the *Philosophy of the Upanishads*. Nor have I thought it worth while to note in detail the verbal coincidences between the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa and the Āraṇyaka. As might be expected they are constant and show unmistakeably the connexion of the two works. Some other points arising out of the book I hope to deal with elsewhere.



I had not originally any intention of including in the book the text of a portion of the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka which now forms the appendix. I hoped that Dr. Friedländer would complete his projected edition of that text, and it was only after a considerable portion of the book was in type that I learned that there was little or no prospect of the appearance of an edition at any early date. I then obtained the permission of the Delegates to print so much of the text of the Śāṅkhāyana as was unpublished, and the Royal Asiatic Society were so good as to include a translation of the whole Āraṇyaka in their series of Oriental Translations, and to publish an article of mine on the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka in the Journal of the Society for 1908. The translation and the article will be found to supplement in some important points the information as to the Śāṅkhāyana contained in this book.

The printing of the work has occupied over two years, and has entailed a good deal of trouble on all those concerned with it. I desire to express my thanks to Mr. R. W. Chapman, of the Clarendon Press, for the interest which he has taken in it and for valuable suggestions which he has made from time to time on points of form. It gives me also much pleasure to acknowledge the great pains taken by the Oriental Reader of the Clarendon Press, Mr. J. C. Pembrey, Hon. M.A. of Oxford, in dealing with the proofs. For such errors as remain I must accept responsibility. This is the fourth book of mine which has had the advantage of Mr. Pembrey's care and skill, and I feel that it would be difficult to exaggerate the value of his assistance.

A. BERRIEDALE KEITH.

LONDON,  
*June 11, 1909.*

## CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	I
I. The Text . . . . .	I
II. The Commentaries . . . . .	11
III. Divisions of the Āraṇyaka and their date . . . . .	15
IV. The Mahāvratā ceremony, and the relation of Aitareya Āraṇyaka I and V to the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka . . . . .	26
V. The Upaniṣads of the Aitareya Āraṇyaka . . . . .	39
VI. Style and Grammar . . . . .	52
TEXT AND CRITICAL NOTES . . . . .	75
TRANSLATION AND NOTES . . . . .	161
APPENDIX : ŚĀṆKHĀYANA ĀRAṆYAKA VII-XV . . . . .	305
INDEXES . . . . .	329
I. Quotations from Ṛgveda . . . . .	329
II. Quotations from other sources, &c. . . . .	334
III. Proper Names, excluding those of Deities . . . . .	342
IV. Words in Verses other than Ṛgvedic, &c. . . . .	344
V. Words in Āraṇyakas I-III, other than words in quotations . . . . .	354
VI. Words in Āraṇyaka V, and in the parallel passages of Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka I and II, other than words in quotations . . . . .	378
VII. Beginnings of Khaṇḍas of Āraṇyakas . . . . .	385
VIII. Introduction and Notes . . . . .	388





# THE AITAREYA ĀRANYAKA

## INTRODUCTION

### I. The Text.

WHEN, in June, 1905, I commenced preparations for the production of an edition of the Aitareya Āraṇyaka, I was mainly influenced by the expectation, raised in part by the reference in Prof. Bühler's Report<sup>1</sup> on his Kashmir journey to differences in the text in a birch-bark MS., that it might be possible to amend considerably the text of Rājendralāla Mitra's edition. Rājendralāla used only two complete MSS. of the text, and three of Sāyaṇa's commentary, besides three other MSS. of parts of the text or commentary, and it seemed reasonable to suppose that the employment of additional MS. material would add to the correctness of the text. This expectation has not been justified. The use of additional MSS. enables me to correct a good many slips and one or two serious omissions in Rājendralāla's text, but it establishes the fact that the tradition as to the text seems unbroken. Variant readings occur here and there, but none of sufficient importance to justify the idea that any different recensions of the text ever existed, and it is hardly ever possible to feel serious doubt as to the correct reading. What is especially important is that MSS. from both the extreme north—as Bühler's MS. from Kashmir—and the south agree in presenting the same text. Further, the commentary of Sāyaṇa presents the same text as the commentaries of Śaṅkara on Books II and III, and of Ānanda-tīrtha and Viśveśvara on the same books.

### The MS. Material.

The MSS. which directly or indirectly have been used for this edition are as follows:—

1. **A.** This MS. is dated *saṃvat* 1854 (= A. D. 1797), and contains the text of the Āraṇyaka complete. It belonged to Colebrooke, who

<sup>1</sup> *Journal Bombay Branch Royal Asiatic Society*, 1877, Extra No., p. 34.

annotated it, and used it when writing his *Essays*. The substance of his note on the authorship, *Essays*, I, 46, occurs on fol. 60<sup>v</sup> of the MS. The MS. is No. 78 in Eggeling's *Catalogue of the Sanskrit MSS. in the Library of the India Office*, Part I. Written on paper in Devanāgarī.

**2. B.** This MS. is on birch-bark and in Śāradā characters. It contains the R̥gveda Samhitā, the Khilakāṇḍa, and on ff. 188<sup>v</sup>–191, the Aitareya Āraṇyaka, Book III, only. It was discovered by Prof. Bühler, and the information it offers regarding the Khilas is discussed by Prof. Macdonell, *Bṛhaddevalā*, I, xxxi. See also Max Müller, *S.B.E.*, I, lxxviii, lxxix, who used it in preparing his translation of the Upaniṣad, and Dr. Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des R̥gveda*, pp. 32 sq., 167, 168. It probably dates about A. D. 1575.<sup>1</sup>

The variants of this MS. have been referred to as important, both by Bühler and Dr. Scheftelowitz. This view appears to me erroneous. Whatever may be the value of the MS. for the criticism of the text of the R̥gveda,<sup>2</sup> it contributes, in my opinion, not a single correction to the text of Āraṇyaka III. It contains many errors, e.g. *prajaya*, *prajayaḥ* for *prajayā*; *saṃhitāya* for *saṃhitāyā*; *sandhīny* for *sandhīn*; *ābhyāsam* for *abhyāsam*, &c. Most of its variants can be proved incorrect from the context. In III, 1, 4, *cen* is omitted in the first clause, but in the second *cen* occurs and it is most improbable that the word should be omitted in the first of two precisely parallel clauses. Then also *chaknuvantam* is read without the negative, which reduces the passage to nonsense. In III, 1, 5, *pūrva* is omitted before *rūpam*, but the context urgently requires its presence; the words *putra āha* are also omitted, but leave *madhyamaḥ* unintelligible, and *ekikurvan* for *anekikurvan* is contradicted by the next clause. In III, 1, 6, a whole clause is omitted because it begins and ends with the same words as the preceding clause; *taṃ* is omitted in a R̥gvedic quotation, while by diplography *sa saīṣāditiḥ* stands for *saiṣāditiḥ*. In III, 2, 1, an unnecessary *iti* is inserted before *etat proktam*, presumably because an *iti* is expected with the form *proktam*, and the whole phrase *trayaṃ tv eva na ity etat proktam* is repeated in III, 2, 2, where it is not in place. In III, 2, 1, it is required because it contradicts a view of Hrasva Māṇḍūkeya that there was a fourth class. In III, 2, 2, the threefold division is accepted. The same tendency to

<sup>1</sup> See my note, *J.R.A.S.*, 1907, p. 225.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Oldenberg, *Gött. gel. Anz.*, 1907, pp. 235 sq.



diplography is seen in the double *ahar* in the same section. In III, 2, 3, the obvious *brāhmaṇam* appears for *brahmāṇam*, but just before we have *brahmā rasah*. In the list in III, 2, 2, *manomayah* is wanting, but it appears in the precisely similar list in III, 2, 3. Another omission is seen in *nasyānūkte*, III, 2, 4, for *na tasyānūkte*, and 'mato has fallen out between 'gato and 'nato. The defective *āskandati* is balanced by *jīvaviṣyati*.

Other alterations are inferior in sense. In III, 2, 4, *vāśarīram* for *vāśirasam* after *jihmaśirasam* postulates the possibility of perceiving a disembodied spirit, which is difficult; *candramā evādityo*, *ibid.*, is inferior to *ivādityo*; *apagirati* is required rather than *avagirati*, &c.

The only passage in which B offers at first sight a better text is III, 2, 6: *Prajāpatiḥ prajāḥ sṛṣṭvā vyaśraṃsad ā saṃvatsaram*, where it may be suggested to take *ā saṃvatsaram* as = over a year. This is not quite impossible, but it is not likely, and then the proper form is undoubtedly the middle, cf. *visraṃsata*, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 27, &c. Further, it is very difficult to see how the standard text could ever have been altered from this reading. But palaeographically the corruption found here is quite easy. *d* and *t* are not very different in Śāradā MSS., and *t* actually appears for *dh* in III, 2, 3, *anuvitān* for *anuvīdham*, a much less easy mistake. Then *a* and *ā* are often interchanged, as in *anuvitān* just cited, and in *ānyāni*, III, 2, 3, for *anyāni*; *anusamhitām*, III, 2, 6, for *anusamhitam*. *saṃvatsaram* may have followed when *a* became *ā*, or have been an independent attempt at an easier reading.

Other errors are the interchange of *a* and *i*, °*saṃhitaḥ*, III, 1, 1, for °*saṃhataḥ*; *baṭirakāṇi*, III, 2, 4, for *baṭarakāṇi*; of *a* and *e*, the characteristic stroke for the latter being omitted, *agnar* and *rātrisūktana*, III, 2, 4. *r* is treated like *ri* and so written in *rite*, III, 2, 2; so in the Khilas, V, 3, *vajrin ṛṇjase* is written for *vajrinn*; cf. Scheftelowitz, p. 175. *i* and *ī* are also confused.

In some points the MS. is accurate. Before gutturals and labials the appropriate sign for *h* is used. For *h ś* or *h s*, *śś* or *ss* always occur, and anusvāra is practically never misused. After *r* and *m* duplication of consonants is regular, and for *d ha* is always written *d dha*.

But on the whole, I consider the MS., though in many ways valuable, yet to contain many corruptions due in part to the errors inevitable in transcription and copying of Śāradā MSS. and in part to attempted correction of the text. The result of the comparison with the text of the

Āraṇyaka and with the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka leads me to look with doubt on the readings of the MS. where they differ from other sources.

**3. C.** This MS. was written in *śake* 1585 (= A. D. 1663), *śobha āṣāḍhavadi* 7 *bhṛgau* by Śāradānandavaṃśodbhava Mahādeva. The first sixteen leaves, however, are in a different hand and originally formed part of another MS. They contain part of Book II, while the rest of the MS. contains part of Book III (ff. 17-103) and the last Khaṇḍa of the third Adhyāya of Book V, in each case with Sāyaṇa's commentary. See Eggeling, No. 83. Written on paper in Devanāgarī.

**4. D.** This MS. is one of the Whish collection in the Library of the Royal Asiatic Society. It is on palm-leaves and in Grantha characters, legible and not very incorrect. See Thomas in Winternitz, *Catalogue of South Indian Sanskrit Manuscripts*, No. 191. It contains the Āraṇyaka complete. Its probable date is A. D. 1700.

**5. E.** This MS. was presented by Dr. Burnell to the India Office. It is fairly well written in Grantha characters on palm-leaves. It is No. 84 of Dr. Burnell's collection, see *Catalogue of a Collection of Sanskrit Manuscripts*, Part I, *Vedic Manuscripts*. It contains the Āraṇyaka complete. It probably dates from the eighteenth century.

**6. F.** This MS. belonged to Colonel Claud Martin, and like G appears to have been presented to the India Office by Colebrooke. It forms part of a corpus, consisting of the Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, Pūrvaṣaṭka (ff. 1-20), Uttaraṣaṭka (ff. 1-11), Gṛhya Sūtra (ff. 1-17), Sarvānukramaṇī (ff. 17-24), and Āraṇyaka (ff. 25-35). It contains the Āraṇyaka complete. See Eggeling, No. 80. Written on paper in Devanāgarī about the end of the eighteenth century.

**7. G.** Like F this MS. belonged to Col. Claud Martin, and was presented to the India Office by Colebrooke. It also contains a corpus, consisting of Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, Pūrvaṣaṭka (ff. 1-64), Uttaraṣaṭka (ff. 1-40), Gṛhya Sūtra (ff. 1-26), Sarvānukramaṇī (ff. 1-28), and Āraṇyaka (ff. 1-45), complete. See Eggeling, No. 79. Written on paper in Devanāgarī about the end of the eighteenth century. This MS. is closely connected with F.

**8. H.** This MS. contains the commentary of Viśveśvaratīrtha on a commentary by Ānandatīrtha on Books II and III of the Āraṇyaka. The text is not cited in full, but the commentary shows that it was identical with the text of Sāyaṇa. See Eggeling, No. 84. Written on paper in Devanāgarī in the seventeenth century.



**9. I.** This MS. contains Sāyaṇa's commentary on Book II, 4-7. It is dated *śake* 1685 (= A. D. 1763). See Eggeling, No. 88. Written on paper in Devanāgarī. It formerly belonged to Colebrooke. Very inaccurate.

**10. J.** This symbol denotes two copies of Śaṅkara's commentary on Book II, 4-6, dated *śake* 1665 (= A. D. 1743) and *saṃvat* 1848 (= A. D. 1791). See Eggeling, Nos. 85 and 86. Written on paper in Devanāgarī. Only pratikas are cited, but the commentary shows the usual text. They formerly belonged to Colebrooke.

**11. K.** This MS. contains the Āraṇyaka complete. It was written by Devagovinda Rāya at Benares in *saṃ* 1827, *śake* 1692 (= A. D. 1770), and was presented by Colebrooke to the India Office. See Eggeling, No. 81. Written on paper in Devanāgarī.

**12. L.** This MS. contains the Āraṇyaka complete. It was written in *śake* 1684, *saṃvat* 1819 (= A. D. 1762). See Eggeling, No. 82. Written on paper in Devanāgarī. This MS. is closely connected with K.

**13. M.** This MS. contains the text of the Upaniṣad together with Śaṅkara's commentary and Ānandatīrtha's super-commentary. Ānandatīrtha here is styled Abhinavanārāyaṇendra as in several other MSS. This is one of the MSS. in the Bodleian, and is described in Winternitz and Keith's *Catalogue of the Sanskrit Manuscripts in the Bodleian Library*, No. 977. Written on paper in Devanāgarī in A. D. 1819.

**14. N.** This MS. has the same contents as M, and Ānandatīrtha is here also styled Abhinavanārāyaṇendra. It is one of the Wilson collection in the Bodleian; see the *Catalogue*, No. 1010 (5). Written on paper in Devanāgarī about A. D. 1801.

**15. O.** This MS. contains, like H, Viśveśvaratīrtha's commentary on Ānandatīrtha's commentary on Books II and III of the Āraṇyaka. It is one of the Wilson MSS. in the Bodleian, see the *Catalogue*, No. 1011 (3). Written on paper in Devanāgarī about the end of the sixteenth century.

**16. P.** This MS. contains Śaṅkara's commentary on Book II of the Āraṇyaka, but is imperfect, extending only to Adhyāyas 1-3 and a small part of 4. It is one of the Mill collection in the Bodleian and is described in the *Catalogue*, No. 1014 (1). Written on paper in Devanāgarī in the eighteenth century.

**17. Q.** This MS. contains the Upaniṣad with Śaṅkara's commentary and Ānandatīrtha's (called Abhinavanārāyaṇendra) super-commentary.

See Eggeling, No. 87. Written on paper in Devanāgarī in *saṃvat* 1853 (= A. D. 1796).

**18-25. R<sup>1-8</sup>** are the MSS. used by Rājendralāla Mitra for his edition, *Aitareya Āraṇyaka with the Commentary of Sāyaṇa Ācārya*, *Bibl. Ind.*, Nos. 325, 329, 335, 337, and 345, Calcutta, 1875-1876. Their description is (Intro., pp. 20, 21) as follows:—

*Ka* (= **R<sup>1</sup>**), lent by Paṇḍit Vāmana, of the Benares Sanskrit College, dated *saṃvat* 1816 (= A. D. 1759), *virodhisamvatsare kārttikaśukla-saptamyām Viśveśvararājadhānyām*. It contained the commentary of Sāyaṇa on the whole Āraṇyaka.

*Kha* (= **R<sup>2</sup>**), from the Sanskrit College at Calcutta, containing Sāyaṇa's commentary on Books I and II. Apparently old.

*Ga* (= **R<sup>3</sup>**), from Dr. G. Bühler, of Bombay, dated *śrāvaṇavadi* 30 *śanivāre śāke* 1788 (= A. D. 1866) *kṣayanāmasamvatsare*, containing the commentary complete.

*Gha* (= **R<sup>4</sup>**), copied for Rājendralāla under the superintendence of Bābu Amṛtalāla of Benares and collated with two different codices, the codex copied being dated *saṃvat* 1828 (= A. D. 1771) *śrāvaṇavadi* 3. It contained the commentary complete.

*Ka* (= **R<sup>5</sup>**), copied for Rājendralāla under Amṛtalāla's superintendence and collated with a MS. dated *saṃvat* 1775 (= A. D. 1718) *kilakanāma-samvatsare dakṣiṇāyane varṣā ṛtau bhādrapade māsi kṛṣṇapakṣe bhṛguvāsare taddine pustakam samāptaṃ*. It contained the text complete.

*Kha* (= **R<sup>6</sup>**), copied for Dr. Burnell, of Mangalore, and lent to Rājendralāla. The original belonged to a paṇḍit in Tanjore. It contained the text complete. Cf. E.

*Ga* (= **R<sup>7</sup>**), from the Library of the Asiatic Society of Bengal, containing Book II only of the text, written in the śāka year named Vyaya by Nārāyaṇa, of Candrapūra, for his master Śivarāma.

*Gha* (= **R<sup>8</sup>**), from the Library of the Sanskrit College, Calcutta, containing Book IV, with Sāyaṇa's commentary.

Of these *ka* and *kha* (presumably **R<sup>5</sup>** and **R<sup>6</sup>**) are said to belong to the same class. But it is clear that Rājendralāla merely compiled an eclectic text from the various MSS., and that he did not contemplate a critical text. R denotes the reading of the edition when it appears to rest on all the MSS. available.

**26-34. S<sup>1-9</sup>** are the MSS. used in the edition in the Ānandāśrama



series, 1898, No. 38, with Sāyaṇa's commentary by Bābāśāstrī Phadake. They are as follows:—

*Ka* (= **S**<sup>1</sup>), containing text and commentary complete, belonging to Śrīmat Gurumahārāja, of Karavīrapura.

*Kha* (= **S**<sup>2</sup>), containing text and commentary complete, belonging to Gaṅgādhara Śāstrī Dātāra, of Puṇyapattana.

*Ga* (= **S**<sup>3</sup>) and *Gha* (= **S**<sup>4</sup>), containing text and commentary complete, from the Ānandāśrama library.

*Na* (= **S**<sup>5</sup>), containing text and commentary of Books II-IV, belonging to Bhāūsāheba Bālāsāheba Kibe, of Indūrapura.

*Ca* (= **S**<sup>6</sup>) and *Cha* (= **S**<sup>7</sup>), containing text only, from the Ānandāśrama library.

*Ja* (= **S**<sup>8</sup>), containing text only, belonging to Bhāūsāheba Bālāsāheba Kibe, of Indūrapura.

*Jha* (= **S**<sup>9</sup>), containing text only, belonging to Śaṅkararāva Bhāgavata, of Thāne.

There is no doubt that some care has been taken in giving the variant readings which are practically confined to the commentary. Where the MSS. appear to agree, S is used to denote the reading of the edition. The text of the Āraṇyaka in this edition contains some errors and omissions, but is superior to that of Rājendralāla.

**35. T.** This is the version found in the collection of 108 Upaniṣads published in Telugu character at Madras in 1883. It contains no important variants, and seems conclusively to prove that the South had no separate recension. See Deussen, *Sechzig Upanishad's des Veda*, p. 534. In view of Śaṅkara's influence in Southern India, this was only to be expected.

**36. U.** This symbol is used to denote the text of the Upaniṣad with Śaṅkara's commentary, Ānandatīrtha's super-commentary, and with Vidyāraṇya's (Sāyaṇa's) Dīpikā, published in the Ānandāśrama series, 1889, No. 11. For this edition were used five MSS. (*ka, kha, ga, gha, na*) of the text, commentary, and super-commentary; six MSS. (*ca, cha, ja, jha, tha, da*) of the commentary, two MSS. (*ka, kha*) of the text alone, and four MSS. (*ka, kha, ga, gha*) of the Dīpikā, besides two editions (*na, ta*). The variants are, however, almost confined to the commentary.

**37. W.** This MS. contains Sāyaṇa's commentary on Book I of the Āraṇyaka. It is on palm-leaves and in Malayālam characters, and is very

inaccurate. It is one of the Whish MSS. in the Library of the Royal Asiatic Society. See Winternitz, No. 1 (b), who assigns it to the eighteenth or nineteenth century.

**38. X.** This MS. contains Śaṅkara's commentary on Books II and III of the Āraṇyaka. It is written on palm-leaves in Malayālam characters. The MS. is much damaged. It is No. 158 in Winternitz's *Catalogue*, and may be assigned to the seventeenth century.

Of these MSS. I have collated all save R<sup>1-8</sup>, S<sup>1-9</sup>, and those used in U. There are many other MSS. and editions of the Upaniṣad in existence and several MSS. of the Āraṇyaka (see Aufrecht, *Catalogus Catalogorum*, s. vv.), but there is no reason to suppose that any of them would add anything new to the text. Max Müller used (cf. *S.B.E.*, I, xcvi) a MS. of the text with Śaṅkara and Ānandatīrtha's commentaries, and also a commentary by Śaṅkara<sup>1</sup> on Book III, Adhyāya 1, but he states that the MSS. he used gave little aid. It appears from Weber's *Catalogue* that the Berlin MSS. have no independent value.

The MSS. used are on the whole decidedly inferior. They are modern copies and contain many clerical errors. No useful purpose would be served by recording all the blunders of the scribes. I have therefore printed only those which seemed of more importance, either textually or palaeographically, save in the case of B, in view of the special—if somewhat artificial—interest of that MS.

In Rājendralāla's edition, and in Max Müller's translation of the first three books of the Āraṇyaka (*S.B.E.*, I), the text, besides the division into Adhyāyas and Khaṇḍas shown in all the MSS., is divided into short sections which are numbered. These numbers seem to be attributable to Rājendralāla himself, as there is no trace of them in any of the MSS. I have used or in the Ānandāśrama edition. The divisions follow the treatment by Sāyaṇa of the text in his commentary, but they cannot be said to be always satisfactory, consistent, or convenient, and I have not felt bound to adopt them. None of the MSS. show any satisfactory or consistent punctuation—such a punctuation being practically unknown in Sanskrit MSS. of prose works—and I have therefore adopted what seemed to me the most convenient punctuation.

<sup>1</sup> That this is the correct description of the work follows from a comparison with author (Wickremasinghe, *J. R. A. S.*, 1902, p. 632). X, though the MS. does not name the



In the Upaniṣad (II, 4-6), within the Khaṇḍas there is a division into sections in accordance with Śaṅkara's commentary which differs greatly from that of Sāyaṇa, and which has been adopted in the editions of the Upaniṣad. This enumeration might have been retained for convenience of reference, but for the sake of consistency I have preferred to omit it.

With regard to the text of Sāyaṇa's commentary it may be observed that neither Rājendralāla nor the Ānandāśrama edition gives a very correct version. It is clear that Rājendralāla freely corrected his MSS., and that even the numerous variants given in the Ānandāśrama do not exhaust the variations of reading. Curiously enough the editors of the latter cannot have consulted the former. For example the commentary on *madhumati* in V, 2, 2, reads: *saraso* (*cāsau* is suggested as a correction) *madhvādimādhuryarasopetatvān madhumān*. Rājendralāla has: *sa ca somājyādimādhuryarasopetatvān madhumān*, which, as the noun is (*upa*) *prakṣe* glossed as *yāgaṇpradeṣe*, is neat and convincing. Or again V, 2, 1, where Rājendralāla has the obvious *śavaḥ vairiṇām balam*, while the Ānandāśrama has [*vairi*] *nām* [*śavo?*] *balam*, while just after *im ativyathir* is rendered according to Rājendralāla *enam śatrum atīṣayena calitavān*, and according to the Ānandāśrama *imaṃ sattum* &c. One MS., S<sup>3</sup>, has *santum*, and of course there is no easier mistake in MSS. than that of *tr*, *tt*, and *nt*, while interchange of sibilants is constant. Or again in the quotations at the end of V, 1, 5, both editions present bad texts, but Rājendralāla has *etac carma* while the Ānandāśrama has *etac ca karma*, which in view of the context is absurd. Many other instances could be quoted, and undoubtedly either in many places Rājendralāla's MSS. were superior or his critical judgement was better, probably the former. Further, there are repeated,—sometimes very serious, e. g. I, 5, 2,—omissions in the Ānandāśrama text, and in places, e. g. I, 5, 1, the text has been badly confused.

On the other hand, there are many instances where the Ānandāśrama text is superior to that of Rājendralāla. For example the note in the latter edition on II, 3, 4, p. 226, line 3 from foot, *dhyānaṇḍyaṇḍyam*<sup>1</sup> *anenaikapakṣaḥ* is meaningless, but a perfectly good sense is given by the Ānandāśrama reading (see note on p. 135) *Dhānaṇḍyaṇḍyam*.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. the absurd reading in the ed. of Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 12, 11, *Dhānaṇḍyaṇḍyam*.

The comparison of the two editions would give a satisfactory text in all respects save in quotations from unknown works. In these Rājendralāla is usually superior to the Ānandāśrama, but neither is very accurate, and further MS. authority would be requisite.

From a comparison of the recorded readings the MSS. of the commentary appear to be divisible into the following classes. (1) R<sup>1</sup>, and R<sup>3</sup>, with which may be classed C, and so far as it goes I; (2) S<sup>1</sup>, S<sup>2</sup>, S<sup>4</sup>, S<sup>5</sup>, which approach closely to class (1),—in this class S<sup>1</sup> and S<sup>2</sup>, and S<sup>4</sup> and S<sup>5</sup> are closely related; (3) S<sup>3</sup> which falls into a distinct class of its own; (4) R<sup>2</sup> and R<sup>4</sup> which again form a distinct class, and (5) W.

The MS. material available would not suffice to form a text either of Śaṅkara's commentary on the Āraṇyakas II and III, or of Viśveśvara's super-commentary on Ānandatīrtha's commentary on those Āraṇyakas, the more so in the latter case that no MSS. of the commentary itself have yet come to light.

In the edition of Rājendralāla and in the MSS. A and E only are accents used. These accents are clearly confined to those verses not occurring in the R̥gveda Saṃhitā which are quoted in full in the Āraṇyaka V. Unfortunately in the edition the accents are often obviously incorrect, one word having two accents, or a series of words being incorrectly accented so as to show that an error in printing must have taken place. The MSS. also, as often, are carelessly and inaccurately accented, and it is therefore not possible to lay stress on the accentuation of any rare words, especially compounds. The matter is of little consequence, however, as the total number of accented words is small, and nearly all, save a few compound words, are recorded in well-accented texts.

It may here be mentioned that I have, wherever necessary, restored correct spellings, e.g. *pattram*, not *patram*, and have, in accordance with the normal practice of the MSS.,<sup>1</sup> omitted visarga before a sibilant followed by a hard consonant. In the case of *ch* I have never inserted the *c*,<sup>2</sup> but in deference to the ordinary practice I have always written *tad dhi*, not *tad hi*, and, of course, *uddhṛtya* for *ud-hṛtya*. On the other

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Macdonell, *Bṛhaddevatā*, I, xxvi, n. 4. Allowed by Vārttika on Pāṇini, VIII, 3, 36.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 227. In Lanman's edition of Whitney's translation of the Atharvaveda *ch* is

written everywhere, even when *cch* represents an assimilated letter + *ch*, e.g. *brhachānti*, in which case *cch* is used in this edition. Cf., however, Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 154 sq.; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 31.



hand, duplication after *r* has been omitted, though it is usual in all the MSS., while the avagraha is inserted wherever it is properly required despite its omission in the MSS. The nasal in Pluti is represented by the ardhaçandra mark. In R the ordinary anusvāra is used as is done in the MSS., but not in S.

## II. The Commentaries.

The commentaries on the Āraṇyaka which I have used are the following :—

1. Śaṅkara's commentary on the Upaniṣad (II, 4-6). Śaṅkara's date has now, through the evidence of the Āryavidyāsudhākara and Paṭhak's researches (*Journal Bombay Branch Royal Asiatic Society*, XVIII, 88, 218 sq.), been definitely fixed from A. D. 788 to the middle of the ninth century. The date A. D. 820, formerly assigned to his death, must refer to the commencement of his labours. This commentary has been repeatedly printed, best in the Ānandāśrama series, Poona, 1889.

2. Śaṅkara's commentary on Book II, the first part of the Mahaitareyopaniṣad. This is only available in the MSS. P and X, neither of which presents an accurate text. In the Adhyāyas 4-6, it is, of course, identical with (1). Fortunately the analogy of Sāyaṇa's commentary on Adhyāyas 4-6 and comparison of the two commentaries on Adhyāyas 1-3 establish the fact that Sāyaṇa followed Śaṅkara with considerable fidelity.

3. Śaṅkara's commentary on Book III, the Saṃhitopaniṣad. This is only available in the MS. X, but is followed by Sāyaṇa.

4. Ānandatīrtha's super-commentary on Śaṅkara's commentary on the Upaniṣad. Ānandatīrtha is said to have died in A. D. 1198, and to have been a pontiff of the Mādhva sect (Bhandarkar, *Report on the Search for Sanskrit Manuscripts*, 1882, 1883, pp. 18, 103). The date has recently been questioned by Harikṛṣṇa Śāstrin (*Epigr. Ind.*, VI, 261), who prefers to date him from A. D. 1238-1317, on epigraphic evidence of considerable weight. This commentary has frequently been printed, best in the Ānandāśrama series. As has been mentioned above, in several MSS. the commentary is attributed to Abhinavanārāyaṇendra, who in one of the MSS. in the Bodleian Library (*Catalogue*, No. 977) is thus described : *iti śrīmatkaivalyemḍrasarasvatīpūjyapādaśiṣyaśrīmatjñānendrasarasvatīpūjyapādaśiṣyaśrīmadabhinavanārāyaṇemḍrasarasvatīviracitāyām Aitareyabhāṣyaṭīkāyām* ! There can be little doubt but that we

must assume Ānandatīrtha's real name to have been Abhinavanārāyaṇendra Sarasvatī, especially as he is indifferently called Ānandatīrtha, Ānandagiri, or Ānandajñāna, the name he probably took as pontiff.<sup>1</sup> Cf. also No. 1010 (3) in the *Catalogue*, where he is called Nārāyaṇendra Sarasvatī.

5. **Viśveśvaratīrtha's** super-commentary on Ānandatīrtha's commentary on Books II and III. This is only available in the MSS. H and O, and no MSS. of the commentary itself appear to be extant. Ānandatīrtha, who is called *bhagavatpādācārya*, must, I think, be identical with the Ānandatīrtha above mentioned, and must have written two different works in connexion with the Āraṇyaka, first the super-commentary on Śaṅkara's commentary, and second an independent commentary on the Āraṇyaka, in which he interprets it in a Vaiṣṇava sense. Max Müller (*S. B. E.*, I, xcvi) appears to doubt this identity, but it must be remembered that Ānandatīrtha was a Mādhva and so not unlikely to be disposed to adopt a Vaiṣṇava interpretation, and that there is nothing rare in Indian literary history in finding an author ready to comment on both sides of a question. Compare the case of Vācaspatiśiṣra,<sup>2</sup> who wrote commentaries on the works of all the philosophical schools save one. Further the interpretation of Śaṅkara had always to contend against that of Rāmānuja,<sup>3</sup> and it was by no means unnatural for a scholar like Ānandatīrtha to set forth both views, the Vaiṣṇava interpretation representing his own.

Viśveśvaratīrtha appears to have been the pupil of Ānandatīrtha, and to have written this work in the lifetime of his master, as is indicated by verse 3 of the introduction: *Aitareyopaniṣado vyākurmo bhāṣyam uttamam | śrīmadānaṇdatīrthāryān natvā tatprītikāmukāḥ || 3 ||* It is worth noting that Jayatīrtha, the successor of Ānandatīrtha, similarly wrote a super-commentary on Ānandatīrtha's commentary on the Praśna Upaniṣad, and that that commentary is distinct from Ānandatīrtha's super-commentary on the commentary of Śaṅkara on that Upaniṣad.<sup>4</sup> The same remark<sup>5</sup> applies to Ānandatīrtha's commentary on the Iśāvāsya Upaniṣad and to his super-commentary on the commentary of Śaṅkara

<sup>1</sup> So Jayatīrtha's original name was Raghunātha, Bhandarkar, l. c.

<sup>2</sup> See Cowell and Gough, Translation of *Sarvadarśanasamgraha*, Preface, p. vii, n. 1.

<sup>3</sup> See Thibaut, *S. B. E.*, XLVIII; *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, pp. 490 sq.

<sup>4</sup> See the Bodleian *Catalogue*, No. 1013 (2).

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, No. 1013 (3).



on that Upaniṣad. Viśveśvara was evidently closely connected with Ānandatīrtha, as a MS. of Ānandatīrtha's super-commentary on Śaṅkara's commentary on the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad of the seventeenth century is described by a later hand as *Viśveśvarānandatīrthamaṭhasaṭhaṃ* (Bendall, *Catalogue of Sanskrit Manuscripts in the British Museum*, p. 15). Bendall, l.c., refers to a commentary by Viśveśvaratīrtha on the super-commentary of Ānandatīrtha on the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, but the evidence cited above leaves little doubt but that the commentary of Viśveśvaratīrtha is on an independent commentary by Ānandatīrtha and not on his super-commentary. The exact locality of this Maṭh is unknown, but Jayatīrtha, it may be noted, was a native of Maṅgalavedheṃ near Paṇḍharpur.

6. **Sāyaṇa's** commentary on the whole Āraṇyaka. Besides the edition of Rājendralāla Mitra and that in the Ānandāśrama series, I have used MSS. C, I, and W. There are many minor variants in the text, but there is no trace of any double recension. In the Ānandāśrama edition of the Upaniṣad the commentary is attributed to *śrīmatpara-mahaṃsaparivrājakācāryavidyāraṇyamuni*. This, as Klemm has shown in the *Gurupūjākaumudī*, is the title of Mādhava, the brother of Sāyaṇa, and not of Sāyaṇa. This attribution to Mādhava is an error; Sāyaṇa, in the preface, tells us distinctly that the work is his: *tatkaṭākṣeṇa tadrūpaṃ dadhad Bukkamahīpatiḥ | ādiśat Sāyaṇācāryaṃ vedārthasya prakāśane || 3 ||* In all probability it was genuinely composed by Sāyaṇa himself; it agrees with his Ṛgveda commentary in general, and was written after the commentary on the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa. It was written probably under Bukka I, who was certainly reigning in A.D. 1354. That Sāyaṇa died in A.D. 1387 is probably an error, though that may be the year of Mādhava's death. His commentary throughout is dependent on that of Śaṅkara on Books II and III, as he admits in the introduction to Book II.

Śaṅkara, Ānandatīrtha in his super-commentary, and Sāyaṇa all interpret the Upaniṣads in II and III in the light of the Vedānta. On the other hand, Viśveśvara in the super-commentary follows Ānandatīrtha in giving a Vaiṣṇava interpretation. I have not followed either view. The Upaniṣads can only be satisfactorily explained by regarding them as what they are, early attempts at philosophy, and by refraining from reading later ideas into them. The interpretations given by the com-

mentators have, however, a value as showing the development of philosophical ideas, and I have therefore whenever desirable referred to them. In several cases too they afford great assistance in the interpretation of the text.

It may here be mentioned<sup>1</sup> that most of Book II, that is, Adhyāyas 1-3, 4, and Adhyāyas 4-6, are translated by the author of the Persian translation which was made for Dārā Shukoh between A.D. 1656-1657, and retranslated into Latin in 1801, 1802, by Anquetil Duperron. This translation, besides being much less intelligible than the original, adds, as far as I can see, nothing substantial to our knowledge.

The commentary of Śaṅkara establishes for the ninth century the text of the second and third books of the Āraṇyaka as we now have them. Whether there were variants in his time we cannot determine with certainty, as his text has clearly alone formed the subject of study. The other commentators all depend to some degree on him. Ānandatīrtha, in his own work, uses him, and Sāyaṇa uses both him and Ānandatīrtha. The evidence for the time before Śaṅkara is wanting. The later Upaniṣads borrowed their doctrines and phrases from works which were more developed and displayed more literary pretensions than the Aitareya, while the secular literature makes no direct quotations. All we can say is that the Mokṣadharmas of the Mahābhārata and Bādarāyaṇa in his Brahma Sūtra (III, 3, 16, 17) probably used the Aitareya Upaniṣad,<sup>2</sup> but the next evidence is again Śaṅkara's commentary on those Sūtras.

Though strict proof beyond Śaṅkara cannot be attempted, there is no reason to doubt the integrity of the text of these books. They are not, in subject-matter, open to easy interpolation, and in all probability in their present form they fairly represent their original shape in the time of Śaunaka.

Nor is there any special reason to assume alteration in the verses which make up Book IV, for which there is considerable independent evidence.

For Books I and V we have no earlier authority than Sāyaṇa. But he appears to have had before him a fixed text, and the various readings which he gives are practically limited to the last chapter of V, 3, the contents of which certainly lay it open to interpolation: yet Sāyaṇa of

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Max Müller, *S.B.E.*, I, lvii sq.; Deussen, *Sechzig Upanishads*, pp. 535 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, p. 28; English Translation, p. 29; and, for the Mokṣadharmas, note on II, 5.



course was not the first to write a commentary on the Āraṇyaka. He expressly refers, on V, 1, 1, to differences of interpretation, as to whether *tīvrasyābhivayaśaḥ* (RV., X, 160, 1) meant four verses or one only according to rule, and on V, 3, 3, he refers to differences both of reading and of opinion. We are therefore justified in regarding the text he gives as practically a *textus receptus* by the fourteenth century A.D.

Whether or not it is original cannot be answered with certainty. Amongst others, Hillebrandt (*Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra*, pp. x-xv) considers that the text of the Sūtras is much altered from the original, but in the case of the Āraṇyaka I, or V, it would be difficult to prove this doctrine, inasmuch as the Āraṇyaka seldom presents the truly remarkable variety of rules and exceptions shown by the present text of Śāṅkhāyana. Further the text of the first book assists in checking the fifth book, and appears throughout to agree with it. Again in the former case, where the work is a true Āraṇyaka, the idea of later alteration is less probable than in a formless work like the fifth book, which is practically a Sūtra itself. Moreover, although a certain fluidity of text may be admitted in the Sūtras, the extent of such fluidity appears to be greatly exaggerated by Hillebrandt.

### III. The divisions of the Āraṇyaka and their date.

There is some uncertainty as to the exact meaning of the word Āraṇyaka. Sāyaṇa gives two somewhat different interpretations of it. In the preface to the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa (Aufrecht's edition, p. iii) he describes it as *Āraṇyavratārūpaṃ brāhmaṇam*; in the preface to the Āraṇyaka itself he says: *Aitareyabrāhmaṇe 'sti kāṇḍam Āraṇyakābhīdham | aranya eva pāthyatvād āraṇyakam itīryate || 5 ||* and: *sattra-prakaraṇe' nuktir aranyādhyayanāya hi | mahāvratasya tasyātra hautram karma vivicyate || 8 ||*. The latter view is energetically supported by Oldenberg,<sup>1</sup> and is adopted by Macdonell.<sup>2</sup> The former has the support of Weber,<sup>3</sup> and Deussen<sup>4</sup> argues in favour of it on the ground that the aim of the Āraṇyakas was to supply a substitute for the sacrificial rites to be used by Vānaprasthas. This view, however, is rather far-fetched. The Āraṇyaka seems originally to have existed to give secret explanations of the ritual, and to have presupposed that the ritual was still in use and was known. No doubt the tendency was for the secret explana-

<sup>1</sup> *Prolegomena*, p. 291.

<sup>2</sup> *Indian Literature*, p. 48.

<sup>3</sup> *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 34.

<sup>4</sup> *Philosophie der Upanishad's*, p. 3.

tion to grow independent of the ritual until the stage is reached where the Āraṇyaka passes into the Upaniṣad, and contemporaneously the life of the Hindu is differentiated into the four Aśramas. But originally an Āraṇyaka must have merely meant a book of instruction to be given in the forest.

It is not now possible to decide exactly why the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa does not deal with the Mahāvratā rite. In Sāyaṇa's time it was already held that the author of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa was also the author of the Aitareya Āraṇyaka, Books I-III,<sup>1</sup> and Śaṅkara may conceivably have held the same view, as he calls the Upaniṣad the Bahvṛcabrāhmaṇa Upaniṣad.<sup>2</sup> It is, however, impossible to accept this version as correct. It is probable enough that Mahidāsa Aitareya is the editor or arranger of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, as Aufrecht thought. It is true that the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa is not in all probability the work of one hand or period,<sup>3</sup> but it must have been at some early date welded into one work, and tradition may fairly be considered to have given us the name of the man who did it. We know from Pāṇini, V, 1, 62, that in his day Brāhmaṇas of thirty and forty Adhyāyas existed, and Weber's<sup>4</sup> conjecture that the reference is to the Śāṅkhāyana and Aitareya Brāhmaṇas is almost certainly correct. But though we can fairly ascribe to Mahidāsa the arrangement of the Brāhmaṇa, it would be incorrect to ascribe to him even the first three books of the Āraṇyaka, since in them he is cited as a teacher. He is named expressly in II, 1, 8 and 3, 7, and is clearly referred to in I, 1, 1. This must be taken as decisive<sup>5</sup> against his authorship of these books of the Aitareya Āraṇyaka, though it is clear that some of his views are expressed in them. We may perhaps suppose that Mahidāsa, besides editing the Brāhmaṇa, was a philosopher of some distinction, since otherwise his name would hardly have come down to us. Of his life we know nothing. Sāyaṇa tells us a legend of his being the son of

<sup>1</sup> See Aufrecht's edition of the Brāhmaṇa, p. iii; Max Müller, *S.B.E.*, I, civ.

<sup>2</sup> Max Müller, *l. c.*, p. xcii.

<sup>3</sup> See Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 205.

<sup>4</sup> *Indian Literature*, p. 45.

<sup>5</sup> So Rājendralāla, Introduction, p. 8; Weber, *Indian Literature*, p. 48; and cf.

Macdonell, *Bṛhaddevatā*, I, xxiii, for a similar case. See also, however, Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 322 sq., according to whom Patañjali appears to allude to himself in the third person. This, however, is less likely to be the case at so early a date as that of Mahidāsa, though later, it is not rare.



Itarā; Ānandatīrtha, in his original commentary, describes him as the son of Viśāla and an incarnation of Nārāyaṇa. Perhaps there is some truth in the reference to him in the Chāndogya Upaniṣad, III, 16, 7, and the Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, IV, 2, where he is said to have lived for 116 years; at any rate it shows that he was a famous sage and probably a real person.<sup>1</sup>

The three books attributed to him can on internal evidence be divided into four parts. The **first book** consists of an explanation of the Mahāvratā from a ritualistic and allegorical point of view. It describes the different Śāstras of the morning, midday and evening libations of the Mahāvratā day of the Gavāmayana, a theme touched on in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 1-38, IV, 14, but indulges in further allegorical play of ideas. On the whole it bears a close resemblance in contents and style to the Brāhmaṇa, but it is doubtless more recent in date, or it would have been included in the Brāhmaṇa. Sāyaṇa in his introduction to Book V calls it an *apauruṣeyaṁ brāhmaṇam*, and Śaṅkara calls the Upaniṣad similarly Bahvṛcabrāhmaṇa Upaniṣad.

The **second book** consists of two distinct parts. The first, comprising Adhyāyas 1-3, deals with the allegorical signification of the Uktha, that is the Nis̐kevalya Śāstra, three sets of eighty verses, which was the midday Śāstra of the Mahāvratā, as being Prāṇa or Puruṣa. It is not directly connected with Book I, and it is doubtless later than it. The second part comprises Adhyāyas 4-6, and is the Upaniṣad *par excellence*. It is probably later than part one.

The **third book** treats of the mystic meaning of the various forms of the text of the Saṁhitā, the *nirbhuja*, *pratṛṇṇa* and *ubhayamantareṇa*, and of the vowels, semivowels and consonants. It quotes Māṇḍūkeya and Śākalya among others, and makes use of the above terms to describe the *saṁhitā*, *pada*, and *krama pāṭhas* of the Saṁhitā. These are so far signs of late origin, but at the same time the treatment of the subject-matter is at a much earlier stage than that reached by Yāska or the authors of the Prātiśākhya. It will be seen later that its philosophical view is more advanced than that of the Upaniṣad proper, and it can probably be dated about the sixth cent. B.C. This result is important,

<sup>1</sup> The references to Aitareya and Mahaitareya in Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 4, 4, throw no light on him, and are probably late; cf. Hopkins, *Great Epic of India*, p. 390.



as it gives us a lower date for the rest of the earlier books of the Upaniṣad.

The **fourth book** consists solely of the Mahānāmni verses. The presence of these verses is explained by Sāyaṇa on the ground that they must be studied in the forest. Their use is set forth by Āśvalāyana in his Śrauta Sūtra, VII, 12, 10, where he says that on the fifth day of the six day Prṣṭhya rite after the Marutvatiya Śastra, when the Niṣkevalya Śastra is being performed, 'if the Udgātṛs make the Śākvarasāman the Prṣṭha Stotra, then the nine verses called the Mahānāmni and certain *purīṣa-padas*, to fill up the lines, are to be used.' Tradition ascribes this Āraṇyaka to Āśvalāyana. Ṣaḍguruśiṣya, in his account of the works of Āśvalāyana, says<sup>1</sup>: *dvādaśādhyāyakam sūtram catuṣkaṃ gr̥hyam eva ca caturthāraṇyakam ceti hy Āśvalāyanasūtrakam* | This view, however, has been questioned in connexion with the authorship of the fifth book.

The **fifth book** consists mainly of a description in a Sūtra style of the Niṣkevalya Śastra, the great Śastra of the midday libation of the Mahāvṛata. It forms a sort of complement to Book I, which is the Brāhmaṇa as contrasted with the Sūtra. The natural conclusion is, therefore, that Āśvalāyana wrote Book V. The arguments<sup>2</sup> in favour of this view are: (1) Book IV contains merely a collection of Mahānāmni verses; it is not a Sūtra at all, and therefore Āśvalāyana cannot have been its author. The reply is perhaps that the verses may have been collected by Āśvalāyana and put into the Āraṇyaka in order that they might be available for being commented on in the Sūtra, and that it would therefore be natural to ascribe the Āraṇyaka to Āśvalāyana. It is a sort of Āśvalāyana Saṃhitā like the Śākala Saṃhitā. (2) It is argued<sup>3</sup> that Sāyaṇa in the introduction to Āraṇyaka V, where he expressly ascribes that Āraṇyaka as contrasted with I to a Ṛṣi, uses the words: *tasmād athaitasya<sup>4</sup> samāmnāyasyetyādīdvādaśādhyāyavan mahāvratasya pañcaviṃśatim ityādi pañcamāraṇyakam sūtram eva* | This would no doubt be quite natural if Āśvalāyana were the author of the Āraṇyaka, but it is at least equally natural if Śaunaka was. (3) Colebrooke (*Essays*, I, 307) says, with reference to a Sūtra of the Pūrva

<sup>1</sup> Max Müller, *Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, p. 238; Macdonell, *Sarvānukramaṇī*, p. xix.

<sup>2</sup> See especially Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*,

XXIX, 154 sq. On p. 155 the words 'fifth and fourth' should be transposed.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Rājendralāla, Introduction, p. 10.

<sup>4</sup> i.e. Śrauta Sūtra, I, 1, 1.



Mīmāṃsā: 'It is, however, acknowledged that a mistake may be made, and the work of a human author may be erroneously received as a part of the sacred book by those who are unacquainted with its true origin. An instance occurs among those who use the *Bakvrich*, a *śākhā* of the *Rigveda*, by whom a ritual of Āśvalāyana has been admitted, under the title of a fifth *Āranyaka*, as a part of the *Rigveda*.' Rājendralāla was unable to discover the source of this statement, and it seems probably to be a confusion of Āśvalāyana with Śaunaka; or it may rather confirm the view of Śaṅguruśiṣya, since IV could be confused with the *Rgveda*, but not V. (4) The MSS. F and G end, *iti Āśvalāyanoktam Āranyakam samāptam* | This, however, is a matter of no moment, and probably does not even preserve a tradition of Āśvalāyana's authorship of Āranyaka IV. These two MSS., which are recent and inaccurate copies, and are probably ultimately derived from one original, contain collections of works attributed to Āśvalāyana, and there is nothing surprising in the fact that they attribute the authorship of the Āranyaka to him. (5) Much more important is the fact, which forms Oldenberg's second argument, that in his commentary on the Sāmaveda Sāyaṇa refers (I, p. 19) the authorship to Āśvalāyana. But against this solitary reference<sup>1</sup> must be set the facts noted below. (6) There is undoubtedly great similarity between the two works, Āranyaka V, and the Śrauta Sūtra. I think it certain that the author of the Āranyaka knew the Sūtra. For example, in V, 2, 2, *eṣa brahmeti tisraḥ* stands without explanation, but as Sāyaṇa points out the verses referred to are given in Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 2, 6. Again in V, 3, 2, occurs *uktaṃ vaṣaṭkārānumantraṇam*, which is not only a phrase used by Āśvalāyana himself, but is a clear reference to Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, I, 5, 17.<sup>2</sup> Further the vocabulary and syntax of the works is identical; e.g. the use of *na vā* in Āranyaka, V, 3, 1, as often in the Sūtra, e.g. VI, 5, 22; or the phrase *api nidarśanāyodāharaṣyāmaḥ*, or the word *ekapātinyaḥ*. These facts, however, which were not known to Oldenberg, merely prove that

<sup>1</sup> But I do not feel sure as to the reference. The words are: *bakvrcām adhyāpakā mahāvratayogapratipādakam Āśvalāyananirmitam kalpasūtram arāṇye 'dhiyamānāḥ pañcamam āranyakam iti vedatvena vyavaharanti*, and there is

clearly some confusion between the Sūtra and Āranyaka, which discredits the evidence.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. also V, 1, 5, *ukthavīryāṇi* is not explained, but is in the Sūtra.

Śaunaka knew and used Āśvalāyana's work, which indeed was only natural, since the Sūtra deals with the Agniṣṭoma, the *prakṛti* of the Mahāvratā. It will be seen that this agrees perfectly with the native tradition handed down by Ṣaḍguruśiṣya.

There is therefore no sound evidence to ascribe the fifth Āraṇyaka to Āśvalāyana, and Ṣaḍguruśiṣya's attribution to him of the fourth Āraṇyaka remains the most probable.<sup>1</sup> For **Śaunaka's authorship of the fifth Āraṇyaka** we have the distinct and repeated authority of Sāyaṇa. Colebrooke (*Essays*, I, 46) first pointed out that Āraṇyaka V, 2, 5, is cited by Sāyaṇa on the R̥gveda, I, 8, 1, as Śaunaka's, and Max Müller (*S.B.E.*, I, xcv) says that 'Sāyaṇa when quoting in his commentary on the R̥g-veda from the last books,<sup>2</sup> constantly calls it a Sūtra of Saunaka.' Further, in his commentary on the Aitareya Āraṇyaka he repeatedly refers to Śaunaka as the author of the fifth book. E. g. on I, 4, 1, he says: *ata eva pañcame Śaunakenodāhyatāḥ* | and again: *tāś ca pañcame Śaunakena śākhāntaram āśritya paṭhitāḥ* | See also Sāyaṇa<sup>3</sup> on I, 4, 2 (ter); 3 (bis); I, 5, 2 (quater); 3 (bis). These references beyond question show that to Sāyaṇa Śaunaka was the author of the fifth Āraṇyaka. There is no conceivable reason why this work should have been ascribed to him unless it was his. Similar as the book is in language to the Śrauta Sūtra, yet it is in style less compressed and more intelligible than that work. We have certain evidence that Śaunaka did compose similar works, for, in the introduction to his commentary on the Sarvānukramaṇī of Kātyāyana, Ṣaḍguruśiṣya expressly records that he composed a Śrauta Sūtra which he destroyed when his pupil Āśvalāyana had written his Sūtra. This tradition would explain the close knowledge of Āśvalāyana's Śrauta Sūtra, which, as we have seen above, the writer of this book undoubtedly possessed. No doubt it is possible that he may eventually have been credited with the authorship of one of the works of his pupil,

<sup>1</sup> With reference to Oldenberg's remark (p. 157) that *Āśvalāyanasūtrakam* cannot refer to the Mahānāmniś, I would observe that the expression refers to the Śrauta and Gṛhya Sūtras with the Āraṇyaka IV thrown in.

<sup>2</sup> Book must be meant. Āraṇyaka IV cannot be quoted.

<sup>3</sup> It may be noted that the reference in

the Sāmaveda commentary is probably not the work of Sāyaṇa. His pupils no doubt did much of his so-called work. Cf. the case of the Atharvaveda, Whitney, p. lxviii. The fact that passages in the Sāmaveda commentary are identical with those in the R̥gveda commentary is of course quite consistent with this view.



as has been shown to be the case by Professor Macdonell in the matter of the Bṛhaddevatā, but that is a mere possibility against which tradition is certainly strong. It is impossible to argue that in Śaṅguru-śiṣya's eyes the term *caturthāranyakam* covered the fifth book also, for the two are quite distinct and cannot ever have been combined into one book. Moreover it must be remembered that a Gṛhya Sūtra by Śaunaka is referred to by Śaṅguruśiṣya, and appears to have been known to Hemādri in the thirteenth century.<sup>1</sup> So there is nothing at all improbable in the ascription of the Āraṇyaka V to Śaunaka.

Now it is possible to throw some light on Śaunaka's date. The Bṛhaddevatā, which is attributed to him, but is certainly not his but the work of a pupil—probably not far removed in date—is posterior to Yāska and anterior to the Sarvānukramaṇī of Kātyāyana. Kātyāyana, who is in all probability the author of the Śrauta Sūtra and the Vājasaneyi Anukramaṇī, is most probably anterior to Pāṇini, since the Sarvānukramaṇī shows forms earlier than Pāṇini's grammar approves (see Macdonell, *Sarvānukramaṇī*, p. viii, *Bṛhaddevatā*, I, xxii, xxiii). The argument from the use of Vedic forms is no doubt not certain, but the balance of probability is in its favour, and it has been maintained by Bühler (*S. B. E.*, II, xl, *Z. D. M. G.*, XL, 527 sq.) and Winternitz (*Hochzeitsrituell*, pp. 13 sq.) against the objections of Böhtlingk (*Z. D. M. G.*, XXXIX, 517, XLI, 669, XLIII, 598 sq.).<sup>2</sup> Thus it appears that Śaunaka<sup>3</sup> must be considerably older than Pāṇini. On the other hand, we must not push him too far back, or else it would be difficult to explain how Śaunaka is not cited in Pāṇini. Further, B. Liebich in his *Pāṇini*, ch. iii, has shown grounds for the belief that the Āśvalāyana and Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtras are in point of language closely connected in time with Pāṇini. It does not, therefore, seem necessary to allow more than 100–150 years between Pāṇini and Śaunaka, and the time may perhaps be shorter.

**Pāṇini's date** unfortunately is not yet certainly fixed. There lie between him and Patañjali not only the Vārttikas of Kātyāyana, but also

<sup>1</sup> Caland, *Ahnenkult*, p. 143; Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 26.

<sup>2</sup> Bühler's results are accepted by Hillebrandt (*Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 24), Jolly (*Recht und Sitte*, p. 3), and Macdonell (*Sanskrit Literature*, p. 259).

<sup>3</sup> It may also be noted that the anuṣṭubhs of Śaunaka are of an early type, the first pāda sometimes ending in  $\cup - \cup \cup$ ; cf. Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XXX, xxxv. So in the Bṛhaddevatā (Keith, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, p. 6).

emendations of those Vārttikas by the Bhāradvājīyas, Saunāgas, and others and perhaps a Śloka-vārttika, which certainly presupposes a considerable interval of time. Bhandarkar<sup>1</sup> has further adduced evidence of changes in the language and extension of geographical knowledge especially as regards the peoples and places of the south between Pāṇini, Kātyāyana, and Patañjali. Goldstücker<sup>2</sup> and Bhandarkar<sup>3</sup> have adduced evidence to prove that Patañjali was a contemporary of Puṣyamitra (B. C. 178-142) and Menander (B. C. 144-120) and wrote his Mahābhāṣya in or about B. C. 144-142. This result is by no means certain, because even accepting as fixed Puṣyamitra and Menander's dates,<sup>4</sup> still, in the first place the MSS. of the Mahābhāṣya do not all contain the passages in which the statements relied on occur, and in the second place it is always possible that the examples occurred in the Śloka-vārttika or in some other earlier source whence they were taken over bodily<sup>5</sup> by Patañjali. It may even be argued that Patañjali is not earlier than the second century A. D. inasmuch as he seems to know the ॠ vowel-sign, and according to Chinese tradition this vowel-sign was a discovery of Nāgārjuna's, and Nāgārjuna's date is possibly in the second century A. D. under Kaniṣka.<sup>6</sup> The latter, however, is probably to be referred to the first century B. C., and it would be a mistake to lay much stress on this argument. The ॠ vowel-sign may have existed in grammatical circles long ere Sanskrit inscriptions become usual. Further the Rājatarāṅginī, I, 174, is an authority for the existence of the Mahābhāṣya in the reign of Abhimanyu of Kashmir, whose date is however now quite uncertain. But whatever be Patañjali's date, there seems little doubt that the examples which point to the time of Puṣyamitra and Menander must be genuine and that they prove the existence of some commentary on Pāṇini in the middle of the second century B. C. Kātyāyana is assigned by Hiuen Tsang to 300 years after the death of Buddha, which taking the Chinese reckoning of the Nirvāṇa gives the

<sup>1</sup> *Journal Bombay Branch Royal Asiatic Society*, XVI, 269 sq.

<sup>2</sup> *Pāṇini*, p. 228.

<sup>3</sup> *Ind. Ant.*, I, 299; II, 59.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Duff, *Chronol. of India*, pp. 14-17; Hoernle and Stark, *Hist. of India*, pp. 39 sq. Vincent Smith (*Hist. of India*, pp. 192, 193) arrives at a slightly earlier date.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Weber, *Indian Literature*, p. 224. V. Smith, l. c., ignores the force of this argument. Cf. Lévi, *Théâtre indien*, p. 314.

<sup>6</sup> Kaniṣka's date is most doubtful, but see V. Smith, *J. R. A. S.*, 1903, pp. 1-64; Fleet, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, p. 979; 1907, pp. 171, 1034 sq.; Hoernle, *Osteology*, p. 8.



middle of the third century B. C. as his date. This evidence is not of great weight, but it is not improbably nearly correct.<sup>1</sup> Pāṇini cannot therefore be less than fifty years older than Kātyāyana and must at latest belong to about B. C. 300. The question arises whether this date cannot be put further back. The chief argument against doing so is the use of the word *Yavanānī* in Pāṇini, IV, 1, 49. Doubtless this means Greek (Ionian) writing, but it does not necessarily follow that the word dates from after the invasion of Alexander.<sup>2</sup> Indeed the probability seems to me against this being the case. For it is certainly remarkable that Ionian should be the name given to the Greeks if first made known to India through the invasion of Alexander, whose army was certainly in no conceivable sense Ionian.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, the Ionian name<sup>4</sup> was evidently the great name in the ears of Persians, and of those subjects who were led into Greece on the expedition of Xerxes, and<sup>5</sup> it must be remembered that the Gandarions were part of Dareios' empire and a contingent from Gandhāra, accompanied Xerxes on the Grecian expedition. If it is borne in mind that Pāṇini was a native of Gandhāra according to Hiuen Tsang, a view confirmed by the references in his grammar,<sup>6</sup> it will not seem far fetched to consider that it was most probably from the older tradition that the name *Yavanānī* was derived. In this connexion reference may be made to the theory of Burnell<sup>7</sup> that the word *lipi* which occurs in Pāṇini, III, 2, 21, is borrowed from the Achaemenidean *dipi*, meaning an edict, a view not at all improbable, and one which supports the view here maintained that it was through the Persian conquest of Gandhāra that the word *Yavanānī* became familiar to India. Goldstücker<sup>8</sup> argued, indeed, that *Yavanānī* referred to

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, lx; Pischel, *Prākṛit Grammar*, p. 34; Liebhich, op. cit., ch. ii, *Vienna Oriental Journal*, XIII, 312, where he ascribes him to 150 B.C., taking the references to Menander and Puṣyamitra to be his.

<sup>2</sup> This view is held by Benfey, *Geschichte d. Sprachwissenschaft*, p. 48, n. 1; Burnell, *Aindra Grammarians*, p. 44; Weber, l.c., p. 221; Wackernagel, l.c., p. lix.

<sup>3</sup> So in Arrian Ionia appears merely

as a province and Ionians as residents therein.

<sup>4</sup> We have for this the contemporary evidence of the Athenian Aeschylus and of Herodotus. Cf. also Busolt, *Griech. Ges.*, II, 515.

<sup>5</sup> See Herodotus, iii, 91; vii, 66.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Weber, *Indian Literature*, p. 218.

<sup>7</sup> *South Indian Palaeography*, p. 6. Cf. Bartholomae, *Indog. Forsch.*, III, 176; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 222.

<sup>8</sup> *Pāṇini*, p. 16.

Persian writing, but this view cannot be maintained. But Weber himself admits<sup>1</sup> that perhaps the name Yavana may have become known before Alexander's time through the Persian war in which the Indians served as auxiliaries. There is also a striking piece of evidence that Greek writing was known in North India before Alexander's time; coins have been found with Greek inscriptions of pre-Alexandrian date.<sup>2</sup> Greek engraved gems, of a pattern much earlier than Macedonian times, have been found in the Punjab, and the caduceus was known in India by B.C. 325 at latest.<sup>3</sup>

I do not therefore consider that the evidence of *Yavanānī* is conclusive as to Pāṇini's date, though it certainly shows that he cannot be earlier than the fifth century. Weber<sup>4</sup> also argues that his use of letters as numerals is a proof of Greek influence, but it may be equally well a proof of Semitic influence or a mere independent invention, as indeed seems most likely from the fact that the use remains isolated. Weber's other arguments, e. g. that from the date of Āpiśali,<sup>5</sup> rest on too slight a basis to bear serious examination. On the other hand, it is not possible to follow Goldstücker<sup>6</sup> in referring Pāṇini to a date before Buddha on the strength of *nirvāṇo'vāte*, VIII, 2, 50, because Pāṇini probably deliberately ignored Buddhism<sup>7</sup> or perhaps lived when the influence of Buddhism had yet to become great. Bhandarkar<sup>8</sup> refers Pāṇini to the beginning of the seventh century B. C., dating Kātyāyana in accordance with the legend of the Kathāsaritsāgara in the fourth century B. C., but he does not meet the difficulty as to *Yavanānī*, though his proposed date would in some ways suit the history of Sanskrit literature. On the whole I incline to fix Pāṇini's date at about 400-350 B. C. Böhtlingk, in the introduction to his edition, fixed the date at about 350 B. C., and Lassen<sup>9</sup> assigned Pāṇini to 330 B. C.

<sup>1</sup> See *Ind. Stud.*, IV, 89; Berlin *Monatsbericht*, 1871, p. 616, n.

<sup>2</sup> Head, quoted in Bühler, *Palaeographie*, p. 3.

<sup>3</sup> *Vienna Oriental Journal*, XIII, 307; Fleet, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 531.

<sup>4</sup> *Indian Literature*, p. 222, n.; Goldstücker, *Pāṇini*, pp. 50 sq.

<sup>5</sup> *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 375, n. On the other side, Bhandarkar's argument from Sāmkala is equally unconvincing, cf.

Weber, p. 302, n.

<sup>6</sup> *Pāṇini*, pp. 225-227.

<sup>7</sup> Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, V, 139, brings evidence that Pāṇini knew Buddhism. It is not quite conclusive, but is very probable.

<sup>8</sup> *Bombay Gazetteer*, I, ii, 140 sq. The legend cannot be relied upon in any particular, though accepted by V. Smith, *Hist. of India*, p. 337, n. 2.

<sup>9</sup> *Ind. Alt.*, II, 477. Rapson (*J. R. A. S.*,



If this date is accepted for Pāṇini it is necessary to throw the older Kātyāyana, and therefore Śaunaka, a little further back. Śaunaka may perhaps be assigned to about 450 B. C. or possibly even to 500 B. C., which would then represent the probable date of Book V of the Āranyaka, while the collection of Book IV would be a product of the same period, since the evidence goes to show that Āśvalāyana and he worked contemporaneously.

Now it will hardly be doubted that **Books I-III** are decidedly **older than Books IV, V**. This is clearly reflected in the native tradition preserved in Sāyaṇa's distinction between the *apauruṣeyam* character of the first three books and their attribution to the author of the Brāhmaṇa. It is not possible to say how much this means. But it is at least probable that the latest part of the first three books, Āranyaka III, belongs to not later than 550 B. C. and the earlier parts may be dated between 700 B. C. and 550 B. C. It will be seen that there is probably a considerable difference in time between the first book, and the two sections of the second, so that 700 B. C. is not too early a date for Book I.

I do not think that these results need be regarded as in any way surprising. The Brāhmaṇa period, according to Max Müller, probably extended from about 800-600 B. C., and this view has the weighty support of Prof. Macdonell.<sup>1</sup> The Aitareya Brāhmaṇa cannot be far removed in date from the first book of the Āranyaka, but the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa, which contains many borrowings from it, is in the opinion of Aufrecht<sup>2</sup> known to Yāska. Now Yāska is certainly anterior to Śaunaka and Pāṇini, for he is cited in the Ṛgvedaprātiśākhya,<sup>3</sup> the Bṛhaddevatā, and is apparently known to the Aṣṭādhyāyī. His date cannot, therefore, be reasonably placed later than 500 B. C. and it may go back to 550 B. C. This date is confirmed by the character of the Nirukta which certainly is anterior to either the Prātiśākhya or Pāṇini. If, therefore, the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa was known to him,<sup>4</sup> even that late work must be dated about

1904, p. 442) adopts 350 B. C. If a late date is adopted, then the question of finding a place for the Bhāṣya becomes more and more difficult, cf. *J. R. A. S.*, 1904, pp. 435 sq., 457 sq., and (for the date of the Epic) *ibid.*, 1906, p. 2; 1907, p. 682.

<sup>1</sup> *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 12, 202 sq.

<sup>2</sup> *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. vi.

<sup>3</sup> Weber, *Indian Literature*, p. 41.

<sup>4</sup> The argument is not certain. It is based on the fact that Yāska, *Nirukta*, VIII, 22, quotes Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III,

600 B. C., and the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa must be earlier, even apparently including the last ten chapters which are later than the earliest portions of the Brāhmaṇa. Thus the Brāhmaṇa cannot well be placed later than 800-700 B. C. and the Āraṇyaka I is not to be dated much later.

Further the early date of even the Upaniṣad portions in Books II and III appears to be only what is to be expected from the history of philosophy. The Upaniṣad doctrines there set forth are essentially earlier than the doctrines of the earliest Buddhism, which belong to the fifth century B. C., and we shall see that the Upaniṣads probably belong to the earliest of the extant works (Sect. V). Moreover, Bühler (*S. B. E.*, II, xxvii) has pointed out that Āpastamba (? 300 B. C.) knows the Vedānta school, which presupposes the full development of the Upaniṣad, while Gautama (before 400 B. C.) knows even the Atharvaśiras Upaniṣad, which is cited also in the Mokṣadharmā (MBh., XII, 12864).

#### IV. The Mahāvratā ceremony, and the relation of Aitareya Āraṇyaka I and V to the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka.

Sāyaṇa in his commentary on V, 1, 1, tells us that there are three forms of the Mahāvratā ceremony, according as it is a one day rite, or a part of an *ahīna*, or the second last day of a Sattrā.<sup>1</sup> But he says that the Sattrā form is the original or *prakṛti* of the others which are *vikṛtis*. The Sattrā differs from the *ahīna* in that it requires that all engaged

8, as: *yasyai devatāyai havir grhītaṃ syāt tāṃ manasā dhyāyed vaṣaṭkarīṣyan*. Now the *manasā* here does not appear in the original, but only in Gopatha Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 4: *tāṃ manasā dhyāyan vaṣaṭkuryād*. It is hardly open to doubt that the form found in the Gopatha passage must have been before Yāska's mind. For though it is not unnatural for the author of the Gopatha, or some other Brāhmaṇa, who borrowed the main body of his work from other sources, to alter his original by inserting *manasā*, yet it is improbable that Yāska would have made the quotation incorrectly, but for the existence of the alternative version. The instance does not amount to proof, and on

the other hand, it may be argued, with Bloomfield (*J. A. O. S.*, XI, 375 sq.; XIX, ii, 1-11), that the Gopatha borrows from the Vaitāna Sūtra and so is very late. But even assuming that the borrowing from the Vaitāna is real, yet it is more than possible that the text of the Gopatha, a very unimportant work, has suffered interpolation, or perhaps the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa as we now have it is a working over of an earlier Brāhmaṇa which itself borrowed from the Aitareya. But in any case the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa is unquestionably much older than Yāska.

<sup>1</sup> For the characteristics of Sattras see Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 154; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, X, 17, 92, 355.



should be *dikṣita*, the Hotṛ being also the *yajamāna*, and in that it extends even to a year. In the *ahina* the Mahāvrata is the tenth day of the Pauṇḍarika ceremony, but neither the *ekāha* or *ahina* form is of importance.

In the Sattrā form the Mahāvrata is the last day but one of the Gavāmayana Sattrā which lasts the whole year, and no doubt represents in some way the year. Hillebrandt,<sup>1</sup> who has most carefully examined this question, concludes that considerable alterations in course of time took place in this ceremony. As it stood later and as it is represented in most of our texts, the two important days were the middle day, the Viṣuvat, and the last day but one, the Mahāvrata, corresponding to the Summer and Winter solstices respectively. But the Tāṇḍya Brāhmaṇa,<sup>2</sup> certainly an old work, refers to a view, which it disputes, that the Mahāvrata belongs to the middle of the year, and it is clear that Indra is the god *par excellence* of the Mahāvrata. It may be argued with some plausibility that Indra belongs to the beginning of the rainy season, or the middle of June, and certainly the rites of the Mahāvrata show traces of a popular origin, like the celebrations of the Johannistag in Germany.<sup>3</sup> It is not impossible that at one time the Mahāvrata was the first day of the year, when, as the Aitareya Āraṇyaka, I, 1, 1, has it, Indra slew Vṛtra and became great, and Hillebrandt adduces as evidence of this the month Tīṣya as compared with the Avestan Tištrya, Sirius.

Once then, in any case, the Mahāvrata may well have been a day of popular festival and worship. The Viṣuvat day receives scant treatment in the texts; possibly, as Dr. Friedländer<sup>4</sup> suggests, because the ceremonies connected with that day were transferred<sup>5</sup> to the Mahāvrata to help to wipe out the popular character of that rite. It is, however, simple to suppose that in the usual manner the Brāhmaṇas seized upon

<sup>1</sup> *Die Sonnenwendfeste in Alt-Indien*, Erlangen, 1889. Cf. also Weber, *Die vedischen Nachrichten von den Nakṣatra*, Berlin, 1882, II, 282 sq.

<sup>2</sup> IV, 10, 3.

<sup>3</sup> Many examples of such ceremonies are collected in Frazer, *Golden Bough*, 2nd ed. Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, p. 444, n. 1, does not accept this part of Hillebrandt's theory, and it may be

pointed out that the Winter solstice is more naturally the time for rites intended in part to increase the sun's heat, cf. Frazer, *Adonis, Attis, Osiris*, pp. 196, 241 sq.

<sup>4</sup> *Der Mahāvrata-Abschnitt des Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 2, n. 5.

<sup>5</sup> Liturgically the Viṣuvat is the *prakṛti* of the Mahāvrata.

the popular Mahāvratā and made it their own by an accumulation of purely technical ritual. At any rate they have left clear traces of the original nature of the ceremony. Warriors, fully armed, pierce with arrows the outstretched skin of a barren cow, which is probably a rain spell.<sup>1</sup> An Ārya and a Śūdra strive on a round hide, the Āryan proving victorious, which may be interpreted as a spell to produce sunshine. Servant maids encircle the Mārjālīya fire with jugs of water on their heads either thrice or until the Mahāvratā Stotra is finished, evidently as a magic rite to procure sunlight and rain for the crops. Sympathetic magic is shown in the effort to produce fertility by *maithuna*. Music is played and obscene language used, both possibly with the same object to terrify away hostile demons, especially as the form of music affected is drumming.

But from the point of view of the Āraṇyaka these old customs are meaningless survivals. The importance of the sacrifice is purely in the ritual as regards the use of the hymns. The Mahāvratā is one of the forms of the Agniṣṭoma,<sup>2</sup> and is therefore divided into three parts, the morning, midday, and evening pressing of the Soma. Each pressing has an equal number of Stotras and Śāstras. The morning pressing has the Bahiṣpavamāna and four Ājya Stotras, and the Ājya and Praūga Śāstras of the Hotṛ and three Ājya Śāstras of the Hotṛakas. The midday pressing has the Mādhyandinapavamāna and four Prṣṭha Stotras, and the Marutvatīya and Niṣkevalya Śāstras of the Hotṛ and three Niṣkevalya Śāstras of the Hotṛakas. The evening pressing has the Ārbhavapavamāna Stotra and the Agniṣṭoma Sāman, together with the Vaiśvadeva and Āgnimāruta Śāstras of the Hotṛ.<sup>3</sup> But in the Mahāvratā the morning and evening ritual is mainly derived<sup>4</sup> from the *prakṛti*, that is ultimately the Agniṣṭoma, and it is the Prṣṭha Stotra called the Mahāvratā Sāman and the corresponding Niṣkevalya Śāstra or Mahaduktha which form the important part of the liturgy.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. the account in Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 444, 445, 506, whose explanations are slightly different, and my note on V, 1, 5.

<sup>2</sup> See for it Hillebrandt, *op. cit.*, pp. 124 sq. It is a *prakṛti* of all the more elaborate forms, and these again are related as *prakṛti* and *vikṛti* in order. So

the Viṣuvat is a *prakṛti* of the Mahāvratā as is the Viśvajit.

<sup>3</sup> Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 325, gives a comparative table; cf. Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, X, 535.

<sup>4</sup> This is the explanation of such passages as I, 1, 3 *ad fin.*: *tad vaikāhikaṃ rūpasamṛddham* !



The most characteristic of the features of the Mahāvratā Sāman and the Mahaduktha is their division according to the form of a bird. The origin of the idea appears to be the theory which appears in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa<sup>1</sup> of the bird-like shape of the fire-altar. Similarly, the Mahāvratā Sāman has five parts corresponding to the body, head, right wing, left wing, and tail. The Mahaduktha is not so simple, the parts correspond to the body, neck, head, vertebrae, wings, tail, and stomach, but there is a general correspondence with the Sāman, the first verses of each part appearing in the Sāman. Besides these parts there are also three groups each of eighty *ṭṛcas*, one in *gāyatrī*, one in *uṣṇih*, and one in *bṛhatī* metre, which form the food of the bird.

These collections of verses make up a very considerable body of hymns, and it appears from the Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra<sup>2</sup> that to a certain extent the collection came to be regarded as a new Saṃhitā through the rearrangement of the verses, much as the Sāmaveda differs mainly in arrangement from the Ṛgveda, so that the study of the Āraṇyaka verses (not the Āraṇyaka itself) was taken up immediately after that of the Saṃhitā. This is at least the view of Oldenberg,<sup>3</sup> and it is far from improbable. This new Saṃhitā was regarded as extremely sacred; perhaps the reason was that the likeness of the fire-altar to the shape of a bird was the discovery of some theologian who, in the true spirit later seen in the Upaniṣads, was most anxious not to permit his mystic discovery to become common property. This at least seems to me a legitimate inference from the fact that the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa expressly enjoins secrecy for the three *samudrāḥ*, the Agnicayana, the Mahāvratā Sāman, and the Mahaduktha; and the Aitareya Āraṇyaka<sup>4</sup> and the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka<sup>5</sup> devote chapters to declarations of the secret nature of their subject-matter. Thus a rite originally popular became, through theological speculation, one of the most secret doctrines of the Brāhmaṇas.

As a result of this secrecy the description of the activity of the Hotṛ in the Mahāvratā rite is not recorded in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa or in the Śāṅkhāyana Brāhmaṇa, but in the Aitareya Āraṇyaka<sup>6</sup> and the

<sup>1</sup> IX, 1, 2, 35 sq.

<sup>2</sup> II, 11, 13.

<sup>3</sup> *Prolegomena*, pp. 291 sq.

<sup>4</sup> V, 3, 3.

<sup>5</sup> I, 1. The desire for secrecy reflects probably the magic-worker's fear of his magic being stolen and used against him.

<sup>6</sup> Book I.

Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka.<sup>1</sup> When as time went on there was felt the need of a formal exposition of the rite as a whole, since in neither the Aitareya nor the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka is the account of the rite intelligible as it stands, in the case of the Aitareya, as we have seen, a Sūtra-like book<sup>2</sup> was added by Śaunaka, but in that very book<sup>3</sup> the secret nature of the doctrine is reiterated with the greatest force. The case of the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka is different. No addition was made to the Āraṇyaka, so far as we now know it,<sup>4</sup> but two books, XVII and XVIII, were added to the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra. These books were not commented on by Ānartīya, but by Govinda, and they cannot be regarded as forming part of the Sūtra at his date. In fact, we have conclusive proof that to Ānartīya the eighteenth, and doubtless also the seventeenth book, was an Āraṇyaka. For in commenting on Śrauta Sūtra, XIII, 14, 7, he quotes XVIII, 24, 30, as an Āraṇyaka. This fact, the full significance of which does not seem to have been realized by Hillebrandt, supports his view, which was based on other considerations, that the two books are not more recent<sup>5</sup> than the rest of the Sūtra. On the contrary it is at least as probable that they are older,<sup>6</sup> but the important consideration is that the Sūtra treatment of the material was still considered too secret for insertion in the Sūtra. We must therefore recognize that at one time the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, in addition to the Brāhmaṇa treatment in Books I and II, contained a Sūtra treatment like Book V of the Aitareya. As Books III-VI of the Śāṅkhāyana contain the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, and correspond to Book II of the Aitareya, and Books VII and VIII of the Śāṅkhāyana correspond in some measure to Book III<sup>7</sup> of the Aitareya, it is not surprising that the Śrauta Sūtra treatment of the so-called Books XVII and XVIII should have formed part of the Āraṇyaka.

On the other hand it was not felt that any special sanctity or mystery attached to the Udgātṛ or Adhvaryu's functions. These are described

<sup>1</sup> Books I and II.

<sup>2</sup> Book V. <sup>3</sup> V, 3, 3.

<sup>4</sup> Our acquaintance with the exact form of the Āraṇyaka is comparatively limited. Few MSS. are extant. Cf. Weber, *Indian Literature*, pp. 50, 132; Cowell, *Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad*, Preface, p. vii; *Bodleian Catalogue*, No. 976.

<sup>5</sup> Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 25.

<sup>6</sup> Or of the same date, see my note, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 410 sq.

<sup>7</sup> Weber, *Verzeichnis der Sanskrit-Handschriften der Königlichen Bibliothek zu Berlin*, II, 5; Friedländer, *op. cit.*, p. 14. Book VII=III, 1; Book VIII=III, 2.



in the Saṃhitās and Brāhmaṇas of the other schools<sup>1</sup> (see the Tāṇḍya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 10, V, 1-6; Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 9-12, IV, 1-3, for the Udgātr; and for the Adhvaryu, Taittirīya Saṃhitā, VII, 5, 8-12; Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 6, 1-7; Kāṭhaka Saṃhitā, XXXIV, 5; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, IV, 6, 4, 1, VIII, 6, 2, 3, X, 1, 2, 1; Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XIII, 2, 17-4, 2, and scattered notices in Āpastamba Śrauta Sūtra, XXII, XXIII). It is worthy of note that in his explanation of the ritual Sāyaṇa freely quotes and follows Āpastamba, as he does sometimes in his commentary on the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa.

The date of the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, like that of the Aitareya, presents considerable difficulty. As the Aitareya Āraṇyaka with the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, the Śāṅkhāyana is closely connected with the Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa. Vināyaka, the commentator on the Brāhmaṇa, actually, in one place,<sup>2</sup> reckons the Books I and II as XXXI and XXXII of the Brāhmaṇa, and there are clear references to the Brāhmaṇa in the Āraṇyaka, while several passages agree even verbally.<sup>3</sup> But though these signs are so far clear evidence that the connexion is close, they tend also to show that the Āraṇyaka is dependent on the Brāhmaṇa, and this conclusion is strengthened by the fact that, at the time of Pāṇini (about 350 B.C.), there seems to have been known to him<sup>4</sup> a Brāhmaṇa of thirty chapters, which Weber<sup>5</sup> must be right in considering to be the Kauṣītaki. Therefore the Āraṇyaka must stand to the Kauṣītaki in precisely the same relation as the Aitareya Āraṇyaka to its Brāhmaṇa.

Now the relation in time of the Aitareya and Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇas<sup>6</sup> is still open to discussion. The evidence seems to me, however, decidedly in favour of the priority of the Aitareya, though that priority is not in all probability a great one. (1) The Śāṅkhāyana is a more elaborate work than the Aitareya; it is completed by treating of the Haviryajña as well as of the Soma sacrifice proper, giving the Agnyādhāna, the Darśapūrṇamāsa, and the Cāturmāsyaṇi. It is more probable that the less systematic Aitareya is the earlier. (2) The Śāṅkhāyana seems,

<sup>1</sup> Friedländer, p. 6, n. 3.

<sup>2</sup> On Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, V, 5.

<sup>3</sup> Compare Āraṇyaka, I, 2, with Brāhmaṇa, II, 1; XIX, 4; XXV, 3; I, 4, with V, 9; I, 5, with II, 1, &c.

<sup>4</sup> V, 1, 62. <sup>5</sup> *Indian Literature*, p. 45.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 203, 206; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xxx, with whose views I do not agree.

as Weber<sup>1</sup> points out, to represent a fusion of the views of Paṇḍya and Kauṣītaki, whereas these names are unknown to the Aitareya,<sup>2</sup> which appears to represent a less dependent point of view and to show more originality. (3) In point of view of style the Śāṅkhāyana is much more condensed than the Aitareya. This fact is open to various interpretations, but on the whole the most probable theory is that the older a work, the less condensed its style, though later again the style becomes freer. This argument, which is applied to the Sarvānukramaṇī and Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra by Prof. Macdonell,<sup>3</sup> appears to me to hold equally well in the case of the Brāhmaṇas. (4) The use of unaugmented tenses is more frequent in the Aitareya than in the Śāṅkhāyana.<sup>4</sup> In favour of the priority of the Śāṅkhāyana the only *prima facie* piece of evidence<sup>5</sup> appears to be the argument from the use of the perfect as a narrative tense. Now I do not dispute the value of this criterion, as the evidence appears to me adequate that, so far as Vedic is concerned, the history of the perfect is that of an originally present force, such as persisted in words like *āha* or *veda*, to a narrative use. The perfect in narrative is indeed known to the oldest language, but the growth of the narrative use is decidedly a mark of lateness, and is accepted as such by Wackernagel.<sup>6</sup> But the facts of the case are that in the first thirty Adhyāyas of the Aitareya the use of the perfect is usually that of a present, and that it is only in the last ten that the perfect is used for narrative, whereas in the Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa there are nearly three perfects for every five imperfects. The narrative of Śunaḥśepa in Book XXXIII is carried on in perfects, but it is universally admitted that the last ten Adhyāyas are a later addition, since (1) they have no corresponding

<sup>1</sup> *Indian Literature*, p. 46.

<sup>2</sup> According to Aufrecht's Index. Cf. Weber, l.c.

<sup>3</sup> *Bṛhaddevatā*, I, xxii. This is borne out by the fact that Pāṇini, who is probably later than Kātyāyana, reaches a further degree of unintelligibility.

<sup>4</sup> Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 429. The omission in the late Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa is merely a MS. error, Whitney, *P. A. O. S.*, May, 1883, p. xi.

<sup>5</sup> On the use of *āvām*, *°ylla*, *āsa*, in the

late Book VII with periphrastic perfect, &c., cf. Whitney, l.c. The Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa has no claim to be deemed early, cf. Oertel, *J. A. O. S.*, XVIII, i, 25, XIX, ii, 103.

<sup>6</sup> *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xxx. Cf. Whitney, *Transactions Am. Phil. Ass.*, 1892, pp. 5-34, *Grammar*, p. 296, *P. A. O. S.*, May, 1891, pp. lxxxv-xciv. Wackernagel is wrong in thinking that Whitney does not accept the use as a chronological criterion.



matter in the Śāṅkhāyana, while the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra has a version of the Śunaḥśepa legend, and (2) their subject-matter is quite unconnected<sup>1</sup> with the functions of the Hotṛ at the Jyotiṣṭoma rite, which is the main topic of the Aitareya. Deductions from the style of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa taken as a whole are therefore very risky, and Aufrecht<sup>2</sup> has, conclusively it seems to me, shown that the Taittiriya Saṃhitā in Book VI, which deals with the Soma sacrifice, follows the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, which has thus a just claim to rank as one of the earliest Brāhmaṇas, as it is of course indisputably older than the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa and the Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa, the latter being admittedly later than the Saṃhitā, which it was clearly composed in order to complete. It is worth noticing that that Brāhmaṇa contains in Book III the description of the new and full moon sacrifices which is omitted in the Saṃhitā,<sup>3</sup> and it may be considered that this helps to show that the Śāṅkhāyana Brāhmaṇa in which these rites are treated is later than the Aitareya.

On the other hand no argument either way can be drawn from the prominence of Śiva in the Śāṅkhāyana,<sup>4</sup> since Aufrecht has proved that even the Aitareya Śiva is the great god in his form of Rudra, just as he is in the Śatapatha, the later books of the Vājasaneyi Saṃhitā, and portions of the Atharvaveda. It must be recognized that the deity later known as Śiva came at an early period to be the most prominent member of the Hindu pantheon, and to represent that striving at pantheistic monotheism which in one or other of its forms is so characteristic of all the developments of Indian religious thought. It is probable that several conceptions have merged in the idea of the later Śiva. Originally a god of the storm which destroys,<sup>5</sup> he later amalgamated with a god of the forest or wood,<sup>6</sup> or rather perhaps with the vegetation spirit which has been rendered so familiar by the studies of Frazer following Mannhardt. Possibly, too, traits of his character are derived from the idea of the evil powers of the spirits of the dead, as

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, pp. iv, v.

<sup>2</sup> Op. cit., p. vi, and in the Notes.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 180.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Weber, *Indian Literature*, p. 45.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 77.

<sup>6</sup> Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 216-224.

suggested by v. Schroeder,<sup>1</sup> who regards him as chief of the spirits of the dead. But at any rate he cannot be regarded as a late deity, just as Viṣṇu also belongs to an early period. Another sign of the fact that no very great distance in time separates the two Brāhmaṇas may be seen in the fact that both employ in essentials the same style and language. It is worthy of note that in both the base *enad* occurs in the nominative.<sup>2</sup>

It seems, therefore, practically certain that at least the first thirty Adhyāyas of the Aitareya are earlier than the Kauṣītaki, and the temptation is strong to assume that the fact that the Kauṣītaki has precisely thirty Adhyāyas is due to an imitation of the Aitareya. If this is so, then we would be sure that the last ten Adhyāyas were later than the Kauṣītaki, a view itself extremely probable on the ground of contents and of the use of the perfect as a narrative tense. But even so the Brāhmaṇa as a whole of forty Adhyāyas is older than Pāṇini.<sup>3</sup> Further the Paiṅgya, who is cited as an authority in the Kauṣītaki, is, according to the Kāśikā on Pāṇini, IV, 3, 105, a *cirantana*, so that the Kauṣītaki, like the Aitareya, can claim considerable antiquity.<sup>4</sup>

If the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa is older than the Śāṅkhāyana, it is not unreasonable to expect the same relation to exist in the case of the Āraṇyakas. This certainly is borne out by comparison of the ritual described. It at least appears to have been deliberately modified to differentiate it from the ritual of the Aitareya. It is not of course conclusive that the Āraṇyaka itself is necessarily later, since the description of the earlier ritual may be the later, but there is nothing to suggest that this is the case, and the condensed style of the Śāṅkhāyana appears more modern than that of the Aitareya.

Even in the Brāhmaṇas the ritual differences begin to appear. The Praūga Śāstra at the Prātaḥsavana of the Agniṣṭoma and of the Viṣuvat, following the model of the Agniṣṭoma, consists of Ṛgveda, I, 2 and 3, in *gāyatrī* metre.<sup>5</sup> In the Viṣuvat, according to the Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa,<sup>6</sup> the Śāstra is in *triṣṭubh* metre, though the other form is mentioned as

<sup>1</sup> *Vienna Oriental Journal*, IX, 248.

<sup>2</sup> Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 429. As the Aitareya example occurs in VII, 22, it is possible that it is a case of imitation. In VII, 17, the periphrastic perfect with *āsa* occurs, a very late form,

Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1074 d.

<sup>3</sup> V, 1, 62.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 455.

<sup>5</sup> Bergaigne, *Journal Asiatique*, VIII, 13; Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 29; Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XIV, 5. <sup>6</sup> XXV, 3.



more correct, and consists of verses from different hymns on the model of the Aitareya form. But most of the differences<sup>1</sup> occur in connexion with the most important part of the Āraṇyaka, the Mahaduktha. Govinda, the commentator on the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, tells us<sup>2</sup> that the parts of the Mahaduktha are the parts of the human form and not of the bird form. This is borne out by the words used, *akṣā, bāhū, prahastakam*, and the omission of the *viṣvavah* and *pucham*. The bird form is the older; it is that of the fire-altar and of the Mahāvratā Sāman, and probably it is to the change of form that the confusion in the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka is due.

In the Aitareya the Mahaduktha is divided into parts corresponding to the body, neck, head, vertebrae, wings, stomach, then comes the food of the bird in the form of the three *aśītis*, the *vaśa* hymn, and ten miscellaneous hymns called the *ūrū*. The Śāṅkhāyana divides the Uktha into the body, head with neck, the two sides, divided into shoulder, arm, and hand, the back, consisting of the *caturuttarāṇi*, the food in the form of the three *aśītis*, together with the *udara*. Then, as the beginning of the end, come the *dvīpadās*, which in the Aitareya form the tail, the *Aindrāgna sūkta*, the beginning of the *ūrū* in the Aitareya, and a collection of disconnected groups of verses, *āvaṣana, triṣṭupchata*, &c. The explanation of this confusion seems to be<sup>3</sup> that the human form had no *pucha* and required fewer verses for the *pakṣa*, and so the verses necessary to make up the total of 1,000 *brhatī* verses, required by the rite, were appended at the end. To the alteration in form is probably to be attributed the fact that the sides are composed of equal numbers of verses, whereas in the corresponding Sāman one side has the Pañcadaśa, the other the Saptadaśa Stoma, and in the Aitareya one side has 101, the other 102 verses,<sup>4</sup> probably, as Dr. Friedländer suggests, because in flight one wing of a bird appears longer than the other.

A similar complication is made in the case of the three *aśītis*.<sup>5</sup> In the Aitareya the *gāyatrī* and *uṣṇih aśītis* are composed of eighty *gāyatrī* and (with a slight exception) *uṣṇih trcas* respectively, while the *brhatī aśīti* contains eighty *sato-brhatī* verses. In the Śāṅkhāyana the *brhatī aśīti* consists of eighty *brhatīs* and eighty *pragāthas* (*brhatī* and *sato-*

<sup>1</sup> Friedländer, op. cit., pp. 10 sq.

<sup>2</sup> XVIII, 2, 1.

<sup>3</sup> Friedländer, p. 11, who has discussed

very carefully this question.

<sup>4</sup> I, 4, 2.

<sup>5</sup> For the details see notes on V, 2, 3-5.

*br̥hatī*). The additional syllables are added to the *uṣṇih aśīti* which is composed of *gāyatrīs*, *br̥hatīs*, and *pragāthas*.<sup>1</sup> The priority of the Aitareya is quite clear. Again in the Aitareya, the hymns corresponding to the Br̥hat and Rathantara Sāmāns stand on the right and left wings of the bird, in the Śāṅkhāyana they no longer correspond to the Sāmāns in position, but are grouped at the end.<sup>2</sup>

The apparently deliberate divergence from the Aitareya appears also in the treatment of the verses from the Ṛgveda used in the litanies. For example, the *uṣṇih aśīti* in the Aitareya commences with Ṛgveda VIII, 12 and 13; in the Śāṅkhāyana the order is simply reversed. Again in the *vaśa* hymn, VIII, 46, in the Aitareya only vv. 1-20 are prescribed, since they alone are addressed to Indra, in the Śāṅkhāyana<sup>3</sup> the whole hymn, though vv. 21-24 are a *dānastuti*, and vv. 25-28, and 32 are addressed to Vāyu. Similarly at the evening Soma pressing the Aitareya used the Viśvedeva verses, 1-41, of Ṛgveda, I, 164, only, while the Śāṅkhāyana improperly uses all the verses.

There is yet another sign of the earlier character of the Aitareya, so far as its Sūtra part at least is concerned. The Sūtra part of the Śāṅkhāyana, the so-called Śrauta Sūtra, when mentioning<sup>4</sup> the various improper rites, says *tad etat purāṇam utsannaṃ na kāryam* | There can be no doubt that this is a clear sign of a more reflective and refined age.

Further, the language of the Śāṅkhāyana suggests a close relation with the Aitareya, which must either be due to a common source, or perhaps more probably to borrowing. For example, in the Aitareya<sup>5</sup> occurs: *brahmaitad ahar brahmaṇaiva tad brahma pratipadyate*; in the Śāṅkhāyana,<sup>6</sup> *brahmaitad ahar brahmaṇaiva tad brahma samardhayati*. On the whole the priority probably lies with the Aitareya.

If, as seems clearly the case, the ritual of the Śāṅkhāyana is more recent than that of the Aitareya, an interesting question arises as to the relation of the Aitareya I to the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa VIII and IX, in which the Mahāvratā is treated. The evidence<sup>7</sup> available on this point is not decisive. (1) In IX, 3, 3, 19, occurs the expression *yāny aṣṭācatvāriṃśat tau caturviṃśau pakṣau*, which certainly points to the equality of the *pakṣas*, and, possibly, to the human form as the object of

<sup>1</sup> II, 10.<sup>2</sup> II, 16.

consecutively.

<sup>3</sup> II, 11. Vv. 29, 31, 33 are also addressed to Indra, but they do not run<sup>4</sup> XVII, 6, 2.<sup>5</sup> I, 2, 2.<sup>6</sup> I, 2.<sup>7</sup> Friedländer, op. cit., p. 14.



comparison as contrasted with the unequal and longer wings of the bird. (2) In the same passage it is said *yāni trayastrīṃśat sa vaśah*, and, as we have seen above, the thirty-three verses of Ṛgveda, VIII, 64, are employed in the Śāṅkhāyana only, the Aitareya using but twenty. (3) In the third verse of Ṛgveda, X, 120, corresponding to the body, the Aitareya, V, 1, 6,<sup>1</sup> omits the second half and fills up the gap with a pāda from the verses for the right and left wings. The Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 14, 7, omits the half-verse, and puts nothing in its place, but puts the half-verse together with the second half of the verse called *nada*, Ṛgveda, VIII, 69, 2, before the *dvīpādās*. Now the Śatapatha, VIII, 6, 2, 3, refers to *ardharcau*, which name fits better the case of the Śāṅkhāyana, with its two half-verses existing independently, than that of the Aitareya, where two separate pādas (not half-verses) are interpolated to make up one missing half-verse. Dr. Friedländer holds that the other points<sup>2</sup> in the account of the Śatapatha, which is far from being a clear one, seem to throw little or no further light on the matter; and it is quite possible that the Śatapatha represents a version older than the Śāṅkhāyana. But he appears to have overlooked one or two indications which tell strongly against this theory. It is clear from Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 6, 2, 3, that the general arrangement of the Śāstra in the Mahāvratā was similar to that of the Śāṅkhāyana, the *vaśa* hymn being followed by the *dvīpādās*, the *Aindrāgna sūkta*, and the *āvāṇa*. What is still more significant is that the *aśītis* are clearly composed in the same way as in the Śāṅkhāyana, for the direction in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 10, to take twenty-four sets of four syllables from the *kākubh pragāthas* has a parallel in VIII, 6, 2, 3. Finally, the priority of the Śāṅkhāyana appears definitely established by the fact that in X, 4, 2, 19, the Śatapatha distinctly condemns the use of seventeen priests, which, as Eggeling (*S. B. E.*, XLIII, 348, n. 1) points out, is laid down by the Śāṅkhāyana. Book X is undoubtedly of the same period as or at least not earlier than Books VIII and IX, and to argue from it to the date of these Books is perfectly fair. It would probably therefore be best to regard the Śatapatha as exhibiting a version which is later than, but which does not

<sup>1</sup> Not, however, in I.

<sup>2</sup> Eggeling, in his translation, *S. B. E.*, the only source then available, but save in the points above noted, the Śāṅkhāyana does not help.

necessarily follow throughout the Śāṅkhāyana version; I do not think even that version would satisfactorily explain all the details of the Śatapatha.

It does not of course necessarily follow that the Śatapatha is later than the Aitareya Āraṇyaka I, but on the other hand this result is by no means impossible. For by common consent<sup>1</sup> the Śatapatha is one of the youngest of the great Brāhmaṇas. It is no doubt anterior to Pāṇini, and as far as the controversy<sup>2</sup> over the Sūtra, IV, 3, 105, yields any results it is that Kātyāyana considered that Yājñavalkya was a *purāṇa*, as opposed to a recent author, though therein it seems he disagreed with Pāṇini. It is abundantly clear<sup>3</sup> that the name Śatapatha was well known to Kātyāyana. But there is nothing inconsistent in this with the view that the Śatapatha in its present form may be younger than the Aitareya Āraṇyaka I. It will be seen in Section VI that grammatically the Āraṇyaka I-III is older than Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, I-V, X, XII-XIV.

It is perhaps well here to mention a theory recently put forward by Dr. Hoernle.<sup>4</sup> He points out that in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XII, 2, 4, 10, the word *grīvāḥ*, which occurs in Aitareya Āraṇyaka, I, 3, 4, is used to denote the seven cervical vertebrae, whereas in the Ṛgveda and Atharvaveda it seems to denote the throat or windpipe. This view must, he argues, have been derived from the medical school of Yājñavalkya's day, that of Ātreya, and he refers to the fact that Indian tradition assigns both Yājñavalkya and Ātreya to the time of Buddha, the sixth century B.C.<sup>5</sup> Clearly much stress cannot be laid on this argument as far as it might be applied to fixing the date of either the Aitareya Āraṇyaka or the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa XII. For though

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 203, 217. The Jaiminiya may be younger, cf. its use of *adi*, Whitney, *P.A.O.S.*, May, 1883, p. xii.

<sup>2</sup> Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 443, 444, *Indian Literature*, p. 130; Bühler, *S.B.E.*, II, xxxix, n.; XII, xxxv. It seems usually to be considered that Kātyāyana was right. But the evidence seems rather the other way, as Āpastamba calls Yājñavalkya's contemporary Śvetaketu an *avara*, and this agrees well with

the theory here maintained.

<sup>3</sup> Vārttika on IV, 2, 60.

<sup>4</sup> *J.R.A.S.*, 1906, pp. 918, 919. It is hardly accurate to regard Yājñavalkya as the author of the Brāhmaṇa. His opinions are represented—with what fidelity we know not—in part only of it, and even that part must have been written by his pupils, cf. Weber, *Indian Literature*, pp. 120 sq.

<sup>5</sup> For Buddha's date see Duff, *Chronol. of India*, p. 6; and especially Fleet, *J.R.A.S.*, 1904, pp. 1 sq., 355.



*grīvāḥ* in the former work no doubt refers to cervical vertebrae, as the context shows, yet the passage shows none of the detailed knowledge of the Śatapatha (*grīvāḥ pañcadaśa | caturdaśa vā etāsāṃ karūkarāṇi vīryaṃ pañcadaśam*), to which it is certainly prior, as we have seen on other grounds. But the tradition connecting Yājñavalkya with Buddha's date is probably inaccurate, for the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad must, I think, be counted as earlier than Buddha, and yet it is later than the mass of the Brāhmaṇa, and Yājñavalkya is to it a figure of ancient fame, while we are hardly yet in a position to decide the date or opinions of Ātreya, since we can scarcely assume that Caraka represents him, through Agniveśa, with much accuracy. But it may be noted that the later date of the Śatapatha is distinctly indicated by the fact that Āpastamba<sup>1</sup> calls Śvetaketu, a contemporary of Yājñavalkya, modern, while the Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, which also<sup>2</sup> cites Śvetaketu, shows again a connexion with the Śatapatha which denotes its posteriority to the Aitareya.

#### V. The three Upaniṣads of the Aitareya Āraṇyaka.

There is some doubt as to the exact designations borne in early days by the Upaniṣads contained in the Āraṇyaka. According to Max Müller,<sup>3</sup> the distinction is between the Aitareya Upaniṣad properly so-called, which fills the fourth, fifth, and sixth Adhyāyas of the second Āraṇyaka, and the Mahaitareya Upaniṣad, also called by a more general name Bahvṛca Upaniṣad, which comprises the whole of the second and third Āraṇyakas. There is no doubt that the term Aitareya Upaniṣad especially belongs to II, 4-6; but the term Mahaitareya or Bahvṛcabrāhmaṇa Upaniṣad, though it sometimes<sup>4</sup> applies to both Āraṇyaka II and III, sometimes<sup>5</sup> is confined to Āraṇyaka II. Further the form, Bahvṛcabrāhmaṇa Upaniṣad, is in the Ānandāśrama edition given to the Upaniṣad itself, while on the other hand, in one of the MSS. in the Bodleian,<sup>6</sup> the second book is described simply as Aitareya Upaniṣad. Clearly the nomenclature was not definitely fixed. Book III bore the

<sup>1</sup> Bühler, *S. B. E.*, II, xxxviii.

<sup>2</sup> XXVI, 4.

<sup>3</sup> *S. B. E.*, I, xcvi.

<sup>4</sup> e.g. in Winternitz and Keith, *Catalogue of the Sanskrit Manuscripts in the Bodleian Library*, No. 1011.

<sup>5</sup> Winternitz, *Royal Asiatic Society Catalogue*, p. 216.

<sup>6</sup> *Catalogue*, No. 1014. Deussen, *Sechzig Upanishad's*, p. 13, is incorrect as to Śaṅkara's view.

special title of *Samhitā Upaniṣad*, which is given to it in Śaṅkara's commentary and which it claims for itself by its opening words. The term *Mahaitareya* may have been applied at an early date since it appears to have given rise to the fiction of a Ṛṣi, *Mahaitareya*, by the date of the composition of *Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra*, III, 4, but the text of these *Sūtras* is not very certain.

It must be recognized that the interpretation of these *Upaniṣads* is far from certain or easy. They were no doubt originally accompanied in the Vedic schools by explanations which might, had they been preserved, have shown how much we now misinterpret them. But it is impossible to regard Śaṅkara's explanations as traditional. There must have been somewhere a gap in the tradition. This is shown clearly by the fact that Śaṅkara explains all the *Upaniṣads* as exhibiting one doctrine, an impossible view, and that *Bādarāyaṇa*,<sup>1</sup> who in his *Brahmasūtra* does precisely the same thing, adopted a different doctrine as the fundamental key to the system. All that can now be done is to take the *Upaniṣads* and endeavour to extract what seems the most natural meaning from the actual words.

In the eyes of Śaṅkara and *Sāyaṇa* there is no difference in time nor in essential doctrines between the three *Upaniṣads*, which they regard as one. There are three classes of men, says *Sāyaṇa*<sup>2</sup> in the Introduction to Book III, those who desire immediate freedom through the knowledge of Brahman, and accordingly find it by aid of Book II, 4-6; those who desire to become free gradually by attaining to the world of *Hiraṇyagarbha*, for whom II, 1-3, is intended; and those who care only for prosperity, for whom the third *Āraṇyaka* serves. In the Introduction to II, 1, 2, he adds that it lays down aids to the concentration of thought in the shape of the performance of certain *upāsanas* or meditations. Such meditation may be of two kinds, *Brahmopāsana*, or *Pratikopāsana*; the former consists in contemplation of Brahman as endowed with qualities, the latter in considering worldly objects as Brahman, whether, as in the second Book, they are sacrificial objects or non-sacrificial.

It is undoubtedly the case that the *Upaniṣad*, II, 1-3, is intended in some degree to supersede sacrifice, or rather while assuming sacrifice to

<sup>1</sup> See Thibaut, *S. B. E.*, XLVIII; Keith, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, pp. 490 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Śaṅkara, according to Max Müller,

*S. B. E.*, I, 200. It is true he follows Śaṅkara, but they are not Śaṅkara's actual words.



explain it mystically, the mystic meaning being the essential part. The path *par excellence* is knowledge of the real meaning of the Uktha. Uktha is earth, sky, and heaven; its objects are Agni, Vāyu, and Aditya, its *aśītis* are food, whereby all is obtained. It is also the body, mouth, nostrils, and forehead of Prajāpati. The breath is Uktha, and *sattya*, and as *bṛhatī* supports all things. Puruṣa, II, 1, 7, again, creates the earth, fire, the sky, the air, heaven, and the sun.

In Adhyāya 2, Prāṇa is identified with the authors of the hymns of the R̥gveda, the *ṛcs*, the *ardharcas*, and Indra declares himself to be Prāṇa, and, II, 2, 4, the worshipper is identified with the sun.

In Adhyāya 3 the identity of the individual and the Uktha or Prāṇa is insisted upon. The growth of self is traced from the sap of herbs and trees through animals, which show hunger and thirst, to knowledge in man, and after the identification of Uktha and Prāṇa the Adhyāya ends with some obscure verses alleged to treat of the winning of Hiranyagarbha.

The precise meaning of the doctrine is hard to decide. It appears, however, to amount to a vague pantheism, which recognizes the unity of all existence physical or otherwise, and at the same time tends, as pantheistic views naturally do tend, to become a cosmogonism, especially in the account of the powers of Puruṣa (II, 1, 7). It is too early yet to speak of a clear differentiation of mind and body, though distinct signs appear in II, 3, 2, where men, animals, and trees are regarded as showing in inverse order the growth of intelligence. But the Prāṇa or Puruṣa does not consist in mind as opposed to body: all things exist in him, and both mind and body seem equally essential elements.

Deussen, in *Die Philosophie der Upanishad's*,<sup>1</sup> argues that the oldest Upaniṣads are dominated by a doctrine derived from Yājñavalkya which may be styled 'Idealism' and which may be summed up in the propositions: (1) the Ātman is the knowing subject within us; (2) the Ātman is itself as subject unknown; (3) the Ātman is the sole reality. These propositions undoubtedly are found in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I-IV, and I agree with Deussen in thinking that they were taken over and partly misunderstood by the Chāndogya Upaniṣad, and that the Taittirīya and Kauṣītaki Upaniṣads are probably later still.<sup>2</sup> Nor as

<sup>1</sup> Pp. 209 sq., 357; E. T., pp. 231 sq., 397 sq.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 23, 24; E. T., pp. 23, 24. The Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, it may be noted,

stands in no organic relation to the Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, unlike the Aitareya Upaniṣad, see Lindner, *Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa*, p. ix. This goes to prove its later date.

regards the first two of these propositions can there be much dispute as to their meaning. But the third proposition is more difficult. Deussen interprets it, it appears, to mean only that there is no reality outside the one Ātman, and that what seems to be knowledge of reality is really only an illusory knowledge of things as they appear, not as they are in themselves. That is he discerns in the Advaita doctrine the same principle as appears in Kant, a separation between things in themselves and empirical reality. It is probable that those who held the doctrine of Māyā were less subtle thinkers than this, as is shown by the naïve manner in which knowledge is made the characteristic of the Ātman, while at the same time all empirical knowledge is declared illusory. For such knowledge as is not empirical is meaningless to us and should not be described as knowledge. They rather resembled the early Atomists, like Democritus, who denied the reality of anything save atoms and the void. Dissatisfied with the changing nature of life and appearances, they thought that they reached finality and truth by denying the reality of phenomena, and they carried that metaphysical doctrine into ethics by regarding the acts of the ordinary life as fundamentally indifferent and unreal. The result of this metaphysical theory has had a considerable influence in Hindu life and thought, and it has undoubtedly retarded natural development and to some extent moral progress, though the facts of life have been too strong for it. But whatever the exact significance of the doctrine, it is clear that Yājñavalkya, and those who followed him, did in some sense or other, hold that the world was unreal, a view which is not in any true sense Kantian.

To these three doctrines characteristic of the Yājñavalkya belief, may be added (4) the allied doctrines of the transmigration of souls,<sup>1</sup> of Mokṣa, and the reward in a future birth of good and evil. This doctrine is certainly not older than the Upaniṣads, and it is intimately connected with views of moral retribution,<sup>2</sup> which are hardly logically to be reconciled with the

<sup>1</sup> Deussen, op. cit., pp. 292 sq.; E. T., pp. 315 sq.; Garbe, *Philosophy of Ancient India*, pp. 4-6; Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 168, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 223, 224, 386-389; Hopkins, *Religions of India*, p. 145. Aboriginal influence (Gough, *Philosophy of the Upanishads*, pp. 24, 25) is most probable in view of the scanty

traces in Vedic religion (Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 562-564) of the belief of the passing of souls into trees and animals.

<sup>2</sup> On the confusion in the Karma doctrine see Hopkins, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, pp. 581-594; 1907, pp. 665-672.



other three doctrines, which naturally lead to the recognition that no such thing as transmigration can exist, and that mere knowledge is freedom and there is no consciousness after death.

The question arises how far these doctrines have any counterpart in II, 1-3. The answer seems that the Upaniṣad stands in regard to them all on an earlier plane of development. (1) The Ātman is not yet recognized as the unity. That is designated as Prāṇa or Puruṣa, and in II, 3, 2, the Puruṣa has an Ātman which is developed in various degrees in the Puruṣa according to the diverse forms which Puruṣa adopts as man, beast, plant, &c. There is a pantheistic conception, but it is not one of consciousness as the sole reality. (2) There is naturally no trace of the doctrine of the unknowableness of the Ātman. (3) What is more important, there is no trace of the doctrine of the unreality of things. Puruṣa exists in them all, but either he is identical with, or creates (II, 1, 7) them, and he does not exist outside them. The nearest approach to a hint of the later idea is found in II, 1, 5, where it is said that if one knows what is Sattya, then even if falsehood is spoken by him, yet he says what is true. But it is only a vague hint. (4) The doctrine of transmigration cannot be proved to be known to this Upaniṣad. Śaṅkara and Sāyaṇa of course assume its existence, but the passages can be explained otherwise. They are II, 1, 3, *tad idaṃ karma kṛtam ayaṃ puruṣaḥ*, which most probably means that action is the man, a man is what he does, not a man is what he did in a former birth, which is not really suitable in the context, and 3, 2, *yathāprajñāṃ hi saṃbhavaḥ*, which I take to signify: 'for their experiences are according to their intelligence,' a meaning which avoids dragging in a doctrine by no means needed or even intelligible in the context. The doctrine of the Upaniṣad is immortality in another world with the gods, II, 2, 4, &c.

There appears therefore no legitimate room for doubt that the Upaniṣad, II, 1-3, is anterior to the spread of the Yājñavalkya doctrine and to all subsequent Upaniṣads which contain that doctrine. Parts of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka and Chāndogya Upaniṣads may be equally early, for some of their texts contain no reference to transmigration, but it would seem that **Aitareya Āraṇyaka II, 1-3**, which forms a unity, is the **oldest long Upaniṣad** extant.

In the Upaniṣad proper, II, 4-6, there is clear evidence of a further development of doctrine. In Adhyāya 4 the idea is that the Ātman

produces everything, cosmogonism in fact. In Adhyāya 6 we reach the identifications of Prajñāna with Brahman and these two with Ātman. We thus have clearly the doctrine that the Ātman is consciousness, for it is intended evidently not to identify reality with the Ātman, but, as in Adhyāya 4, in a rough way, to show that all things, the gods, the elements, men, animals, &c., are dependent on knowledge, that is the Ātman. But there is still no statement that the self is unknowable; that is, the conception of subject as contrasted with object is not yet clear. On the other hand the sole existence of the Ātman appears in II, 4, 3, where it is asserted that there is no other self. But this view carries with it no denial of the reality of things which depend on Ātman. The Māyā conception is not even implicit. Nor is the doctrine of transmigration apparently present. It is true that Śaṅkara and Sāyaṇa found it in II, 5: *athāsyāyam itara ātmā kṛtakṛtyo vayogataḥ praiti sa itaḥ prayann eva punar jāyate tad asya tṛtīyaṃ janma* | But *itaḥ* must mean 'hence' and the third birth must be in the heaven, an idea of course familiar to the Brāhmaṇas<sup>1</sup> which know nothing of transmigration.

There is not, therefore, anything in my opinion in this Upaniṣad to justify us in assigning it to a later date than the period anterior to the main doctrines of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka.

In the third Upaniṣad, III, 1-2, there is little of philosophical interest. There is a repeated identification of the incorporeal conscious self and the sun, and there is a distinct assertion that the self is that which hears, thinks, sees, &c., but is not heard or thought, and which is within all beings. This gives us (1) the conscious Ātman, which (2) is not knowable and (3) probably is all that is real. But there is no sign of the doctrine of Māyā, nor of transmigration, nor of freedom in knowledge. On the contrary the fate of the good is repeatedly stated to be prosperity in this world and Svarga in the next. So even this Upaniṣad may be earlier than the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad.

External evidence for the dates of the Upaniṣads is not forthcoming. It is true that the first Upaniṣad presupposes that the Ṛgveda was already arranged as we have it at the time when the Upaniṣad was composed, but Oldenberg<sup>2</sup> has shown that the Ṛgveda assumed its present

<sup>1</sup> Deussen, op. cit., pp. 294, 295; E. T., pp. 326, 327; Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 169.

<sup>2</sup> In his *Prolegomena*, and cf. his review of Scheftelowitz's *Die Apokryphen des Ṛgveda* in *Gött. Gel. Anzeig.*, 1907, pp.



form at a date before the composition of the Sāmaveda, the oldest form of the Yajurveda, and the Atharvaveda. The Saṃhitā Upaniṣad shows a knowledge of the *saṃhitā*, *pada*, and *krama pāṭhas* of the Ṛgveda, and of the doctrines of *natva* and *śatva*. But all that this shows is that it belongs to a period relatively later than that of the Brāhmaṇas,<sup>1</sup> a view which of course is undisputed. It is probably older than Yāska, who evidently was much more advanced in grammatical studies than the author of this Upaniṣad, and it may be dated in the sixth century B. C., perhaps earlier, since the transmigration doctrine had by the time when Buddha preached apparently obtained a complete grasp of the Indian sage's mind, though of course it is quite possible and almost probable that the doctrine spread first in some definite locality, perhaps in the East, which may not have been that of the home of the Aitareya. It may be noted that the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa had its origin among the Kuru-Pāñcālas, and the Śatapatha among the Kosala-Videhas, in so far at least as the books attributed to Yājñavalkya are concerned.<sup>2</sup>

Deussen<sup>3</sup> is of opinion that the Aitareya Upaniṣad is later than the Bṛhadāraṇyaka and Chāndogya and also than the Taittirīya. It is hardly possible, for the reasons already given, to accept this view. He points out that in Chāndogya Upaniṣad, VI, 3, 1, there are three kinds of organic beings, in Aitareya Upaniṣad, II, 6, there are four, *svedaja* being added. This argument is of no real weight, in view of the fact that enumerations of classes in these Upaniṣads are always careless and often incomplete, indeed the assertion in the Chāndogya is so couched as to appear to be deliberately directed against an assertion that the number was other than three, and may be a reference to the Aitareya. The substantial arguments on the other side are those from the contents. The same argument applies to the Taittirīya. The Ānandavallī<sup>4</sup> contains an elaborately developed doctrine which certainly regards the Ātman as conscious, as unknowable, and as unique, besides treating of the nature of transmigration in a very subtle manner. The argument of Deussen from the fact of the less elaborate description of the entrance of the Ātman into creation

211-240. Cf. Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 46.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 265 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp.

207, 214; Weber, *Indian Literature*, pp. 45, 120 sq.

<sup>3</sup> Op. cit., pp. 23, 24; E. T., pp. 23, 24.

<sup>4</sup> Deussen, *Sechzig Upanishads*, pp. 224-228.

in II, 6, in comparison with the Aitareya account in II, 4, 3, is quite inconclusive. Further, the Taittiriya Upaniṣad<sup>1</sup> sets a high value on asceticism, and thus differs from the Aitareya and even the Bṛhadāraṇyaka and Chāndogya. Historically the earliest view appears to have been opposed to asceticism, which only later was regarded as an aid to knowledge. Again in the Śikṣāvallī the knowledge of grammar shown is at least as great as that of the Saṃhitā Upaniṣad. Another sign of the comparative lateness of the Taittiriya<sup>2</sup> is the addition of *mahas* to the triad, *bhūr*, *bhuvah*, *svar*.

There can, in any case, be no question of the priority of the Aitareya to the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad. The Kauṣītaki is decidedly late.<sup>3</sup> Adhyāya 1 is a variant of the transmigration legend found in Chāndogya, V, 3-10, and Bṛhadāraṇyaka, VI, 2, which are both late passages in their Upaniṣads.<sup>4</sup> The twelve explanations of Bālāki Gārgya in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka, II, 1, are expanded to sixteen in Kauṣītaki, IV.<sup>5</sup> The *prāṇasaṃvāda* of the Aitareya, II, 4, is certainly older than either that of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka, VI, 11-14, or the Chāndogya, V, 1, or the Kauṣītaki, II, 12-14, III, 3. The name, *indriya*, for the organs of sense first occurs in Kauṣītaki, II, 15,<sup>6</sup> and in Aitareya, III, 2, 1, and the word *manas* occurs in the sense of an organ, like speech, sight, hearing, instead of the old sense 'consciousness,' in Kauṣītaki, III.<sup>7</sup>

Further it may be noted that in the Aitareya, even in III, 2, 3, there is no hint of the recognition of the Atharva as a fourth Veda. Such hints occur in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka, V, 13, and VI, 4, 13, and Atharvaṇa occurs in Chāndogya, VII, 1, 2, while the Atharvans and Aṅgīrasas are mentioned in the early text, Bṛhadāraṇyaka, II, 4, 10.

Other Upaniṣads, including the Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, may fairly be left out of account. None of them can claim to be older than the Aitareya and many must be much more modern. They are marked by a greater formalism of doctrine, accompanied by attempts to graft popular doctrines on to the philosophical conceptions of the Upaniṣads, which were apparently soon found too abstruse for the comprehension of their successors.

<sup>1</sup> I, 5.

<sup>2</sup> Op. cit., pp. 64, 65; E. T., pp. 67-69.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. supra, p. 40, n. 2.

<sup>4</sup> Deussen, op. cit., pp. 296 sq.; E. T.,

pp. 334 sq.

<sup>5</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 80; E. T., p. 87.

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 244; E. T., p. 270.

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 245; E. T., p. 272.



It may therefore be concluded that the first two Upaniṣads certainly, and probably also the third, precede the Bṛhadāraṇyaka and Chāndogya Upaniṣads in their main portions, especially the Yājñavalkya section of the former, that they are pre-Buddhist, as is proved both by the contents and the language,<sup>1</sup> and that they date from about 700-500 B. C.

In connexion with the **relation of the Upaniṣads to Buddhism** it may be well to trace the **history of the Ātman doctrine**. The derivation of the word is in dispute<sup>2</sup> and throws no clear light on the meaning. But at any rate, it is certain that the Indians obtained gradually, doubtless through the phenomena of dreams and swoons and death, the conception of the body being animated by a soul. This conception naturally reacted on their views of religion. It is impossible to suppose, as is now so often done, that the earliest or even an early form of religion was the belief in spirits which take up their abode from time to time in various forms. It cannot have been until after long experience that the idea of a disembodied spirit can have been intelligible. Primitive man must long have regarded body and mind as one. So his earliest worship must have been addressed to things which seemed to him to be able to help or hurt him. We cannot believe with Rhys Davids<sup>3</sup> that the early worship of trees was really dryad worship. The early believer regarded certain trees as divine, just as he regarded certain animals, like the cow or the snake, as divine because of their beneficent or maleficent powers, and it was only later that the idea of the spirit as separable from the tree or animal appears. Once the idea of a separate spirit is arrived at of course the nature of the deity changes, anthropomorphism arises, or other animals or things than that which the deity originally was become his place of abode.<sup>4</sup> Further, other abstract deities can arise, and we pass from worship of natural objects to worship of spirits embodied from time to time in natural forms. It was not unnatural that the thinker should endeavour to find some common explanation of the vast world of souls, and still less unnatural that he should decide that all souls were identical;

<sup>1</sup> Liebhich, *Pāṇini*, ch. iii, concludes that the language of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka is pre-Pāṇinian. This incidentally supports the theory of the date of the Aitareya.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Deussen, *Philosophie des Veda*, p. 285; Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, III, 116.

<sup>3</sup> *Buddhist India*, p. 226. Cf. Oldenberg's view of early religion, *Religion des Veda*, p. 37.

<sup>4</sup> Hence the fetishism described in Farnell, *Evolution of Religion*, pp. 44-47; and cf. my article, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 929-949, on theriomorphic deities.

for the soul being merely a spirit had when separated from its body no characteristic or distinguishing features.

But the merit of the Upaniṣads does not rest on this mere identification.<sup>1</sup> It rests on the attempt to discover the nature of the soul. At first the conception may no doubt have been that it was material,<sup>2</sup> and traces of that view persist late, but at any rate the author of the Aitareya Upaniṣad was well aware that the essential characteristic of soul was consciousness, and I think we must admit that the Upaniṣad fully recognizes that all existence whatever is dependent on consciousness. It is true that the Upaniṣad does not clearly analyse or realize what that means, but the idea is there. The Bṛhadāraṇyaka and Chāndogya supply a further account, and at the same time they develop the theme that recognition of the true facts as to the Ātman means freedom, whereas failure to recognize means transmigration. Buddhism is certainly later than these doctrines, from which it is an illogical and unsatisfactory derivative so far as metaphysics<sup>3</sup> go. It is significant of its later origin that it arose at a time when Tapas was laid great stress upon even in the philosophic schools, whereas Tapas is not recognized as a factor in knowledge until the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, and becomes prominent only in the Kena and Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣads. Its derivative nature is plainly seen in the fundamental doctrine of the rejection of the Ātman, and the illogical substitution of a Karman which performs the functions of an Ātman for purposes of transmigration, and in the consequent doctrine of Nirvāṇa, which is nonentity, as all content has been rendered impossible by the rejection of the theory of Ātman as conscious. It is true that the theory was inevitable, inasmuch as the Upaniṣads came to insist on emptying the Ātman of all meaning by rejecting the objective side of consciousness, so that the Ātman ceased to be anything but a subject without an object, a view that is not that of the Aitareya Upaniṣad. But to accept the doctrine that there existed no Ātman at all was to adopt a view which, strictly speaking, rendered all knowledge meaningless, for there must be

<sup>1</sup> As Rhys Davids appears to think, *op. cit.*, p. 256.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 251, 252. Cf. Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 166.

<sup>3</sup> No doubt Buddhism is not in the main a metaphysical system (cf. Lovejoy, *J. A. O. S.*, XIX, ii, 132 sq.), but it

rests on a metaphysical basis which is thoroughly unsound, and, as empirical psychology, is hopelessly confused and self-contradictory. Cf. the significant admissions by Mrs. Rhys Davids, *J. R. A. S.*, 1903, pp. 687-691.



a subject, and it is no answer that there need be no permanent individual self.

The doctrine of *anattā* therefore destroys all the basis of *samsāra*, and is complete proof that Buddhism is entirely dependent on the Upaniṣads which first clearly develop that view. There are numerous other signs of dependence. The dialogue form is copied from the dialogues of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka and Chāndogya, and even the style of the Aitareya Upaniṣad, II, 6: *yad etad hṛdayaṃ manaś caitat saṃjñānam ājñānaṃ vijñānaṃ prajñānaṃ medhā dṛṣṭir dhr̥tir matir manīṣā jñitih smṛtiḥ saṃkalpaḥ kratur asuḥ kāmo vaśa iti sarvāṇy evaitāni prajñānasya nāmadheyāni*, is a forecast of those intolerable lists of practically meaningless synonyms which disfigure the pages of the Pāli Suttas. In estimating the causes of the fall of Buddhism,<sup>1</sup> it must, I think, be recognized how great a part was played by the unphilosophical and uncritical nature of the metaphysical doctrine, and by the elaborate mass of inaccurate and fanciful psychology,<sup>2</sup> which the school endeavoured to set up as its contribution to the knowledge of truth. The Upaniṣads contain much that is foolish and meaningless, but they are the first books of a new faith and were fated to be the sources of a system of philosophy whose influence in India is still paramount.

It follows with certainty that the **Aitareya Upaniṣads** are considerably **older than Buddha**, whose date of death is certainly about 487 or 477 B. C.<sup>3</sup> We must therefore probably fix 600 B. C. as the lowest limit for their composition, or put 550 B. C. at the very latest, thus modifying slightly the results above reached. It is not possible to estimate how quickly thought then worked, but about 50 to 100 years will be required for the development from the earliest to the latest Upaniṣad, and I incline to fix approximately the dates at from about 700-600 B. C. for Āraṇyaka II, and 550 for Āraṇyaka III. Āraṇyaka I may be somewhat earlier, but not necessarily much earlier, while, as seen above, the Āraṇyakas IV and V belong to about 450 B. C., thus explaining the dictum of Sāyaṇa which distinguishes so sharply between the two parts. The upper date may

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Rhys Davids, *Buddhist India*, pp. 319, 320.

<sup>2</sup> Mrs. Rhys Davids in her *Buddhist Psychology* has done much for the study, but the fact remains that it is not worthy

of the labour bestowed on it. Cf. Hopkins, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, p. 581; Louis de la Vallée Poussin, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, p. 944.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. p. 37, n. 5.

perhaps be pushed farther back, but this involves the pushing back of the date of the R̥gveda, for which, at least at present, no satisfactory evidence has been adduced.<sup>1</sup> Among recent writers Rhys Davids<sup>2</sup> and Garbe<sup>3</sup> ascribe to the eighth and seventh centuries the older Upaniṣads.

The position of the Aitareya gives some light with regard to the question how far the Brahmins were the authors of the change in philosophy shown in the Upaniṣads. Of late it has been more and more the practice to ascribe to the Kṣatriyas this step in philosophic progress. This view has recently been pressed by Garbe<sup>4</sup> and Deussen.<sup>5</sup> But it seems to me to rest on no substantial evidence and to be *a priori* improbable. The Aitareya shows a legitimate development from the Brāhmaṇa to the Upaniṣad, and no reason appears why the Brahmins should be considered unable to develop further the ideas which Deussen himself has shown were latent in the Brāhmaṇas. Doubtless, as the history of Jñātaputra and Gautama show, the Kṣatriyas in the eighth to the sixth centuries B. C. took an interest in the intellectual life of the day, but that is not to say that the Kṣatriyas developed new views as opposed to the Brahmins. The fact is that society had not yet attained that artificial character of separation of classes which is seen in the Mānava Dharmaśāstra. The literary activities of the Kṣatriyas were mainly spent at this time on the development of the epic<sup>6</sup> which was soon to produce the Rāmāyaṇa, a development shared by the Brahmins but mainly directed by the Kṣatriyas, just as the latter shared the philosophic researches which were the main task of the former.

It is not unimportant to observe that there is as yet no trace in the Āraṇyaka of the doctrine of the misery of existence which characterizes both the Jaina and Buddhist creeds. It is I think correct to assume that these doctrines are descended from a Sāṃkhya<sup>7</sup> view of existence which fell into pessimism by its unsatisfactory dualistic metaphysics. However open to criticism Jacobi's detailed derivation of the doctrines of Buddhism

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 12; Winternitz, *Gesch. der ind. Litt.*, I, 348 sq. <sup>2</sup> *Buddhist India*, p. 162.

<sup>3</sup> *Philosophy of Ancient India*, p. 69. Cf. Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 226.

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 73 sq.; *Beiträge* (1903), pp. 1 sq.

<sup>5</sup> *Philosophie der Upanishad's*, p. 17;

E. T., p. 16.

<sup>6</sup> See Jacobi, *Das Rāmāyaṇa*; Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 302 sq.

<sup>7</sup> Cf. Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishad's*, chap. x; Jacobi, *Z. D. M. G.*, LII, 1 sq.; Garbe, *Philosophy of Ancient India*, p. 11; Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 397; Oldenberg, *Buddha*, ed. 3.



from the Sāṃkhya may be, yet it is clear that it was from the Sāṃkhya that Buddhism derived its theory of the soulless entity which yet goes through transmigration. For this is precisely the *liṅgaśarīra* which alone migrates, *puruṣa* being a truth utterly dissociated from matter. From this point of view also is reached the result that the Aitareya is considerably anterior to Buddhism.

Āraṇyaka I contains, in comparison with the Upaniṣads, little of philosophic interest. It is important, however, to observe that in it *brahman* appears already as a principle of unity. In I, 1, 3, *gāyatrī* is identified with *brahman* and the Mahāvratā day is also identified, because it leads to *brahman*. Similarly Vasukra is *brahman* and so is identified with the Mahāvratā day. There can be no doubt that the *brahman* conception is older than that of the Ātman, and that it originally meant the power of prayer, which even in the Ṛgveda is treated as a spell to bend the gods by its own force to grant what is craved, instead of being considered an appeal to the lovingkindness of the gods. That eventually this doctrine was amalgamated with a younger rival, the Ātman doctrine, as Oldenberg suggests, seems to me undoubted. The assimilation is seen complete in the Upaniṣad II, 6, which indicates the length of time which we must assume between the first book and the Upaniṣad proper.

It remains to consider whether any explanation can be given of the connexion with the doctrines of the Upaniṣad of the Mahāvratā rite. Some light on this matter is thrown by Prof. Eggeling in the introduction to Part IV<sup>1</sup> of his translation of the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa. He there points out that the Agnicayana and the Mahāvratā appear to have been developed in connexion with a doctrine of the production of the world from the sacrifice of Puruṣa (cf. Ṛgveda, X, 90), which eventually yields the equation of Prajāpati at once to the sacrifice and the sacrificer (cf. Aitareya Āraṇyaka, II, 1, 2). But the sacrifice lasts a year, and so Prajāpati becomes time, and death, and eventually mind. Thus the Mahāvratā rite is treated in the Āraṇyaka as specially secret, and finds a natural development in the more purely philosophic Upaniṣads.

In conclusion, a few words may be said as to the relation of Āraṇyaka III to the other Vedic texts of similar content. It is of course very closely related to the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka VII, VIII, with which it agrees verbally in some parts, showing that both versions go back to

<sup>1</sup> S. B. E., XLIII, xiii-xxvii.

a not very distant common ancestor. But on the whole the version of the Śāṅkhāyana seems the more modern in several respects.<sup>1</sup>

The Saṃhitopaniṣad Brāhmaṇa is certainly a much more recent work. Burnell, in the preface to his edition, has urged general considerations for its comparatively late date. It shows a considerable advance of phonetic science, and mentions such points as *lopa*, *atihāra*, *repha sandhi*, and *visargopagraha*, while it deals with the *svaras*. Three sorts of Saṃhitā are distinguished, the *deva*, *asura*, and *ṛṣi*, an artificial conception. The Saṃhitā is also considered as *śuddhā*, *aduḥṣṛṣṭā*, and *anirbhujā*. In the last section philosophy has degenerated into meaningless formulae, and the demand for gifts in Section IV is beneath the dignity of the older Āraṇyakas and Upaniṣads. Nor is it without significance that in so short a text are found *sukhībhavati* and *gulmībhūtā*, forms rare indeed in the older texts,<sup>2</sup> while the only narrative tense found is the perfect<sup>3</sup> (in III), and the language is classical.

The Āraṇyaka III is also in all probability older than Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I, 3, which appears, as will be seen from the note on III, 1, 2, to be an enlarged version of the older Saṃhitā doctrine, although it seems likely that the Upaniṣad is much older than the Saṃhitopaniṣad Brāhmaṇa.

## VI. Style and Grammar.

In this connexion it will be sufficient to consider the first three Āraṇyakas as forming one whole, as distinct from the fifth Āraṇyaka, and to disregard the differences in date among their parts. The quotations contained in the fourth Āraṇyaka, and also scattered throughout the rest of the work, may be left out of consideration until later (p. 74).

The prose of the Āraṇyaka is of considerable historic interest. The history of Sanskrit prose is one of continual degradation so far as the grammatical structure of the language is concerned. Classical prose, whatever the subject-matter, whether romance, as in Subandhu and Bāṇa,

<sup>1</sup> I have had available for comparison the MS. Sansk. e. 2 of the Bodleian Library, described in Winternitz and Keith's *Catalogue*, pp. 59, 60, and, as I fear Dr. Friedländer will not carry out his projected edition, I have not refrained

from quotation from the text.

<sup>2</sup> Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 1093, 1094.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xxxi, n. 2.



fable, as in the Pañcatantra, or philosophy, is composed in a style which combines all the disadvantages of an inflected with those of an uninflected language. It is characterized by the use of enormous compounds which, in addition to rendering comprehension of the meaning intended difficult and slow, make all precision impossible, and by the consequent paucity of verbal forms. The proportion of finite verbs to other forms of speech steadily decreases, and among finite forms the present indicative and the imperfect are predominant. Sentences are constantly cast in the passive, and the past participle passive becomes extremely frequent. A further economy in the use of finite verbs is effected by the employment of the gerund, which can conveniently convey a large variety of meanings, and take the place of subordinate clauses denoting time, cause, concession, &c. The past tenses, imperfect, aorist, and perfect, when the two latter occur, are used without discrimination of meaning. All clearness, precision, and accuracy are lost, and in addition to the disappearance of much that was merely superfluous in the older style the new prose loses the chance of variation by giving up the use of all but a few particles, and by diminishing the number of its prepositions.

The prose of the first three Āraṇyakas is free from many of these faults. The use of compounds is, as in the Brāhmaṇas, generally restricted to combinations of two members for the most part, with a few exceptions easily explained, like *manovākprāṇasaṃhataḥ* (III, 1, 1), and the two members stand in natural relations. The use of finite verbal forms is in no way restricted, and both aorist and perfect are used normally with correctness. Passive forms are comparatively rare, and the gerund is quite infrequent. The subjunctive is still occasionally used in persons other than the first, while the use of particles is comparatively varied. The style is essentially simple and natural in grammatical structure in comparison with the artifice of the later prose, while it possesses a considerable number of variant forms which reveal the poverty of the classical style. But beyond simplicity it has little to commend it. Prof. Macdonell<sup>1</sup> has described the style of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa in words which also apply well to the Aitareya Āraṇyaka, as 'crude, clumsy, abrupt, and elliptical'. The art of constructing sentences is entirely wanting; a long series of co-ordinate

<sup>1</sup> *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 207. Cf. also Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xxix sq.

clauses takes the place of due subordination, and an inordinate love for parallelism of structure is the chief sign of conscious literary effort (cf. II, 1, 4; 4, 3). There is no power of transition from thought to thought, and in other cases it is difficult to tell whether it is the thought which is defective or the language which has failed to express it (cf. e.g. II, 1, 2: *na tasyeṣe yan nādyād yad vainaṃ nādyuḥ*; II, 1, 5: *na tasyeṣe yan mahyaṃ na dadyuḥ*). Some defects it shares with all Sanskrit prose. Although it has at command a considerable range of particles, it fails to use them with any clear discrimination of sense, thus contrasting with the analogous phenomena in Greek literature where a delicate discrimination in the use of particles runs on from Homeric into classical Greek. Again, although it commands a wide range of pronominal forms, they are not used with any clear difference of sense, and indeed a characteristic of the Aitareya, as of all Brāhmaṇa prose, is the use of double pronouns, like *sa eṣa*, without the slightest real difference of sense from the single pronouns. The same result, lack of precision, arises from the free use of the cases of the noun and the absence of prepositions to define exactly the sense intended.

But utterly lacking as is the style in precision, balance, and elegance, and although the Āraṇyaka is destitute of any attempt at ornament, it has nevertheless a certain fitness to its subject-matter. The naïve speculations, the vague guessings after truth, the confusion of thought, which make up the matter, are not inadequately mirrored in the harsh abruptness and elliptic brevity of the style, and a certain variety is introduced in the frequent quotations of verses intended to bear out the argument.

The historical position of the prose is not open to serious doubt. It cannot be contemporary with the classical prose of the Kāvya type, and it is clearly anterior to the prose of the Sūtras. This is shown not merely by the disuse in the Sūtras of various grammatical forms still found in the Āraṇyaka, but still more by the form of the Sūtras. The Āraṇyaka is written in prose as a literary composition; other Sūtras consist merely of strings of rules, and though, as Dr. Knauer in his edition of the Gobhiliya Gṛhya Sūtra, and Hillebrandt in his edition of the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra have shown, they can be construed as texts written continuously, still such compositions must be later than original prose works. On the other hand, not only does the Āraṇyaka



contain fewer grammatical antiquities than the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, but it is written in a more developed style and with a greater approach to a command over the language.

The style shows also interesting affinities with that of the Buddhist Pāli Sūtras. It is impossible not to recognize in both the same long lists (e.g. II, 6) of names of mental phenomena, in which thought is hidden under meaningless verbal distinctions. Similar in both is the affection for parallelism of structure and the remorseless love of completeness which insists on repeating in every detail ideas applicable to more than one subject in every instance in which they apply, while the set formulae with which the Pāli Sūtras open and close have close parallels in the Āraṇyaka.

On the whole the **vocabulary** of the Āraṇyaka shows little that is remarkable; a few Ṛgvedic words are used with direct reference to the passages in the Saṃhitā in which they occur. *Viśva* is found only in the phrase *viśve devāḥ* and twice in etymologies, I, 2, 2; II, 2, 1. *Yathā tu kathā ca* occurs twice, III, 1, 3; 4. Other interesting words are *āyattāḥ*, III, 1, 2, from *√yat*, to stretch; *āndam*, III, 1, 2; *addhātama*, I, 2, 3; *bidale*, III, 1, 2; *baṭarakāṇi*, III, 2, 4; *mañjiṣṭhā*, III, 2, 4; *saṃbālhatamāḥ* from *√baṃh*, I, 4, 1; *bisāni*, III, 2, 4, and *brsiḥ*, I, 2, 4, where the dental *s* is remarkable; *dutāḥ*, I, 4, 1, which is taken by Sāyaṇa from *√du gatau*; *ulbaniṣṇu*, II, 3, 8; *āvayat*, II, 4, 3, which is usually derived from *√av*, meaning 'devour'; *santani*, I, 2, 2; *viṣṭapam*, II, 1, 2; *vikṣudram*, I, 5, 1; *vijavaḥ*, of doubtful number, I, 4, 1; *sattiyam* for *satyam*, II, 1, 5; *saṃānodarkam*, I, 5, 3; *stomātisaṃsanāyai*, I, 4, 1; *antastyam*, I, 5, 1; *kṣudramiśrāṇi*, II, 6; *udbhijjāni*, II, 6, &c.

Throughout between vowels *q* and *qh* are written *l* and *lh*. This is carefully observed in the best MSS. and has been followed consistently. In II, 4, 3, *saiṣo* is supported by the MSS.; and in III, 2, 4, *mayūrāgrīvāmeghe* seems to stand for *mayūragrīvā(h) ameghe*, and cf. *acyoṣṭhāvarābhyām*, III, 1, 3. *Namo astu* is the form in the MSS. in III, 1, 3; 4, and they read in III, 1, 2; *tasmin ha smin*. Irregular lengthening of vowels appears in *iṭi nu*, III, 1, 2, and *viyūyā*, II, 3, 8, in the latter case in a verse. The sandhi of *au* is peculiar; it becomes *āv* before all vowels except *u* or *ū*, when it becomes *ā*. The same rule is usually followed in the Aitareya and other Brāhmaṇas (Aufrecht's ed., p. 427).

In noun and adjective **declension** there are few irregularities. *Ātman*,

I, 5, 2, occurs besides *ātmani*, II, 5; *śiṛṣan*, I, 5, 2, also is found. *Akṣībhīyām*, II, 4, 1 (cf. *Ṛgveda*, X, 163), shows irregular lengthening of the vowel. *Āpaḥ*, II, 4, 1, appears to be an accusative as not seldom elsewhere. *Aikyā*, III, 2, 3, is perhaps a neuter instrumental. The **genitive singular** of nouns and adjectives and pronouns which show *āḥ* in the *Ṛgveda* and in the later language have *ai* as usual in the *Brāhmaṇas*. The only exceptions appear to be *prthivīyāḥ*, II, 1, 7; III, 1, 2; *asyāḥ*, and *amuṣyāḥ*, III, 1, 2; 2, 5. In the ablative is found *bṛhatyai*, II, 3, 6; *asyai pratiṣṭhāyai*, I, 2, 4; of superlatives, *brahmatatamam*, II, 4, 3, for *brahmatatātāmam*, and *annatamāṃ pratyacyante*, I, 4, 1, are remarkable. *Catuṣpādāḥ* and *catuṣpātsu* occur in I, 1, 2, with a v. l. *catuṣpādāḥ*. *Navasrakti* in II, 3, 6, anomalously appears to stand for *navasraktiḥ*. *Enat* in II, 4, 3, is apparently a nominative as in *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, VII, 22, and if so *parāṇ* is used as a neuter. *Nābhyai* with the longer form occurs in II, 4, 1, in the ablative. *Enam* is used almost as an adjective, III, 1, 3. *Imasmai* occurs in II, 3, 7.

The **numerals** show certain interesting forms. *Ekayā na triṃśat* occurs in I, 1, 2. Besides *sapta śatāni viṃśatiś ca*, III, 2, 1, appears *sapta viṃśatiśatāni*, III, 2, 1; so also *triṇi ṣaṣṭiśatāni* (= 360), III, 2, 1; and *pañca catvāriṃśatśatāni* (= 540), III, 2, 2, as usual in the *Brāhmaṇas*. The form *ṣaṭtriṃśatām sahasrāṇi*, II, 2, 4; 3, 8, denotes 36,000, and may be considered, perhaps, like *ṣaṭtriṃśatām ekapādāḥ*, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, VII, 1, as an irregular use of accusative for nominative; cf. *pañcaviṃśatiṃ sāmīdhenyaḥ*, V, 1, 1.

Among **verbal forms** may be noted the Vedic forms, *duhe*, I, 3, 2, and *īse*, II, 1, 2, 5, as third persons; both these forms occur in the *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*. As in that *Brāhmaṇa* unaugmented forms occur in *īkṣata*, II, 4, 1; 3; and *pādi*, II, 1, 2. *Upaniṣasasāda* in II, 2, 3, is supported by all the MSS. *Abhivyaikhyat* in II, 4, 3, appears, if the reading is correct, to be the aorist of *abhivikhyā* with the *vi* augmented. *Atrapṣyat* and the irregular *agrahaiṣyat*, II, 4, 3, are examples of the rare conditional. The perfects *dādhāra*, I, 5, 2; II, 1, 7; and *bībhāya*, I, 3, 4, occur also in the *Brāhmaṇa*. *Dadṛṣe*, II, 1, 3; 8; and *mene*, III, 1, 1, are the former certainly, the latter probably, passive. The  $\sqrt{kṛ}$  alone is used as an auxiliary in the periphrastic perfect, viz. *upāsām cakṛire*, II, 1, 8, and *vedayām cakṛe*, III, 1, 1. The following desiderative forms occur: *īpsati*, II, 3, 2; *īpsantaḥ*, I, 1, 1; *vicikitset*, III, 2, 6;



*ajighr̥kṣat*, II, 4, 3; *atyajighāṃsat*, II, 4, 3; *abhitit̥ṣati*, I, 3, 1; *bībhatseta*, II, 3, 7; *mīmāṃsante*, III, 2, 3; *viruruciṣeta*, III, 2, 5; and the rare aorist *samadhitsiṣam*, III, 2, 5, which is a distinct sign of antiquity. The only intensives are *poplūyante*, *sarīsr̥pyante*, I, 3, 5, and probably the form *vāvadiṣat*, II, 4, 3, which I take as an aorist subjunctive, also an old form. The denominative *patiyasi* occurs in I, 3, 5. For the infinitive and subjunctive forms see below. There are no irregularities in the use of °*tvā* and °*ya*, such irregularities being characteristic especially in the case of °*ya* of epic style, not of the Vedic style. The gerund in *am* appears in *praṇāvam* and *chandaskāram*, I, 5, 1. It may be noted that in II, 1, 4, *smah* is substituted for *smasi* of the quotation. *Āttam*, II, 3, 6, and *apihitā*, III, 2, 5, may also be mentioned.

Very characteristic of the early date of the Āraṇyaka is the **separation of prefixes** and their verbs. It is not normal; the great majority of prefixes are placed immediately before the verb, and I have accordingly printed them as forming compounds. But the older tradition survives in the following cases: *ati-manyeta*, II, 3, 3; *anu-yujyate*, II, 3, 8 (in a verse); *abhi-saṃvahanti*, *ibid.*; *ā-gachati*, *gachataḥ*, *gachanti*, I, 1, 4; *ā-jāyate*, II, 3, 1; *abhi-tṛṇatti*, I, 3, 1; *parā-bhavati*, II, 1, 4, &c.; *adhi-caranti*, *bhavati*, *jāyate*, II, 3, 1.

**Pluti** and the consequent lengthening of the vowels concerned occurs sporadically. The MSS. differ considerably, like the editions, in noting the Pluti, and it has as a rule been considered proper to insert it in the text only where Sāyaṇa mentions its presence.

In regard to **syntax** it may be noted that the rules of concord are usually carefully followed as in all old works. In II, 1, 7, examples will be found of a masculine and a feminine singular, and a masculine and a neuter singular, being accompanied by a verb in the dual, and a plural masculine accompanies a feminine plural and a masculine singular. *Āndam* in III, 1, 2, is unusual, as *āndaḥ* would be expected, but cf. *sarvam asāni*, I, 5, 2; *samānam aśītayaḥ*, II, 1, 2. In III, 2, 4, *etesām kiṃcid* occurs, although *svapnānām* is to be understood. The usual attraction to the number and gender of the predicate occurs in I, 4, 1: *athāto vijavas tā virājo bhavanti*; II, 6, 1, &c. The plural in *adyuḥ*, II, 1, 2, and *dadyuḥ*, II, 1, 5, offers difficulties.

In the use of the **pronouns** there is little of note. The forms of the base *enad* occur frequently, but as in all the Brāhmaṇas the pronouns

are used in a very confusing and inaccurate way. Double pronouns are very common: e.g. *sa eṣaḥ*, II, 1, 5; 8; 3, 3; 6; 4, 3; III, 1, 1; 2, 4, &c.; *saiṣā*, II, 3, 6; 4, 3; III, 1, 6; *tad etad*, II, 1, 2; 3, 6; 4, 3; *tasyaitasya*, (neut.) II, 2, 4; III, 2, 1; (masc.) III, 2, 1; 3; *tasyā etasyai*, (gen.) III, 2, 6; *tā etāḥ*, II, 1, 4; 2, 2; 3, 3; 4, 2; *etat tad*, II, 1, 8; *tam imam*, I, 1, 2; *tad idam*, II, 1, 2; *tā imāḥ*, II, 1, 1; *tānīmāni*, II, 1, 1; *so 'yam*, II, 5, 1; *seyam*, II, 1, 2; *tasya me*, II, 2, 3; *ya eṣaḥ*, II, 2, 1; *yo 'yam*, III, 2, 3, &c. *Ya* forms numerous indefinite combinations which are given in the Index, s. v. The usual correlations are *ya* and *sa*; e.g. *ye-te*, II, 1, 1, &c.; *yad-tad*, II, 3, 6, &c. More unusual are *tad etad-yad etad*, II, 1, 2; *yad etad-tad etad*, II, 5, 1; *etad-yad etad*, II, 3, 6; *yad etad-tad*, II, 3, 7. In one case it is uncertain whether a relative is not omitted, viz. II, 5: *ko 'yam ātmeti vāyam upāśmahe*, where *yam* may be read.

In **case construction** there is the usual freedom. The accusative denotes duration of time in *śataṃ varṣāṇi*, II, 2, 1; *saṃvatsaraṃ gā rakṣayate*, III, 1, 6, where the use of the historic present is to be noted; *ahorātre varṣati*, III, 1, 2, where the meaning is 'day and night continuously'. The cognate accusative appears in *atyāyam āyan*, II, 1, 1, and *kākakulāyagandhikam vāyati*, III, 2, 4. Other uses are: *sarvaṃ madhyato dadhe*, II, 2, 1; *enam atikṣaranti*, II, 2, 2; *jyotiḥ prakāśam karoti*, II, 1, 8; *ahaḥ śamset*, III, 2, 4. More unusual is the use of the accusative as if in apposition to the main sentence, as in *īryatāṃ cābhyutthānaṃ ca*, I, 5, 1. The instrumental is used with *√stu*: *mahāvratena stuvīta*, III, 2, 4. The dative is used with *√arc*: *sarvebhyo bhūtebhyo 'rcata*, II, 2, 2, and *sarvebhyo 'rdheebhyo 'rcata*, *ibid.*, which is probably an extension of the usual *dativus commodi* found in the same passage with *kṣarati*. The date of 'work contemplated' appears in *puṇyebhyaḥ karmabhyaḥ pratidhīyate*, II, 5. Other datives used predicatively are practically equivalent to infinitives, see below. In *sarvebhyo bhūtebhyo dadṛṣe*, II, 1, 3; 8, the case may be dative or ablative. The ablative follows *anyat* in *anyat kuśalād brāhmaṇaṃ brūyāt*, III, 1, 3 (cf. I, 1, 2), when the double accusative is interesting. In III, 2, 4, *ātmana evāsyā tat kṛtaṃ bhavati*, *ātmana* may stand for *ātmanah*, a predicative genitive, or for *ātmane*, a *dativus commodi*; the former view is supported by V, 3, 3, *ātmano haivāsya tac chastaṃ bhavati*. In either case *asya* is to be taken probably directly with *kṛtaṃ* and *śastaṃ*; cf. *naḥ proktam*, III, 2, 1; *asya-uditam*, II, 1, 5. Worthy of note is the construction in



III, 2, 1, *tasyaitasya trayasyāsthānām majjñām parvaṇām iti*. *Iti* cannot here mean 'et cetera', and the most probable explanation is that the preceding genitive attracted the subsequent nouns. Compare the not infrequent use of *iti* with the accusative for *iti* with the nominative found several times in as early a work as the *Bṛhaddevatā*. For the locative there is the rare sense 'for the sake of' in *etasyāṃ smopaniṣadi*, III, 1, 6. The use of the accusative and dative with  $\sqrt{ād}$  may be noted, I, 1, 1. In the verses in II, 3, 8, *astripumān* is used instead of the accusative with *bruvan*.

With regard to prepositions, *ā* is separated from the ablative by several words in *āhaṃ mām devebhyo veda oṃad devān veda*, II, 1, 8. The phrase *ubhayam antareṇa* in III, 1, 3, is used as an undeclinable noun in the accusative and locative. See also Index V, s. *vv. adhi, abhi, ā, parastād, pari*.

With reference to the use of the numbers, *naḥ* in III, 2, 1, may denote the school of the teacher, Śākalya, and may be contrasted with the singular of the Buddhist style, *evaṃ me sutam*. Compare *iti naḥ śrutih*, *Bṛhaddevatā*, VI, 148. The same plural, which is the source of the plural of authorship, appears passim in *Āraṇyaka* III, in the verb.

The **use of the tenses** of the indicative is of special importance, as it enables us to confirm the views already arrived at as to the date of the *Āraṇyaka*. The case of the aorist is the simplest, and may be taken first. In the whole *Āraṇyaka* I-III, the **aorist** has its true use in the *Brāhmaṇas*, viz. that of a proximate past. The examples are: *udagāt*, I, 3, 4; *samāgāt*, II, 1, 5; *samagāt*, III, 1, 1; *upāgāh*, II, 2, 3; *adarśam*, II, 4, 3; *acyoṣṭhāh*, III, 1, 3; *ārah*, III, 1, 3; *samadhām*, III, 1, 4; *samadhitsiṣam*, III, 2, 5; *agamat*, III, 1, 6; *avocāma*, III, 2, 2; 3; *avocata*, II, 2, 2; *aśāri*, II, 1, 4; *prātāyi*, II, 1, 5. The exceptions are: *abhiprāgāt*, which occurs twice in II, 2, 2<sup>1</sup>, and *pādī*, which also occurs twice in that passage. In these cases the sense perhaps rather is equivalent to a present than to a narrative imperfect. *Abhivyaikhyat*, II, 4, 3, must be as narrative aorist, but the form is so extraordinary that it is almost certain that *abhivyaikṣat*<sup>2</sup> should be read, for the *Parasmaipada* of  $\sqrt{ikṣ}$  is found though sporadically. The regularity of the use of the aorist is conclusive for a relatively early date.

<sup>1</sup> See note *ad loc.*

cf. Hillebrandt, *Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra*,

<sup>2</sup> For similar confusions of *kṣ* and *khy* I, p. 249, and note *ad loc.*

Whitney<sup>1</sup> has shown that the use of the imperfect and perfect as narrative tenses varies greatly in the several Brāhmaṇas, and it is now<sup>2</sup> usually considered fair to regard the increasing use of the perfect as an indication of relatively late date. The facts of the case are as follows. In Āraṇyaka I there are seven occurrences of the imperfect from five roots (*abhavat* (3),<sup>3</sup> *udayachat*, *samajānata*, *apāhata*, *vyāharat*). Of perfects, omitting *āha* and *veda* which are used frequently, as throughout the literature, as presents, there occur *bībhāya*, I, 3, 4; *dādhāra*, I, 5, 2; *vivyāca*, I, 5, 2, used in a present sense. This is probably a sign of early date, since in the Ṛgveda the present sense of the perfect is decidedly frequent. Of narrative perfects *āsa* occurs twice for a special reason, I, 2, 2, and *vivyāca* once in I, 2, 2, the latter in connexion with *udayachat*. It may, however, have a present sense. In Āraṇyaka II, 1-3, there are sixty-seven occurrences<sup>4</sup> from twenty-three forms of nineteen roots (*āyan* (3), *apadyata* (3), *abhavat* (7), *abhavatām*, *abhavan*, *abravīt* (3), *abruvan* (6), *asarpāt* (2), *aśrayata* (2), *ahimsanta* (2), *udakrāmat* (5), *āsta* (5), *anayanta*, *atāyata*, *arcat* (4), *arcata* (4), *āsīt* (2), *atrāyata* (2), *apavayata* (2), *aśīryata*, *aviśat* (5), *aśayat* (4), *atiṣṭhat*). There are also in the Ślokas in II, 3, 8, the forms *avindan* and *atṛpyan* (2). On the other hand the only perfects used in narrative are (except in II, 2, 3 and 4), *babhūvuh*, II, 1, 8, and *parābabhūvuh*, *ibid.*, and II, 1, 1, three occurrences of one root (cf. the use of *āsa* twice in Āraṇyaka I). In II, 2, 3 and 4, however, no imperfects occur, but seventeen instances from seven forms of six roots of perfects occur in narrative (in II, 2, 3, *upaṇiṣasasāda*, *śaśaṃsa* (3), *upeyāya* (3), *uvāca* (6); in II, 2, 4, *babhūva*, *lebhe*, *provāca* (2)). It is impossible to assume that this can be accidental, and the only fair conclusion is that these sections are not by the same hand as the rest of II, 2, a conclusion which runs in no way counter to their contents, which stand in no organic relation to II, 2, 1 or 2. The latter fact would, in so incoherent a work as II, 2, be quite insufficient as an argument for difference of authorship, but the argument from syntax seems irresistible. It may also be pointed out that in the parallel passage to II, 2, 3, the dialogue of Viśvāmitra and Indra, in Śāṅkhāyana

<sup>1</sup> *Transactions Am. Phil. Ass.*, 1892, pp. 5-34; above, p. 32, n. 6.

<sup>2</sup> See e.g. Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 205.

<sup>3</sup> The numbers in brackets denote the times of occurrence. For reff. see Index.

<sup>4</sup> The prefixes are omitted.



Āraṇyaka I, 6, there occur—as usually in the rest of the Āraṇyaka—perfects, *upajagāma* (cf. *upēyāya*), *uvāca*, and *ūce*. There must be a common source for the two narratives despite the difference of their present forms, and it must have used perfects in narrative. Besides these narrative perfects, perfects in the present sense occur in *dādhāra*, II, 1, 7; *dadyše*, II, 1, 3; 8, both of which are conjoined with present tenses.

In Āraṇyaka II, 4-6, occur sixty-one examples of the imperfect from twenty-three forms of nineteen roots (*āsīt*, *asṛjata*, *ikṣata* (5), *amūrchayat*, *atapat* (2), *abhidyata* (5), *abhidyetām* (3), *apatan*, *ārjat*, *abravīt* (2), *abrūtām*, *abruvan* (4), *anayat* (3), *aviśat* (5), *aviśan* (3), *ajāyata* (2), *ajighāṃsat*, *ajighṛkṣat* (8), *aśaknot* (7), *āvayat*, *apadyata*, *apaśyat*, *abhavat* (2). The only narrative perfect is *uvāca*, II, 5, and there is one present perfect, *dadhe*, II, 2, 1.

In Āraṇyaka III occur *aśraṃsata* and *adadhāt* (2), III, 1, 6, and the present perfects, *mene*, III, 1, 1; *viduḥ*, III, 2, 5.

The two periphrastic perfects, *upāsām cakrire*, II, 1, 8, and *vedayāṃ cakre*, III, 1, 1, may both be narrative perfects, but the latter may be a present perfect.

The results may be tabulated as follows, omitting periphrastic forms; the Ślokas in II, 3, 8, are not taken into account. The numbers in brackets denote the number of roots.

Āraṇyaka.	Imperfects.	Present Perfects.	Narrative Perfects.
I,	7 (5)	3 (3)	3 (2, <i>āsa</i> and <i>vivya</i> (?))
II, 1; 2, 1-2; 3	67 (19)	2 (2)	3 (1, <i>babhūvuh</i> )
II, 2, 3-4	None	None	17 (6)
II, 4-6	61 (19)	1 (1)	None

The fair conclusion is that the Āraṇyaka is older than the later books, VI-VIII, of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, as is indeed probable in view of the much more developed narrative style of the Śunaḥśepa legend. It is probably older than parts (if not the whole) of the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, viz. I-V, X, XII-XIV, including the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, which uses the narrative perfect throughout. In view of the copious and rich style of that Upaniṣad, with its wealth of metaphor, ease of motion, and dignity, it seems impossible to doubt that it belongs to a much later period than the Aitareya, just as we have seen that its philosophic content goes far beyond that of the Aitareya. Bearing in mind that the Bṛhadāraṇyaka shows considerable evidence of the activity of the Kṣatriyas, and that

the perfect as a narrative tense is common in the Epic, it may be suggested that the origin of the narrative use in the Brāhmaṇas is to be found in a borrowing from the style of the old Itihāsa literature. It is perhaps not without significance that such legends as that of Śunaḥśepa, Purūravas and Urvaśi (Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI, 5, 1), Cyavana (ibid., IV, 1, 5), and, in the Aitareya Āraṇyaka itself, that of Viśvāmitra, II, 2, 3, should be told in perfects. It may be noted that in the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XV, 17 sq., the Śunaḥśepa legend is also set out in perfects. The Brāhmaṇa use of the perfect is as a present, while both usages are found in the earlier language of the R̥gveda Saṃhitā. The older is undoubtedly the Brāhmaṇa use, as it corresponds most closely with the use of the Greek perfect as a completed action or state (cf. Monro, *Homeric Grammar*<sup>2</sup>, p. 31).

The **future indicative** is used in its ordinary way as denoting future time in assertions or questions, but the so-called second future never occurs, as it does, e.g. in the Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa.

The **optative** is of comparatively very frequent occurrence. (1) Its use as denoting wish is infrequent, the subjunctive usually being preferred, but (2) its use in directions as a mild imperative occurs passim. (3) It is also used in questions to express doubt, precisely as is used the subjunctive with which it alternates in II, 4, 3: *katham nv idam mad ṛte syāt katareṇa prapadyai*. (4) Its most characteristic use in the Āraṇyaka is in the protasis and apodosis of conditional sentences. In the apodosis it may denote either direction or the potential. In all cases the condition is one referring to the future, and is of the type, 'If A happens, then B will happen, or should be done.' Examples of two potentials are *yadi-aśnuvīta-manyeta*, II, 3, 3; so III, 1, 6; (with *yad* = if) II, 3, 6; III, 2, 2; (with *yathā*) III, 1, 3; 4. Examples of a potential protasis and imperative apodosis are: (with *yadī*) I, 1, 1; III, 1, 3; 6; 2, 4; 6; (with relatives) I, 2, 2; III, 2, 4; 5, and without any particle, *paśyet-dṛśyeyātām-vidyāt*, III, 2, 4; with double protasis, *upaśṛṇuyāt-yadā śṛṇuyāt-vidyāt*, III, 2, 4. (5) Arising from this potential use the optative appears as an indefinite, like the Greek subjunctive and optative or the Latin subjunctive. This is possibly the explanation of the difficult phrases in II, 1, 2: *na tasyeṣe yan nādyād yad vainam nādyuḥ*; II, 1, 5: *na tasyeṣe yan mahyam na dadyuḥ*, though the meaning might be merely a future. Definitely indefinite is III, 2, 1, *yathā śālavamśe sarve 'nyā vamsāḥ*.



*samāhitāḥ syuh*, since the apodosis is an assertion of fact. (6) An optative of characteristic, that is of result, is found in III, 2, 3, *brahmāṇam-kurvīta yo-paśyet*. It will be seen that none of these usages offer any difficulty of explanation on the now generally accepted theory<sup>1</sup> that the optative is originally a weak future in sense.

As in other languages the **indicative** can be used **modally**, and in conditional sentences this use is well developed in the *Āraṇyaka*. In II, 3, 3, *yady antarikṣalokam aśnute 'ty enam manyate* is clearly modal, and is followed by *yadi-aśnuvīta-manyeta*. So *yatra vihiyete-vidyāt* in III, 2, 4. Hence indicatives are sometimes combined with optatives in protases of conditional sentences; the following occur in III, 2, 4: *yatra-dṛśyate-paśyet-na paśyet-paśyeta, vidyāt*; *yatra-dṛśyate-abhikhyāyeta-paśyet, vidyāt*; *upekṣeta-tad yathā-dṛśyante-yadā na paśyet, vidyāt*; III, 1, 4, *ya-upavadet-cen manyeta-āha, brūyāt*. The indicative also occurs in conditions where the fact is asserted in the apodosis (with *yadi*), e.g. II, 4, 3, or when the protasis and apodosis refer to the future, e.g. *yasmin paśyati-bhaviṣyati*, II, 1, 4.

The only case of a condition in the past which was not fulfilled occurs in II, 4, 3, *yad hainad vācāgrahaiṣyad abhivyāhṛtya haivānnam atrapṣyat*, &c., where the conditional is correctly employed. This accuracy in the use of the conditional and generally in the use of the optative is characteristic of an early date.

The **subjunctive** is of comparatively frequent occurrence, usually in the first person. It denotes (a) resolve: *praviśāma, utkrāmāma*, II, 1, 4; *srjai*, II, 4, 1; 3; *adāma* (in a relative clause), II, 4, 2; (b) desire: *asāni*, I, 5, 2; II, 1, 4; 2, 2; *asat*, I, 4, 3; 5, 1; *āpnavāni*, I, 4, 3; 5, 2; *avaruṇadhāi*, I, 4, 3; *aśnavai*, I, 4, 3; (c) doubt in questions: *bravāni*, III, 2, 6; *prapadyai*, II, 4, 3; *vāvadiṣat*, II, 4, 3, if this is so taken; (d) with *ned*: *ucchidyai*, I, 2, 4; *asat*, I, 5, 2.

The **imperative** occurs several times, but there is no instance of the use of *mā*, except in II, 7, 1, which is not genuine, where *mā prahāsīḥ* (or *prahāsīt*) is found. The *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, XI, 6, has *mā* with the future.

The **infinitive** in *tum* occurs only twice, in both cases with the verb

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Goodwin, *Greek Moods and Tenses*, Teutonic, and Balto-Slavic (Lindsay, App. A. This would account for the disappearance of one of the tenses in Latin, *Latin Language*, pp. 511-516).

*śak*, *saṃdhātum nāśakah*, III, 1, 4; *aśaknot-grahītum*, II, 4, 3. This is consistent with the early date of the Āraṇyaka. On the other hand, as in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, *īśvara* is construed with the infinitive in *toḥ*, *bhavitoḥ*, II, 3, 5; 6; *caritoḥ*, I, 1, 1; *praitoḥ*, II, 3, 5. Mention should also be made of a series of datives formed from verbal roots by the affix *tyai* which serve as predicative datives signifying that to which an active tends, viz. *klptyai*, I, 3, 8; *abhijityai*, I, 1, 2; *prajātyai*, I, 2, 4; 3, 1; 4; 4, 1; *saṃtatyai*, II, 5; *āptyai*, I, 1, 3; 2, 1; 3; 3, 8; *abhyāptyai*, I, 4, 2; *upāptyai*, I, 3, 7; *avaruddhyai*, I, 1, 2, &c.; *apahatyai* (probably), I, 2, 2. The use of these forms is not precisely that of infinitives, but it is analogous and forms a distinct feature of the style of the Āraṇyaka. Similar forms occur in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa.

The **injunctive**, except in the form of the second person plural imperative, occurs only in *arjayan*, I, 5, 2.

In the use of **participles** the most characteristic feature is their use in place of finite verbs, a use arising from their employment as predicative adjectives. In the following cases the substantive verb is expressed: *uktam bhavati*, I, 3, 8; II, 1, 5; 8; III, 2, 4; *uditam bhavati*, II, 1, 5; *viṣṭo'smi*, II, 2, 3; *vyāptam bhavati*, III, 1, 3; *saṃāhitāḥ syuḥ*, III, 2, 1; *kṛtam bhavati*, III, 2, 4; *apikhitā bhavati*, III, 2, 5; *anuśaktā gsat*, I, 5, 2. In all these cases the expression means more than the corresponding form of the finite verb would have conveyed, and denotes a completed action whose results persist in the present. The accurate use of these forms is a distinct sign of early style. The same remark applies to most of the cases of the use without the copula: *sthitam*, I, 1, 1; *pratiṣṭhitam*, I, 1, 2; *pratiṣṭhitāḥ*, I, 2, 2; 4, 2; *pratiṣṭhitā*, I, 3, 4; *viṣṭāḥ*, *viṣṭāḥ*, I, 3, 8; *āviṣṭāḥ*, *niviṣṭāḥ*, II, 1, 1; *śritāḥ*, I, 5, 3; II, 1, 4; *channaḥ*, II, 1, 6; *sṛṣṭau*, *sṛṣṭāḥ*, II, 1, 7; *āttam*, II, 3, 6; *āvṛtam*, II, 1, 6; *viṣṭabdhāḥ*, *viṣṭabdhāni*, II, 1, 6; *sitam*, II, 1, 6; *niviṣṭāḥ*, II, 3, 3; *saṃāhitāḥ*, III, 2, 1; *vyastāḥ*, III, 2, 4; *samparetāḥ*, III, 2, 4; in these instances the effect persists into the present, and no examples of a use like *dr̥ṣṭā* = 'she was seen', occur. In II, 4, 3, *yadi vācābhivyaḥṛtam*, &c., the sense approximates very closely to a mere present passive indicative.

There is no instance of the participle in *vat* formed from the past participle passive, which is so common later. That participle occurs also combined with the participle of *√as*: *duṭāḥ satyāḥ*, I, 4, 1; *siktam sat*, I, 4, 2.



In one case the present participle is combined with the  $\sqrt{\text{as}}$ : *tapann asmi*, II, 2, 3, expressing a continuing present. It is used with  $\sqrt{\text{man}}$  in *śaknuvan manyeta-aśaknuvantam manyeta*, III, 1, 4, where the change of case is remarkable. Note also *anūdgr̥hnan samdadhad varṣati*, III, 1, 2.

The **gerund** appears equivalent to a present participle in *himkṛtya pratipadyate*, I, 3, 1, where the action of the verb and participle are simultaneous (cf. my note on the gerund, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 164).

The **gerundive** *karaṇīyam* is used with  $\sqrt{\text{man}}$  in III, 2, 4. Here may be noted the strange form *abhivyāhārṣan*, III, 1, 6, which has the sense of a future participle and the form of a participle of the *s* aorist. No correction seems probable as *hārṣyan* (cf. Whitney, *Translation of Atharvaveda*, p. 846) is impossible.

The use of **conjunctive particles** is marked by the number of combinations allowed as contrasted with the comparatively barren character of the later language. In most of them *ha* plays some part. Examples are: *ha vai*, I, 2, 1, &c.; II, 1, 2, &c.; III, 1, 2, &c.; *na ha vai*, I, 2, 1; 5, 2; III, 2, 2; *u haiva*, I, 3, 8; II, 2, 4; *evam u haiva*, I, 3, 4; 8; *atho-ha vai*, I, 4, 2; *haiva*, I, 5, 2; II, 1, 4; 8; 3, 7; 4, 3; *u ha sma*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *evam u ha sma*, III, 1, 2; *ha sma vai*, I, 1, 3; II, 1, 5; 8; 2, 4; III, 2, 5; 6; *ha sma*, II, 3, 5; 7; III, 1, 3; 2, 1; *ha tu*, II, 3, 5; *atha ha*, III, 1, 1; 5; *u ha-u*, I, 3, 3; *athāpi*, III, 2, 4; *atha khalu*, III, 1, 5; 2, 5; *athātah*, I, 4, 1, &c.; *atho*, I, 1, 2, &c.; *u khalu*, III, 1, 6; *u eva*, II, 1, 1; 2, 1; III, 1, 3; *tv eva*, I, 1, 1; 5, 2; II, 1, 4; *tasmād hāpy etarhi*, II, 1, 8; *utāpi*, III, 1, 2; *ahaiva* (?), II, 1, 2.

Of single **conjunctions** the use of *ca* is most important. The regular use is *ca-ca*, a formalism distinctly indicative of age; see I, 1, 4; 2, 3; 3, 1; 2, 4; 5; 7; 5, 1; II, 1, 2; 6; 7; 8; 2, 2; 6, 1; III, 1, 1; 6; 2, 3; and in I, 1, 2, *chandaḥ* is in apposition to *br̥hatīm ca virājam ca*. A single *ca* is practically restricted to numerals, e.g. *vimśatiś ca*, II, 3, 6. In I, 2, 2, is found *ca-ca-ca*; and in II, 6; III, 1, 6, *ca-ca-ca-ca*. In the Ślokas in II, 3, 8, appears *yad-yac ca-yac ca-yad u ca*. These facts render the usual division of *vayāmsi vaṅgāvagadhās cerapādāḥ*, II, 1, 1, into *ca irapādāḥ* excessively improbable. *Iva* is used frequently (see reff. in Index V) in a sense hardly differing from *eva*, as is also the case in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, though it can always be translated 'as it were', merely modifying the literal sense of the verb; cf. I, 1, 2:

*cirataṛam iva vā-āgachanti*. *Vā* has the sense 'indeed' as well as that of 'or', but a single *vā* is more common than a double *vā*, unlike the case of *ca*. *Hanta* is used with the subjunctive, II, 1, 4, as in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa. *Iti* has as usual a large variety of uses, and is never misplaced. *Cana* in III, 1, 3; 4, following *na* appears to have the force of 'even'. *Kāmam*, I, 1, 1; III, 2, 4; *vata*, II, 2, 2; 4, 2; and *vāva*, I, 3, 4, &c., also occur. *Aha* is contrasted with *u* in II, 3, 7.

The same relative wealth is seen in the case of **correlative particles**. The most common form is *yad-tad*, denoting time or cause, or comparison, I, 1, 1; 3, 1; II, 1, 4; 2, 2; 5, 1; III, 1, 3; variants are *yat-tena*, III, 2, 6; *yat-tasmāt*, II, 1, 6; 2, 1; 2; 3, 6; III, 2, 6, more definitely signifying cause. So *yad hi-tasmāt*, II, 1, 3. A characteristic and frequent type of sentence is I, 1, 3, *tad yan mādhuḥchandasaṃ śamsati sarveṣāṃ kāmānāṃ avaruddhyai*; cf. I, 2, 2, &c. *Yathā* is usually balanced by *evam*, II, 1, 6; 3, 5; III, 1, 2; 2, 1; 5; it stands alone in *yathāṇḍam*, II, 4, 1; *yathā svam aṅgam*, II, 5, 1. It is balanced by *tathā* in *yathā prthivī tathā*, &c., in II, 1, 2. In I, 3, 1, is *yathā vai-evam*. *Yatra* either has no correlative, as in III, 2, 4, or is balanced by *tad*, II, 1, 8; *tad utāpi*, III, 1, 2; *tadā*, III, 1, 6. *Yadā* is balanced by *atha*, II, 5; *yadi ha vā api* by *haiva*, II, 1, 5; *yad ha* by *haiva*, II, 4, 3. In III, 1, 3; 4, occurs the phrase *yathā tu kathā ca-brūyād-abhyāśam eva yat tathā syāt*, where the words *abhyāśam eva yat tathā* practically form a compound adverb.

Finally it may be mentioned that the **grammatical terms** *yoṣan* and *vṛṣan* are used for feminine and masculine, I, 2, 4, as in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VI, 2.

A comparison of the forms and usages cited above with the valuable list of similar forms in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa given by Aufrecht<sup>1</sup> shows conclusively that the Āraṇyaka stands on nearly the same footing as the first five books of the Brāhmaṇa. It is not so old, e.g. it has fewer forms of the subjunctive, no infinitives in *-e* or *-aḥ* or *-tavai*, and none in *toḥ* after *ā* or *purā*, but it is not much younger. The use of the narrative tenses is some argument for its being older than Books VI-VIII, to which otherwise it stands close in point of language, though it is much less developed in style.

<sup>1</sup> *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, pp. 427-431.



The conclusion arrived at above on grounds of doctrine that the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka I, II, is later than the Aitareya Āraṇyaka I-III, is confirmed by the linguistic tests. Generally the two works correspond most closely in vocabulary, and confirm the view that they must be derived ultimately from a common source. For example, Dr. Friedländer well explains *atiharān* in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 7, as 'laying across', as it means in Aitareya Āraṇyaka, V, 1, 4, and not, as explained by the commentator on the Śrauta Sūtra, in the sense 'withdrawing'. Probably the common source of the two Āraṇyakas had the word which has survived only in the Sūtra part of the Aitareya, but in both the Sūtra and Āraṇyaka of the Śāṅkhāyanas. With the forms quoted above may be compared the irregular sandhi *niṣ tad*, I, 8; the noun and adjective forms, *ātman*, I, 8; II, 1; *etasyai devatāyai* (gen.), I, 8; *adhitarām*, I, 7; *udyatatarah*, I, 7; the datives of end served, *bhogyāya*, I, 8; *śāntyai*, I, 4; *bhīṣajyāyai*, I, 4; *avāptyai*, *āptyai*, I, 2; II, 6; the constructions *īśvaraḥ-nāparājetoh*, I, 8; *gamiṣyanti bhavati*, I, 8; *upāptā āsan*, I, 6; *śaṁsiṣyate*, I, 5 (cf. *śaṁsiṣyantam*, Aitareya, II, 2, 3); *yathā-parivyayet-dhatte*, II, 16; 1 ad fin.; the use of the particles *u vai*, I, 1; 3; *na ha vai*, I, 8; *ha vai*, I, 5; 7; *tathā ha*, II, 1; *u ha*, I, 6; II, 10; the construction of the sentence with *tad yad*, II, 10; the irregular numeral *sapta viṁśatisatāni*, II, 10. As has been seen above the narrative perfect occurs in II, 6, the parallel passage to Aitareya, II, 2, 3, and it occurs also in II, 17 (*provāca*, *jijīva*), which may be compared with II, 2, 4, as far as the *provāca* is concerned. Whereas, however, the perfects in the Aitareya are marked exceptions, there is no other narrative tense in Śāṅkhāyana. Further, the language of the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka is much more accurate and modern than that of the Aitareya. Instead of *ṣaṭtriṁśataṁ sahasrāṇi* the correct *ṣaṭtriṁśat* is found, II, 17; there are no subjunctives other than those of the first person, which occur with *ned*, I, 1, as in the Aitareya; there are no irregular forms either of nouns, pronouns, or verbs, save those mentioned above; the aorist is only represented by *avocam* in I, 6. *Ca* is used in *śastreṇa ca vratacarayā*, I, 6, in a way not paralleled in the Aitareya, and in that chapter occurs the form *vijijñāsam eva cakre*, a periphrastic perfect of the desiderative, a form elsewhere practically confined to the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa. After making full allowance for the difference of length, the posteriority of the Śāṅkhāyana is almost certain. If, as seems probable,



*brahma*<sup>1</sup> and *brāhmaṇī* in I, 5; 6, refer to Brahman and his wife, who perhaps owes her origin to these passages, then a strong argument is added for the later date of the Śāṅkhāyana, since the Aitareya does not even certainly know Brahman, since the passages in which *brahmā* certainly appears refer to the Brahman priest, and in all the others *brahma* may equally well be read. Brahman, however, appears in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 33, 1. Books VII–XIII of the Śāṅkhāyana are still later.

**Āraṇyaka V** is written in the regular **Sūtra style**. It is practically impossible to understand it without a commentary, for as usual the rules are condensed into unintelligibility. Characteristic is the weight thrown on single words and phrases, e.g. *ajapayā vṛtā*, V, 1, 4; *asvāhākāraiḥ*, V, 1, 1, and the frequent use of gerunds, besides the piling up of adjectives and adverbial phrases.

In Sandhi it appears that *au* before *u* becomes *ā*, although here, as in Āraṇyaka I–III, the MSS. and the Ānandāśrama edition vary. Unusual forms are *ātman*, V, 1, 6; *uttare* (loc.), V, 1, 2; *vadatyaḥ*, without *n*, V, 1, 1; *ardharcyāḥ*, V, 2, 5, meaning 'to be recited by half-verses'; *bṛhatikāram*, V, 1, 6; *gāyatrikāram*, V, 3, 1; *trītyavarjam*, V, 1, 6; *sa-mutaḥ*, V, 1, 3. Of desideratives occur *jijīviṣet*, V, 3, 1; *jigamiṣet*, V, 1, 4; and, as amended, a desiderative causal *cikīrtayiṣet*, V, 3, 3. The imperative *prabrūtāt* occurs, in a direction, in V, 1, 5. The feminine genitive form is *āḥ*, not *ai*.

More characteristic is the **pregnant use of case constructions**, when for the sake of brevity everything is made to depend on the mere case relation, e.g., (accusative) *avabrtham preṅkham hareyuḥ*, II, 3, 2; *apra-kampi*, V, 1, 3, in quasi-apposition to the sentence; (dative) *niṣkevalyāya stuvate*, V, 1, 5; *avaśyakarmane jigamiṣet*, V, 1, 4; (abl.) *hotrāś catur-viṃśat*, V, 1, 1; (gen.) *mahāvratasya pañcaviṃśatim sāmīdhenyaḥ*, V, 1, 1, where the irregular *pañcaviṃśatim* is also noteworthy; (abl. and gen.) *caturviṃśān marutvatīyasyātānaḥ*, V, 1, 1; (loc.) *dīkṣite yajamānaśabdaḥ*, V, 1, 5; *na vatse ca na trītye* ('in the case of'), V, 3, 3; (loc. and instr.) *anyāsu cet samāmnātāsu rājanena sāmānā stuvīran*, V, 1, 6; cf. *bhuyāśiṣu cet stuvīran*, V, 3, 2; other uses are the dative after *dhatte* with *saṃ*, *saṃ pakṣayoh patanāya*, V, 1, 6; an apposition of whole and part *śākhayā mūladeśena*, V, 1, 4; and *abuddham-asya*, V, 3, 2. Very strange is

<sup>1</sup> The form *brāhmaṇī* is curious, and and his wife'. Cf. Jaiminīya Upaniṣad the passage may mean 'the Brahman Brāhmaṇa, III, 4, 9.



*śriyaṃ gor aśvam ātman dhatte*, V, 1, 6, where *goḥ* may be a possessive genitive or a genitive of description.

In the **verb** occur two subjunctives in directions put in the mouth of the sacrificer, *parivrajātha*, V, 1, 1; *ninayātha*, V, 1, 2. In V, 3, 2, purpose is expressed by *yathā na* with *hanīśyasīti*, a curious but not rare (e.g. in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa) use. The optative occurs in directions frequently, and in both protasis and apodosis of conditions, (a) with potential force in both, e.g. *yāvātīr-āvaperan tāvanti-jijīviṣet*, V, 3, 1; (b) with imperative force in the apodosis (with *yatra-tatra*, and *yatra tukāmaṃ-tatra*), V, 3, 3; (with *yadī*), V, 1, 4; 3, 3; (with *ced*), V, 1, 6; (with a relative), V, 1, 5. In V, 1, 4, *yadā śrāmyet* is probably indefinite; in V, 3, 3, *yady api-adhiyāt-na snātako bhavati*, the indicative in the apodosis probably expresses the certainty of the result; in V, 3, 2, the apodosis to *cyaveta ced* is curtailed; so also in V, 2, 1.

With regard to **participles** *jāgarito bhavati*, V, 1, 1, and *upakṣpto bhavati*, V, 1, 3, both denote a past action resulting in a present state. *Upālambhaniyaḥ*, V, 1, 1, is a sign of comparatively late date, the earlier form being *upālambhyaḥ*, cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, 1, 1. No infinitives occur, but many gerunds, e.g. V, 3, 3, and in all about 36 instances are found. In place of an infinitive there is in V, 3, 2, *ījyāyai sampreṣitaḥ*. The past participle passive in *yathetam*, V, 1, 2; 3, is simply the equivalent of a past indicative.

The use of **particles** is comparatively restricted. There occur the following combinations: *atha ha*, V, 2, 4; *ihaiva, iho eva*, V, 1, 6; *ha sma*, V, 3, 3; *haiva*, V, 3, 3; *no eva*, V, 3, 3; *iva* is equal to *eva* in V, 3, 2; *aha* occurs in V, 1, 6; *khalu* in V, 1, 6; *kāmam* in V, 3, 3; *punar api* in V, 1, 4. In the case of *ca* the single use is the more common, as compared with Āraṇyaka I-III; in *na vatse ca na tṛtīye*, V, 3, 3, the *ca* may connect with the previous sentence, or be like *śastreṇa ca brahmacaryayā* in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 6. In V, 1, 1, *etais caivāsvāhākārair (mantrair) ehy-madhu iti ca* occurs. In V, 3, 3, is *na-cana*.

Among other signs of late date may be reckoned the frequency of the locative absolute, the use of adverbial expressions like *antarvedī*, V, 1, 1; *anuparikramaṇam*, V, 1, 4; *viharanāprabhṛti*, V, 1, 1; *ananvṛcam*, V, 1, 1; the plural of authorship as found in *nidarśanāyodāharīṣyāmaḥ*, V, 3, 3; and the use of gerunds like *nāpitena kārayitvā*, V, 3, 3.

The same style and diction are found in Āśvalāyana's Śrauta Sūtra, which, like Āraṇyaka V, consists of a disconnected string of sentences, which, when consisting of more than a few words, are constructed by heaping adjectives on adjectives, adding adverbial phrases, using gerunds, and piling up cases in different senses. There is no independent evidence to show that there is any great difference in time between the Āraṇyaka V and the Śrauta Sūtra.

There seems no reason to suppose that the Āraṇyaka V is not more ancient than the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra XVII, XVIII. Hillebrandt has, indeed, suggested that the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra is older than Āśvalāyana, and although the last two Adhyāyas may be of different date from the first sixteen, still they are hardly likely to be later, so that, if Hillebrandt's conclusions are sound, the Sūtra XVII, XVIII, will be older than the Āraṇyaka V. But Hillebrandt's reasons are not convincing.<sup>1</sup> He points out that, as Weber has said, parts of the Sūtra are written in the Brāhmaṇa style. This refers mainly to Adhyāyas XV, XVI, which contain *inter alia* the Śunaḥśepa legend. But even assuming that these books are part of the original Sūtra, it cannot be denied that the version of the legend is in no way original; it is merely the same as that in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, and differs so little from it that both versions must be descended from a common source. The part of the Aitareya where it occurs is decidedly later than the first five books. The Brāhmaṇa-like style is therefore not to be attributed to Suyajña, the author of the Sūtra. Secondly, he refers to the description of the Aśvamedha and of the Puruṣamedha as signs of early age. But this argument depends greatly for its force on acceptance of the theory that Ṛgveda, X, 18, 8, can be explained from Śrauta Sūtra, XVI, 13, and this view is not now usually accepted.<sup>2</sup> Thirdly, he points out that the Sūtra is not written with the full brevity of the latest Sūtra style. This is true, but the argument is really in favour of the priority of Āraṇyaka V. For that work is written in a style less condensed than that of Suyajña, and certainly less condensed than that of Books XVII, XVIII. Further, it must be admitted that as a Sūtra these books are much superior to the Āraṇyaka V. The ritual directions are far more

<sup>1</sup> Cf. my note, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 410-413.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Whitney, *Translation of Athar-*

*vaveda*, p. 848; Oldenberg, *Gött. Gel. Anz.*, 1907, p. 218, n. 1; see, however, Lanman, *Sanskrit Reader*, p. 385.



precise and detailed, contrasting with the brevity of the directions in the Āraṇyaka, which mainly concerns itself with a description of the litanies. In the Sūtra the whole process is gone through methodically while the Āraṇyaka covers only a part of the field. The style is of the usual Sūtra type; it is not in any marked manner more recent than that of the Āraṇyaka, but it contains practically no irregular forms. With the forms quoted above from the Āraṇyaka the following facts may be compared. The Sandhi of *a + r* is *ar*, XVII, 5, 9; 7, 8; of *āu + u* is *ā*, XVII, 10, 5; 16, 5; while *tasyāḥ* occurs in XVII, 3, 2, as always in Aitareya Āraṇyaka V, *tasyai* is found XVIII, 2, 4; 19, and *prathamāyai*, *dviṭīyāyai*, *uttamāyai*, XVIII, 20. In XVII, 3, 12; 15, occur *ghāṭarīḥ* and *ghāṭakarkarīḥ*, nominatives with the *s* preserved. The locative is used with  $\sqrt{stu}$  in XVIII, 2, 2; 22, 7, and extended to  $\sqrt{kr}$  in *atichandaḥsu kuryuḥ*, XVIII, 22, 9. Adverbial phrases besides *antarvedi* are *prasalavi*, XVII, 14, 16; 15, 4; *antaḥsadaḥ*, XVII, 4, 3; *nānā badhnanti*, XVII, 3, 8; while *jaghanena* is used with the accusative, XVII, 5, 8.

Of verbal forms may be noted *pratyāgrṇītāt*, XVII, 14, 3; *prabrūtāt*, XVII, 14, 4; *vininiṣamānaḥ*, I, 7, 3; *paryeṣyānto bhavanti*, XVII, 4, 8; *bhokṣyamāṇā(h) bhavanti*, *dhakṣyānto (bhavanti)*, XVIII, 24, 14; 15; the gerundives *prāyaṇīyaḥ*, *udayanīyaḥ*, XVIII, 24, 2; *kāryam*, XVII, 6, 2; *deyam*, XVIII, 24, 32; the gerunds in *am*, *punarādāyam*, XVIII, 4, 3; 4; 5, 3; 4; *kakupkāram*, XVIII, 4, 3; 4; 5, 3; 4; *pañktiśaṃsam*, XVIII, 6, 4; 14, 4; 17, 5; *gāyatrīśaṃsam*, XVIII, 16, 1; and the late simple form *śaṃsam*, XVIII, 16, 2. Of the uses of the optative that in clauses of purpose with *na* is very frequent; in XVII, 10, 8, *yadi-syāt-mimīte*, it is purely indefinite; in *yadi-na vidyeta ya etāṃ dhiyaḥ kuryāt sa etat kuryāt*, XVII, 5, 4, the second optative is one of characteristic, 'one who can do.' In XVIII, 24, 15, *yadi dhakṣyānto (bhavanti)-syāt*, the protasis is future in fact and the apodosis is equivalent to a mild future. In XVIII, 23, 4, *yadi yajñāyajñīyam-kuryuḥ-tasyoktau stotriyānurūpau*, the real apodosis is suppressed. Of particles may be noticed the use of *api vā*, XVIII, 3, 4, and of *yady u vai*, XVIII, 7, 17; 23, 5. It may be noted as a sign of more recent date that very few particles occur, *ha* only in XVII, 13, 8; *u ha* in XVIII, 2, 3; 5. In XVII, 9, 7; XVIII, 22, 10, is found the remarkable phrase *iti nv ā u Marutvatīyam, Vaiśvavedam*; in XVII, 1, 5, *athāpi*; in XVIII, 20, 6, *atho*.

The results arrived at may be supported by a comparison with a work



of date somewhat later than the *Āraṇyaka* V, the *Bṛhaddevatā*, which shows a style much more modern, even despite poetic licences, than the *Āraṇyaka* I-III, but which is still in vocabulary an archaic work, coeval in date with the early epic. An interesting list of its irregularities is given by Prof. Macdonell,<sup>1</sup> but they are rather of the epic type, e.g. use of °*ya* for °*tvā* in the gerund, nominative for accusative, unaugmented pasts, &c. It is significant that (1) no genitives or ablatives for *ā*, *i*, *ū*, stems in *ai* occur; (2) there are no subjunctive forms other than first person forms; (3) the infinitive in °*tum* is common and no other form is found, while in VI, 37, even *śaptukāmaḥ* occurs. Significant also is the use of the narrative tenses. The aorist occurs only in the later narrative use and is rare, being formed only from the roots *gā*, *bhū*, *vac*, *vadh*. The perfect surpasses the imperfect in frequency as a narrative tense, for in some 340 lines of narrative<sup>2</sup> there occur 202 perfects to 150 imperfects, and the proportion elsewhere is not materially different. Further, the periphrastic perfect with *āsa* is frequent, *kāmayām āsa*, VI, 76; *utsādayām āsa*, VII, 53; *śikṣayām āsa*, III, 84; *bodhayām āsa*, VI, 37; *varayām āsa*, VI, 38; *chandayām āsuḥ*, VII, 157; *prasādayām āsa*, VIII, 3; *kīrtayām āsa*, VI, 24; *prasvāpayām āsa*, VI, 13; *darśayām āsa*, V, 63; while the use of *kr* is very rare, *upāmantrayām cakre*, V, 20. Further, the past participles passive are freely used to denote action either past or present in place of finite verbs, and use is made of the new participial form in *vat*, *kṛtavat* occurring in VI, 41; VII, 58; VIII, 18; *dr̥ṣṭavān*, V, 58; *dr̥ṣṭavati*, VIII, 33; *pr̥ṣṭavān*, V, 71; *labdhavān*, V, 66; *hatavān*, VI, 152, &c. Prefixes are not separated from the verbs with which they are connected. Particles are much restricted in number, and combinations are limited. Mention may also be made of the great development in grammatical doctrine seen not only in the discussion in I as to nouns, &c., and in II, 93, as to particles, but in the use of such forms as *āvi*, locative of *au*, the case termination, *ayoh* from *e*, the sign of the dual, *idī*, the root *id*, and so on. Indeed it is hard to resist the conclusion that the bulk of the *Āraṇyaka* I-III must lie before the more systematic treatment of grammatical questions in Yāska's *Nirukta*, and a new support is derived for the giving an early date to these books, since Yāska cannot well be later than 500 B. C.

<sup>1</sup> *Bṛhaddevatā*, I, xxvii.

<sup>2</sup> See the fourth Index to Prof. Macdonell's *Bṛhaddevatā*.



It has been noted that **Book III** presupposes the Padapāṭha of the Ṛgveda<sup>1</sup> and also the Kramapāṭha. It is therefore **later than Śākalya**, the author of the Padapāṭha. This, however, leaves the date undetermined, since Śākalya's date is still uncertain. Geldner<sup>2</sup> has recently argued that he dates from the later Vājasaneyya period, and not as supposed by Oldenberg from the end of the Brāhmaṇa period, and that he was a contemporary of the Āruṇi and Yājñavalkya known from the Brāhmaṇas. But it is extremely hard to reconcile this with the facts that the Padapāṭha presupposes the Saṃhitā, that the Saṃhitā exhibits a text which cannot be reconciled with the statements of the Brāhmaṇa texts<sup>3</sup> as to the number of syllables in word groups, in consequence of the Sandhi carried out in the Saṃhitā. The evidence, therefore, is certainly in favour of Oldenberg's hypothesis, but it leaves the lower date of Śākalya vague. He is, however, cited by Yāska and older than Śaunaka, so that in all probability he must date not later than 600 B. C. The Āraṇyaka III need not be much later than Śākalya; and if it is, as seems most probable, earlier than Yāska, it may be dated from about 600-550 B. C. It may be added that it must be older than the Taittirīya Upaniṣad and the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, VIII (see note on III, 1, 2).

These **chronological results** are admittedly uncertain. They are based on the views that (1) the Āraṇyaka I-III is older than Buddhism by reason of the undeveloped character of its philosophic content; (2) that these books are older than the Bṛhaddevatā and Śaunaka, who may be dated about 450-400 B. C., and probably older than Yāska, who can hardly be brought down lower than 550-500 B. C.; (3) that they are older than the developed systems of philosophy whose beginnings are at any rate known to Āpastamba, whom Bühler dates in the fourth or fifth centuries B. C., and who cannot well, on any view, be later than 300 B. C., and that they are older than the Atharvaśiras Upaniṣad, known, it seems, to Gautama, who is older than Āpastamba by some generations; (4) that they are older than Pāṇini, Kātyāyana, and Patañjali, who cannot well be dated later than 300, 200, and 100 B. C. respectively; (5) that

<sup>1</sup> Oldenberg, *Prolegomena*, p. 380.

<sup>2</sup> *Vedische Studien*, III, 144-146. See Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Ṛgveda*, pp. 4, 5, who also supports

this view; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, lxxv, n. 7.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 49, 50, and note on III, 1, 2.

Books I and II date from the later Brāhmaṇa<sup>1</sup> period, but are probably older than the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, parts of the Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa and Upaniṣad, the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa, and the Chāndogya Upaniṣad, and so belong to a comparatively early date.

The **verses and sentences quoted** contain, despite their brevity, a remarkable set of old forms. The Śloka in II, 3, 8, and the prose directions in Āraṇyaka V, are more properly treated as above as part of the main work, with which the latter no doubt coincide in time, while the former are not very much older. Of these forms may be mentioned *tanūm*, *tanvām* (loc.), but *tanvaḥ* (gen.) in I, 3, 5; *sarvasyai* (gen.) in the verse in III, 2, 5, which is a sign of more recent origin; the compounds *Vārunavāyvitamam*, *prthivyuparām*, *brāhmaṇābhartṛkam*, *varṣāpavitram*, V, 3, 2; the forms *ārājaḥ* (?), *tijāḥ*, *āti vyāthiḥ*, *rāntyam*, *vānam* (?), *ādhrṣaḥ*, in V, 2, 1. Among verbal forms are the third person singulars *iṣe*, *vide*, IV, 1; the first person *stuṣé*, IV, 1. The curious forms *ṛñjāse*, *sānnyase*, *bhūvaḥ*, IV, 1; *duhām*, V, 3, 2; the subjunctives *ānuśamsiṣaḥ*, *parṣat*, IV, 1; *jūjoṣat*, V, 2, 2; *vibhajātha*, V, 1, 1; the injunctives *vidāḥ* (?), IV, 1; *sprṣat* (?), V, 2, 2; *kartana*, V, 2, 2; and perhaps *āvīt*, V, 1, 1; the precatives, *āpyāsam*, V, 3, 2; *bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1. Of noun constructions may be noted, *yaja somānām*, V, 3, 2; *svar yajñam vakṣyantīm*, V, 1, 5; *vaśān anu*, IV, 1; *pratī vām ṛjīṣī*, V, 2, 1. In V, 2, 2, *kartana* seems used instead of a dual; in IV, 1, *bravāvahai* needs explanation. In V, 1, 1, occur *antarikṣam ivānāpyam-bhūyāsam*, &c., where the predicate adjective follows the gender and number of the nearest noun, the object of comparison. The uses of *svam* in that passage, of *maricayaḥ*, and of *ināḥ* and *sāmajaḥ* in V, 2, 1, are all unusual. The question of the date of the verses in IV, 1, has been dealt with in the note on that passage, and cf. *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 224 sq.; Oldenberg, *Gött. Gel. Anz.*, 1907, pp. 215 sq.

<sup>1</sup> The Brāhmaṇa parts of the Taittiriya Saṃhitā and Brāhmaṇa, Maitrāyaṇīya Saṃhitā, Kāthaka Saṃhitā, the Pañca-

viṃśa Brāhmaṇa, the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, I-XXX, and possibly the Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa are earlier.



# AITAREYA ĀRANYAKA.

## ॥ अथ प्रथमारण्यकम् ॥

### ADHYĀYA 1.

ओम्<sup>1</sup> ॥ अथ महाव्रतम् । इन्द्रो वै वृचं हत्वा महानभवद्य-  
न्महानभवत्तन्महाव्रतमभवत्तन्महाव्रतस्य महाव्रतत्वम् । वे एत-

<sup>1</sup> In R there precedes Adhyāya 1 the following शान्ति verses, incorrectly accented, taken from R<sup>1</sup>: भूमिमुपसृष्टेर्दणं इडा नम इडा नम ऋषिभ्यो मन्त्रकृद्भ्यो मन्त्रपतिभ्यो नमो वो असु देवेभ्यः शिवा नः शन्तमा भव सुमृडीका सरस्वति मा ते व्योम सन्दृशि । मद्रं कर्णेभिः ॥१॥ शन्न इन्द्रापी ऋक् ॥१॥ सुषे जनं ऋक् ॥१॥ कया नश्चिच आ० तिस्रः स्त्रोना पृथिवी ऋक् ॥ In B the शान्ति verses appear as Adhyāya 3 in Āranyaka III, at fol. 191a: ओं । नमश्शिवाय । ओं उदितशुक्रियन्धे तदहमा-  
त्मनि दधे । अनु मामैत्विन्द्रियं मयि ओर्मयि यशः । सर्वस्व प्राणस्सवत् उत्तिष्ठाम्यनु  
मा श्रीरुत्तिष्ठत्वनु मा यन्तु देवताः । अदब्धञ्चलुरिषिरम्मनस्सूर्यो ज्योतिषां श्रेष्ठो  
दोषे मा मा हिंसीः । तच्चतुर्देवहितं शुक्रमुत्तरत् । पथ्येन शरदश्शतजीवेन शरदश्श-  
तम् । अपि इडा मन इडा नम ऋषिभ्यो मन्त्रकृद्भ्यो मन्त्रपतिभ्यो नमो वो असु  
देवेभ्यः । शिवा नश्शन्तमा भव सुमृडीका सरस्वति मा ते व्योमसन्दृशि । मद्रङ्कर्णेभिः  
ऋक् । शन्न इन्द्रापी ऋक् । सुषे जनम् ऋक् । कया नश्चिचः कस्त्वा सत्यो मदानाम् ।  
अभी पु णः स्त्रोना पृथिवी भवा सप्रथ इति शान्तिश्शान्तिश्शान्ति । इत्यृग्वेदे संहितारण्ये  
तृतीयोऽध्यायः । This Adhyāya is not accented at all in B, as would appear from  
Scheftelowitz's reproduction, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, p. 167, the accents being  
wholly omitted from Khila V, 17, 2, onwards, as is correctly stated at p. 163. In  
E occur the same verses as in R and B, but in different order. First come the  
verses which are found in R<sup>1</sup>, the Rgvedic verses, (मद्रं) I, 89, 8 ; (शं न) VII, 35, 1 ;  
(सुषे) VI, 49, 1 ; (कया, कस्त्वा, अभी पु) IV, 31, 1-3 ; (स्त्रोना) I, 22, 15, being  
quoted in full. Then follow the words उदितस् down to शतम् and मद्रं नो अपि

स्याह आज्ये कुर्यादिति हैक आहुरेकमिति त्वेव स्थितम् । प्र वो देवायाम्रय इति राद्धिकामः । विशो विशो वो अतिथिमिति

वातय मनः । ओं शान्तिशान्तिशान्तिः हरिः ओम् । Instead of सर्वस्व E, S, and the other MSS. have सर्वः स, °षितं for °षिरं, and तम् for तद्. A begins like R<sup>1</sup>, but adds शृणुं ऋक् after कर्णेभिः and सुव्रतं after जनं. It ends पृथिवि भव ओष्ठापिधाना° यसः । इति पूर्वा । At the end of the fifth Āranyaka it has उदितस्—हिंसीः as in B; then तच्चतुर्देवहितं ऋक् । त्वमपे व्रतपा ऋक् । वाङ्मि मनसि—वक्तारम् (as in Āranyaka II, 7) । भद्रं नो अपि वातय मनः । शान्तिः शान्तिः शान्तिः इत्युत्तरशान्तिः ॥ २ ॥ K has, at the end of the fifth Āranyaka, ओं—सन्दृशि as in R<sup>1</sup>. Then भद्रं कर्णेभिः शृणुयाम देवाः १ शं न इन्द्राग्नी भवतामवोभिः १ सुषे जनं सुव्रतं नव्यसीभिः १ कया नद्यि च आ भुवदिति तिस्रः स्त्रोना पृथिवी भव १ तच्चतुर्देवहितं शुक्रमुच्चरत् १ त्वमपे व्रतपा असि । भद्रं नो अपि वातय मनः । ओं शान्तिः शान्तिः शान्तिः । ओं वाङ्मि मनसि (&c. as in II, 7) । १ ओं शान्तिः शान्तिः शान्तिः । इति शान्तिपाठः । T has before II, 4 (the beginning of the Aitareya Upaniṣad) ओं वाङ्मि मनसि (&c. as in II, 7, with प्रहासीत्) ending ओं शान्तिशान्तिशान्तिः । Then follows आं अमे इषा नम इषा (&c. as in R down to अभी पु णः) ending भद्रं नो अपि वाद्य मनः । ओं शान्तिशान्तिशान्तिः । The verses are given in full. In U, at the end of II, 7, are added verses as in A from उदितः to जीविम शरदः शतं followed by त्वमपे व्रतपा असि देव आ मर्त्येष्व । त्वं यज्ञेष्वीड्यः । ओं शान्तिः शान्तिः शान्तिः । In S the text is as in R with the addition of ओष्ठापिधाना नकुली दन्तैः परिवृता पविः । सर्वस्वे वाच ईशाना चारु मामिह वादयेदिति वायसः ॥ ओं शान्तिः शान्तिः शान्तिः ॥ Cf. III, 2, 5. S<sup>3</sup>, however, has as in R; then follows उदितः—शतं as in B; then त्वमपे व्रतपा असि देव आ मर्त्येष्व । त्वं यज्ञेष्वीड्यः । शं नो मित्रः शं वरुणः शं नो भवत्वयमा । शं न इन्द्रो बृहस्पतिः शं नो विष्णुर्ब्रह्मन् । वाङ्मि मनसि (&c. as in II, 7) । S at the end of the fifth Āranyaka has ओं उदितः—ईड्यः as in S<sup>3</sup>; then आवदुस्त्वं शकुने भद्रमावद तूष्णीमासौनः सुमतिं चिंकिच्चि नः । यदुत्पतन्वदसि कर्करिर्यथा बृहद्वदेम विदथे सुवीराः । शतधारमुत्समचीयमाणं विपश्चितं पितरं वक्तां नाम । मेळिं मदन्तं पित्रोर्बुपस्थे तं रोदसी पिपृतं सत्यवाचम् । Then comes वाङ्मि &c. as in II, 7, ending ओं शान्तिः शान्तिः शान्तिः ॥ In one MS. (क्वचित् पुस्तके) the verse शतधारम् follows II, 7, instead of preceding it. Both



पुष्टिकामः<sup>२</sup> । पुष्टिर्वै विशः पुष्टिमान्भवतीति । अतिथिमिति  
पदं भवति नैतत्कुर्यादित्याहुरीश्वरोऽतिथिरेव चरितोः । तदु  
ह स्माह कुर्यादेव । यो वै भवति यः श्रेष्ठतामंश्नुते स वा अति-  
थिर्भवति । न वा असन्तमांतिथ्यायाद्रियन्ते । तस्मादु काममे-  
वैतत्कुर्यात् । स<sup>३</sup> यद्येतत्कुर्यादांगन्म वृचहन्तममित्येतं नृचं  
प्रथमं कुर्यात् । एतद्वा अहरीप्सन्तः संवत्सरमांसते त आग-  
च्छन्ति । त एतेऽनुष्टुप्शीर्षाणस्त्रयस्तृचा भवन्ति ब्रह्म वै गायत्री  
वागनुष्टुब्रह्मणैव तद्वाचं संदधाति । अबोध्यग्निः समिधा  
जनानामिति कीर्तिकामः । होताजनिष्ट चेतन इति प्रजापशु-  
कामः ॥१॥

अग्निं नरो दीधितिभिररण्योरित्यन्नाद्यकामः । अग्निर्वा  
अन्नादः । चिरतरमिव वा इतरेष्वाज्येष्वग्निमागच्छन्त्यथेह मुखत  
एवाग्निमागच्छन्ति मुखतोऽन्नाद्यमश्नुते मुखतः पाप्मानमपघ्नते ।  
हस्तच्युती जनयन्तेति जातवदेतस्माद्वा अहो यजमानो जायते  
तस्माज्जातवत् । तानि चत्वारि छन्दांसि भवन्ति चतुष्पादा वै

here and at the beginning the verses in S are accented with one or two exceptions in  
the case of the verses not in the R̥gveda. There can be no doubt that these verses  
form no integral part of the Aitareya Āranyaka. Neither R<sup>2</sup>, D, F, G, nor L contains the  
verses. For शिवा नः see Atharvaveda, VII, 68, 3, with Whitney's note. तच्चकु<sup>०</sup>  
is R̥gveda, VII, 66, 16. See also Sūākhāyana Āranyaka, VII, 1, and Gṛhya Sūtra, VI, 4,  
with Oldenberg's note. Taittirīya Āranyaka, I, 30, has : पुनर्मांमैत्विन्द्रियम् । पुनरायुः  
पुनर्भगः ।

<sup>२</sup> bis in F, G.

<sup>३</sup> श्रेष्ठताम् F, G.

<sup>४</sup> असंमा<sup>०</sup> L.

<sup>५</sup> स यद्येतत्कुर्यात् om. G.

<sup>६</sup> संवत्सररम् G.

<sup>७</sup> जनान् F.

<sup>१</sup> ंमागच्छति F, G.

पशवः पशूनामवरुद्धौ । तानि त्रीणि छन्दांसि भवन्ति त्रयो वा  
 इमे त्रिवृतो लोका एषामेव लोकानामभिजित्यै । ते<sup>३</sup> द्वे छन्द्सी  
 भवतः प्रतिष्ठाया एव । द्विप्रतिष्ठो वै पुरुषश्चतुष्पादाः पशवो  
 यजमानमेव तद्विप्रतिष्ठं चतुष्पात्सु पशुषु प्रतिष्ठापयति । ताः  
 पराग्वचनेन पञ्चविंशतिर्भवन्ति<sup>४</sup> पञ्चविंशोऽयं पुरुषो दश  
 हस्त्या अङ्गुलयो दश पाद्या द्वा ऊरू<sup>५</sup> द्वौ बाहू आत्मेव<sup>६</sup>  
 पञ्चविंशस्तमिममात्मानं पञ्चविंशं संस्क्रुते । अथो पञ्चविंशं<sup>७</sup>  
 वा एतदहः पञ्चविंश एतस्याह<sup>८</sup> स्तोमस्तत्समेन समं प्रतिपद्यते  
 तस्माद्दे एव पञ्चविंशतिर्भवन्ति<sup>९</sup> । तास्त्रिः प्रथमया त्रिरुत्तमयै-  
 कया न त्रिंशन्न्यूनाक्षरा विराट् । न्यूने वै रेतः सिच्यते न्यूने  
 प्राणा<sup>१०</sup> न्यूनेऽन्नाद्यं प्रतिष्ठितमेतेषां कामानामवरुद्धौ । एता-  
 न्कामानवरुद्धे य एवं वेद । ता अभिसंपद्यन्ते बृहतीं च विराजं  
 च छन्दो यैतस्याहः संपत्तामथो अनुष्टुभमनुष्टुबायतनानि ह्या-  
 ज्यानि ॥२॥

गायत्रं प्रउगं कुर्यादित्याहुस्तेजो वै ब्रह्मवर्चसं गायत्री  
 तेजस्वी ब्रह्मवर्चसी भवतीति । औष्णिहं प्रउगं कुर्यादित्याहु-  
 रायुर्वो उष्णिगायुष्मान्भवतीति । आनुष्टुभं प्रउगं कुर्यादित्याहुः

<sup>२</sup> लोकानाम् L.<sup>३</sup> om. F, G.<sup>४</sup> भवति F, G.<sup>५</sup> ऊरू L.<sup>६</sup> आत्मेव A.<sup>७</sup> पञ्चविंश L.<sup>८</sup> ऋ स्तोमस् D, E, F, G, L, hereand usually. The evidence of the MSS. for the dropping of visarga before s and a hard consonant is so strong that the practice has been followed throughout after the example of Prof. Macdonell's *Bṛhaddevatā*, I, xxvi; see above, p. 10. R and S retain visarga.<sup>९</sup> भवति F, G.<sup>१०</sup> प्राणां K. Cf. I, 3, 7, n. 2.



क्षत्रं वा अनुष्टुप्क्षत्रस्यास्या इति । बार्हतं प्रउगं कुर्यादित्याहुः  
 श्रीर्वै बृहती श्रीमान्भवतीति । पाङ्क्तं प्रउगं कुर्यादित्याहुरन्नं वै  
 पङ्क्तिरन्नवान्भवतीति । चैष्टुभं प्रउगं कुर्यादित्याहुर्वीर्यं वै चिष्टु-  
 ब्धीर्यवान्भवतीति । जागतं प्रउगं कुर्यादित्याहुर्जागता वै पशवः  
 पशुमान्भवतीति । तदु गायत्रमेव कुर्याद्ब्रह्म वै गायत्री ब्रह्मतद-  
 हर्ब्रह्मणैव तद्ब्रह्म प्रतिपद्यते । तदु माधुछन्दसम् । मधु ह स्म वा  
 ऋषिभ्यो मधुछन्दाश्छन्दति तन्मधुछन्दसो मधुछन्दस्त्वम् । अथो<sup>1</sup>  
 अन्नं वै मधु सर्वं<sup>2</sup> वै मधु<sup>3</sup> सर्वे वै कामा मधु तद्यन्माधुछन्दसं  
 शंसति सर्वेषां कामानामवरुद्धै । सर्वान्कामानवरुद्धे<sup>4</sup> य एवं  
 वेद । तद्वैकाहिकं रूपसमृद्धं बहु वा एतस्मिन्नहनि किञ्च किञ्च<sup>5</sup>  
 वारणं क्रियते शान्त्या एव शान्तिर्वै प्रतिष्ठैकाहःशान्त्यामेव तत्प्र-  
 तिष्ठायामन्ततः प्रतितिष्ठन्ति । प्रतितिष्ठति<sup>6</sup> य एवं वेद येषां  
 चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति ॥३॥

वायवा याहि दर्शतेमे सोमा अरंकृता इत्येतद्वा अहरं  
 यजमानाय च देवेभ्यश्च । अरं हास्मा एतदहर्भवति य एवं  
 वेद येषां चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति । इन्द्रवायू इमे सुता आ  
 यातमुप निष्कृतमिति यद्वै निष्कृतं तत्संस्कृतम् । आ हास्येन्द्र-

<sup>1</sup> अथो L.<sup>2</sup> bis in F.<sup>3</sup> यान् F.<sup>4</sup> ०रुद्धे is the

regular form in R, S, and the MSS., and so is followed, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*,  
 § 231. On the other hand ०रुद्धे, which is always read in R and which occurs  
 sporadically in the MSS., is simply an example of the constant tendency of MSS. to  
 reduce consonant groups, and is incorrect. S has ०रुद्धे throughout. See also Wacker-  
 nagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 269. <sup>5</sup> om. F. <sup>6</sup> corr. from ०तिष्ठन्ति A.

<sup>1</sup> तिष्कृतम् A.

वायू संस्कृतं गच्छतो य एवं वेद येषां चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता  
 शंसति । मित्रं हुवे पूतदक्षं धियं घृताची<sup>2</sup> साधन्तेति<sup>3</sup> वाग्वै  
 धीर्घृताची<sup>4</sup> । वाचमेवास्मिंस्तद्दधाति य एवं वेद येषां चैवं  
 विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति । अश्विना यज्वरीरिष इत्यन्नं वा इषो  
 ऽन्नाद्यस्यावरुद्धौ । आ यातं रुद्रवर्तनी इत्या हास्याश्विनौ यज्ञं  
 गच्छतो य एवं वेद येषां चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति । इन्द्रा  
 याहि चित्रभानविन्द्रा याहि धियेषित इन्द्रा याहि तूतुजान  
 इत्यायाह्यायाहीति शंसति । आ हास्येन्द्रो यज्ञं गच्छति य एवं  
 वेद येषां चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति । ओमासश्चर्षणीधृतो  
 विश्वे देवास आ गतेत्या हास्य विश्वे देवा हवं गच्छन्ति य एवं  
 वेद<sup>5</sup> येषां चैवं<sup>6</sup> विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति । दाश्वान्सी दाशुषः  
 सुतमिति यदाह ददुषो<sup>6</sup> ददुषः सुतमित्येव तदाह । ददति<sup>7</sup>  
 हास्मै तं कामं देवा यत्काम एतच्छंसति य एवं वेद येषां चैवं  
 विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति । पावका नः सरस्वती यज्ञं वष्टु धिया-  
 वसुरिति वाग्वै धियावसुः । वाचमेवास्मिंस्तद्दधाति य एवं वेद  
 येषां चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति । यज्ञं वष्ट्विति यदाह यज्ञं  
 वहत्वित्येव तदाह । ताः पराग्वचनेनैकविंशतिर्भवन्त्येकविंशोऽयं  
 पुरुषो दश हस्त्या अङ्गुलयो दश पाद्या आत्मैकविंशस्तमिममा-  
 त्मानमेकविंशं संस्क्रुते । तास्त्रिः प्रथमया त्रिरुत्तमया पञ्चविं-

<sup>2</sup> घृताची A.<sup>3</sup> साधयन्तेति E; साधतेति G.<sup>4</sup> धीताची F.<sup>5</sup> om. F.<sup>6</sup> ददुषा G.<sup>7</sup> तदति K.<sup>8</sup> भवति L.



शतिर्भवन्ति<sup>9</sup> पञ्चविंश<sup>10</sup> आत्मा पञ्चविंशः प्रजापतिर्दश हस्त्या  
अङ्गुलयो दश पाद्या द्वा ऊरु द्वौ बाहू आत्मेव पञ्चविंशस्त-  
मिममात्मानं पञ्चविंशं संस्कुस्ते । अथो<sup>11</sup> पञ्चविंशं वा  
एतदहः पञ्चविंश एतस्याह स्तोमस्तत्समेन समं प्रतिपद्यते  
तस्माद्दे एव पञ्चविंशतिर्भवन्ति भवन्ति ॥ ४ ॥

॥ इत्यैतरेयप्रथमारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>12</sup>

### ADHYĀYA 2.

आ त्वा रथं यथोतय इदं वसो सुतमन्थ इति मरुत्वतीयस्य  
प्रतिपदनुचरौ । ऐकाहिकौ रूपसमृद्धौ बहु वा एतस्मिन्नहनि  
किञ्च<sup>1</sup> किञ्च वारणं क्रियते शान्त्या एव शान्तिर्वै प्रतिष्ठैकाहःशा-  
न्यामेव तत्प्रतिष्ठायामन्ततः प्रतितिष्ठन्ति । प्रतितिष्ठति य एवं  
वेद येषां चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति । इन्द्र नेदीय एदिहि प्र  
सू तिरा शचीभिर्ये त उक्थिन इत्युक्थं<sup>2</sup> वा एतदहर्कथवदू-  
पसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् । प्रैतु ब्रह्मणस्पतिरह्वा वीरमिति वीर-  
वदूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् । उत्तिष्ठ ब्रह्मणस्पते<sup>4</sup> सुवीर्यमिति

<sup>9</sup> पञ्चविंशति मन्ति A.  
पञ्चविंशस्—संस्कुस्ते.

<sup>10</sup> पञ्चविंशं A.

<sup>11</sup> After this P repeats

<sup>12</sup> Text, A, R; इति प्रथमारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः L;  
इति प्रथम आरण्ये प्रथमोऽध्यायः ॥ १ ॥ K; ओं प्रथमोऽध्यायः F; प्रथमोऽध्यायः  
D, G; हरिः ओं E; इत्यैतरेयब्राह्मणारण्यकाण्डे प्रथमारण्यके प्रथमाध्याये चतुर्थः  
खण्डः ॥ ४ ॥ इति बहुचब्राह्मणारण्यकाण्डे प्रथमारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः ॥ १ ॥ S.  
R has been followed in the text. It is of course certain that the divisions and  
colophons have no claim to be regarded as contemporaneous with the composition of  
the work, in which the only divisions were probably the Adhyāyas and Āraṇyakas.

<sup>1</sup> किं च to एतद् is represented by ° in A, and this is regularly done when  
a passage is repeated or words are repeated. The several instances are not noted  
separately hereafter.

<sup>2</sup> उक्थे F.

<sup>3</sup> रूपं F.

<sup>4</sup> ब्रह्मणस्पते—प्र नूनं

वीर्यवद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् । प्र नूनं<sup>४</sup> ब्रह्मणस्पतिर्मन्त्रं वद-  
 त्युक्थमित्युक्थं<sup>५</sup> वा एतदहरुक्थवद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् ।  
 अग्निर्नेता स वृत्रहेति वार्चघ्नमिन्द्ररूपमैन्द्रमेतदहरेतस्याहो  
 रूपम् । त्वं सोम क्रतुभिः सुक्रतुर्भूस्त्वं वृषा वृषत्वेभिर्महित्वेति  
 वृषणवद्वा इन्द्रस्य रूपमैन्द्रमेतदहरेतस्याहो रूपम् । पिबन्त्यपो  
 ऽत्यं न मिहे वि नयन्ति वाजिनमिति वाजिमद्वा इन्द्रस्य रूप-  
 मैन्द्रमेतदहरेतस्याहो रूपम् । अथो उत्सं दुहन्ति स्तनयन्तम-  
 क्षितमिति स्तनयद्वा इन्द्रस्य रूपमैन्द्रमेतदहरेतस्याहो रूपम् ।  
 प्र व इन्द्राय बृहत इति यद्वै बृहत्तन्महन्महद्बद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो  
 रूपम् । बृहदिन्द्राय गायतेति यद्वै बृहत्तन्महन्महद्बद्रूपसमृद्धमे-  
 तस्याहो रूपम् । नकिः<sup>७</sup> सुदासो रथं पर्यास न रीरमदिति  
 पर्यस्तवद्रान्तिमद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् । सर्वान्प्रगाथाञ्छंसति  
 सर्वेषामहामाशै सर्वेषामुक्त्यानां सर्वेषां<sup>८</sup> पृष्ठानां सर्वेषां शस्त्राणां  
 सर्वेषां प्रउगाणां सर्वेषां सवनानाम् ॥१॥<sup>९</sup>

असत्सु मे जरितः साभिवेगः सत्यधृतमिति शंसति सत्यं  
 वा एतदहः सत्यवद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् । तदु वासुक्रं ब्रह्म  
 वै वसुक्रो ब्रह्मैतदहर्ब्रह्मणैव तद्ब्रह्म प्रतिपद्यते । तदाहुरथ कस्मा-

om. F, G, because of ब्रह्मणस्पतिः following.

<sup>५</sup> इत्युक्थं bis G; वदुक्<sup>६</sup> A.

<sup>६</sup> इन्द्ररूपां F, G.

<sup>७</sup> कित् G.

<sup>८</sup> सर्वेषां पृष्ठानां bis F.

<sup>९</sup> This Khaṇḍa

is numbered 5 in A, D, E, F, G, K, L; 5 at the end of the commentary in R, and 1 at the end of the text. In S both numbers are given throughout. I have kept the lower number for the sake of convenience, as references to the Aitareya have in the past been based on R. Cf Z. D. M. G., XLII, 171.



द्वासुक्रेणैतन्मरुत्वतीयं प्रतिपद्यत इति न ह वा एतदन्यो वसु-  
क्रान्मरुत्वतीयमुदयच्छन्न विव्याचेति तस्माद्वासुक्रेणैवैतन्मरुत्वतीयं  
प्रतिपद्यते । तदनिरुक्तं प्राजापत्यं शंसत्यनिरुक्तो वै प्रजापतिः  
प्रजापतेराष्ट्रै । सकृदिन्द्रं निराह तेनैन्द्राद्रूपाक्ष प्रच्यवते । पिबा  
सोममभि यमुय तर्द<sup>1</sup> इति शंसति । ऊर्वं गव्यं महि गृणान  
इन्द्रेति महद्बद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् । तदु भारद्वाजं भरद्वाजो  
ह वा ऋषीणामनूचानतमो दीर्घजीवितमस्तपस्वितम आस  
स एतेन सूक्तेन पाप्मानमपाहत तद्यज्ञारद्वाजं शंसति पाप्मनो  
ऽपहत्या अनूचानो दीर्घजीवी तपस्थसानीति तस्माद्भारद्वाजं  
शंसति । कया शुभा सवयसः सनीळा इति शंसति । आ शासते  
प्रति हर्यन्युकथेत्युकथं वा एतदहर्कथवद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो  
रूपम् । तदु कयाशुभीयमेतद्वै संज्ञानं सन्तनि सूक्तं यत्कयाशु-  
भीयमेतेन ह वा इन्द्रोऽगस्त्यो मरुतस्ते समजानत तद्यत्कया-  
शुभीयं शंसति संज्ञात्या एव । तद्वायुष्यं तद्योऽस्य प्रियः<sup>2</sup> स्यात्कु-  
र्यादेवास्य कयाशुभीयम् । मरुत्वाँ इन्द्र वृषभो रणायेति शंसति ।  
इन्द्र वृषभ इति वृषखद्वा इन्द्रस्य रूपमैन्द्रमेतदहरेतस्याहो  
रूपम् । तदु विश्वामित्रं विश्वस्य ह वै मित्रं विश्वामित्र आस ।  
विश्वं हास्मै मित्रं भवति य एवं वेद येषां चैवं विद्वानेतद्भोता  
शंसति । जनिष्ठा उयः सहसे तुरायेति निविद्वानमैकाहिकं

<sup>1</sup> वसुक्रेणैतन् G; वसुक्रेण तन् F; वाशु<sup>0</sup> R. <sup>2</sup> वासुक्रान् E. <sup>3</sup> वासु-  
क्रेणैवैतन् E, F; वासुक्रेणैवैतन् G. <sup>4</sup> दर्द K. <sup>5</sup> प्रिय स्याद् F, G. The  
omission occurs sporadically in the MSS., but has no sufficient authority to justify its  
adoption.

रूपसमृद्धं बहु वा एतस्मिन्नहनि<sup>6</sup> किञ्च किञ्च वारणं क्रियते  
 शान्त्या एव शान्तिर्वै प्रतिष्ठैकाहः शान्त्यामेव तत्प्रतिष्ठायामन्ततः  
 प्रतिष्ठतिष्ठति । प्रतिष्ठतिष्ठति य एवं वेद येषां चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता  
 शंसति । ताः पराग्वचनेन सप्पन्नवतिर्भवन्ति सा या नवतिस्त्रि-  
 स्रस्तास्त्रिंशिन्यो विराजोऽथ याः सप्तातिर्यन्ति यैवैषा प्रशंसा  
 साश्रस्य<sup>7</sup> तस्या एव । तास्त्रिः प्रथमया चिरुत्तमयैकशतं भवन्ति  
 पञ्चाङ्गुलयश्चतुष्पर्वी द्वे कक्षसी दोश्चाक्षश्चांसफलकं च सा  
 पञ्चविंशतिः पञ्चविंशानोतराणि ह्यङ्गानि तच्छतमात्मैकशत-  
 तमः । यच्छतं तदायुरिन्द्रियं वीर्यं तेजो यजमान एकशततम  
 आयुषीन्द्रिये वीर्यं तेजसि प्रतिष्ठितः । तास्त्रिष्टुभमभिसंपद्यन्ते  
 त्रैष्टुभो हि मध्यन्दिनः ॥२॥<sup>8</sup>

तदाहुः किं प्रेह्यस्य प्रेह्यत्वमित्ययं<sup>1</sup> वै प्रेह्यो योऽयं पवत  
 एष<sup>2</sup> ह्येषु लोकेषु<sup>3</sup> प्रेह्यत<sup>4</sup> इति<sup>1</sup> तत्प्रेह्यस्य प्रेह्यत्वम् । एकं  
 फलकं स्यादित्याहुरेकधा ह्येवायं वायुः पवतेऽस्य रूपेणेति ।  
 तत्तन्नादृत्यम् । त्रीणि फलकानि स्युरित्याहुस्त्रयो वा इमे  
 चिवृतो लोका एषां रूपेणेति । तत्तन्नादृत्यम् । द्वे एव स्यातां  
 द्वौ वा इमौ लोकावद्वातमाविव दृश्येते य<sup>5</sup> उ एने अन्तरेणा-

<sup>6</sup> एतन्निन् A. <sup>7</sup> प्रशंसाश्रस्य G. <sup>8</sup> Numbered 6 in A, D, E, F, G, K, L, and also in R in text. In R in commentary is 2.

<sup>1</sup> From अयं to इति om. F. From प्रेह्यत्वं to लोकेषु om. G. F has प्रेह्यत्व.

<sup>2</sup> एव R (by misprint? A, D, E, K, L, S, and R in commentary have text).

<sup>3</sup> लोके L. <sup>4</sup> मेखत G. <sup>5</sup> ये R in text.



काशः सोऽन्तरिक्षलोकस्तस्माद्दे एव स्याताम् । औदुम्बरे स्या-  
तामूर्वा अन्नाद्यमुदुम्बर ऊर्जोऽन्नाद्यस्यावरुद्धौ । मध्यत उद्धृते  
स्यातां मध्यतो वै प्रजा अन्नं धिनोति मध्यत एव तदन्नाद्यस्य  
यजमानं दधाति । उभयो रज्जवो भवन्ति दक्षिणाश्च सव्याश्च<sup>6</sup>  
दक्षिणा वा एकेषां पशूनां रज्जवः सव्या एकेषां तद्यदुभयो  
रज्जवो भवन्त्युभयेषां पशूनामासौ । दार्यः<sup>7</sup> स्युर्दर्भो वा ओष-  
धीनामपहतपाप्मा<sup>8</sup> तस्माद्दार्यः<sup>7</sup> स्युः ॥ ३ ॥<sup>9</sup>

अरन्निमात्र उपरि भूमेः<sup>1</sup> प्रेङ्खः<sup>2</sup> स्यादित्याहुरेतावता वै  
स्वर्गा लोकाः संमिता इति । तत्तन्नादृत्यम् । प्रादेशमात्रे स्या-  
दित्याहुरेतावता वै प्राणाः संमिता इति । तत्तन्नादृत्यम् । मुष्टि-  
मात्रे स्यादेतावता वै सर्वमन्नाद्यं क्रियत एतावता सर्वमन्नाद्य-  
मभिपन्नं तस्मान्मुष्टिमात्र एव स्यात् । पुरस्तात्प्रत्यञ्चं प्रेङ्खमधि-  
रोहेदित्याहुरेतस्य रूपेण य एष तपति पुरस्ताद्येष इमाँल्लोकान्प्र-  
त्यङ्मधिरोहतीति । तत्तन्नादृत्यम् । तिर्यञ्चमधिरोहेदित्याहुस्तिर्यञ्चं  
वा अश्वमधिरोहन्ति तेनो सर्वान्कामानवाप्नुवामेति । तत्तन्ना-  
दृत्यम् । अन्वञ्चमधिरोहेदित्याहुरनूचीं वै नावमधिरोहन्ति नौ-  
र्वेषा स्वर्गयाणी यत्प्रेङ्ख इति तस्मादन्वञ्चमेवाधिरोहेत् । छुवुके-  
नोपस्पृशेच्छुको हैवं वृक्षमधिरोहति स उ वयसामन्नादतम इति  
तस्माच्छुवुकेनोपस्पृशेत् । बाहुभ्यामधिरोहेदेवं श्येनो वयांस्यभि-

<sup>6</sup> om. F.<sup>7</sup> दार्य D, E, F, G, K, L.<sup>8</sup> अपहृतपाप्मा F.<sup>9</sup> Numbered 7 in A, D, E, F, G, K, L.<sup>1</sup> भूमे F.<sup>2</sup> प्रेङ्ख D, E, F, G, K, L.

निविशत एवं वृक्षं स उ वयसां वीर्यवत्तम इति तस्माद्वाहु-  
 भ्यामधिरोहेत् । अस्यै पादं नोच्छिन्द्यान्नेदस्यै प्रतिष्ठाया उच्छिद्या  
 इति । प्रेहं होताधिरोहत्यौदुम्बरीमासन्दीमुन्नाता वृषा वै प्रेहो  
 योषासन्दी तन्मिथुनं मिथुनमेव तदुक्थमुखे करोति प्रजात्यै ।  
 प्रजायते प्रजया पशुभिर्य एवं वेद । अथान्नं वै प्रेहः<sup>3</sup> श्रीरा-  
 सन्द्यन्नं चैव तच्छ्रियं चान्वधिरोहतः<sup>4</sup> । वृसीर्होचकाः समधि-  
 रोहन्ति सब्रह्मकाः । समुत्सृष्य वा ओषधिवनस्पतयः फलं  
 गृह्णन्ति<sup>5</sup> तद्यदेतस्मिन्नहनि सर्वशः समधिरोहन्तीषमेव तदूर्ज-  
 मन्नाद्यमधिरोहन्यूजोऽन्नाद्यस्यावरुद्धौ । वषट्कृत्यावरोहेदित्याहुः ।  
 तत्तन्नादृत्यम् । अकृता वै सापचितिर्यामपश्यते करोति । निगृह्य  
 भक्षमवरोहेदित्याहुः । तत्तन्नादृत्यम् । अकृता वै सापचितिर्या-  
 मधृष्टाय<sup>6</sup> करोति । प्रतिख्याय भक्षमवरोहेदेषा वा अपचि-  
 तिर्या<sup>7</sup> पश्यते करोति तस्मात्प्रतिख्यायैव भक्षमवरोहेत् ।  
 प्राङ्वरोहेत् । प्राग्वै देवरेतसं<sup>9</sup> प्रजायते तस्मात्प्राङ्वरोहेदव-  
 रोहेत् ॥ ४ ॥<sup>11</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयप्रथमारण्यके द्वितीयोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>12</sup>

<sup>3</sup> प्रेह D, E, &c. <sup>4</sup> अधिरोहतः A, D, E, F, G, K, L, S; the commentary shows the reading, yet R has °रोहते. <sup>5</sup> गृह्णति R in text. <sup>6</sup> अधृष्टा F, G. <sup>7</sup> यामपश्यते D, E. <sup>8</sup> प्राङ् R in text. <sup>9</sup> देवरेतः सं (?) S. <sup>10</sup> प्राङ् L. <sup>11</sup> Numbered 8 in A, D, E, F, G, K, L. <sup>12</sup> Text, A, L, R; no colophon, E; इति द्वितीयोऽध्यायः D; द्वितीयोऽध्यायः F, G; इति प्रथम आरण्ये द्वितीयोऽध्यायः K.



## ADHYĀYA 3.

हिङ्कारेणैतदहः प्रतिपद्येतेत्याहुः । ब्रह्म वै हिङ्कारो ब्रह्मैत-  
दहर्ब्रह्मणैव तद्ब्रह्म प्रतिपद्यते य एवं वेद । यदेव हिङ्कारेण  
प्रतिपद्यता३इ वृषा वै हिङ्कारो योषर्क्तेन्मिथुनं मिथुनमेव  
तदुक्थमुखे करोति प्रजात्यै । प्रजायते प्रजया पशुभिर्य एवं  
वेद । यद्वेव हिङ्कारेण प्रतिपद्यता३इ यथा वा अभिरेवं ब्रह्मणो  
हिङ्कारो यद्वै किञ्चाभियाभितितृत्सत्यंभ्येवैतत्तृणस्येवम् । यं कामं  
कामयते हिङ्कारेणाभ्येवैनं तृणति य एवं वेद । यद्वेव हिङ्कारेण  
प्रतिपद्यता३इ वाचो वा एषा व्यावृत्तिर्देव्यै<sup>२</sup> च मानुष्यै च यद्धि-  
ङ्कारः । स यद्धिङ्कृत्य प्रतिपद्यते वाचमेव तद्व्यावर्तयति दैवीं  
च मानुषीं च ॥१॥<sup>३</sup>

तदाहुः कैतस्याहुः प्रतिपदिति । मनश्च वाक्चेति ब्रूयात् ।  
सर्वेऽन्यस्मिन्कामाः<sup>१</sup> श्रिताः सर्वानन्या<sup>३</sup> कामान्दुहे । मनसि वै  
सर्वे कामाः श्रिता मनसा हि सर्वान्कामान्ध्यायति । सर्वे  
हास्मिन्कामाः श्रयन्ते य एवं वेद । वाग्वै सर्वान्कामान्दुहे वाचा  
हि सर्वान्कामान्वदति । सर्वान्हास्मै कामान्वाग्दुहे य एवं वेद ।  
तदाहुर्नैतदहर्च्चा न यजुषा न साम्ना प्रत्यक्षात्प्रतिपद्येत नर्चो

<sup>१</sup> किं चाभियामिति तृत्सति K.<sup>२</sup> देव्यै G.<sup>३</sup> Numbered 9 in

A, E, K, L. F and G have both १ and १०. D has १.

<sup>१</sup> सर्वो F.<sup>२</sup> कामा E, and so regularly when ङ or ण is followed by

a semivowel or soft mute.

<sup>३</sup> अन्यान् S.<sup>४</sup> वाग्—वेद repeated in F, G.





वै विश्व ऊमास्त एनमनुमदन्युदगादुदगादिति । वावृधानः  
 शवसा भूर्योजा इति एष वै वावृधानः शवसा भूर्योजाः ।  
 शत्रुर्दासाय भियसं दधातीति सर्वे<sup>4</sup> ह्येतस्माद्वीभाय<sup>4</sup> । अन्नच  
 व्यनच्च सस्त्रीति यच्च प्राणि<sup>5</sup> यच्चाप्राणकमित्येव तदाह । सं ते  
 नवन्त प्रभृता मदेष्विति तव सर्वे वश इत्येव तदाह । त्वे  
 क्रतुमपि वृञ्जन्ति विश्व इति त्वयीमानि सर्वाणि भूतानि  
 सर्वाणि मनांसि सर्वे क्रतवोऽपि वृञ्जन्तीत्येव तदाह । द्विर्यदेते  
 त्विर्भवन्त्यूमा इति द्वौ वै सन्तौ मिथुनौ प्रजायेते प्रजात्यै<sup>7</sup> ।  
 प्रजायते<sup>8</sup> प्रजया पशुभिर्य एवं वेद । स्वादोः स्वादीयः स्वादुना  
 सृजा समिति मिथुनं वै स्वादु प्रजा स्वादु मिथुनेनैव तत्प्रजां  
 संसृजति<sup>9</sup> । अदः सु मधु मधुनाभि योधीरिति मिथुनं वै मधु  
 प्रजा मधु मिथुनेनैव तत्प्रजामभियुध्यति । तदुक्तमृषिणा । स्वां  
 यत्तनूं तन्वामैरयतेत्यस्यां शारीर्यामिमां छन्दोमयीमित्येव तदाह ।  
 अथो तनूरेव तन्वो अस्तु भेषजमित्यस्यै शारीर्या इयं छन्दोम-  
 यीत्येव तदाह । तस्यै यान्यष्टावक्षराणि सा गायत्री यान्येकादश  
 सा त्रिष्टुब्धानि द्वादश सा जगत्यथ यानि दश सा विराडृशिन्येषु  
 त्रिषु<sup>11</sup> छन्दःसु प्रतिष्ठिता । पुरुष इति त्र्यक्षरं स उ विराजि ।  
 एतानि वाव<sup>12</sup> सर्वाणि छन्दांसि यान्येतानि विराट्पुरुषान्येवमु  
 हैवैवं विदुष एतदहः सर्वैश्छन्दोभिः प्रतिपन्नं भवति ॥४॥<sup>13</sup>

<sup>1</sup> एवं A.<sup>2</sup> उदगाद once only in F.<sup>3</sup> शत्रु R in text.<sup>4</sup> सर्वे — वीभाय om. S, clearly by an oversight.<sup>5</sup> प्राणि G.<sup>6</sup> वृञ्जन्ति

R in text.

<sup>7</sup> प्रजात्यै D; om. G.<sup>8</sup> om. G.<sup>9</sup> सृजति A.<sup>10</sup> भेषजं E; भेषजां F, G.<sup>11</sup> त्रिषु G.<sup>12</sup> वव F.<sup>13</sup> Numbered 12

in A, E, K, L; 12, 4 in F, G; 4 in D. R has 4 in text and 12 in commentary.

ता नदेन विहरति<sup>१</sup> । पुरुषो वै नदस्तस्मात्पुरुषो वदन्सर्वः  
 संनदतीव । नदं व ओदतीनामिती<sup>३</sup> आपो वा ओदत्यो या  
 दिव्यास्ता हीदं सर्वमुन्दन्यापो वा ओदत्यो या मुख्यास्ता हीदं  
 सर्वमन्नाद्यमुन्दन्ति । नदं योयुवतीनामिती<sup>३</sup> आपो वाव  
 योयुवत्यो या अन्तरिक्ष्यास्ता हि पोभूयन्त इवापो वाव योयु-  
 वत्यो याः स्वेदते<sup>३</sup> ता हि सरीसृप्यन्त इव । पतिं वो अघ्नाना-  
 मिती<sup>३</sup> आपो वा अघ्ना या अग्नेर्धूमाज्जायन्त आपो वा  
 अघ्ना याः शिश्नात्प्रसृज्यन्ते । धेनूनामिषुध्यसीती<sup>३</sup> आपो वाव  
 धेनवस्ता हीदं सर्वं धिन्वन्तीषुध्यसीति यदाह पतीयसीत्येव  
 तदाह । त्रिष्टुभं चानुष्टुभं च विहरति वृषा वै त्रिष्टुभ्योषानुष्टुभ-  
 न्मिथुनं तस्मादपि पुरुषो जायां विज्वा कृत्स्नतरमिवात्मानं  
 मन्यते । तास्त्रिः प्रथमया पञ्चविंशतिर्भवन्ति पञ्चविंश आत्मा  
 पञ्चविंशः प्रजापतिर्दश<sup>५</sup> हस्त्या अङ्गुलयो दश पाद्या द्वा  
 ऊरू द्वौ बाहू आत्मैव पञ्चविंशस्तमिममात्मानं पञ्चविंशं  
 संस्कुरुते । अथो पञ्चविंशं वा एतदहः पञ्चविंश एतस्याह  
 स्तोमस्तत्समेन समं प्रतिपद्यते तस्माद्दे एव पञ्चविंशतिर्भ-  
 वन्ति ॥५॥<sup>६</sup>

<sup>१</sup> विरहति E.<sup>२</sup> अन्दति A.<sup>३</sup> स्वेदते A, D, E, F, G, K, L, S ;

स्वेदन्ते B.

<sup>४</sup> पतीयसीति D, E, F, G.<sup>५</sup> The words after दश are

represented by ° in A.

<sup>६</sup> Numbered 13 in A, E, K, L ; 13, 5 in F ; 13, 4 in G ;

5 in D. R has 13 in text, but 3 in commentary.



तदिति प्रतिपद्यते तत्तदिति वा अन्नमन्नमेव तदभिप्रति-  
पद्यते । एतां वाव<sup>1</sup> प्रजापतिः प्रथमां वाचं व्याहरदेकाक्षर-  
द्व्यक्षरां ततेति तातेति । तथैवैतत्कुमारः प्रथमवादी<sup>2</sup> वाचं  
व्याहरत्येकाक्षरद्व्यक्षरां ततेति तातेति । तथैव तत्तदवत्या<sup>3</sup> वाचा  
प्रतिपद्यते । तदुक्तमृषिणा । बृहस्पते प्रथमं वाचो अयमित्ये-  
तद्येव प्रथमं वाचो अयम् । यत्प्रैरत नामधेयं दधाना इति  
वाचा हि नामधेयानि धीयन्ते । यदेषां श्रेष्ठं यदरिप्रमासी-  
दित्येतद्येव श्रेष्ठमेतदरिप्रम् । प्रेणा तदेषां निहितं गुहाविरि-  
तीदमु ह गुहाध्यात्ममिमा देवता अद उ आविरधिदैवतमित्ये-  
तत्तदुक्तं भवति ॥ ६ ॥<sup>5</sup>

तदिदास भुवनेषु ज्येष्ठमिति प्रतिपद्यते यद्वै ज्येष्ठं तन्महन्म-  
हद्वद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् । तां सु ते<sup>1</sup> कीर्तिं मघवन्म-  
हित्वेति महद्वद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् । भूय इद्वावृधे वीर्या-  
येति वीर्यवद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् । नृणामु त्वा नृतमं गीर्भि-  
रुक्थैरित्युक्थं वा एतदहर्गुक्थवद्रूपसमृद्धमेतस्याहो रूपम् ।  
न्यूनाक्षरे प्रथमे पदे विहरति न्यूने वै रेतः सिच्यते न्यूने<sup>2</sup> प्राणा  
न्यूनेऽन्नाद्यं प्रतिष्ठितमेतेषां कामानामवरुद्धी । एतान्कामानव-

<sup>1</sup> In A all from वाव — अधिदैवतम् is represented by \*. E has only तदिति  
प्रतिपद्यते भवति. See I, 3, 3. <sup>2</sup> प्रथमवाचं only L. <sup>3</sup> व्याहर इति R in  
text; व्याहरेत्य G and D pr. man. <sup>4</sup> तदवत्या F, G. <sup>5</sup> Numbered 14 in  
A, E, K, L; 14, 6 in F, G; 6 in D. It is numbered 4 in R because the number  
13 of the previous section was in the commentary printed as 3!

<sup>1</sup> सुतां ते F, G.

<sup>2</sup> न्यूने प्राणा om. F; प्राणान् R. Cf. I, 1, 2, n. 10.

रुन्धे य एवं वेद । द्वे दशाक्षरे भवत उभयोरन्नाद्ययोरुपास्यै यच्च  
पञ्चदशपादकमिति । अष्टादशाष्टादशाक्षराणि भवन्ति यानि  
दश नव प्राणा आत्मैव दशमः सात्मनः संस्कृतिरष्टावष्टा  
उद्यन्ते । अश्रुते यद्यत्कामयते य एवं वेद ॥७॥<sup>3</sup>

ता नदेन विहरति । प्राणो वै नदस्तस्मात्प्राणो नदन्सर्वः  
संनदतीव । नदं व ओदतीनामिती<sup>3</sup> उष्णिगक्षरैर्भवत्यनुष्टुप्पा-  
दैरायुर्वा उष्णिग्वागनुष्टुप् । तदस्मिन्नायुश्च वाचं च दधाति ।  
तास्तिः प्रथमया पञ्चविंशतिर्भवन्ति पञ्चविंश आत्मा पञ्चविंशः  
प्रजापतिर्दश हस्त्या अङ्गुलयो दश पाद्या द्वा ऊरू द्वौ बाहू  
आत्मैव पञ्चविंशस्तमिममात्मानं पञ्चविंशं संस्कुरुते । अथो  
पञ्चविंशं वा एतदहः पञ्चविंश एतस्याह स्तोमस्तत्समेन समं  
प्रतिपद्यते तस्माद्दे एव पञ्चविंशतिर्भवन्ति । इत्यध्यात्मं पञ्चविंशः ।  
अथाधिदैवतम् । चक्षुः श्रोत्रं मनो वाक्प्राणः ता एताः पञ्च  
देवता इमं विष्टाः<sup>1</sup> पुरुषं<sup>2</sup> पञ्चो हैवैता<sup>3</sup> देवता अयं विष्टः  
पुरुषः । सोऽंचालोमभ्य आनखेभ्यः सर्वः साङ्ग<sup>5</sup> आप्यते  
तस्मात्सर्वाणि भूतान्यापिपीलिकाभ्य आप्नान्येव जायन्ते । तदु-  
क्तमृषिणा । सहस्रधा पञ्चदशान्युक्थेति पञ्च हि दशतो भवन्ति ।  
यावद्वावापृथिवी तावदित्तदिति यावती वै द्वावापृथिवी ता-

<sup>3</sup> Numbered 15 in A, E, K, L; 15, 7 in F, G; 7 in D. R has 5 in text and 7 and 5 in commentary.

<sup>1</sup> विविष्टाः E. <sup>2</sup> पुरुषो K. <sup>3</sup> हैवै K. <sup>4</sup> स्तोत्रं A; सोत्रं E.  
<sup>5</sup> सर्वसाङ्ग K.



वानात्मा । सहस्रधा महिमानः सहस्रमित्युक्त्यानेव तदनुमदति  
मह्यति । यावद्ब्रह्म विष्टितं तावती वागिति यच्च ह क्व च  
ब्रह्म तद्वाग्यच्च वा वाक्तृद्वा ब्रह्मेत्येतत्तदुक्तं भवति । एषां वा  
एषां सूक्तानां नवर्चं प्रथमं नव वै प्राणाः प्राणानां क्लृप्ते ।  
षडृचं<sup>6</sup> भवति षड्वा ऋतव ऋतूनामांशैः । पञ्चर्चं भवति<sup>8</sup>  
पञ्चपदा पङ्क्तिः पङ्क्तिर्वा अन्नमन्नाद्यस्यावरुद्धैः । तृचो भवति  
त्रयो वा इमे त्रिवृतो लोका एषामेव लोकानामभिजित्यै । ता  
अभिसंपद्यन्ते बृहतीं छन्दोऽमृतं देवलोकमेष<sup>9</sup> आत्मा । एवमुहै-  
वैवं<sup>10</sup> विदेतयैव संपदामृतमेवात्मानमभिसंभवति संभवति ॥ ८ ॥<sup>11</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयप्रथमारण्यके तृतीयोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>12</sup>

#### ADHYĀYA 4.

अथ सूददोहाः । प्राणो वै सूददोहाः प्राणेन पर्वाणि  
संदधाति । अथातो ग्रीवाः । ता आचक्षते यथाछन्दसमुष्णिह  
इति । अथ सूददोहाः । प्राणो वै सूददोहाः प्राणेन पर्वाणि  
संदधाति । अथातः शिरः । तद्गायत्रीषु भवत्ययं वै छन्दसां  
गायत्र्ययमङ्गानां<sup>1</sup> शिरः । तदर्कवतीषु भवत्यग्निर्वा अर्कः । ता

<sup>6</sup> षडृचं R in text; षडृचं A, G; षच्छृचं F; text, D, E, K, L. <sup>7</sup> ऋतूनाम्  
R in text; ऋतून् A. <sup>8</sup> om. R in text. It is in R in commentary and in  
all the MSS. and in S. <sup>9</sup> मेव K. <sup>10</sup> हेवैव K. <sup>11</sup> Numbered  
16 in A, E, F, K, L; 16, 8 in G; no number in D. R in text has 6, in com-  
mentary 16. <sup>12</sup> इत्यैतरेयप्रथमारण्यके तृतीयोऽध्यायः A; इति प्रथम आरण्ये  
(प्रथमारण्यके L) तृतीयोऽध्यायः K, L; तृतीयोऽध्यायः D, F, G; nothing in E, or  
by an error in R in text.

<sup>1</sup> छन्दसांगानाम् omitting the rest, F.

नव भवन्ति नवकपालं वै शिरः । दशमीं शंसति त्वक्केशा<sup>2</sup>  
 इत्येव सा भवति । अथो स्तोमातिशंसनाया एव । तौ चिवृच्च  
 स्तोमो<sup>3</sup> भवतो गायत्रं च छन्द एतयोर्वै स्तोमछन्दसोः प्रजा-  
 तिमनु सर्वमिदं प्रजायते यदिदं किञ्च प्रजात्यै । प्रजायते<sup>4</sup>  
 प्रजया पशुभिर्य एवं वेद । अथ सूददोहाः । प्राणो<sup>5</sup> वै  
 सूददोहाः प्राणेन पर्वाणि संधाति । अथातो विजवः । ता  
 विराजो भवन्ति तस्मात्पुरुषः पुरुषमाह वि<sup>6</sup> वा अस्मासु  
 राजसि यीवा वै धारयसीति स्तभमानं वा यद्वा दुताः सम्बा-  
 ङ्गतमाः<sup>7</sup> सत्योऽन्नतमां प्रत्यच्यन्तेऽन्नं हि विराळं नमु<sup>8</sup>  
 वीर्यम् । अथ सूददोहाः । प्राणो वै सूददोहाः प्राणेन पर्वाणि  
 संधाति ॥ १ ॥<sup>10</sup>

अथातो दक्षिणः पक्षः । सोऽयं लोकः सोऽयमग्निः सा  
 वाक्तद्रथन्तरं स वसिष्ठस्तच्छतं तानि षड्वीर्याणि भवन्ति ।  
 संपात एव कामानामभ्यास्यै प्रतिष्ठित्या अन्नाद्याय पङ्क्तिः ।  
 अथ<sup>1</sup> सूददोहाः । प्राणो वै सूददोहाः प्राणेन पर्वाणि संद-  
 धाति<sup>1</sup> । अथात उत्तरः पक्षः । सोऽसौ लोकः सोऽसावादित्य-  
 स्तत्मनस्तद्बृहत्स भरद्वाजस्तच्छतं तानि षड्वीर्याणि भवन्ति । संपात  
 एव कामानामभ्यास्यै प्रतिष्ठित्या अन्नाद्याय पङ्क्तिः । ता ऊना-

<sup>2</sup> केश R in text.<sup>3</sup> स्तोमी R in text, S.<sup>4</sup> om. F.<sup>5</sup> प्राणो

न पर्वाणि omitting the rest, F, G.

<sup>6</sup> Accented in E.<sup>7</sup> सम्बद्धतमाः R ;

संबद्धतमाः A ; ङ्गतमाः E ; text, D, F, G, K, L, S.

<sup>8</sup> विराड् A, R.<sup>9</sup> उप K.<sup>10</sup> Numbered 17 in A, E, K, L ; 17, 1 in F, G ; 1 in D.<sup>1</sup> अथ — संधाति om. in S, though the commentary has it.



तिरिक्तौ भवतो वृषा वै बृहद्योषा रथन्तरमतिरिक्तं वै पुंसो न्यूनं<sup>2</sup>  
 स्त्रियै तस्मादूनातिरिक्तौ भवतः । अथो एकेन ह वै पक्षेण  
 सुपर्णस्योत्तरः<sup>3</sup> पक्षो ज्यायांस्तस्मादेकयर्चोत्तरः पक्षो भूयाभ-  
 वति । अथ सूददोहाः । प्राणो वै सूददोहाः प्राणेन पर्वाणि  
 संदधाति । अथातः पुष्टम्<sup>4</sup> । ता एकविंशतिर्द्विपदा<sup>5</sup> भवन्त्ये-  
 कविंशतिर्हीमानि प्रत्यञ्चि सुपर्णस्य पक्षाणि भवन्ति । अथो  
 एकविंशो वै स्तोमानां प्रतिष्ठा प्रतिष्ठा पुष्टं वयसाम् । द्वाविंशी<sup>6</sup>  
 शंसति प्रतिष्ठयोरेव तदूपं क्रियते तस्मात्सर्वाणि वयांसि पुष्टेन  
 प्रतितिष्ठन्ति पुष्टेनैव प्रतिष्ठायोत्पतन्ति प्रतिष्ठा हि पुष्टम् । स  
 एष द्वाभ्यां दशिनीभ्यां विराड्भामनयोर्द्वाविंशयोर्द्विपदयोरयं  
 पुरुषः प्रतिष्ठितः । तस्य यत्सुपर्णरूपं तदस्य कामानामभ्यास्यै ।  
 अथ यत्पुरुषरूपं तदस्य श्रियै यशसेऽन्नाद्यायापचित्यै । अथ  
 सूददोहाः । अथ धाय्या<sup>7</sup> । अथ सूददोहाः । वृषा वै सूददोहा  
 योषा धाय्या तदुभयतः सूददोहसा धाय्यां परिशंसति तस्माद्द्वयो-  
 रेतः सिक्तं सदेकतामेवाप्येति योषामेवाभ्यत आजाना<sup>8</sup> हि  
 योषातः प्रजाना तस्मादेनामच शंसति ॥ २ ॥<sup>10</sup>

गायत्रीं तृचाशीतिं शंसत्ययं वै लोको गायत्री तृचाशीति-  
 र्यदेवास्मिँल्लोके यशो यन्महो यन्मिथुनं यदन्नाद्यं यापचितिस्त-  
 दन्नवै तदाप्रवानि तद्वरुणधै तन्मेऽसदिति । अथ सूददोहाः ।

<sup>2</sup> नूनं G.<sup>3</sup> \*स्योत्तरतः R<sup>1</sup>; सुपर्णःस्योत्तरः K.<sup>4</sup> पुष्टम् A.<sup>5</sup> द्विपदा — एकविंशतिर् om. F.<sup>6</sup> द्वाविंशी A.<sup>7</sup> द्वाविंशोर A.<sup>8</sup> अथ धाय्याथ सूददोहाः bis F.<sup>9</sup> आजाना K.<sup>10</sup> Numbered 18 in

A, E, K, L; 18, 2 in F, G; 2 in D.

प्राणो वै सूददोहाः प्राणेनेमं<sup>1</sup> लोकं संतनोति । बार्हतीं नृचा-  
शीतिं शंसत्यन्तरिक्षलोको वै बार्हती नृचाशीतिर्यदेवान्तरिक्ष-  
लोके यशो यन्महो यन्मिथुनं यदन्नाद्यं यापचितिस्तदन्नवै  
तदाप्रवानि तदवरुणधै तन्मेऽसदिति । अथ सूददोहाः । प्राणो  
वै सूददोहाः प्राणेनान्तरिक्षलोकं संतनोति । औष्णिहीं नृचा-  
शीतिं शंसत्यसौ वै लोको द्यौरौष्णिही नृचाशीतिर्यदेवामुष्णि-  
क्षोके यशो यन्महो<sup>2</sup> यन्मिथुनं यदन्नाद्यं यापचितिः यदेवानां  
दैवं तदन्नवै तदाप्रवानि तदवरुणधै तन्मेऽसदिति । अथ सूद-  
दोहाः । प्राणो वै सूददोहाः प्राणेनामुं लोकं संतनोति संत-  
नोति ॥३॥<sup>3</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयप्रथमारण्यके चतुर्थोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>4</sup>

#### ADHYĀYA 5.

वशं<sup>1</sup> शंसति वशे म इदं सर्वमसदिति । ता एकविंशतिर्भवन्-  
न्येकविंशतिर्हि ता अन्तरुदरे विकृतयः । अथो एकविंशो वै  
स्तोमानां प्रतिष्ठा प्रतिष्ठोदरमन्नाद्यानाम् । ता विच्छन्दसो भवन्ति  
विष्णुद्रमिव वा अन्तस्त्यमणीय इव च स्थवीय इव च । ताः  
प्रणावं<sup>4</sup> छन्दस्कारं यथोपपादं शंसति यथोपपादमिव वा  
अन्तस्त्यं हृसीय इव च द्राघीय इव च । अथ सूददोहाः ।

<sup>1</sup> In this section the MSS. of S appear to have been defective.

only A. <sup>2</sup> बहो  
<sup>3</sup> Numbered 19 in A, E, K, L; 19, 3 in F, G; 3 in D. <sup>4</sup> Text,  
A, R; इति प्रथम आरण्ये (प्रथमारण्यके L) चतुर्थोऽध्यायः (ऽध्वः only L) K, L;  
इति चतुर्थोऽध्यायः D; चतुर्थोऽध्यायः F, G; no colophon E.

<sup>1</sup> वंशं D, E, L.

<sup>2</sup> असाद् L.

<sup>3</sup> एकविंशतिर्भवन्ति om. F, G, but

added by G sec. man.

<sup>4</sup> प्राणावं A, E, G.



प्राणो वै सूददोहाः प्राणेन पर्वणि संदधाति । तामचोत्सृजति  
द्वादशकृत्वः शस्त्वा द्वादशविधा वा इमे प्राणाः सप्त शीर्षण्या  
द्वौ स्तन्यौ त्रयोऽवाञ्चोऽत्र वै प्राणा आप्यन्तेऽत्र संस्क्रियन्ते  
तस्मादेनामचोत्सृजति । इन्द्राग्नी युवं सु न इत्यैन्द्राग्ना<sup>5</sup> ऊरु  
उर्वशीवे<sup>6</sup> प्रतिष्ठे । ताः षट्पदा भवन्ति प्रतिष्ठाया एव द्विप्र-  
तिष्ठो वै पुरुषश्चतुष्पादाः<sup>7</sup> पशवो यजमानमेव तद्विप्रतिष्ठं  
चतुष्पात्सु पशुषु प्रतिष्ठापयति । द्वितीया सप्तपदा भवति तां  
गायत्रीं चानुष्टुभं च<sup>8</sup> करोति ब्रह्म वै गायत्री वागनुष्टुब्रह्मणैव  
तद्वाचं संदधाति । त्रिष्टुभमन्ततः शंसति वीर्यं<sup>9</sup> वै त्रिष्टुबीर्यणैव  
तत्पशून्परिगच्छति तस्मात्पशवो वीर्यमनूपतिष्ठन्त ईर्यतां चैवा-  
भ्युत्थानं च ॥ १ ॥<sup>10</sup>

प्र वो महे मन्दमानायान्धस<sup>1</sup> इत्यैन्द्रे निष्केवल्ये<sup>2</sup> निविदं<sup>3</sup>  
दधाति प्रत्यक्षाद्येव<sup>4</sup> तदात्मन्वीर्यं धत्ते । तास्त्रिष्टुञ्जगत्यो  
भवन्ति । तदाहुरथ कस्मात्त्रिष्टुञ्जगतीषु निविदं दधातीति । न  
ह वा एतस्याह एकं छन्दो निविदं दाधार न विव्याचेति  
तस्मात्त्रिष्टुञ्जगतीषु निविदं दधाति । तदेतदहस्त्रिनिवित्कं विद्या-  
द्वशो निविद्वालिखित्या<sup>5</sup> निविन्निविदेव निविदेवमेनत्त्रिनि-  
वित्कं विद्यात् । अथ सूक्ते वने न वा यो न्यधायि चाकन्यो

<sup>5</sup> एन्द्राग्ना F, G.<sup>6</sup> ऊर्वं R.<sup>7</sup> चतुष्पादः F, G.<sup>8</sup> om. G ; चरोति L.<sup>9</sup> वीर्यं A.<sup>10</sup> Numbered 20 in A, E, F, K, L ; 20, 1 in G ; 1 in D.<sup>1</sup> मन्दना L.<sup>2</sup> निष्केवल्ये F, G.<sup>3</sup> निविद A.<sup>4</sup> प्रत्यक्षाद्येव A, G, K.<sup>5</sup> बालखित्यान् G.<sup>6</sup> मेनं A ; मेनत् G ; मेतत् R in commentary ; मेव D, E.

जात एव प्रथमो मनस्वानिति तयोरस्त्यन्ने समस्य यदसन्म-  
नीषा इत्यन्नाद्यस्यावरुद्धौ । अथावपनमेते अन्तरेणैन्द्रीणां दश-  
तीनां त्रिष्टुब्जगतीनां बृहतीसंपन्नानां यावतीरावपन्ते तावन्पू-  
र्ध्वमायुषो वर्षाणि जीवन्त्येतेन हैवावपनेनायुराप्यते । प्रजां मे  
पशवोऽर्जयन्निति त्वेव सजनीयमनुशंसति । तार्क्ष्यं शंसति  
स्वस्त्वयनं वै तार्क्ष्यः स्वस्तितायै स्वस्त्वयनमेव तत्कुस्ते<sup>8</sup> ।  
एकपदां शंसत्येकधेदं सर्वमसानीत्यथो सर्वा छन्दस्कृतिमाप्नुवा-  
नीति । इन्द्रं विश्वा अवीवृधन्निति पदानुषङ्गास्ताः सप्तानुषजति  
सप्त वै शीर्षन्प्राणाः शीर्षन्नेव<sup>10</sup> तत्प्राणान्दधात्यष्टमीं नानुषजति  
वागष्टमी नेन्मे वाक्प्राणैरनुषक्तासदिति तस्मादु सा वाक्समा-  
नायतना प्राणैः सत्यननुषक्ता । विराजः शंसत्यन्नं वै विराजो  
ऽन्नाद्यस्यावरुद्धौ । वासिष्ठेन परिदधाति वसिष्ठोऽसानीति । एष  
स्तोमो मह उग्राय वाह इति महद्वत्या रूपसमृद्धया । धुरी-  
वात्यो न वाजयन्नधायीत्यन्तो वै धूरन्त एतदहरेतस्याहो रूपम् ।  
इन्द्र त्वायमर्के ईद्रे वसूनामित्यर्कवत्या रूपसमृद्धया । दिवीव  
द्यामधि नः श्रोमन्तं<sup>11</sup> धा इति यच्च ह क्व च<sup>12</sup> ब्रह्मण्या वागुद्यते  
तद्वास्य<sup>13</sup> कीर्तिर्भवति यच्चैवं विद्वानेतया परिदधाति तस्मादेवं  
विद्वानेतयैव परिदध्यात् ॥ २ ॥<sup>14</sup>

<sup>7</sup> पशवोर्जयन् R in text.

<sup>8</sup> कुते F.

<sup>9</sup> शंससत्य R in text.

<sup>10</sup> शीर्षन्ने F, G; शीर्षन्नेव L.

<sup>11</sup> न D, E; श्री० R.

<sup>12</sup> क्व च om. E.

<sup>13</sup> तद्वास्य R; तस्वद्वा G; तद्वस्व F.

<sup>14</sup> Numbered 21 in A, E, G, K, L;

21, 2 in F; 2 in D.



तत्सवितुर्वृणीमहेऽद्या नो देव सवितरिति वैश्वदेवस्य प्रति-  
 पदनुचरावैकाहिकौ रूपसमृद्धौ बहु वा एतस्मिन्नहनि किञ्च  
 किञ्च वारणं क्रियते शान्त्या एव शान्तिर्वै प्रतिष्ठैकाहः शान्त्यामेव  
 तत्प्रतिष्ठायामन्ततः प्रतितिष्ठन्ति । प्रतितिष्ठति य एवं वेद येषां  
 चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति । तद्देवस्य सवितुर्वार्यं महदिति  
 सावित्रमन्तो वै महदन्त एतदहरेतस्याहो रूपम् । कतरा पूर्वा  
 कतरापरायोरिति द्यावापृथिवीयं समानोदर्कं समानोदर्कं वा  
 एतदहरेतस्याहो रूपम् । अनश्वो जातो अनभीशुरुक्थ्य इत्यार्भ-  
 वम् । रथस्त्रिचक्र इति यदेतस्त्रिवत्तदन्तो वै त्रिवदन्त एतद-  
 हरेतस्याहो रूपम् । अस्य<sup>२</sup> वामस्य पलितस्य होतुरिति वैश्वदेवं  
 बहुरूपं बहुरूपं वा एतदहरेतस्याहो रूपम् । गौरीर्मिमाय  
 सलिलानि तक्षतीत्येतदन्तम् । आ नो भद्राः क्रतवो यन्तु  
 विश्वत इति वैश्वदेवं निविद्वानमैकाहिकं रूपसमृद्धं बहु वा  
 एतस्मिन्नहनि किञ्च किञ्च वारणं क्रियते शान्त्या एव शा-  
 न्तिर्वै प्रतिष्ठैकाहः शान्त्यामेव तत्प्रतिष्ठायामन्ततः प्रतितिष्ठन्ति ।  
 प्रतितिष्ठति य एवं वेद येषां चैवं विद्वानेतद्धोता शंसति ।  
 वैश्वानराय धिषणामृतावृध इत्याग्निमारुतस्य प्रतिपदन्तो वै  
 धिषणान्त एतदहरेतस्याहो रूपम् । प्रयज्यवो मरुतो भ्राजदृष्टय  
 इति मारुतं समानोदर्कं समानोदर्कं वा एतदहरेतस्याहो रूपम् ।  
 जातवेदसे सुनवाम सोममिति जातवेदस्यां पुरस्तात्सूक्तस्य शंसति  
 स्वस्त्ययनं वै जातवेदस्या<sup>४</sup> स्वस्तितायै स्वस्त्ययनमेव तत्कुरुते ।

<sup>१</sup> पदे S.<sup>२</sup> एतस्यावमस्य omitting the rest, F.<sup>३</sup> धिणम् A.<sup>४</sup> जातवेदस्याः R in text.

इमं स्तोममर्हते जातवेदस इति जातवेदस्यं समानोदकं समानो-  
दकं वा एतदहरेतस्याहो रूपमहो रूपम् ॥३॥<sup>4</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयप्रथमारण्यके पञ्चमोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>5</sup>

॥ इति प्रथमारण्यकं समाप्तम् ॥

<sup>4</sup> Numbered 22 in A, E, K, L; 22, 3 in F, G. <sup>5</sup> Text, A and, omitting the second इति, L; पंचमोऽध्यायः ५ । इति प्रथमारण्यकं समाप्तम् । F, G; इति पञ्चमोऽध्यायः प्रथमारण्यः D; इति प्रथम आरण्ये पंचमोऽध्यायः ५ K; E continues after the number एष पन्था तत्कर्म । तत्सवितुर्वृणीमहेऽद्या नो देव सवितरिति । प्र वो महे मन्दमनायान्धस इति । वशं शंसति । गायत्रीं तृचाशीतिं शंसति । अथातो दक्षिणः पक्षः । अथ सूददोहाः । ता नदेन विहरति प्राणो वै नदः । तदिदास भुवनेषु ज्येष्ठमिति प्रतिपद्यते यद्वै ज्येष्ठम् । तदिति प्रतिपद्यते । तदाज्ञः केतस्त्राज्ञः प्रतिपदिति । हिंकारेणैतदहं प्रतिपद्येतेत्याज्ञः । अरन्निमात्र उपरि भूमेः प्रेङ्ख स्वादित्याज्ञः । तदाज्ञः किं प्रेङ्खस्व प्रेङ्खत्वमिति । असत्सु मे जरितस्सामिवेगस्स-  
त्यधृतमिति शंसति । आ त्वा रथं यथोतय इदं<sup>a</sup> वसो सुतमन्ध इति<sup>d</sup> । वायवा याहि दर्शतेमे<sup>e</sup> सोमा अरंक्रता इति<sup>e</sup> । गायत्रं प्रउगं कुर्यादित्याज्ञः । अपिं नरो दीधितिभि-  
ररण्योरित्यन्नायकामः । अथ महाव्रतम् । अथ महाव्रतं चत्वारि । आ त्वा रथं चत्वारि । हिंकारेणाष्टौ । अथ सूददोहास्त्रयः । वशस्त्रयः । अथ महाव्रतं तदिति प्र वो महे द्वौ । इति<sup>f</sup> प्रथमारण्यम् । This appears also in F and G, with the variants noted below, but not in the other MSS. It forms, of course, a sort of Anukramanī of the contents, and E has similar notices at the end of each Āraṇyaka.

<sup>a</sup> Before this, F, G have ता नदेन विहरति पुरुषो वै नदः । तदिदास भुवनेषु ज्येष्ठमिति प्रतिपद्यत एतद्वाव भुवनेषु ज्येष्ठं । तदिति प्रतिपद्यते । These three were obviously omitted accidentally through the identity of three and six. <sup>b</sup> हिंकारेणैव तदहः F, G. <sup>c</sup> om. F. <sup>d</sup> इदं — इति om. F, G. <sup>e</sup> इमे — इति om. F, G. <sup>f</sup> वशं G; वशस्त्रयः om. F. <sup>g</sup> om. F, G.



## ॥ अथ द्वितीयारण्यकम् ॥

### ADHYĀYA 1.

एष पन्था एतत्कर्मैतद्ब्रह्मेतत्सत्यम् । तस्मान्न प्रमाद्येत्तन्ना-  
तीयात् । न ह्यत्यायन्पूर्वे येऽत्यायंस्ते परावभूवुः । तदुक्तमृषिणा ।  
प्रजा ह तिस्रो अत्यायमीयुर्न्यया अर्कमभितो विविश्रे । बृहद्  
तस्थौ भुवनेष्वन्तः पवमानो हरित आ विवेशेति ॥ प्रजा ह  
तिस्रो<sup>१</sup> अत्यायमीयुरिति या वै ता इमाः प्रजास्तिस्रो<sup>१</sup> अत्याय-  
मायंस्तानीमानि वयांसि वङ्गावगधाश्चरपादाः । न्यया अर्कम-  
भितो विविश्र इति ता इमाः प्रजा अर्कमभितो निविष्टा  
इममेवाग्निम् । बृहद् तस्थौ भुवनेष्वन्तरित्यद उ एव बृहद्भुवने-  
ष्वन्तरसावादित्यः । पवमानो हरित आ विवेशेति वायुरेव  
पवमानो दिशे<sup>३</sup> हरित आविष्टः<sup>४</sup> ॥ १ ॥

उक्थमुक्थमिति वै प्रजा वदन्ति तदिदमेवोक्थमियमेव  
पृथिवीतो हीदं सर्वमुत्तिष्ठति यदिदं किञ्च । तस्याग्निरर्कोऽन्नम-  
शीतयोऽन्नेन हीदं सर्वमश्नुते । अन्तरिक्षमेवोक्थमन्तरिक्षं वा  
अनु पतन्त्यन्तरिक्षमनु धावयन्ति तस्य वायुरर्कोऽन्नमशीतयो  
ऽन्नेन हीदं सर्वमश्नुते । असावेव द्यौरुक्थममुतः प्रदानाद्हीदं  
सर्वमुत्तिष्ठति यदिदं किञ्च तस्यासावादित्योऽर्कोऽन्नमशीतयो

<sup>१</sup> तिस्रः here and below R in text, but the words are clearly quoted in their  
R̥gvedic form. <sup>२</sup> ष्वतर A. <sup>३</sup> दिशे R in text. <sup>४</sup> आविष्टाः F.

ऽन्नेन हीदं सर्वमश्नुते । इत्यधिदैवतम् । अथाध्यात्मम् । पुरुष एवोक्तमयमेव महान्प्रजापतिरहमुक्तमस्मीति विद्यात् । तस्य मुखमेवोक्तं यथा पृथिवी तथा । तस्य वागर्कोऽन्नमशीतयोऽन्नेन हीदं सर्वमश्नुते । नासिके एवोक्तं यथान्तरिक्षं तथा । तस्य प्राणोऽर्कोऽन्नमशीतयोऽन्नेन हीदं सर्वमश्नुते । तदेतद्ब्रह्मस्य<sup>1</sup> विष्टपं यदेतन्नासिकायै विनतमिव । ललाटमेवोक्तं यथा द्यौस्तथा । तस्य चक्षुरर्कोऽन्नमशीतयोऽन्नेन हीदं सर्वमश्नुते । समानमशीतयोऽध्यात्मं चाधिदैवतं चान्नमेवान्नेन हीमानि सर्वाणि भूतानि समनन्ती<sup>३</sup> अन्नेनेमं लोकं जयत्यन्नेनामुं तस्मात्समानमशीतयोऽध्यात्मं चाधिदैवतं चान्नमेव । तदिदमन्नमन्नादमियमेव पृथिवीतो हीदं सर्वमुत्तिष्ठति यदिदं किञ्च । यच्च किञ्चेदं प्रेती<sup>३</sup> इतदसौ सर्वमन्ति यदु किञ्चातः प्रेती<sup>३</sup> तदियं सर्वमन्ति सेयमित्याद्यान्ती । अन्ता ह वा आद्यो भवति । न तस्येशे यन्नाद्याद्यद्वैनं नाद्युः ॥२॥

अथातो रेतसः सृष्टिः । प्रजापते रेतो देवा देवानां रेतो वर्षे वर्षस्य रेत ओषधय ओषधीनां रेतोऽन्नमन्नस्य रेतो रेतो रेतसो रेतः प्रजाः प्रजानां रेतो हृदयं हृदयस्य रेतो मनो मनसो रेतो वाग्वाचो रेतः कर्म तदिदं कर्म कृतमयं पुरुषो ब्रह्मणो लोकः । स इरामयो यद्दीरामयस्तस्माद्धिरण्मयः । हिरण्मयो ह वा अमुष्मिँल्लोके संभवति हिरण्मयः सर्वेभ्यो भूतेभ्यो ददृशे य एवं वेद ॥३॥

<sup>1</sup> ब्रह्मस्य G.<sup>2</sup> यजत्य° G.<sup>3</sup> कर्मकृत° R.



तं प्रपदाभ्यां प्रापद्यत<sup>1</sup> ब्रह्मेमं पुरुषं यत्प्रपदाभ्यां प्रापद्यत  
 ब्रह्मेमं पुरुषं तस्मात्प्रपदे तस्मात्प्रपदे इत्याचक्षते शफाः खुरा  
 इत्यन्येषां पशूनाम् । तदूर्ध्वमुदसर्पत्ता ऊरू अभवताम् । उरु  
 गृणीहीत्यब्रवीत्तदुदरमभवत् । उर्वेव मे कुर्वित्यब्रवीत्तदुरोऽभवत् ।  
 उदरं ब्रह्मेति शार्कराष्ट्या<sup>2</sup> उपासते हृदयं ब्रह्मेत्यारुणयो ब्रह्मा-  
 हैव ताऽऽ । ऊर्ध्वं त्वेवोदसर्पत्तच्छिरोऽश्रयत यच्छिरोऽश्रयत  
 तच्छिरोऽभवत्तच्छिरसः शिरस्त्वम् । ता एताः शीर्षज्जिह्वयः  
 श्रिताश्चक्षुः श्रोत्रं मनो वाक्प्राणः । श्रयन्तेऽस्मिज्जिह्वो य  
 एवमेतच्छिरसः शिरस्त्वं वेद । ता अहिंसन्ताहमुक्थमस्यहमु-  
 कथमस्मीति । ता अब्रुवन्हन्तास्माच्छरीरादुत्क्रामाम तद्यस्मिन्न  
 उत्क्रान्त इदं शरीरं पत्यति तदुक्थं भविष्यतीति । वागुदक्रा-  
 मदवदन्नश्नन्पिवन्नास्तैव । चक्षुरुदक्रामदपश्यन्नश्नन्पिवन्नास्तैव ।  
 श्रोत्रमुदक्रामदशृण्वन्नश्नन्पिवन्नास्तैव । मन उदक्रामन्मीलित  
 इवाश्नन्पिवन्नास्तैव । प्राण उदक्रामत्तत्प्राण उत्क्रान्तेऽपद्यत ।  
 तदंशीर्यताशरीती<sup>3</sup> तच्छरीरमभवत्तच्छरीरस्य शरीरत्वम् ।  
 शीर्यते ह वा अस्य द्विषन्पाप्मा भ्रातृव्यः परास्य द्विषन्पाप्मा  
 भ्रातृव्यो भवति य एवं वेद । ता अहिंसन्तैवाहमुक्थमस्यहमु-  
 कथमस्मीति । ता अब्रुवन्हन्तेदं पुनः शरीरं प्रविशाम तद्यस्मिन्नः  
 प्रपन्न इदं शरीरमुत्थास्यति तदुक्थं भविष्यतीति । वाक्प्राविश-  
 दशयदेव । चक्षुः प्राविशदशयदेव । श्रोत्रं<sup>7</sup> प्राविशदशयदेव ।

<sup>1</sup> मापद्यतं G.<sup>2</sup> शर्करा G.<sup>3</sup> ब्रह्मा हैव R; cp. p. 68; J.R.A.S., 1908,

p. 366.

<sup>4</sup> यत् G; त om. K.<sup>5</sup> उत्क्रान्ते R in text.<sup>6</sup> तशी E.<sup>7</sup> This clause is omitted in G.

मनः प्राविशदश्यदेव । प्राणः प्राविशत्तत्प्राणे प्रपन्न उदतिष्ठ-  
त्तदुक्थमभवत् । तदेतदुक्थाँ३ प्राण एव । प्राण उक्थमित्येव  
विद्यात् । तं देवा अब्रुवंस्त्वमुक्थमसि त्वमिदं सर्वमसि तव वयं  
स्मस्त्वमस्माकमसीति । तदप्येतदृषिणोक्तम् । त्वमस्माकं तव  
स्मसीति ॥४॥

तं देवाः प्राणयन्त स प्रणीतः प्रातायत प्रातायीतीँ३  
तत्प्रातरभवत्समागादितीँ३ तत्सायमभवदहरेव प्राणो रात्रि-  
पानः । वाग्निश्चक्षुरसावादित्यश्चन्द्रमा मनो दिशः श्रोत्रं स एष  
प्रहितां संयोगोऽध्यात्ममिमा देवता अद उ आविरधिदैवत-  
मित्येतत्तदुक्तं भवति । एतच्च स्म वै तद्विद्वानाह हिरण्यदन्वैदो  
न तस्येशे यन्मह्यं न दद्युरिति प्रहितां वा अहमध्यात्मं संयोगं  
निविष्टं वेदैतच्च तत् । अनीशानानि ह वा अस्मै भूतानि बलिं  
हरन्ति य एवं वेद । तत्सत्यं सदिति प्राणस्तीत्यन्नं२ यमित्यसा-  
वादित्यस्तदेतत्त्रिवृत्त्रिवृदिव वै चक्षुः शुक्लं कृष्णं कनीनिकेति ।  
स यदि ह वा अपि मृषा वदति सत्यं हैवास्योदितं भवति य  
एवमेतत्सत्यस्य सत्यत्वं वेद ॥५॥

तस्य वाक्कन्तिर्नामानि दामानि१ तदस्येदं वाचा तन्या  
नामभिर्दामभिः सर्वं सितं सर्वं हीदं नामनीँ३ सर्वं वाचाभि-

३ तक्थं A ; उक्थं E, F ; उक्थं३ G.

१ यं R, S, with the MSS. See explanatory note.

तीत्यन्नर्थम् D, E.

३ मम् K.

२ तीत्यन्नयम् G ;

१ दमानि G.



वदति । वहन्ति ह वा एनं तन्तिसंवद्धा य एवं वेद । तस्यो-  
ष्णिग्लोमानि त्वग्गायत्री<sup>२</sup> त्रिष्टुप्मांसमनुष्टुप्तावान्यस्थि जगती  
पङ्क्तिर्मज्जा प्राणो बृहती स छन्दोभिश्छन्नो<sup>३</sup> यच्छन्दोभिश्छन्नस्त-  
स्माच्छन्दांसीत्याचक्षते । छादयन्ति ह वा एनं छन्दांसि पापा-  
त्कर्मणो यस्यां कस्याञ्चिद्दिशि कामयते य एवमेतच्छन्दांसां  
छन्दस्त्वं वेद । तदुक्तमृषिणा । अपश्यं गोपामित्येष वै गोपा  
एष हीदं सर्वं गोपायति । अनिपद्यमानमिति न ह्येष कदा-  
चन संविशति । आ च परा च पथिभिश्चरन्तमित्या च ह्येष  
परा च पथिभिश्चरति । स सघ्रीचीः स विषूचीर्वसान इति  
सघ्रीचीश्च ह्येष विषूचीश्च वस्त इमा एव दिशः । आ वरीवर्त्ति  
भुवनेष्वन्तरित्येष ह्यन्तर्भुवनेष्वावरीवर्त्ति । अथो आवृतासो  
ऽवतासो न कर्तृभिरिति । सर्वं हीदं प्राणेनावृतम् । सोऽयमा-  
काशः प्राणेन<sup>४</sup> बृहत्या विष्टब्धस्तद्यथायमाकाशः प्राणेन बृहत्या  
विष्टब्ध<sup>५</sup> एवं सर्वाणि भूतान्यापिपीलिकाभ्यः प्राणेन बृहत्या  
विष्टब्धानीत्येवं<sup>६</sup> विद्यात् ॥ ६ ॥

अथातो विभूतयोऽस्य पुरुषस्य । तस्य वाचा सृष्टौ पृथिवी  
चाग्निश्चास्यामोषधयो जायन्तेऽग्निरेनाः स्वदयतीदमाहरतेदमा-  
हरत्येवमेतौ वाचं पितरं परिचरतः पृथिवी चाग्निश्च । यावदनु  
पृथिवी यावदन्वाग्निस्तावानस्य लोको भवति नास्य तावन्नलोको  
जीर्यते यावदेतयोर्न जीर्यते पृथिव्याश्चाग्नेश्च य एवमेतां वाचो

<sup>२</sup> गायत्रीष्टुप् F. <sup>३</sup> क्नो A. <sup>४</sup> प्राणो न R in text. <sup>५</sup> ष्टब्ध A. <sup>६</sup> एव R.

<sup>१</sup> एदमाहरते bis F, G.

<sup>२</sup> यावदनु पृथिवी bis F.

विभूतिं वेद । प्राणेन सृष्टावन्तरिक्षं च वायुश्चान्तरिक्षं वा अन्तु  
 चरन्त्यन्तरिक्षमनु शृण्वन्ति वायुरस्मै पुण्यं गन्धमावहत्येवमेतौ  
 प्राणं पितरं परिचरतोऽन्तरिक्षं च वायुश्च । यावदन्तुन्तरिक्षं  
 यावदनु वायुस्तावानस्य लोको भवति नास्य तावल्लोको  
 जीर्यते यावदेतयोर्न जीर्यते<sup>३</sup>ऽन्तरिक्षस्य च वायोश्च य एवमेतां  
 प्राणस्य विभूतिं वेद । चक्षुषा सृष्टौ द्यौश्चादित्यश्च द्यौर्हास्मै  
 वृष्टिमन्नाद्यं संप्रयच्छत्यादित्योऽस्य ज्योतिः प्रकाशं करोत्येवमेतौ  
 चक्षुः पितरं परिचरतो द्यौश्चादित्यश्च । यावदनु द्यौर्यावदन्वा-  
 दित्यस्तावानस्य लोको भवति<sup>४</sup> नास्य तावल्लोको जीर्यते याव-  
 देतयोर्न जीर्यते दिवश्चादित्यस्य च य एवमेतां चक्षुषो विभूतिं  
 वेद । श्रोत्रेण सृष्टा दिशश्च चन्द्रमाश्च दिग्भ्यो हैनमायन्ती<sup>५</sup> ३  
 दिग्भ्यो विष्णुणोति चन्द्रमा अस्मै पूर्वपक्षापरपक्षान्विचिनोति  
 पुण्याय कर्मण एवमेते श्रोत्रं पितरं परिचरन्ति दिशश्च चन्द्र-  
 माश्च । यावदनु दिशो यावदनु चन्द्रमास्तावानस्य लोको भवति  
 नास्य तावल्लोको जीर्यते यावदेतेषां न जीर्यते दिशं च चन्द्रम-  
 सश्च य<sup>६</sup> एवमेतां श्रोत्रस्य विभूतिं वेद । मनसा सृष्टा आपश्च<sup>६</sup>  
 वरुणश्चापो हास्मै अङ्गां संनमन्ते पुण्याय कर्मणे वरुणोऽस्य  
 प्रजां धर्मेण दाधौरैवमेते मनः पितरं परिचरन्त्यापश्च वरुणश्च ।  
 यावदन्वापो यावदनु वरुणस्तावानस्य लोको भवति नास्य  
 तावल्लोको जीर्यते यावदेतेषां न जीर्यतेऽपां च वरुणस्य च य  
 एवमेतां मनसो विभूतिं वेद ॥७॥

<sup>३</sup> °यन्ते S.<sup>४</sup> भवति लोको om. G.<sup>५</sup> यती ३ S.<sup>६</sup> य — आपश्च om. F, G.



आपा३ इत्याप<sup>१</sup> इति तदिदमाप एवेदं वै मूलमदस्तूलमयं  
 पितैते पुत्रा यत्र ह क्व च पुत्रस्य तत्पितुर्यत्र वा पितुस्तद्वा  
 पुत्रस्येतत्तदुक्तं भवति । एतच्च स्म वै तद्विद्वानाह महिदास  
 ऐतरेय आहं<sup>२</sup> मां देवेभ्यो वेद ओ महेवान्वेदेतःप्रदाना ह्येत इतः  
 संभृता इति । स एष गिरिश्चक्षुः श्रोत्रं मनो वाक्प्राणस्तं ब्रह्म-  
 गिरिरित्याचक्षते । गिरति<sup>३</sup> ह वै द्विषन्तं पाप्मानं भ्रातृभ्यं  
 परास्य द्विषन्पाप्मा भ्रातृभ्यो भवति य एवं वेद । स एषोऽसुः  
 स<sup>४</sup> एष प्राणः स एष भूतिश्चाभूतिश्च । तं भूतिरिति देवा  
 उपासाञ्चक्रिरे ते बभूवुस्तस्माद्वाप्येतर्हि सुप्तो भूर्भूरित्येव प्रश्न-  
 सिति । अभूतिरित्यसुरास्ते ह परावभूवुः । भवत्यात्मना परास्य  
 द्विषन्पाप्मा भ्रातृभ्यो भवति य एवं वेद । स एष मृत्युश्चैवामृतं  
 च । तदुक्तमृषिणा । अपाङ्गाडेति स्वधया गृभीत इत्यपानेन  
 ह्ययं यतः प्राणो<sup>५</sup> न पराङ्गवति । अमृत्यो मर्त्येना<sup>६</sup> सयोनि-  
 रित्येतेन हीदं सर्वं सयोनि मर्त्यानि हीमानि शरीराणी<sup>७</sup>  
 अमृतैषा देवता । ता शश्वन्ता विषूचीना वियन्ता न्यन्यं चि-  
 क्युर्न नि चिक्युरन्यमिति निचिन्वन्ति हैवेमानि शरीराणी<sup>८</sup>  
 अमृतैवैषा देवता । अमृतो ह वा अमुष्मिँल्लोके संभवत्यमृतः  
 सर्वेभ्यो भूतेभ्यो ददृशे य एवं वेद य एवं वेद ॥८॥

॥ इत्यैतरेयद्वितीयारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>९</sup>

<sup>१</sup> अप A ; at the beginning आपा३: R.

<sup>२</sup> आह E.

<sup>३</sup> गिरिति E, G.

<sup>४</sup> स एष प्राणः om. F.

<sup>५</sup> प्राणेन F.

<sup>६</sup> मर्त्येना E.

<sup>७</sup> चिक्युर् G,

omitting नि.

<sup>८</sup> Text, L, R ; इति ऐतरेयारण्यके द्वितीयस्य प्रथमोऽध्यायः A ;

## ADHYĀYA 2.

एष इमं लोकमभ्यार्चत्पुरुषरूपेण य एष तपति प्राणो वाव<sup>1</sup> तदभ्यार्चत्प्राणो ह्येष य एष तपति । तं शतं वर्षाण्यभ्यार्चत्तस्माच्छतं वर्षाणि पुरुषायुषो भवन्ति तं यच्छतं वर्षाण्यभ्यार्चत्तस्माच्छतर्चिनस्तस्माच्छतर्चिन इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । स इदं सर्वं मध्यतो दधे यदिदं किञ्च स यदिदं सर्वं मध्यतो दधे यदिदं किञ्च तस्मान्माध्यमास्तस्मान्माध्यमा<sup>2</sup> इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । प्राणो वै गृत्सोऽपानो मदः स यत्प्राणो<sup>3</sup> गृत्सोऽपानो मदस्तस्माद्गृत्समदस्तस्माद्गृत्समद इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । तस्येदं विश्वं मित्रमासीद्यदिदं किञ्च तद्यदस्येदं विश्वं मित्रमासीद्यदिदं किञ्च<sup>4</sup> तस्माद्विश्वमित्रस्तस्माद्विश्वमित्र इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । तं देवा अब्रुवन्नयं वै नः सर्वेषां वाम इति तं यद्देवा अब्रुवन्नयं वै नः सर्वेषां वाम इति तस्माद्वामदेवस्तस्माद्वामदेव इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । स इदं सर्वं पाप्मनोऽत्रायत यदिदं किञ्च स यदिदं सर्वं पाप्मनोऽत्रायत यदिदं किञ्च तस्मादत्रयस्तस्मादत्रय इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् ॥ १॥<sup>5</sup>

इति द्वितीय आरण्ये प्रथमोऽध्यायः K; द्वितीयारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः १ F, G; प्रथमोऽध्यायः D.

- <sup>1</sup> वावद् F. <sup>2</sup> तस्मान्माध्यमास् om. F; मध्यमास् E. <sup>3</sup> मध्यमा E, as in Bṛhaddevatā, III, 116. <sup>4</sup> प्राणे वै F; प्राणो वै गृत्सो वै गृत्सो G. <sup>5</sup> असीद् E. <sup>6</sup> तद् — किञ्च om. F. <sup>7</sup> तस्माद्वामदेवस् om. F. <sup>8</sup> Numbered 9 in A, E, F, G, H, K, L; 1 in D.



एष उ एव विभ्रद्वाजः प्रजा वै वाजस्ता<sup>1</sup> एष विभर्ति यद्वि-  
 भर्ति तस्माद्भ्रद्वाजस्तस्माद्भ्रद्वाज इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् ।  
 तं देवा अब्रुवन्नयं वै नः सर्वेषां वसिष्ठ इति तं यदेवा अब्रु-  
 वन्नयं वै नः सर्वेषां वसिष्ठ इति तस्माद्वसिष्ठस्तस्माद्वसिष्ठ  
 इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । स इदं सर्वमभिप्रागाद्यदिदं किञ्च  
 स यदिदं सर्वमभिप्रागाद्यदिदं किञ्च तस्मात्प्रगाथास्तस्मात्प्र-  
 गाथा<sup>3</sup> इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । स इदं सर्वमभ्यपवयत  
 यदिदं किञ्च स यदिदं सर्वमभ्यपवयत यदिदं किञ्च तस्मात्पा-  
 वमान्यस्तस्मात्पावमान्य इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । सोऽब्रवी-  
 दहमिदं सर्वमसानि यच्च क्षुद्रं यच्च महदिति ते क्षुद्रसूक्ताश्चाभव-  
 न्महासूक्ताश्च तस्मात्क्षुद्रसूक्तास्तस्मात्क्षुद्रसूक्ता इत्याचक्षत एतमेव  
 सन्तम् । सूक्तं वतावोचतेति तत्सूक्तमभवत्तस्मात्सूक्तं तस्मात्सूक्त-  
 मित्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । एष वा ऋगेष ह्येभ्यः सुर्वेभ्यो  
 भूतेभ्योऽर्चत स यदेभ्यः सर्वेभ्यो भूतेभ्योऽर्चत तस्मादृक्तस्मादृ-  
 गित्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । एष वा अर्धर्च एष ह्येभ्यः  
 सर्वेभ्योऽर्धेभ्योऽर्चत स यदेभ्यः सर्वेभ्योऽर्धेभ्योऽर्चत तस्मा-  
 दर्धर्चस्तस्मादर्धर्च इत्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । एष वै पदमेष  
 हीमानि सर्वाणि भूतानि पादि स यदिमानि सर्वाणि भूतानि  
 पादि तस्मात्पदं तस्मात्पदमित्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । एष  
 वा अक्षरमेष ह्येभ्यः सर्वेभ्यो भूतेभ्यः क्षरति न चैनमतिक्षरन्ति

<sup>1</sup> तं R in text.<sup>2</sup> प्रागाथाः A, D, E, K.<sup>3</sup> प्रागाथाः D, E, K

pr. man. Both Āśvalīyana Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 4, 3, and Sāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 10, 3, have प्र°.

स यदेभ्यः सर्वेभ्यो भूतेभ्यः क्षरति न चैनमतिक्षरन्ति तस्मा-  
दक्षरं तस्मादक्षरमित्याचक्षत एतमेव सन्तम् । ता वा एताः  
सर्वा ऋचः सर्वे वेदाः सर्वे घोषा एकैव व्याहृतिः प्राण एव  
प्राण ऋच इत्येव विद्यात् ॥२॥<sup>4</sup>

विश्वामित्रं ह्येतदहः शंसिष्यन्तमिन्द्र उपनिषसाद<sup>1</sup> । स हान्न-  
मित्यभिव्याहृत्य बृहतीसहस्रं शशंस तेनेन्द्रस्य प्रियं धामोपेयाय ।  
तमिन्द्र उवाच ऋषे प्रियं वै मे धामोपागाः स वा ऋषे  
द्वितीयं शंसेति । स हान्नमित्येवाभिव्याहृत्य बृहतीसहस्रं<sup>2</sup> शशंस  
तेनेन्द्रस्य प्रियं धामोपेयाय । तमिन्द्र उवाच ऋषे प्रियं वै मे  
धामोपागाः स वा ऋषे तृतीयं शंसेति । स हान्नमित्येवाभिव्या-  
हृत्य बृहतीसहस्रं शशंस तेनेन्द्रस्य प्रियं धामोपेयाय । तमिन्द्र  
उवाच ऋषे प्रियं वै मे धामोपागा वरं ते ददामीति । स  
होवाच त्वामेव जानीयामिति । तमिन्द्र उवाच प्राणो वा  
अहमस्म्यृषे प्राणस्त्वं प्राणः सर्वाणि भूतानि प्राणो ह्येष य एष  
तपति स एतेन<sup>3</sup> रूपेण सर्वा दिशो विष्टोऽस्मि तस्य मेऽन्नं  
मित्रं दक्षिणं तद्वैश्वामित्रमेव तपन्नेवास्मीति होवाच ॥३॥<sup>5</sup>

तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं संपन्नं तस्य यानि व्यञ्जनानि तच्छ-  
रीरं यो घोषः स आत्मा य ऊष्माणः स प्राणः । एतद्वा स्म

<sup>4</sup> Numbered 10 in A, E, F, G, H, K, L; 2 in D.

<sup>1</sup> उपनिषसाद all MSS.; R, S.

<sup>2</sup> बृहतीसहतीसहस्रं F.

<sup>3</sup> एनेन F.

<sup>4</sup> तद्वै विश्वामित्रम् D.

<sup>5</sup> Numbered 11 in A, E, G, H, K, L; 1 in F; 3 in D.



वै तद्विद्वान्वसिष्ठो वसिष्ठो बभूव तत एतन्नामधेयं लेभे । एतदु  
 हैवेन्द्रो विश्वामित्राय प्रोवाचैतदु हैवेन्द्रो भरद्वाजाय प्रोवाच  
 तस्मात्स तेन बन्धुना यज्ञेषु हूयते । तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं संपन्नं  
 तस्य वा एतस्य बृहतीसहस्रस्य संपन्नस्य षट्त्रिंशत्तमक्षराणां  
 सहस्राणि भवन्ति तावन्ति शतसंवत्सरस्याह्नां सहस्राणि भवन्ति  
 व्यञ्जनैरेव राचीराप्नुवन्ति स्वरैरहानि । तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं  
 संपन्नं तस्य वा एतस्य बृहतीसहस्रस्य संपन्नस्य परस्तात्प्र-  
 ज्ञामयो देवतामयो ब्रह्ममयोऽमृतमयः संभूय देवता अप्येति यः<sup>२</sup>  
 एवं वेद । तद्योऽहं सोऽसौ योऽसौ सोऽहम् । तदुक्तमृषिणा ।  
 सूर्य आत्मा जगतस्तस्युषश्चेति<sup>४</sup> । एतदु हैवोपेक्षेतीपेक्षेत ॥ ४ ॥<sup>५</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयद्वितीयारण्यके द्वितीयोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>६</sup>

### ADHYĀYA 3.

यो ह वा आत्मानं पञ्चविधमुक्थं वेद यस्मादिदं सर्वमु-  
 त्तिष्ठति स संप्रतिवित् । पृथिवी वायुराकाश आपो ज्योतीं-  
 षीत्येष वा आत्मोक्थं पञ्चविधमेतस्माद्धीदं सर्वमुत्तिष्ठत्येतमे-  
 वाप्येति । अयनं ह वै समानानां भवति य एवं<sup>१</sup> वेद ।

<sup>१</sup> एनन् A ; एतं R in text, no doubt a mistake due to the MSS. as often putting  
 m for an assimilated n before a nasal. Cf. II, 1, 5, यं for यन्. <sup>२</sup> य om. F.

<sup>३</sup> स G. <sup>४</sup> Divided च । इति in R. <sup>५</sup> Numbered 12 in A, E, H, K, L ;  
 12, 4 in F, G ; 4 in D.

<sup>६</sup> Text, A, L, R ; इति द्वितीय आरण्ये द्वितीयो  
 अध्यायः २ K ; द्वितीयारण्यके द्वितीयोऽध्यायः २ F, G ; इति द्वितीयोऽध्यायः D ;  
 no colophon E.

<sup>१</sup> एवं om. A.

तस्मिन्योऽन्नं चान्नादं च वेदाहास्मिन्नन्नादो जायते भवत्यस्या-  
न्नम् । आपश्च पृथिवी चान्नमेतन्मयानि ह्यन्नानि भवन्ति ज्योतिश्च  
वायुश्चान्नादमेताभ्यां हीदं सर्वमन्नमर्त्यावपनमाकाश आकाशे  
हीदं सर्वं समोप्यते । आवपनं ह वै समानानां भवति य एवं  
वेद । तस्मिन्योऽन्नं चान्नादं च वेदाहास्मिन्नन्नादो जायते भवत्य-  
स्यान्नम् । ओषधिवनस्पतयोऽन्नं प्राणभृतोऽन्नादमोषधिवन-  
स्पतीन्हि प्राणभृतोऽदन्ति । तेषां य उभयतोदन्ताः पुरुषस्यानु  
विधां<sup>१</sup> विहितास्तेऽन्नादा अन्नमितरे पशवस्तस्मात् इतरान्<sup>२</sup>पशू-  
नधीव चरन्त्यधीव ह्यन्नेऽन्नादो भवति । अधीव ह समानानां  
जायते य एवं वेद ॥१॥<sup>३</sup>

तस्य य आत्मानमाविस्तरां वेदाश्नुते हाविर्भूयः । ओषधिवन-  
स्पतयो यच्च किञ्च प्राणभृत् आत्मानमाविस्तरां वेद । ओषधि-  
वनस्पतिषु हि रसो दृश्यते चित्तं प्राणभृत्सु । प्राणभृत्सु त्वेवावि-  
स्तरामात्मा तेषु हि रसोऽपि दृश्यते न चित्तमितरेषु । पुरुषे  
त्वेवाविस्तरामात्मा स हि प्रज्ञानेन संपन्नतमो विज्ञातं वदति  
विज्ञातं पश्यति वेदश्चस्तनं वेद लोकालोकौ मर्त्येनामृतमी-  
प्सत्येवं संपन्नः । अथेतरेषां पशूनामशनापिपासे एवाभिविज्ञानं  
न विज्ञातं वदन्ति न विज्ञातं पश्यन्ति न विदुः श्वस्तनं न  
लोकालोकौ न एतावन्तो भवन्ति यथाप्रज्ञं<sup>४</sup> हि संभवाः ॥२॥<sup>५</sup>

<sup>१</sup> ०७५ R.<sup>२</sup> अनुविधा S.<sup>३</sup> इतरन् F.<sup>४</sup> Numbered 13 in

A, E, H, K, L; 13, 5 in F, G; 1 in D.

<sup>५</sup> आवृतम् G.<sup>६</sup> प्रज्ञां F.<sup>७</sup> Numbered 14 in A, E, H, K, L;

14, 2 in F, G; 2 in D.



स एष पुरुषः समुद्रः सर्वं लोकमति । यच्च किञ्चाश्नुतेऽत्येनं  
मन्यते यद्यन्तरिक्षलोकमश्नुतेऽत्येनं मन्यते यद्यमुं लोकमश्नुवी-  
तात्येवैनं मन्येत । स एष पुरुषः पञ्चविधस्तस्य यदुष्णं तज्ज्यो-  
तिर्यानि खानि स आकाशोऽथ यल्लोहितं श्रेष्ठा<sup>2</sup> रेतस्ता  
आपो यच्छरीरं सा पृथिवी यः प्राणः स<sup>3</sup> वायुः । स एष  
वायुः पञ्चविधः प्राणोऽपानो व्यान उदानः समानः<sup>4</sup> । ता  
एता<sup>5</sup> देवताः प्राणापानयोरेव निविष्टाश्चक्षुः श्रोत्रं मनो वा-  
गिति प्राणस्य ह्यन्वपायमेता अपियन्ति । स एष वाचश्चि-  
त्तस्योत्तरोत्तरिक्रमो यद्यज्ञः । स एष यज्ञः पञ्चविधोऽग्निहोत्रं  
दर्शपूर्णमासौ चातुर्मास्यानि पशुः सोमः । स एष यज्ञानां  
संपन्नतमो यत्सोम एतस्मिन्हेताः पञ्चविधा अधिगम्यन्ते यत्प्रा-  
क्सवनेभ्यः सैकाविधा चीणि सवनानि यदूर्ध्वं सा पञ्चमी ॥३॥<sup>6</sup>

यो ह वै यज्ञे यज्ञं वेदाहन्यहर्देवेषु देवमध्यूहं स संप्रतिवित् ।  
एष वै यज्ञे यज्ञोऽहन्यहर्देवेषु देवोऽध्यूहो यदेतन्महदुक्थम् ।  
तदेतत्पञ्चविधं त्रिवृत्पञ्चदशं सप्तदशमेकविंशं पञ्चविंशमिति  
स्तोमतो गायत्रं रथन्तरं बृहद्भद्रं राजनमिति सामतो गायत्र्यु-  
ष्णिग्वृहती त्रिष्टुप्तिपदेति छन्दस्तः शिरो दक्षिणः पक्ष उत्तरः  
पक्षः पुच्छमात्मेत्याख्यानम् । पञ्चकृत्वः प्रस्तौति पञ्चकृत्व उद्गा-  
यति पञ्चकृत्वः प्रतिहरति पञ्चकृत्व उपद्रवति पञ्चकृत्वो निध-

<sup>1</sup> यमव° F.<sup>2</sup> श्रेष्ठा A, F.<sup>3</sup> स वायुः bis F.<sup>4</sup> समानः bis F.<sup>5</sup> पञ्चवे inserted in G; देवताः om. F.<sup>6</sup> Numbered 15 in A, E, H, K, L;

15, 3 in F, G; 3 in D.

<sup>1</sup> देवं—देवेषु om. F, G.<sup>2</sup> सप्तदम् E.

नमुपयन्ति तत्सोभसहस्रं भवति । एवं ह्येताः पञ्च विधा  
अनुशस्यन्ते यत्प्राकृचाशीतिभ्यः सैका विधा तिस्रस्तृचाशीतयो  
यदूर्ध्वं सा पञ्चमी । तदेतत्सहस्रं तत्सर्वं तानि दश<sup>३</sup> दशेति वै  
सर्वमेतावती हि संख्या दश दशतस्तच्छतं दशशतानि तत्सहस्रं  
तत्सर्वम् । तानि त्रीणि छन्दांसि भवन्ति त्रैधा विहितं वा  
इदमन्नमशनं पानं<sup>४</sup> खादस्तदेतैराप्नोति ॥४॥<sup>५</sup>

तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं संपन्नम् । तद्वैतदेके नानाछन्दसां सहस्रं  
प्रतिजानते किमन्यत्सदन्यद्व्यामेति । त्रिष्टुप्सहस्रमेके<sup>१</sup> जगतीस-  
हस्रमेकेऽनुष्टुप्सहस्रमेके । तदुक्तमृषिणा । अनुष्टुभमनु चर्चूर्यमा-  
णमिन्द्रं नि चिक्षुः कवयो मनीषेति ॥ वाचि वै तदैन्द्रं प्राणं  
न्यचायन्नित्येतत्तदुक्तं भवति । स हेश्वरो यशस्वी कल्याणकीर्ति-  
र्भवितोरीश्वरो ह तु पुरायुषः प्रैतोरिति ह स्माहाकृत्स्नो ह्येष  
आत्मा यद्वागभि हि प्राणेन<sup>२</sup> मनसेऽस्यमानो वाचा नानु-  
भवति । बृहतीमभिसंपादयेदेष वै कृत्स्न आत्मा यद्बृहती । सो  
ऽयमात्मा सर्वतः शरीरैः परिवृतस्तद्यथायमात्मा सर्वतः शरीरैः  
परिवृत एवमेव बृहती सर्वतश्छन्दोभिः परिवृता । मध्यं ह्येषा-  
मङ्गानामात्मा मध्यं छन्दसां बृहती । स हेश्वरो यशस्वी कल्या-  
णकीर्तिर्भवितोरीश्वरो ह तु पुरायुषः प्रैतोरिति ह स्माह कृत्स्नो  
ह्येष आत्मा यद्बृहती तस्माद्बृहतीमेवाभिसंपादयेत् ॥५॥<sup>३</sup>

<sup>३</sup> दश om. F.<sup>४</sup> पानं om. F.<sup>५</sup> Numbered 16 in A, E, H, K, L ;

16, 4 in F, G ; 4 in D.

<sup>१</sup> एते E.<sup>२</sup> See explanatory notes.<sup>३</sup> Numbered 17 in A, E, H, K, L ;

17, 5 in F, G ; 5 in D.



तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं<sup>1</sup> संपन्नं तस्य वा एतस्य बृहतीसहस्रस्य  
 संपन्नस्यैकादशानुष्टुभां शतानि भवन्ति पञ्चविंशतिश्चानुष्टुभ  
 आक्षं वै भूयसा कनीयः । तदुक्तमृषिणा । वाचमष्टापदीमहमि-  
 त्यष्टौ हि चतुरश्वराणि भवन्ति । नवसक्तिमिति बृहती संपद्य-  
 माना नवसक्तिः<sup>2</sup> । ऋतस्पृशमिति सत्यं वै वागृचा स्पृष्टा ।  
 इन्द्रात्परि तन्वं मम इति तद्यदेवैतद्बृहतीसहस्रमनुष्टुप्संपन्नं  
 भवति तस्मात्तदैन्द्रात्प्राणाद्बृहत्यै वाचमनुष्टुभं तन्वं संनिर्मिमीते ।  
 स वा एष वाचः परमो<sup>3</sup> विकारो यदेतन्महदुक्थं तदेतत्पञ्चविधं  
 मितममितं स्वरः सत्यानृते इति । ऋग्गाथा कुम्भ्या तन्मितं  
 यजुर्निगदो वृथावाक्तदमितं सामाथो यः कश्च गेष्णः सः स्वर  
 ओऽमिति सत्यं नेत्यनृतम् । तदेतत्पुष्पं फलं वाचो यत्सत्यं स  
 हेश्वरो यशस्वी कल्याणकीर्तिर्भवितोः पुष्पं हि फलं वाचः  
 सत्यं वदति । अथैतन्मूलं वाचो यदनृतं तद्यथा वृक्ष आविर्मूलः  
 शुष्यति स उद्धर्तत एवमेवानृतं वदन्नाविर्मूलमात्मानं करोति  
 स शुष्यति स उद्धर्तते । तस्मादनृतं न वदेद्ध्येत त्वेनेन । पराग्व  
 एतद्रिक्तमक्षरं यदेतदोऽमिति तद्यत्किञ्चोमित्याहाचैवास्मै तद्वि-  
 च्यते स यत्सर्वमो<sup>4</sup> कुर्याद्रिज्यादात्मानं स कामेभ्यो नालं स्यात् ।  
 अथैतत्पूर्णमभ्यात्मं यच्चेति । स यत्सर्वं नेति ब्रूयात्पापिकास्य  
 कीर्तिर्जायेत सैनं<sup>5</sup> तत्रैव हन्यात् । तस्मात्काल एव दद्यात्काले न  
 दद्यात्तत्सत्यानृते मिथुनीकरोति तयोर्मिथुनात्प्रजायते भूयान्भ-  
 वति । यो वै तां वाचं वेद यस्या एष विकारः स संप्रतिवित् ।

<sup>1</sup> बृहतीसहस्रोसहस्रं F.<sup>2</sup> So I read for नवसक्ति of the MSS. and edd.

See explanatory notes.

<sup>3</sup> पमो A.<sup>4</sup> समाथो F, G.<sup>5</sup> सैनं F.

अकारो वै सर्वा वाक्सैषा स्पर्शोष्मभिर्ब्रज्यमाना बह्वी नाना-  
रूपा भवति । तस्यै यदुपांशु स प्राणोऽथ यदुच्चैस्तच्छरीरं  
तस्मात्तत्तिर इव तिर इव ह्यशरीरमशरीरो हि प्राणोऽथ  
यदुच्चैस्तच्छरीरं<sup>6</sup> तस्मात्तदाविराविर्हि शरीरम् ॥६॥<sup>7</sup>

तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं संपन्नं तद्यशः स इन्द्रः स भूतानाम-  
धिपतिः । स य एवमेतमिन्द्रं भूतानामधिपतिं वेद विस्रसा  
हैवास्मात्लोकात्प्रैतीति ह स्माह महिदास ऐतरेयः प्रेत्येन्द्रो  
भूत्वेषु लोकेषु राजति । तदाहुर्यदनेन रूपेणामुं लोकमभिसं-  
भवती<sup>3</sup> अथ केन रूपेणेमं लोकमाभवती<sup>3</sup> । तद्यदेतत्स्त्रियां  
लोहितं भवत्यग्रेस्तदूपं तस्मात्तस्मान्न बीभत्सेताथ यदेतत्पुरुषे  
रेतो भवत्यादित्यस्य तदूपं तस्मात्तस्मान्न बीभत्सेत । सोऽयमा-  
त्मेममात्मानममुष्मा आत्मने संप्रयच्छत्यसावात्मानमुमात्मानमि-  
मस्मा<sup>2</sup> आत्मने संप्रयच्छति तावन्योन्यमभिसंभवतोऽनेनाह रूपे-  
णामुं लोकमभिसंभवत्यमुनो रूपेणेमं लोकमाभवति ॥७॥<sup>3</sup>

तत्रैते श्लोकाः ।

यदक्षरं पञ्चविधं समेति । युजो युक्ता अभि यत्संवहन्ति ।  
सत्यस्य सत्यमनु यत्र युज्यते । तत्र देवाः सर्वे एकं भवन्ति ॥१॥

<sup>6</sup> तस्मात् — तच्छरीरम् *bis* G.  
in F, G; 5 in D.

<sup>7</sup> Numbered 18 in A, E, H, K, L; 18, 4

<sup>1</sup> om. G. <sup>2</sup> ०मिममस्मी S<sup>12</sup> in text; S<sup>145</sup> in commentary. <sup>3</sup> Numbered  
19 in A, E, H, K, L; 19, 7 in F, G; 7 in D.



यदक्षरादक्षरमेति युक्तम् । युजो युक्ता अभि यत्संवहन्ति ।  
सत्यस्य सत्यमनु यच्च युज्यते । तच्च देवाः सर्वे एकं भवन्ति ॥२॥

यद्वाच ओमिति यच्च नेति । यच्चास्याः क्रूरं यदु<sup>१</sup> चोल्ब-  
णिष्णु । तद्वियूया कवयो अन्वविन्दन् । नामायत्ता समतृप्य-  
ञ्छ्रुतेऽधि<sup>२</sup> ॥३॥

यस्मिन्नामा समतृप्यञ्छ्रुतेऽधि<sup>३</sup> । तच्च देवाः सर्वयुजो भवन्ति ।  
तेन पाप्मानमपहत्य ब्रह्मणा । स्वर्गं लोकमप्येति विद्वान् ॥४॥

नैनं वाचा स्त्रियं ब्रुवन् । नैनमस्त्रीपुमान्ब्रुवन् । पुमांसं न  
ब्रुवन्नेनम् । वदन्वदति कश्चन ॥५॥

अ<sup>४</sup> इति ब्रह्म तत्रागतमहमिति । तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं  
संपन्नं तस्य वा एतस्य बृहतीसहस्रस्य संपन्नस्य षट्त्रिंशतमक्ष-  
राणां सहस्राणि भवन्ति तावन्ति पुरुषायुषोऽह्नां सहस्राणि  
भवन्ति । जीवाक्षरेणैव जीवाहराप्नोति जीवाह्ना जीवाक्षर-  
मिति । अनकाममारोऽथ देवरथस्तस्य वागुद्धिः<sup>५</sup> श्रोत्रे पक्ष्मसी  
चक्षुषी युक्ते मनः संयहीता तदयं प्राणोऽधितिष्ठति । तदुक्तमृ-  
षिणा । आ तेन यातं मनसो जवीयसा निमिषश्चिज्जवीयसेति  
जवीयसेति ॥६॥<sup>६</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयद्वितीयारण्यके तृतीयोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>७</sup>

<sup>१</sup> यदि E.

<sup>२</sup> ऽति F, G.

<sup>३</sup> ऽति F, G.

<sup>४</sup> अह D, F, G;

अः K, L, S.

<sup>५</sup> वागुद्धि A, E, G.

<sup>६</sup> Numbered 20 in A, E, H, K, L;

20, 8 in F, G; 8 in D.

<sup>७</sup> Text, A, L; इति द्वितीय आरण्ये तृतीयोऽध्यायः K;

द्वितीयारण्यके तृतीयोऽध्यायः F, G; इति तृतीयोऽध्यायः D; no colophon E.

## ADHYĀYA 4.

आत्मा वा इदमेक एवाय आसीन्नान्यत्किञ्चन मिषत् । स ईक्षत । लोकान्नु सृजा इति । स इमाँल्लोकानसृजत । अम्भो मरीचीर्मरमापः<sup>1</sup> । अदोऽम्भः परेण दिवं द्यौः प्रतिष्ठान्तरिक्षं मरीचयः पृथिवी मरो या अधस्तात्ता आपः । स ईक्षतेमे नु लोका लोकपालान्नु सृजा इति । सोऽद्भ्य एव पुरुषं समुद्धृत्या-मूर्छयत् । तमभ्यतपत्तस्याभितप्तस्य मुखं निरभिद्यत यथाण्डं मुखाद्वाग्वाचोऽग्निः । नसिके निरभिद्येतां नासिकाभ्यां प्राणः प्राणाद्वायुः । अक्षिणी निरभिद्येतामक्षीभ्यां<sup>2</sup> चक्षुश्चक्षुष आदित्यः । कर्णौ निरभिद्येतां कर्णाभ्यां श्रोत्रं श्रोत्राद्दिशः । तङ्गिरभिद्यत त्वचो लोमानि लोमभ्य ओषधिवनस्पतयः । हृदयं निरभिद्यत<sup>3</sup> हृदयान्मनो मनसश्चन्द्रमाः । नाभिर्निरभिद्यत नाभ्या अपानोऽपानान्मृत्युः । शिश्नं निरभिद्यत शिश्नाद्रेतो रेतस आपः ॥ १ ॥<sup>4</sup>

ता एता देवताः सृष्टा अस्मिन्महत्पर्यवे प्रापतंस्तमशनापिपा-  
साभ्यामन्ववार्जत् । ता एनमब्रुवन्नायतनं नः प्रजानीहि<sup>5</sup> यस्मि-

<sup>1</sup> मपः Böhlingk. <sup>2</sup> अक्षिभ्यां M, Röer and Rājārāma's edd. <sup>3</sup> निर-  
भिद्ये N ; निरभिद्येतां corrected into निरभिद्यत M. <sup>4</sup> In the Upaniṣad, in  
the MSS. and edd. of text and Śaṅkara's commentary, in Rājārāma and Böhlingk's  
edd., and differently in T, the Khaṇḍas are subdivided into paragraphs. Sāyaṇa's  
division of sentences is quite different, and as neither division has any authority the  
numbers are ignored. S, T, Rājārāma's ed., and the MSS. of Śaṅkara end : इति  
प्रथमः खण्डः । Numbered 21 in A, E, H, K, L ; 21, 1 in F, G ; 1 in D. The  
Upaniṣad MSS. and edd. all prefix ओम्.

<sup>5</sup> अशनायापिपासे T, Rājārāma's ed. here and below and in Jivānanda's ed.  
(cited in U as {a}). <sup>2</sup> प्रजानीहि F.



नप्रतिष्ठिता अन्नमदामेति । ताभ्यो गामानयत्ता अब्रुवन्न वै नोऽयमलमिति । ताभ्योऽश्वमानयत्ता अब्रुवन्न वै नोऽयमलमिति । ताभ्यः पुरुषमानयत्ता अब्रुवन्सुकृतं वतेति पुरुषो वाव सुकृतं । ता अब्रवीद्यथायतनं प्रविशतेति । अग्निर्वाग्भूत्वा मुखं प्राविशद्वायुः प्राणो भूत्वा नासिके प्राविशदादित्यश्चक्षुर्भूत्वाक्षिणी प्राविशद्दृशः श्रोत्रं भूत्वा कर्णौ प्राविशन्क्षीषधिवनस्पतयो लोमानि भूत्वा त्वचं<sup>३</sup> प्राविशंश्चन्द्रमा मनो भूत्वा<sup>४</sup> हृदयं प्राविशन्मृत्युरपानो भूत्वा नाभिं प्राविशदापो रेतो भूत्वा शिश्रुं प्राविशन् । तमशनापिपासे अब्रूतामावाभ्यामभिप्रजानीहीति ते अब्रवीदेतास्वेव वां<sup>५</sup> देवतास्वाभजाम्येतासु भागिन्यौ करोमीति । तस्माद्यस्यै कस्यै च देवतायै हविर्गृह्यते भागिन्यावेवास्यामशनापिपासे भवतः ॥ २ ॥<sup>६</sup>

स ईक्षतेमे नु लोकाश्च लोकपालाश्चान्नमेभ्यः सृजा इति । सोऽपोऽभ्यतपत्ताभ्योऽभितप्ताभ्यो मूर्तिरजायत । या वै सा मूर्तिरजायतान्नं वै तत् । तदेनत्सृष्टं पराङ्म्यजिगांसत्तद्वाचाजि-

<sup>३</sup> त्वचं — भूत्वा om. A, added by Colebrooke with मनसो. <sup>४</sup> मधि T; मधि Böhlingk. <sup>५</sup> वा N, Röer and Rājārāma's edd. <sup>६</sup> Numbered 22 in A, E, H, K, L; 22, 2 in F, G; 2 in D; इति द्वितीयः खण्डः S, T, and MSS. of Śaṅkara; in smaller print in Rājārāma's ed.

<sup>१</sup> सोमो A. <sup>२</sup> तदेतदभिष्टुष्टं M, T, Jivānanda's ed.; तदन्नं U (one MS. ka). In Śaṅkara's comm., Jivānanda's ed., and five MSS. of U (ka, kha, ga; cha; ja) have तत्. Three MSS. of U in Ānandatīrtha's *ṭīkā* here and two on p. 42, note 3, have तत्. Rājārāma and Röer read तदेतदभिष्टुष्टं नदत्, and clearly this is what T had in view. The नदत् is not recognized in the commentaries, and seems a later addition to the text. Böhlingk reads नदेतत्. <sup>३</sup> So Böhlingk for मधि<sup>०</sup> of MSS. and edd.

घृक्षत्तन्नाशक्नोद्वाचा ग्रहीतुम्<sup>4</sup> । स यद्वैनद्वाचाग्रहैष्यदभिव्याहृत्य  
 हैवान्नमचप्स्यत् । तत्प्राणेनाजिघृक्षत्तन्नाशक्नोत्प्राणेन ग्रहीतुम् ।  
 स यद्वैनत्प्राणेनाग्रहैष्यदभिप्राण्य हैवान्नमचप्स्यत् । तच्चक्षुषाजि-  
 घृक्षत्तन्नाशक्नोच्चक्षुषा ग्रहीतुम् । स यद्वैनच्चक्षुषाग्रहैष्यदृष्ट्वा हैवा-  
 न्नमचप्स्यत् । तच्छ्रोत्रेणाजिघृक्षत्तन्नाशक्नोच्छ्रोत्रेण ग्रहीतुम् । स  
 यद्वैनच्छ्रोत्रेणाग्रहैष्यच्छ्रुत्वा हैवान्नमचप्स्यत् । तत्त्वचाजिघृक्षत्त-  
 न्नाशक्नोत्त्वचा ग्रहीतुम् । स यद्वैनत्त्वचाग्रहैष्यत्स्पृष्ट्वा हैवान्न-  
 मचप्स्यत् । तन्मनसाजिघृक्षत्तन्नाशक्नोन्मनसा ग्रहीतुम् । स  
 यद्वैनन्मनसाग्रहैष्यदध्यात्वा हैवान्नमचप्स्यत् । तच्छिश्नेनाजिघृक्ष-  
 त्तन्नाशक्नोच्छिश्नेन ग्रहीतुम् । स यद्वैनच्छिश्नेनाग्रहैष्यद्विसृज्य  
 हैवान्नमचप्स्यत् । तदपानेनाजिघृक्षत्तदावयत् । सैषो<sup>5</sup> ऽन्नस्य  
 ग्रहो यद्वायुरन्नायुर्वा एष यद्वायुः । स ईक्षत कथं न्विदं मदृते  
 स्यादिति । स ईक्षत कतरेण प्रपद्या इति । स ईक्षत यदि  
 वाचाभिव्याहृतं यदि प्राणेनाभिप्राणितं यदि चक्षुषा दृष्टं यदि  
 श्रोत्रेण श्रुतं यदि त्वचा स्पृष्टं यदि मनसा ध्यातं यद्यपानेना-  
 भ्यपानितं यदि शिश्नेन विसृष्टमथ<sup>6</sup> कोऽहमिति । स एतमेव  
 सीमानं विदार्येतया द्वारा प्रापद्यत । सैषा विदृतिर्नाम द्वास्त-  
 देतन्नान्दनम् । तस्य त्रय आवसथास्त्रयः स्वप्ना अयमावसथो  
 ऽयमावसथोऽयमावसथ इति । स जातो भूतान्यभिव्यैक्ष-  
 त्किमिहान्यं वावदिषदिति । स एतमेव पुरुषं ब्रह्म<sup>11</sup> ततममप-

<sup>4</sup> ग्रहीतुम् and so *infra* T. Böhlingk reads अग्रहीष्यद् throughout. <sup>5</sup> हैतच् T, Röer, Benares ed. <sup>6</sup> जिघृक्षत् — शिश्नेन *bis* N. <sup>7</sup> स एषो T, Röer, Benares ed.

<sup>8</sup> अथ T; om. Rājārāma.

<sup>9</sup> विधृतिर् T.

<sup>10</sup> व्यैक्षत् rest; विव° Delbrück; वाव दिशेत् Böhlingk.

against Śaṅkara and Sāyaṇa.

<sup>11</sup> S prints as ब्रह्मततमम्



श्यत् । इदमदर्शमिती<sup>१२</sup> । तस्मादिदं नो नामेदं ह वै नाम  
तमिदं सन्तमिन्द्र<sup>१३</sup> इत्याचक्षते परोक्षेण । परोक्षप्रिया<sup>१४</sup> इव हि  
देवाः । परोक्षप्रिया इव हि देवाः ॥३॥<sup>१५</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयद्वितीयारण्यके चतुर्थोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>१६</sup>

### ADHYĀYA 5.

पुरुषे<sup>१</sup> ह वा अयमादितो गर्भो भवति । यदेतदेतस्तेदेत-  
त्सर्वेभ्योऽङ्गेभ्यस्तेजः संभूतमात्मन्येवात्मानं विभर्ति तद्यदा स्त्रियां  
सिञ्चत्यथैनज्जनयति । तदस्य प्रथमं जन्म<sup>२</sup> । तस्त्रिया आत्मभूयं  
गच्छति यथा स्वमङ्गं तथा । तस्मादेनां न हिनस्ति । सास्यैत-  
मात्मानमच गतं भावयति सा भावयित्री भावयितव्या भवति ।

<sup>१२</sup> इति M, Röer and Rājārāma; °श्री३म् Böhlingk, but cf. II, 3, 7, &c. <sup>१३</sup> °न्द्र-  
मित्य° Röer. <sup>१४</sup> पारोक्ष F. <sup>१५</sup> Numbered 23 in A, E, F, H, K, L; 23, 3  
in G; 3 in D; इति तृतीयः खण्डः S, T, and MSS. of Śaṅkara. <sup>१६</sup> So A,  
L, R; द्वितीयारण्यके चतुर्थोऽध्यायः F, G; इति चतुर्थोऽध्यायः D; इति श्री ऐतरे-  
योपनिषदि चतुर्थोऽध्यायः समाप्तः ॥४॥ N; इत्यैतरेये द्वितीये चतुर्थः M; no colo-  
phon E; इत्यैतरेये द्वितीये आरण्यके चतुर्थोऽध्यायः । उपनिषत्सु प्रथमोऽध्यायः ।  
ओं तत्सत् । T; इति द्वितीयारण्ये चतुर्थोऽध्यायः K. Rājārāma follows T, correcting  
द्वितीये into °य.

<sup>१</sup> Before पुरुषे, अपक्रामन्तु गर्भिण्यः is inserted in A, E, F, G, K, L, N, R, S<sup>4-9</sup>, U.  
But though old the words cannot be original, and are not recognized by Śāyana or  
Śaṅkara. <sup>२</sup> ऐतस् om. A. <sup>३</sup> तदेतद् om. I. <sup>४</sup> सर्वेभ्यः I.

<sup>५</sup> संभूतं T, Rājārāma's ed. <sup>६</sup> °धैतज् T, Röer, Rājārāma and Jivānanda's edd.,  
and two MSS. (ka, kha) cited in U; °धैतं Böhlingk. <sup>७</sup> इति प्रथमः खण्डः T.  
This must be due to a mistaken idea that the last colophon (see n. 15) means that  
there are four Khaṇḍas in this Adhyāya, whereas it really means that this is the fourth  
Khaṇḍa of the whole Upaniṣad. After भावयति it has ॥१॥ treating this as a new  
Khaṇḍa.

तं स्त्री गर्भं विभर्ति सोऽयं<sup>8</sup> एव कुमारं जन्मनोऽयेऽधिभाव-  
यति । स यत्कुमारं जन्मनोऽयेऽधिभावयत्यात्मानमेव तद्भाव-  
यति । एषां लोकानां संतत्या एवं संतता हीमे लोकाः ।  
तदस्य द्वितीयं जन्म<sup>10</sup> । सोऽस्यायमात्मा पुण्येभ्यः कर्मभ्यः  
प्रति<sup>11</sup>धीयते । अथास्यायमितर आत्मा कृतकृत्यो वयोगतः प्रैति ।  
स इतः प्रयत्नेव पुनर्जायते । तदस्य तृतीयं जन्म । तदुक्तमृ-  
षिणा<sup>12</sup> । गर्भे नु सन्नेषामवेदमहं देवानां जनिमानि विश्वा ।  
शतं मा पुर आयसीररक्षन्ध श्येनो जवसा निरदीयमिति ॥  
गर्भं एवैतच्छयानो वामदेव एवमुवाच<sup>14</sup> । स एवं विद्वानस्मा-  
च्छरीरभेदादूर्ध्व उक्त्रम्यामुष्मिन्स्वर्गे लोके सर्वान्कामानाप्त्वा-  
मृतः समभवत्समभवत्<sup>15</sup> ।

॥ इत्यैतरेयद्वितीयारण्यके पञ्चमोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>16</sup>

<sup>8</sup> om. Böhtlingk.

<sup>9</sup> तद् om. N.

<sup>10</sup> ॥ २ ॥ इति द्वितीयः खण्डः T.

<sup>11</sup> प्रतिनिधीयते T. This is an obvious error, and is borrowed from Śaṅkara's com-  
mentary. <sup>12</sup> ॥ १ ॥ इति तृतीयः खण्डः T. <sup>13</sup> गर्भे नु सन्नेष I; S has ०न्नधः

as have U, Röer, Benares, and Rājārāma's edd.

<sup>14</sup> ॥ १ ॥ T.

<sup>15</sup> ॥ २ ॥ T.

T continues इति चतुर्थः खण्डः ॥ ४ ॥ and so S, U, and MSS. of Śaṅkara. Numbered  
24 in A, E, H, K, L; 24, 1 in F, G; not numbered in D; numbered 14 in R.  
Before the number, A, S<sup>4-9</sup>, Benares ed. (samvat 1941), and U insert यथास्थानं  
तु (om. U) गर्भिन्यः. See on II, 6. The words are not recognized by Śaṅkara  
or Sāyaṇa, and cannot be genuine.

<sup>16</sup> Text, R; इति द्वितीयारण्यके

पञ्चमोऽध्यायः A; इति द्वितीय आरण्यके पञ्चमोऽध्यायः L; इति द्वितीय आरण्यके  
पञ्चमोऽध्यायः K; द्वितीयारण्यके पञ्चमोऽध्यायः F, G; इति पञ्चमोऽध्यायः D; no  
colophon E; इति ऐतरेये पञ्चमः M; इत्यैतरेये द्वितीये आरण्यके पञ्चमोऽध्यायः ।  
उपनिषत्सु द्वितीयोऽध्यायः । ओं तत्सत् T; 4 only N. Rājārāma has इत्यैतरेयारण्यके  
and then as in T.



## ADHYĀYA 6.

को<sup>1</sup>ऽयमात्मेति वयमुपास्महे कतरः स आत्मा । येन वा<sup>2</sup>  
 पश्यति येन वा<sup>3</sup> शृणोति येन वा गन्धानाजिघ्रति येन वा  
 वाचं व्याकरोति येन वा स्वादु चास्वादु च विजानाति ।  
 यदेतद्दृढं मनश्चैतत्संज्ञानमाज्ञानं विज्ञानं प्रज्ञानं मेधा<sup>4</sup> दृष्टि-  
 र्धृतिर्मतिर्मनीषा जूतिः स्मृतिः संकल्पः क्रतुरसुः कामो वश  
 इति । सर्वाण्येवैतानि प्रज्ञानस्य नामधेयानि भवन्ति । एष<sup>6</sup>  
 ब्रह्मैष इन्द्र एष प्रजापतिरेते सर्वे देवा इमानि च पञ्च महा-  
 भूतानि पृथिवी वायुराकाश आपो ज्योतीर्धीत्येतानीमानि च  
 क्षुद्रमिश्राणीव बीजानीतराणि चेताराणि<sup>7</sup> चाण्डजानि<sup>8</sup> च  
 जारुजानि<sup>9</sup> च स्वेदजानि चोद्भिज्जानि<sup>10</sup> चाश्वा गावः पुरुषा  
 हस्तिनो यत्किञ्चेदं प्राणि जङ्गमं च पतचि च यच्च स्थावरं  
 सर्वं तत्प्रज्ञानेचं<sup>11</sup> प्रज्ञाने प्रतिष्ठितं प्रज्ञानेचो<sup>12</sup> लोकः प्रज्ञा  
 प्रतिष्ठा प्रज्ञानं<sup>13</sup> ब्रह्म । स एतेन<sup>14</sup> प्रज्ञेनात्मनास्माँल्लोकादुत्क्र-

<sup>1</sup> यथास्थानं तु गर्भिन्यः is here inserted in R. It is omitted by D, E, F, G, H, I, L, N, T, and in Sītārāma's text, and by Röer and Rājārāma. See on II, 5. यम<sup>0</sup> Max Müller and Böhlingk.

<sup>2</sup> रूपं inserted in T, in Röer, Jivānanda and Rājārāma's edd. It is clearly borrowed from Saṅkara's commentary. <sup>3</sup> शब्दान inserted in T; शब्दं in Röer, Jivānanda and Rājārāma's edd. <sup>4</sup> मेधा om. I.

<sup>5</sup> दृष्टिर् F; स्मृतिः om. Benares ed. <sup>6</sup> स added in T. <sup>7</sup> बीजानित-राणि I. <sup>8</sup> चाण्डजानि A. <sup>9</sup> जानि only F; जरायु<sup>0</sup> Böhlingk.

<sup>10</sup> The spelling with two j's is supported by I, M, T, U, Rājārāma and Sītārāma's edd., against Benares ed., R and S. <sup>11</sup> प्रज्ञानेचं om. F, G. <sup>12</sup> प्रज्ञानेचि D.

<sup>13</sup> प्रज्ञानं ब्रह्म om. I. <sup>14</sup> एतेनैव T.

म्यामुष्मिन्स्वर्गे लोके सर्वान्कामानाप्त्वामृतः समभवत्सम-  
भवत्<sup>15</sup> ॥

॥ इत्यैतरेयद्वितीयारण्यके षष्ठोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>16</sup>

॥ इति द्वितीयारण्यकम् ॥

This ends the second Āraṇyaka, but the majority of the MSS. of the text, and of Sāyaṇa's commentary, and of Ānandatīrtha's own commentary, and his *ṭīkā*, add a seventh Adhyāya, which is:—

#### ADHYĀYA 7.

वाङ्मे मनसि प्रतिष्ठिता मनो मे वाचि प्रतिष्ठितमाविरा-  
वीर्मं एधि वेदस्य म आणी स्यः श्रुतं मे मा प्रहासीरनेनाधी-  
तेनाहोरात्रान्संदधाम्यृतं वदिष्यामि सत्यं वदिष्यामि<sup>3</sup> तन्मामंवतु  
तद्वक्तारमवत्ववतु मामवतु वक्तारमवतु वक्तारम् ॥

॥ इत्यैतरेयद्वितीयारण्यके सप्तमोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>5</sup>

<sup>15</sup> इति पञ्चमः खण्डः ॥ ५ ॥ T, U, MSS. of Śaṅkara; numbered 25 in A, E, H, K, L; not numbered in D, F, G; 5 in N. <sup>16</sup> Text, R; इति द्वितीयारण्यके

षष्ठोऽध्यायः ॥ ६ ॥ A; इति द्वितीयारण्यके षष्ठोऽध्यायः L; इति द्वितीय आरण्ये  
षष्ठोऽध्यायः K; द्वितीयारण्यके षष्ठोऽध्यायः F, G; इति षष्ठोऽध्यायः D, M; no  
colophon in E, N; इति ऐतरेये द्वितीये आरण्यके षष्ठोऽध्यायः । उपनिषत्सु तृतीयो  
ऽध्यायः । ओं तत्सत् । T. L adds द्वितीयारण्यकं समाप्तं । Rājārāma's ed. begins  
इत्यैतरेयारण्यके, and then as T.

<sup>1</sup> ०विराविर्मं K, see on I, 1, 1, in the Śāntimantra; Eggeling, *India Office Catal.*, p. 117.

<sup>2</sup> प्रहासीद् T, and Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda.* <sup>3</sup> वादध्या A here.

<sup>4</sup> ०मा३म् D. <sup>5</sup> This occurs in A, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, M, N, O, Q, R, S, T, U. In T, however, it is placed at the beginning of the Upaniṣad, and in S at the end of Āraṇyaka V, and see also note on I, 1, 1. It does not occur in most MSS. of



Saṅkara's commentary, and it is omitted even in L, which is a complete MS. of all the text. It appears clearly not to have been known to Saṅkara. It is, however, known to Ānandatīrtha in his own commentary in the MSS., H and O. In the edition, U, of Ānandatīrtha's commentary on Saṅkara, it is said: षष्ठ्यष्टस्य भाग्यं स्पष्टत्वादात्मतत्वाप्रतिपादनाच्च श्रीमच्छङ्कराचार्येण कृतमित्येतदुक्तात् एव ज्ञायते । सा तु टीका दीपिकातोऽभिन्नेवेति ज्ञात्वाच न संगृहीता । M, N, Q, and apparently Max Müller's MS., S. B. E., I, 246, n. 2, have एवं षष्ठेऽध्याये तत्त्वविद्यां परिसमाप्य सप्तमे (so N, Q; सप्तसु श्रीमत्परिव्राजकाचार्य add. M) शान्तिकरो मन्त्रः पठितः वाङ्मय मनसीत्यादि । तस्य स्पष्टार्थत्वादात्मतत्वाप्रतिपादकत्वाच्च भाग्यकारिणं व्याख्यातः । स मन्दानां बोधाय दीपिकाकारोक्तरीत्या व्याख्यायते । यथोक्तं &c., exactly as in Sāyana's commentary. The end is इति श्रीसप्तमाध्यायस्य दीपिका संपूर्णा M; इति सप्तमाध्यायदीपिका समाप्ता N. The question arises whether this wholesale borrowing was due to Ānandatīrtha or not. On the whole the evidence is against the view that it was. (1) It compels us to date Ānandatīrtha after Sāyana, which is (a) contradictory to the accepted dates of either writer, and (b) cannot be reconciled with the fact that Sāyana sometimes follows Ānandatīrtha closely in his commentary, cf. on II, 4, 3. (2) It is of course clear from the consensus of MS. evidence that the explanation of the last section was added at a comparatively early date to Ānandatīrtha's commentary, but this could easily have happened, and as a matter of fact the alteration needed to introduce the extract was very slight, as Sāyana begins: षष्ठे तत्त्वविद्यां परिसमाप्य सप्तमे शान्तिकरं मन्त्रं पठति । वाङ्मय मनसीति । The addition was very natural, since the fact that the Adhyāya is recognized by Ānandatīrtha in his own commentary shows that it had already in his time become a recognized part of the Āranyaka. In Jones' MS. (Tawney and Thomas, *Catalogue of Two Collections of Sanskrit MSS.*, p. 2) we have the commentary of Saṅkara without the *śikā*, followed by 'Mādhava's' commentary as in the edition. After II, 7, E continues: हरिः श्रीं । अथातस्तस्मिन्निताया उपनिषत् । वाङ्मय मनसि प्रतिष्ठिता । कोऽयमात्मिति वयमुपास्महे । पुरुषे ह वा अयमादितो गर्भो भवति । स ईक्षते नु लोकाश्च लोकपालाश्च । ता एता देवतास्सृष्टाः । आत्मा वा इदमेक एवाय आसीत् । तत्रैति श्लोकाः । तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं संपन्नं तद्यशस् इन्द्रः । तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं संपन्नं तस्य वा एतस्य । तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं संपन्नं तद्वैतदेके । यो ह वै यज्ञे यज्ञं वेद । स एष पुरुषस्समुद्रः । तस्य य आत्मानमाविस्तरां वेद । यो ह वा आत्मानं पञ्चविधमुक्तं वेद । तद्वा इदं बृहतीसहस्रं संपन्नं तस्य यानि व्यञ्जनानि । विश्वामित्रं ह्येतद्दृश्यंसिध्यन्तम् । एष उ एव विभद्वाजः । एष इदं लोकमभ्यर्चत् । आपाः इति आप इति । अथातो

विभूतयोऽस्य पुरुषस्य । तस्य वाक्कन्तिर्नामानि दामानि । तं देवाः प्राणयन्त तं  
 प्रपदाभ्यां प्रापयत । अथातो रेतसश्चष्टिः । उक्थमुक्थमिति वै प्रजा वदन्ति । एष पन्था  
 एतत्कर्म । एष पन्था अष्टौ । एष इमञ्चत्वारि । यो ह वा आत्मानमष्टौ । आत्मा वै  
 त्रयः । पुरुष एका । कोऽयमेका । वाङ्म एका । एष पन्था विश्वामिचं ह्यात्मा  
 वै षट् । हरिः ओं । इति द्वितीयारण्यं समाप्तम् । The other MSS. end as follows:  
 ॥ २६ ॥ इत्यैतरेयद्वितीयारण्यके सप्तमोऽध्यायः । द्वितीयारण्यकं समाप्तं । A ; ॥ २६ ॥  
 इति सप्तमोऽध्यायः ॥ ७ ॥ इति द्वितीयमारण्यकं समाप्तं । F ; ॥ २६ ॥ ४ ॥ (rest as in  
 F) G ; इति सप्तमोऽध्यायः द्वितीयारण्यः D ; ॥ २६ ॥ इति द्वितीय आरण्ये सप्तमो  
 अध्यायः । समाप्तः K. R ends as in text, but with समाप्तः added.



## ॥ अथ तृतीयारण्यकम् ॥

## ADHYĀYA 1.

अथातः संहिताया<sup>1</sup> उपनिषत् । पृथिवी पूर्वरूपं द्यौरुत्तर-  
रूपं वायुः संहितेति माण्डूकेय आकाशः संहितेत्यस्य माक्षव्यो  
वेदयाञ्चक्रे । स हाविपरिहृतो मेने न मेऽस्य पुत्रेण समगा-  
दिति । समाने वै तत्परिहृतो मेन इत्यागस्त्यः समानं ह्येतद्भवति  
वायुश्चाकाशश्च<sup>2</sup> । इत्यधिदैवतम् । अथाध्यात्मम् । वाक्पूर्वरूपं  
मन उत्तररूपं प्राणः संहितेति<sup>3</sup> शूरी<sup>4</sup> माण्डूकेयः । अथ  
हास्य पुत्र आह ज्येष्ठो मनः पूर्वरूपं वागुत्तररूपं मनसा<sup>5</sup> वा  
अग्रे संकल्पयत्यथ वाचा व्याहरति तस्मान्मन एव पूर्वरूपं  
वागुत्तररूपं प्राणस्त्वेव संहितेति । समानमेनयोरत्र पितुश्च  
पुत्रस्य च । स एषोऽश्वरथः प्रष्टिवाहनो मनोवाक्प्राणसंहतः<sup>6</sup> ।  
स य एवमेतां संहितां वेद संधीयते प्रजया<sup>7</sup> पशुभिर्यशसा  
ब्रह्मवर्चसेन स्वर्गेण लोकेन सर्वमायुरेति । इति नु माण्डूके-  
यानाम् ॥१॥

अथ शाकल्यस्य । पृथिवी पूर्वरूपं द्यौरुत्तररूपं वृष्टिः संधिः  
पर्जन्यः संधाता । तदुतापि यच्चैतद्वलवदनुद्गृह्णन्संदधदहोरात्रे

<sup>1</sup> संहिताय B. <sup>2</sup> च only, R, B, &c.; चेति S. <sup>3</sup> संहिते A. <sup>4</sup> शूरी  
वीरो E. <sup>5</sup> मनसैवाग्रे B. <sup>6</sup> संहितः B; संहिनुतः E. <sup>7</sup> प्रजय B.

<sup>1</sup> नु R, S, &c.; corr. Böhtlingk; cf. Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 2.

वर्षति द्यावापृथिव्यौ समधातामित्युताप्याहुः । इती<sup>२</sup> न्वधिदै-  
 वतम् । अथाध्यात्मम् । पुरुषो ह वा अयं सर्व आन्दं द्वे विदले  
 भवत इत्याहुस्तस्येदमेव पृथिव्या रूपमिदं दिवस्तत्रायमन्तरे-  
 णाकाशो यथासौ द्यावापृथिव्यावन्तरेणाकाशः । तस्मिन्हास्मि-  
 न्नाकाशे प्राण आयत्तो यथामुष्मिन्नाकाशे वायुरायत्तः । यथा-  
 मूनि चीणि ज्योतीष्येवमिमानि पुरुषे चीणि<sup>३</sup> ज्योतीषि  
 यथासौ दिव्यादित्य एवमिदं<sup>४</sup> शिरसि चक्षुर्यथासावन्तरिक्षे  
 विद्युदेवमिदमात्मनि हृदयं यथायमग्निः पृथिव्यामेवमिदमुपस्थे  
 रेतः । एवमु ह स्म सर्वलोकमात्मानमनुविधायाहेदमेव  
 पृथिव्या रूपमिदं दिवः । स य एवमेतां संहितां<sup>५</sup> वेद  
 संधीयते प्रजया पशुभिर्यशसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेन स्वर्गेण लोकेन  
 सर्वमायुरेति ॥२॥

अथातो निर्भुजप्रवादाः । पृथिव्यायतनं निर्भुजं दिव्यायतनं  
 प्रतृष्णमन्तरिक्षायतनमुभयमन्तरेण । अथ यद्येनं निर्भुजं ब्रुवन्त-  
 मुपवदेदच्योष्टावराभ्यां<sup>१</sup> स्थानाभ्यामित्येनं ब्रूयात् । अथ यद्येनं  
 प्रतृष्णं ब्रुवन्तमुपवदेदच्योष्टा उत्तराभ्यां स्थानाभ्यामित्येनं ब्रूयात् ।  
 यस्त्वेवोभयमन्तरेणाह तस्य नास्त्युपवादः । यद्धि संधिं विवर्त-  
 यति तन्निर्भुजस्य रूपमथ यच्छुद्धे अक्षरे अभिव्याहरति तत्प्र-  
 तृष्णस्याय उ एवोभयमन्तरेणोभयं व्याप्तं भवति । अन्नाद्यकामो

<sup>२</sup> इति S<sup>125</sup>.

<sup>३</sup> विवस् A; वस् F.

<sup>४</sup> So I read for तस्मिन्हास्मिन् D, G, H, K, L, S; तस्मिन्नाकाशे F; तस्मिन्नस्मिन्नाकाशे A, R. यथा—वायुर lost in B.

<sup>५</sup> चीणि—इदं lost in B.

<sup>६</sup> एवमिदमु lost in B.

<sup>७</sup> संहितां B; सप्त F.

<sup>१</sup> एव आभ्यां B.



निर्भुजं ब्रूयात्स्वर्गकामः प्रतृष्णमुभयकाम उभयमन्तरेण । अथ यद्येनं निर्भुजं ब्रुवन्तं पर उपवदेत्पृथिवीं देवतामारः पृथिवी त्वा देवता रिष्यतीत्येनं ब्रूयात् । अथ यद्येनं प्रतृष्णं ब्रुवन्तं पर उपवदेद्दिवं<sup>३</sup> देवतामारो<sup>४</sup> द्यौस्त्वा देवता रिष्यतीत्येनं ब्रूयात् । अथ यद्येनमुभयमन्तरेण ब्रुवन्तं पर उपवदेदन्तरिक्षं<sup>७</sup> देवतामारोऽन्तरिक्षं त्वा देवता रिष्यतीत्येनं ब्रूयात् । यथा तु कथा च ब्रुवन्वा<sup>८</sup> ब्रुवन्तं वा ब्रूयादभ्याशमेव यत्तथा स्यात् । न त्वेवान्यत्कुशलाद्ब्राह्मणं ब्रूयात् । अतिद्युम्न<sup>९</sup> एव ब्राह्मणं ब्रूयात् । नातिद्युम्ने च न ब्राह्मणं ब्रूयान्नमो<sup>१०</sup> अस्तु ब्राह्मणेभ्य इति ह स्माह श्रूवीरो माण्डूकेयः ॥३॥

अथातोऽनुव्याहाराः । प्राणो वंश इति विद्यात् । स य एनं प्राणं वंशमुपवदेच्छक्नुवञ्चेन्मन्येत प्राणं<sup>२</sup> वंशं समधाँ<sup>३</sup> प्राणं मा वंशं संदधतं न शक्नोषीत्याह प्राणस्त्वा वंशो हास्यतीत्येनं ब्रूयात् । अथ चेदशक्नुवन्तं<sup>४</sup> मन्येत प्राणं वंशं समधित्सिषं तं नाशकः संधातुं प्राणस्त्वा वंशो हास्यतीत्येनं ब्रूयात् । यथा तु कथा च ब्रुवन्वा<sup>८</sup> ब्रुवन्तं वा ब्रूयादभ्याशमेव यत्तथा स्यात् । न त्वेवान्यत्कुशलाद्ब्राह्मणं ब्रूयात् । अतिद्युम्न एव ब्राह्मणं ब्रूयात् ।

<sup>२</sup> ऋष्यति B.<sup>३</sup> देदिव F, G.<sup>४</sup> देवतामारो A.<sup>५</sup> नंसु° B.<sup>६</sup> उपवदवदेद्र A.<sup>७</sup> अन्तरिक्षं देवतामारो om. L; अन्तरीचं

R in text.

<sup>८</sup> See explanatory notes.<sup>९</sup> अतिद्युम्ने—ब्रूयान् om. F, G.<sup>१०</sup> नमो स्तु B.<sup>१</sup> चेन् om. B.<sup>२</sup> प्राणवंशं E.<sup>३</sup> समधाँ A, B.<sup>४</sup> शक्नुवन्तं B.<sup>५</sup> See explanatory notes on III, 1, 3.<sup>६</sup> आभ्याशम् B, E (yet correctly in III, 1, 4).

नातिद्युक्ते<sup>7</sup> चन ब्राह्मणं ब्रूयान्नमो अस्तु<sup>8</sup> ब्राह्मणेभ्य इति ह  
स्माह श्रूवीरो माण्डूकेयः ॥४॥

अथ खल्वाहुर्निर्भुजवक्त्राः । पूर्वमक्षरं<sup>1</sup> पूर्वरूपमुत्तरमुत्तर-  
रूपं योऽवकाशः पूर्वरूपोत्तररूपे अन्तरेण सा संहितेति । स  
य एवमेतां संहितां वेद संधीयते प्रजया<sup>3</sup> पशुभिर्यशसा ब्रह्म-  
वर्चसेन स्वर्गेण लोकेन सर्वमायुरेति । अथ वयं ब्रूमो निर्भु-  
जवक्त्रा इति ह स्माह ह्रस्वो माण्डूकेयः पूर्वमेवाक्षरं पूर्वरूपमु-  
त्तरमुत्तररूपं योऽवकाशः पूर्वरूपोत्तररूपे अन्तरेण येन संधिं  
विवर्तयति येन स्वरास्वरं<sup>5</sup> विजानाति येन माचामाचां विभ-  
जते सा संहितेति । स य एवमेतां संहितां वेद संधीयते प्रजया<sup>3</sup>  
पशुभिर्यशसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेन स्वर्गेण लोकेन सर्वमायुरेति । अथ  
हास्य पुत्रं<sup>6</sup> आह मध्यमः प्राचीवोधीपुत्रोऽक्षरे खल्विमे अवि-  
कर्षन्ननेकीकुर्वन्त्यथावर्णमाह तद्यासौ माचा पूर्वरूपोत्तररूपे  
अन्तरेण संधिविज्ञपनी साम तज्जवति सामैवाहं संहितां मन्य  
इति । तदप्येतदृषिणोक्तम् । बृहस्पते न परः साम्नो<sup>10</sup> विदुरिति ॥  
स य एवमेतां संहितां वेद संधीयते प्रजया पशुभिर्यशसा ब्रह्म-  
वर्चसेन स्वर्गेण लोकेन सर्वमायुरेति ॥५॥

<sup>7</sup> नाद्युक्ते A.

<sup>8</sup> नमो सु B.

<sup>1</sup> पूर्वरूपम् F.

<sup>2</sup> रूपम् only B.

<sup>3</sup> प्रजयः B (with *jihvāmūliya* as usual).

<sup>4</sup> उत्तरम् om. G.

<sup>5</sup> स्वराःस्वरं A, K, L; स्वरास्वर B.

<sup>6</sup> पुत्र आह om. B.

<sup>7</sup> प्राचीवोधी B.

<sup>8</sup> नेकीकुर्वन् B.

<sup>9</sup> जवति—प्रज lost in B.

<sup>10</sup> साम्ना G.

<sup>11</sup> र्वमायुरे lost in B.



बृहद्रथन्तरयो रूपेण संहिता संधीयत इति तारुह्यः<sup>1</sup> । वाग्वै  
 रथन्तरस्य रूपं प्राणो बृहत उभाभ्यामु खलु संहिता संधीयते  
 वाचा च प्राणेन च । एतस्यां ह स्मोपनिषदि संवत्सरं गा रक्ष-  
 यते तारुह्यः<sup>2</sup> । एतस्यां<sup>3</sup> ह स्म माचायां संवत्सरं गा रक्षयते  
 तारुह्यः । तदप्येतदृषिणोक्तम् । रथन्तरमा जभारा वसिष्ठो भर-  
 द्वाजो बृहदा चक्रे अग्नेरिति ॥ स य एवमेतां संहितां वेद संधीयते  
 प्रजया<sup>4</sup> पशुभिर्यशसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेन स्वर्गेण लोकेन सर्वमायुरेति ।  
 वाक्प्राणेन संहितेति<sup>5</sup> कौण्डरव्यः प्राणः पवमानेन पवमानो  
 विश्वैर्देवैर्विश्वे देवाः स्वर्गेण लोकेन स्वर्गो लोको ब्रह्मणा  
 सैषावरपरा संहिता । स यो हैतामवरपरां संहितां वेदैवं हैव  
 स प्रजया पशुभिर्यशसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेन स्वर्गेण लोकेन संधीयते<sup>6</sup>  
 यथैषा संहिता । स यदि परेण वोपसृतः<sup>7</sup> स्वेन वार्थेनाभि-  
 व्याहरेदभिव्याहार्षन्ने<sup>8</sup> विद्याद्विवं संहितागमद्विदुषां देवानामेवं  
 भविष्यतीति । शश्वत्तथा स्यात् । स य एवमेतां संहितां वेद  
 संधीयते प्रजया पशुभिर्यशसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेन स्वर्गेण लोकेन<sup>9</sup>  
 सर्वमायुरेति । वाक्संहितेति पञ्चालचण्डः । वाचा वै वेदाः  
 संधीयन्ते वाचा छन्दांसि वाचा मित्राणि संदधति वाचा  
 सर्वाणि भूतान्यथो वागेवेदं सर्वमिति । तद्यच्चैतदधीते वा भाषते

<sup>1</sup> तारुह्यः B, D, H, S (but S<sup>1345</sup> has तारु<sup>०</sup>). <sup>2</sup> तारुह्यः A (marked as incorrect), B, D, H, S (but not S<sup>345</sup>). <sup>3</sup> एतस्यां—तद् om. B; तांर्ह्यस् A; तारुह्यः D, H, L (elsewhere तारु<sup>०</sup>), S (but not S<sup>34579</sup>). <sup>4</sup> तथ B; अप्येतद् om. F. <sup>5</sup> ऽयिर् B. <sup>6</sup> प्रजयः B. <sup>7</sup> वावत् L. <sup>8</sup> संहिते B. <sup>9</sup> संधीयते—लोकेन om. F, G. <sup>10</sup> छणः or ऽजः B. <sup>11</sup> व्याहरेद<sup>०</sup> B; व्याहार्यं नेत्वे R in text; ने विद्यात् K; read perhaps ऽहरत्त<sup>०</sup>.

वा वाचि तदा प्राणो भवति वाक्तदा प्राणं रेळ्हचथ यच तूष्णीं  
 वा<sup>12</sup> भवति स्वपिति वा<sup>13</sup> प्राणे तदा वाग्भवति प्राणस्तदा  
 वाचं रेळ्ह तावन्योन्यं रीळ्हो वाग्वै माता प्राणः पुत्रः । तदप्ये-  
 तदृषिणोक्तम् । एकः सुपर्णः स समुद्रमा विवेश स इदं विश्वं  
 भुवनं वि चष्टे । तं पाकेन मनसापश्यमन्तितस्तं<sup>14</sup> माता रेळ्ह  
 स उ रेळ्ह मातरमिति ॥ स य एवमेतां संहितां वेद संधीयते  
 प्रजया पशुभिर्यशसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेन स्वर्गेण लोकेन सर्वमायुरेति ।  
 अथातः प्रजापतिसंहिता । जाया पूर्वरूपं पतिरुत्तररूपं पुत्रः  
 संधिः प्रजननं संधानं सैषादिति<sup>15</sup> संहिता । अदितिर्हीदं सर्वं  
 यदिदं किञ्च पिता च माता च पुत्रश्च प्रजननं च । तदप्येतदृषि-  
 णोक्तम् । अदितिर्माता स पिता स पुत्र इति ॥ स य एवमेतां  
 संहितां वेद संधीयते प्रजया<sup>16</sup> पशुभिर्यशसा ब्रह्मवर्चसेन स्वर्गेण  
 लोकेन सर्वमायुरेति सर्वमायुरेति ॥ ६ ॥

॥ इत्यैतरेयतृतीयारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>17</sup>

## ADHYĀYA 2.

प्राणो वंश इति स्थविरः शाकल्यः । तद्यथा शालावंशे सर्वे  
 ऽन्ये वंशाः समाहिताः स्युरेवमस्मिन्प्राणे चक्षुः श्रोत्रं मनो

<sup>12</sup> वाग् B. <sup>13</sup> वा om. A; वाक् G. <sup>14</sup> तंम्मा B; मात D. <sup>15</sup> स  
 सैषादि° B. <sup>16</sup> प्रजयः B, which also has *ḍḍh* for *lḥ*. <sup>17</sup> Text A (with  
 समाप्तः), B; इत्युर्वेदसंहितारण्ये प्रथमोऽध्यायः B; तृतीयारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः F;  
 तृतीय आरण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः G; इति तृतीय आरण्ये प्रथमोऽध्यायः K; इति  
 त्रयोदशोऽध्यायः L; प्रथमोऽध्यायः D; no colophon E.

<sup>1</sup> एतस्मिन् B.



वागिन्द्रियाणि शरीरं सर्वं आत्मा समाहितः । तस्यैतस्यात्मनः  
प्राण ऊष्मरूपमस्थीनि स्पर्शरूपं मज्जानः स्वरूपं मांसं  
लोहितमित्येतदन्यच्चतुर्थमन्तस्थारूपमिति ह स्माह ह्रस्वो मा-  
रुदूकेयः । त्रयं तेव न<sup>3</sup> एतत्प्रोक्तम् । तस्यैतस्य त्रयस्यास्थ्यां<sup>4</sup>  
मज्जां पर्वणामिति चीणीतः<sup>5</sup> षष्टिशतानि चीणीतस्तानि सप्त  
विंशतिशतानि<sup>6</sup> भवन्ति सप्त च वै शतानि विंशतिश्च<sup>7</sup> संवत्स-  
रस्याहोरात्राः । स एषोऽहःसंमानश्चक्षुर्मयः श्रोत्रमयश्छन्दोमयो  
मनोमयो वाङ्मय आत्मा । स य एवमेतमहःसंमानं चक्षुर्मयं  
श्रोत्रमयं<sup>9</sup> छन्दोमयं मनोमयं वाङ्मयमात्मानं वेदाह्नां सायुज्यं  
सरूपतां सलोकतामश्नुते पुत्री पशुमान्भवति सर्वमायुरेति ॥१॥<sup>10</sup>

अथ कौण्डरव्यः । चीणि षष्टिशतान्यक्षराणां चीणि षष्टि-  
शतान्यूष्मणां चीणि षष्टिशतानि संधीनाम् । यान्यक्षराण्यवो-  
चामाहानि तानि यानूष्मणोऽवोचाम<sup>1</sup> रात्रयस्ता यान्संधीनवो-  
चामाहोरात्राणां ते संधय इत्यधिदैवतम् । अथाध्यात्मम् । यान्य-  
क्षराण्यधिदैवतमवोचामास्थीनि तान्यध्यात्मम् । यानूष्मणो  
ऽधिदैवतमवोचाम मज्जानस्तेऽध्यात्मम् । एष ह वै संप्रति-  
प्राणो यन्मज्जैतदेतो न ह वा ऋते<sup>3</sup> प्राणादेतः सिच्यते यद्वा  
ऋते<sup>3</sup> प्राणादेतः सिच्येत पूयेन<sup>4</sup> संभवेत् । यान्संधीनधिदैवतम-

<sup>2</sup> °मन्तस्थारूपम् B and the other MSS., besides R and S. <sup>3</sup> न इत्य् B, cf. on III, 2, 2. <sup>4</sup> B inserts ३(?) after each of the three genitives and nasalizes पर्वणां. <sup>5</sup> चीणीत B. <sup>6</sup> सप्त विंशतिश्च B, as reported by Max Müller, but this is wrong. <sup>7</sup> विंशतिश्च A; संवत्स° B. <sup>8</sup> °मानच° B. <sup>9</sup> Lost to end in B, except वर्मायुरेति. <sup>10</sup> Numbered 7 in A, E, F, G, H, K, L; 1 in B, D.

<sup>1</sup> चामाह (?) B.

<sup>2</sup> सन्धीन्य° B.

<sup>3</sup> रिते B.

<sup>4</sup> पूयेन B.

वोचाम पर्वणि तान्यध्यात्मम् । तस्यैतस्य<sup>5</sup> त्रयस्यास्थां मज्ज्ञां  
पर्वणामिति पञ्चेतश्चत्वारिंशच्छतानि पञ्चेतस्तदशीतिसहस्रं भव-  
त्यशीतिसहस्रं वा अर्केलिंनो बृहतीरहंरभिसंपादयन्ति । स एषो  
ऽक्षरसंमानश्चक्षुर्मयः श्रोत्रमयश्छन्दोमयो मनोमयो<sup>8</sup> वाङ्मय  
आत्मा । स य एवमेतमक्षरसंमानं चक्षुर्मयं श्रोत्रमयं छन्दोमयं  
मनोमयं वाङ्मयमात्मानं वेदाक्षराणां सायुज्यं सरूपतां सलो-  
कतामश्नुते<sup>9</sup> पुत्री पशुमान्भवति सर्वमायुरेति ॥२॥<sup>10</sup>

चत्वारः पुरुषा इति<sup>1</sup> बाधः<sup>2</sup> शरीरपुरुषश्छन्दःपुरुषो वेद-  
पुरुषो महापुरुष इति । शरीरपुरुष इति यमवोचाम स य  
एवायं<sup>3</sup> दैहिक आत्मा तस्य योऽयमशरीरः प्रज्ञात्मा स रसः ।  
छन्दःपुरुष इति यमवोचामाक्षरसमाम्नाय एव तस्यैतस्याकारो  
रसः । वेदपुरुष इति यमवोचाम येन वेदान्वेद ऋग्वेदं यजुर्वेदं  
सामवेदं तस्यैतस्य ब्रह्मा रसः । तस्माद्ब्रह्माणं<sup>4</sup> ब्रह्मिष्ठं कुर्वीति  
यो यज्ञस्योल्बणं पश्येत् । महापुरुष इति यमवोचाम संवत्सर  
एव प्रध्वंसयन्नन्यानि भूतान्यैक्या भावयन्नन्यानि<sup>5</sup> तस्यैतस्यासा-  
वादित्यो रसः । स यश्चायमशरीरः प्रज्ञात्मा यश्चासावादित्य  
एकमेतदिति विद्यात् । तस्मात्पुरुषं पुरुषं प्रत्यादित्यो भवति ।

<sup>5</sup> B inserts चयं त्वेव न इत्येतत्प्रोक्तम्, which is borrowed from III, 2, 1 above, and reads तस्यैतस्य त्रयस्यासास्थाम्. <sup>6</sup> करि° B. <sup>7</sup> °रहरहर B and संपादयन्ति.

<sup>8</sup> om. B. <sup>9</sup> अशुमान् F, omitting पुत्री पशुमान्. <sup>10</sup> Numbered 8 in A, E, H, K, L; 2, 8 in F, G; 2 in B, D.

<sup>1</sup> इति om. and lacuna marked in A.

<sup>2</sup> बाधः R in text.

<sup>3</sup> °हम् B.

<sup>4</sup> ब्राह्मणं B.

<sup>5</sup> °न्नान्यानि B.



तदपेतदृषिणोक्तम् । चित्रं देवानामुदगादनीकं चक्षुर्मित्रस्य  
वरुणस्याग्नेः । आप्रा द्यावापृथिवी अन्तरिक्षं सूर्य आत्मा जग-  
तस्तस्युषश्चेति ॥ एतामनुविधं<sup>६</sup> संहितां संधीयमानां मन्य इति  
ह स्माह बाध्वः । एतं ह्येव बह्वृचा महत्युक्थे मीमांसन्त एत-  
मग्नावध्वर्यव एतं महाव्रते छन्दोगा एतमस्यामेतं दिव्येतं वाया-  
वेतमाकाश एतमप्स्वेतमोषधीष्वेतं वनस्पतिष्वेतं चन्द्रमस्येतं  
नक्षत्रेष्वेतं सर्वेषु भूतेष्वेतमेव ब्रह्मेत्याचक्षते । स एष संवत्सरसं-  
मानश्चक्षुर्मयः श्रोत्रमयश्छन्दोमयो मनोमयो वाङ्मय आत्मा ।  
स य एवमेतं संवत्सरसंमानं चक्षुर्मयं श्रोत्रमयं छन्दोमयं  
मनोमयं वाङ्मयमात्मानं परस्मै शंसति ॥ ३ ॥<sup>७</sup>

दुग्धदोहा अस्य वेदा भवन्ति न तस्यानूक्ते<sup>१</sup> भागोऽस्ति न  
वेद सुकृतस्य पन्थानमिति । तदपेतदृषिणोक्तम् । यस्तित्याज  
सचिविदं सखायं न तस्य वाच्यपि भागो अस्ति । यदीं ऋणो-  
त्यलकं ऋणोति न हि<sup>२</sup> प्र वेद सुकृतस्य पन्थामिति ॥ न  
तस्यानूक्ते भागोऽस्ति न वेद सुकृतस्य पन्थानमित्येतत्तदुक्तं  
भवति । तस्मादेवं विद्वान्न परस्मा अग्निं<sup>३</sup> चिनुयान्न परस्मै  
महाव्रतेन स्तुवीत न परस्मा एतदहः शंसेत् । कामं पित्रे  
वाचार्याय वा शंसेदात्मन एवास्य तत्कृतं भवति । स यश्चाय-  
मशरीरः प्रज्ञात्मा यश्चासावादित्य एकमेतदित्यवोचाम । तौ

<sup>६</sup> ०वितान् B.<sup>७</sup> ०षधिषु B.<sup>८</sup> नक्षत्रेष्वेतं G.<sup>९</sup> Numbered 9 in

A, E, H, K, L; 3, 9 in F, G; 3 in B, D.

<sup>१</sup> नक्ष B.<sup>२</sup> हि—अपिम् all, save a few letters and the following न परस्मा,  
lost in B.

यत्र विहीयेते चन्द्रमा इवादित्यो<sup>3</sup> दृश्यते न रश्मयः प्रादुर्भवन्ति  
लोहिनी द्यौर्भवति यथा मञ्जिष्ठा व्यस्तः पायुः काककुलायग-  
न्धिकमस्य शिरो वायति संपरेतोऽस्यात्मा न<sup>4</sup> चिरमिव जीवि-  
ष्यतीति<sup>5</sup> विद्यात् । स यत्करणीयं मन्येत तत्कुर्वीत यदन्ति यच्च  
दूरक इति सप्त जपेदादित्प्रत्नस्य रेतस इत्येका यत्र ब्रह्मा  
पवमानेति षष्ठुद्वयं तमसस्परीत्येका । अथापि यत्र छिद्र इवा-  
दित्यो दृश्यते रथनाभिरिवाभिख्यायेत छिद्रां वा छायां पश्येत्त-  
दप्येवमेव विद्यात् । अथाप्यादर्शं वोदके वा जिह्वशिरसं वा-  
शिरसं<sup>6</sup> वात्मानं पश्येद्विपर्यस्ते वा कन्याके जिह्वेन वा दृश्ये-  
यातां तदप्येवमेव विद्यात् । अथाप्यपिधायक्षिणी उपेक्षेत  
तद्यथा बटरकाणि<sup>7</sup> संपतन्तीव<sup>8</sup> दृश्यन्ते तानि यदा न पश्येत्त-  
दप्येवमेव विद्यात् । अथाप्यपिधाय कर्णा उपशृणुयात्स एषो  
अग्नेरिव प्रज्वलतो<sup>9</sup> रथस्येवोपब्धिस्तं<sup>10</sup> यदा न शृणुयात्तदप्ये-  
वमेव विद्यात् । अथापि यत्र नील इवाग्निर्दृश्यते यथा मयूर-  
ग्रीवा<sup>11</sup>मेघे वा विद्युतं<sup>12</sup> पश्येन्मेघे वा विद्युतं न पश्येन्महामेघे  
वा मरीचीरिव पश्येत तदप्येवमेव विद्यात् । अथापि यत्र भूमिं  
ज्वलन्तीमिव पश्येत तदप्येवमेव विद्यात् । इति प्रत्यक्षदर्श-  
नानि । अथ स्वप्नाः<sup>13</sup> । पुरुषं कृष्णं कृष्णदन्तं पश्यति स एनं

<sup>3</sup> एवादित्यो B.<sup>4</sup> न म F, G.<sup>5</sup> जीववि(?) य) ष्यति B.<sup>6</sup> वाशरीरमात्मानं B; वाशिरसं om. A, D pr. man., G; B has कान्यके *infra*.<sup>7</sup> बटरकाणि B.<sup>8</sup> संपतन्तीवा B; संपतन्ती R in text; संपतन्तीव A, D, E,

F, G, H, K, L, S.

<sup>9</sup> ज्वलतो B.<sup>10</sup> रथस्त्व—तं om. R in text. The words

are in all MSS.

<sup>11</sup> मयूरग्रीवः (or वा) अमेघे B.<sup>12</sup> न add. K.<sup>13</sup> दर्शनादन्व and स्वप्नः B; H has in commentary, स्वप्नाः उच्यते.



हन्ति वराह<sup>14</sup> एनं हन्ति मर्कट एनमास्कन्दयत्यांशु वायुरेनं  
 प्रवहति सुवर्णं खादित्वापगिरति<sup>16</sup> मध्वश्नाति विसानि भक्षय-  
 न्येकपुण्डरीकं धारयति खैरर्वराहैर्युक्तैर्याति कृष्णां धेनुं कृष्णवत्सां  
 नलदमाली दक्षिणामुखो ब्राजयति । स यद्येतेषां किञ्चित्पश्ये-  
 दुपोष पायसं स्थालीपाकं अपयित्वा रात्रीसूक्तेन<sup>17</sup> प्रत्यूचं  
 हुत्वान्येनान्नेन ब्राह्मणान्भोजयित्वा चरुं स्वयं प्राश्नीयात् । स  
 योऽतोऽश्रुतोऽगतोऽमतोऽनतोऽदृष्टोऽविज्ञातोऽनादिष्टः श्रोता  
 मन्ता द्रष्टादेष्टा घोष्टा विज्ञाता प्रज्ञाता सर्वेषां भूतानामन्तर-  
 पुरुषः स म आत्मेति विद्यात् ॥४॥<sup>20</sup>

अथ खल्वियं सर्वस्यै वाच उपनिषत् । सर्वा ह्येवेमाः सर्वस्यै  
 वाच उपनिषद्<sup>1</sup> इमां त्वेवाचक्षते । पृथिव्या रूपं स्पर्शा अन्त-  
 रिक्षस्योष्माणो दिवः स्वराः । अग्ने रूपं स्पर्शा वायोऽरूष्माण  
 आदित्यस्य स्वराः । ऋग्वेदस्य रूपं स्पर्शा यजुर्वेदस्योष्माणः<sup>3</sup>  
 सामवेदस्य स्वराः । चक्षुषो रूपं स्पर्शाः श्रोत्रस्योष्माणो मनसः  
 स्वराः । प्राणस्य रूपं स्पर्शा अपानस्योष्माणो व्यानस्य स्वराः ।  
 अथ खल्वियं देवी वीणा भवति तदनुकृतिरसौ मानुषी वीणा  
 भवति । यथास्याः शिर एवममुष्याः शिरो यथास्या उदरमेव-

<sup>14</sup> वराह—हन्ति om. F, which omits also दृष्टते—ख्यायते. <sup>15</sup> एनमा-  
 स्कन्दति B. <sup>16</sup> वगिरति B. <sup>17</sup> रात्रिसूक्तेन B. <sup>18</sup> स यतश्श्रुतो B.  
<sup>19</sup> om. B. <sup>20</sup> Numbered 10 in A, E, H, K, L; 10, 4 in F; 4, 10 in G;  
 4 in B, D.

<sup>1</sup> उपनिषद् B. <sup>2</sup> वायोष्म F, G. <sup>3</sup> ष्माण B. <sup>4</sup> उदर B.

ममुथा अम्भणं यथास्यै<sup>5</sup> जिह्वैवममुथै वादनं यथास्यास्तन्त्रय  
 एवममुथा अङ्गुलयो यथास्याः स्वरा एवममुथाः स्वरा यथास्या  
 स्पर्शा एवममुथा स्पर्शा यथा ह्येवेयं शब्दवती तर्जवत्येवमसौ  
 शब्दवती तर्जवती यथा ह्येवेयं लोमशेन चर्मणापिहिता भव-  
 त्येवमसौ लोमशेन<sup>7</sup> चर्मणापिहिता<sup>6</sup> । लोमशेन<sup>8</sup> ह स्म<sup>9</sup> वै  
 चर्मणा पुरा<sup>7</sup> वीणा अपिदधति । स यो हैतां देवीं<sup>10</sup> वीणां वेद  
 श्रुतवदनो भवति भूमिप्रास्य कीर्तिर्भवति यत्र क्व चार्या वाचो  
 भाषन्ते विदुरेनं तत्र । अथातो वायसो यस्यां संसद्यधीयानो  
 वा भाषमाणो वा न विरुचिषेत<sup>11</sup> तत्रैतामृचं जपेत् । ओष्ठा-  
 पिधाना<sup>12</sup> नकुली दनैः परिवृता पविः । सर्वस्यै वाच ईशाना  
 चारु मामिह वादयेत् । इति वायसः ॥ ५ ॥<sup>13</sup>

अथ हास्मा एतत्कृष्णहारितो वाग्ब्राह्मणमिवोपोदाहरति ।  
 प्रजापतिः प्रजाः सृष्ट्वा व्यसंसत<sup>1</sup> संवत्सरः । स छन्दोभिरात्मानं  
 समदधाद्यच्छन्दोभिरात्मानं समदधात्तस्मात्संहिता । तस्यै वा  
 एतस्यै संहितायै णकारो बलं षकारः प्राण आत्मा । स यो  
 हैतौ णकारषकारावनुसंहितमृचो वेद सवलं सप्राणां संहितां

<sup>5</sup> यथा—लो lost in B.

<sup>6</sup> भवति—पिहिता om. in K but add. pr. man.

<sup>7</sup> लोमशेन—पुरा lost in B. Here and above R has पिहिता.

<sup>8</sup> चर्मणा—

लोमशेन om. G.

<sup>9</sup> हम् L.

<sup>10</sup> देवीं B.

<sup>11</sup> विरुचिषेत A, F, G, K, L,

R, S; विरुचिषेत B, C, D, E, H.

<sup>12</sup> This verse occurs also in the Sānti verses,

note on I, 1, 1, and see explanatory notes.

<sup>13</sup> Numbered 11 in A, E, H, K, L ;

5, 11 in F, G; 5 in B, D.

<sup>1</sup> व्यसंसदा संवत्सरं B; प्रजाः E.



वेदायुषमिति विद्यात् । स यदि विचिकित्सेत्सणकारं ब्रवाणीं<sup>३</sup> अणकाराँ<sup>३</sup> इति सणकारमेव ब्रूयात्सषकारं ब्रवाणीं<sup>३</sup> अषकाराँ<sup>३</sup> इति सषकारमेव ब्रूयात् । ते यद्वयमनुसंहितमृचोऽधीमहे यच्च माण्डूकेयीयमध्यायं प्रब्रूमस्तेन नो णकारषकारा उपाप्नाविति ह स्माह ह्रस्वो माण्डूकेयः । अथ यद्वयमनुसंहितमृचोऽधीमहे यच्च माण्डूकेयीयमध्यायं प्रब्रूमस्तेन नो णकारषकारा उपाप्नाविति ह स्माह स्थविरः शाकल्यः । एतच्च स्म वै तद्विद्वांस आहुर्ऋषयः कावषेयाः किमर्था वयमध्येष्यामहे किमर्था वयं यक्ष्यामहे<sup>७</sup> वाचि हि प्राणं जुहुमः<sup>८</sup> प्राणे<sup>९</sup> वा वाचं यो<sup>१०</sup> ह्येव प्रभवः स एवाप्ययः । ता एताः संहिता नानन्तेवासिने प्रब्रूयान्नासंवत्सरवासिने नाप्रवक्तु इत्याचार्या आचार्याः ॥ ६ ॥<sup>११</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयतृतीयारण्यके द्वितीयोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>१२</sup>

॥ इति तृतीयारण्यकं समाप्तम् ॥

<sup>२</sup> The arrangement of the *plutis* is confirmed by the commentary. In ब्रवाणीं<sup>३</sup> B omits the nasal. <sup>३</sup> Nasal om. B. <sup>४</sup> माण्डूकेयूयं B (perhaps for 'यी'). <sup>५</sup> 'संहिताम्' B. <sup>६</sup> उपाप्ना B, against the rule of Sandhi of the Āranyaka. <sup>७</sup> वयच्छामहे B. <sup>८</sup> जुहुमः B. <sup>९</sup> प्राणो—वाच R in text. <sup>१०</sup> चो K. <sup>११</sup> Numbered 12 in A, E, H, K, L; 6, 12 in F, G; 6 in B, D. <sup>१२</sup> इत्यैतरेयारण्यके तृतीयस्य तृतीयस्य तृतीयोऽध्यायः ॥ ३ ॥ इति तृतीयारण्यकं समाप्तं A, where the error is worthy of note in view of the so-called Adhyāya in B; द्वितीयोऽध्यायः ॥ २ ॥ तृतीयारण्यकं समाप्तं F, G; द्वितीयोऽध्यायः ॥ तृतीयारण्यः ॥ D; इति तृतीयारण्ये द्वितीयोऽध्यायः । समाप्तं । K; इति तृतीयारण्यके द्वितीयाध्यायः । इति तृतीयारण्यके समाप्तः । अथातः संहितायाः षट् । प्राणो वंशः षट् । अथातः हिताया अथ खल्वियं द्वौ । L; B has इत्यृग्वेदे संहितारण्ये द्वितीयोऽध्यायः । Then follows the third Adhyāya which is given in

the note on I, 1, 1. E has हरिः ओं । विदा मघवन् । अथ हास्मा एतत्क्षणहा-  
 रितः । अथ खल्वियं सर्वस्यै वाच उपनिषत् । दुग्धदोहा अस्व वेदा भवन्ति । चत्वारः  
 पुरुषा इति बाधः । अथ कौण्डरव्यः । प्राणो वंश इति स्वविरः शाकल्यः । बृहद्रथ-  
 न्तरयो रूपेण । अथ खल्वाङ्गनिर्भुजवक्त्राः । अथातोऽनुव्याहाराः । अथातो निर्भुजप्र-  
 वादाः । अथ शाकल्यस्य । अथातस्संहिताया उपनिषत् । अथातस्संहिताष्टौ । प्राणो  
 वंश इति षट् । अथातस्संहिताया द्वादौ । इति तृतीयारणं समाप्तं । हरिः ओम् ।  
 E has text with समाप्तः added.



### ॥ अथ चतुर्थारण्यकम् ॥

वि॒दा<sup>१</sup> म॒घव॒न्वि॒दा गा॒तुम॒नुं शंसि॒षो दि॒शः ।  
 शि॒क्षां श॒चीनां प॒ते पू॒र्वी॒णां पु॒रुव॒सो ॥१॥  
 आ॒भि॒ष्टुम॒भिष्टि॑भिः प्र॒चेत॒न् प्र चे॑तय ।  
 इन्द्र॑ द्यु॒न्नाय॑ न इ॒ष ए॒वा<sup>३</sup> हि श॒क्रः ॥२॥  
 रा॒ये वा॒जाय॑ वज्रि॒वः श॒विष्ठ॑<sup>४</sup> वज्रि॒नृञ्ज॑से<sup>५</sup> ।  
 म॒हिष्ठ॑ वज्रि॒नृञ्ज॑स॒ आ या॒हि पि॒व म॒त्स्व ॥३॥  
 वि॒दा रा॒यः सु॒वीर्यं॑ भु॒वो वा॒जा॒नां प॒तिर्व॑शां अ॒नु ।  
 म॒हिष्ठ॑ वज्रि॒नृञ्ज॑से॒ यः श॒विष्ठः॑ शू॒राणा॑म् ॥४॥  
 यो म॒हिष्ठो<sup>६</sup> म॒घोनां॑ चि॒क्त्वो<sup>७</sup> अ॒भि नो॑ नय ।  
 इन्द्रो॑ वि॒दे तमु॑ स्तु॒षे व॒शी हि श॒क्रः ॥५॥  
 तमू॒तये॑ हवामहे॒ जेता॑र॒मप॑राजितम्<sup>८</sup> ।  
 स नः॑ प॒र्षद॑ति॒ द्विषः॑<sup>९</sup> क्रतु॑च्छन्द॒ चृ॒तं बृ॒हत् ॥६॥

<sup>१</sup> Accents do not appear in A, D, F, G, K, L, S. But the accents are undoubtedly old, and the fact that the other verses cited in the book are not usually accented is not in point, since these are non-R̥gvedic verses. Similarly in Āranyaka V the non-R̥gvedic verses are all accented. The motive is obvious, that the repeaters of the text should have guidance in repeating verses not from their own Saṃhitā.

<sup>२</sup> आ॒विष् A; in R आ॒भिष्ट॑म. <sup>३</sup> ए॒व L. <sup>४</sup> श॒विष्ठः R, dividing here the verse. <sup>५</sup> ञ्ज॑सो F. <sup>६</sup> मा॒हिष्ठो F; मा॒हिष्ठो G. <sup>७</sup> चि॒क्त्वो L;

चि॒क्त्वः R. <sup>८</sup> म॒पराजित॑म् L. <sup>९</sup> द्विष॑त् G.

इन्द्रं धनस्य सातये हवामहे जेतारमपराजितम् ।  
 स नः पर्षदति द्विषः स नः पर्षदति सिधः ॥ ७ ॥  
 पूर्वस्य यज्ञे अद्रिवः सुम्न आ धेहि नो वसो ।  
 पूर्तिः शविष्ठ शस्यत<sup>10</sup> ईशे हि शक्रः ॥ ८ ॥  
 नूनं तं नय्यं संन्यसे प्रभो जनस्य वृचहन् ।  
 समन्येषु ब्रवावहै शूरो यो<sup>11</sup> गोषु गच्छति सखा सुशेवो  
 अद्वयाः ॥ ९ ॥

एवा ह्येवैवा ह्यमा३इ<sup>12</sup> ॥ एवा ह्येवैवा हीन्द्रा३ ॥ एवा  
 ह्येवैवा हि विष्णा३उ ॥ एवा ह्येवैवा हि पूषा३न्<sup>13</sup> ॥ एवा  
 ह्येवैवा हि देवा३ः<sup>14</sup> ॥ १० ॥ एवा हि शक्रो वशी हि शक्रो वशाँ३  
 अनु<sup>15</sup> ॥ आ यो मन्याय मन्यव उपो मन्याय मन्यवे ॥ उपेहि  
 विश्वध<sup>16</sup> ॥ ११ ॥ विदा मघवन्विदो३म्<sup>17</sup> ॥

॥ इत्यैतरेयारण्यके चतुर्थारण्यं समाप्तम् ॥<sup>18</sup>

<sup>10</sup> शस्यत F.

<sup>11</sup> यो om. L.

<sup>12</sup> After अमा F has इन्द्र । एवा ह्येवैव ही३

एवा ह्येवैवा हि विष्णा३उ ; G has इन्द्र । एवा ह्येवैवा ह्यमा इन्द्र । एवा ह्येवैवा  
 हि विष्णा३उ ; R has हीन्द्रम् and so A, E, K, L ; S has ही३न्द्रम् ; D only has  
 हीन्द्रा३, which must clearly be right.

<sup>13</sup> पूषन् A, D, E, F, G, K ; पूष३न् S.

<sup>14</sup> देवाः A, D, E, F, G, K, R.

<sup>15</sup> वशाँ D, F, G, K, L, R, S. A and E have

the *pluti*, which is more likely to have been wrongly omitted than to have been inserted.

<sup>16</sup> विश्वध G.

<sup>17</sup> विदोम् D.

<sup>18</sup> इत्यैतरेयचतुर्थारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः । इति

चतुर्थारण्यकं समाप्तम् । A ; प्रथमोऽध्यायः । इति चतुर्थारण्यः । D ; विदा मघवन्नेका ।  
 हरिः श्रीम् । इति चतुर्थारण्यं समाप्तम् । E ; चतुर्थारण्यकं समाप्तम् । F ; चतुर्थारण्यकं सं  
 (पूर्णम् in later hand), G ; इति चतुर्थ आरण्ये प्रथमोऽध्यायः । समाप्तम् । K ; इति  
 चतुर्थारण्यकं समाप्तम् । L.



These verses occur also in the Kashmir MS. of the R̥gvedic Khilas (=K), which (V, 4) contains Āranyaka IV; in Sāmaveda, Naigeyasākhā, ed. Ajmere, 1901, p. 48; in Sāmaveda, Āranyasamhitā, ed. by Fortunatov, p. 74; and in Peterson, *Second Report*, p. 97 (=P). K reads in v. 1 मघन्, which saves the metre; in vv. 3, 4, वज्रिन् before ऋजसे, treating ऋ as equivalent to रि; in v. 4 K, P, SV. read राये, probably a mere correction for the difficult रायः; in v. 5 SV. has सुहि ईष, SV. Ār. सुहि ईषे; in vv. 6 and 7 SV. has स्वर्षद् for पर्षद्; in v. 7 द्विषः for सिधः; in v. 8 अद्रिर्वोऽगुर्मदाय मुन्व. In v. 8 K, P have शस्वत, and SV. वशी for ईषे. In v. 9 K, P have मन्वसे, an obvious correction, see my note, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 224, SV. has अर्येषु and अद्र्युः. The second पुरीषपद is put third in K; the third is omitted in P and SV., and the last six in SV. In the second last K, P read विश्वथ. The variants of the SV. appear all to be in the nature of attempted corrections, and the Aitareya seems to have possessed the oldest form of the words known to us, though it cannot obviously be the original form, as Oldenberg points out.

With regard to the accents, in v. 2 ऽद्वम् is unaccented in K and P as in R; R has नृ इषं. In v. 3 पिब is unaccented in K, which is most probably wrong. In v. 5 both K and R have चिकित्वा, P °कित्वाँ, while K has नयं, and R has सुषे. In v. 9 K has गच्छति, which cannot well be correct, and अद्र्याः, also unaccented. In the पुरीषपदानि R has एवा, which cannot be accepted, while K has हि unaccented, which is inconsistent. K has also no *pluti* in the case of हीन्द्र । हि पूषन् । and हि देवाः । It accents *agnā* 3ī | *viṣṇā* 3ú | of which one or both must be wrong, and it twice has एवेवा. It has आर्यो मन्वायं । The accentuation of the first five पुरीषपदानि is very remarkable, and can only be explained by taking हि as unaccented both when combined and when alone, and by holding that the second एवा in एवेवा is unaccented. In the Ajmere ed. of the Mahānāmni the पुरीषपदानि appear as एवा<sup>३</sup> ह्ये<sup>२</sup> ३३ ३३ ३३ व<sup>२</sup>  
३ १ २ २ १ २ ३ १ २ २ ३ १ २ २  
एवा ह्ये एवाहीन्द्र । एवा हि पूषन् एवा हि देवाः । In P they are very corrupt.

## ॥ अथ पञ्चमारण्यकम् ॥

### ADHYĀYA 1.

महाव्रतस्य पञ्चविंशतिं सामिधेन्यः । एकविंशतौ प्रागुपो-  
 त्तमायाः समिधाग्निमिति चतस्रः । वैष्ण्वकर्मण ऋषभ उपाल-  
 म्भनीय उपांशु । आज्यप्रउगे विश्वजितः । होचाश्चतुर्विंशत् ।  
 ईह्यन्तीरपस्युव इति च ब्राह्मणाच्छंस्यावपेत प्रातःसवने तीव्र-  
 स्याभिवयसो अस्य पाहीति माध्यन्दिने । चिकदुकेषु महिषो  
 यवाशिरमिति स्तोत्रियः । एन्द्र याह्युप नः परावत इन्द्राय हि  
 द्यौरसुरो<sup>1</sup> अनम्रत प्रो ष्वस्मै पुरोरथमित्यतोऽनुरूपः । चतुर्विं-  
 शान्मरुत्वतीयस्यातानोऽसत्सु मे जरितः साभिवेगः पिवा  
 सोममभि यमुग्र तर्दः कया शुभा सवयसः सनीळा मरुत्वाँ  
 इन्द्र वृषभो रणाय जनिष्ठा उयः सहसे तुरायेति मरुत्वतीयम् ।  
 स्थिते मरुत्वतीये होता विसंस्थितसंचरेण निष्क्रम्याग्नीध्रीये  
 तिस्र आज्याहुतीर्जुहोत्यौदुम्बरेण सुवेण ।

अनु मामिन्द्रो अनु मां बृहस्पतिरनु सोमो अनु वाग्देव्यावीत् ।  
 अनु मां मित्रावरुणाविहावतामनु द्यावापृथिवी पूर्वहूतौ ॥  
 आदित्या मा विश्वे अवन्तु देवाः सप्त राजानो य उताभिषिक्ताः<sup>3</sup> ।  
 वायुः पूषा वरुणः सोमो अग्निः सूर्यो नक्षत्रैरवत्विह मा नु ॥

<sup>1</sup> °वाग्—असुरो om. L pr. man.  
 for the उद् of MSS. and edd.

<sup>2</sup> अमूं देव्याम् A.

<sup>3</sup> So I read



पितरो मा विश्वमिदं च भूतं पृथ्विमातरो मरुतः स्वकाः ।

ये अग्निजिह्वा उत वा यजचास्ते नो देवाः सुहवाः शर्म यच्छतेति ॥

दक्षिणे मार्जालीये दश सुच्युत्तमां चतुर्गृहीतं पूर्वमवदायो-  
त्तरतोऽग्नेरुपनिधाय विहरणप्रभृति मध्यन्दिने मार्जालीयो  
जागरितो भवति तस्मिन्परिवृते जुहोति प्राग्द्वारे वोदग्द्वारे वा  
प्रागुदग्द्वारे<sup>4</sup> वा । अग्निरिवानाधृष्यः पृथिवीव सुषदा भूयासम् ।  
अन्तरिक्षमिवानाधृष्यो भूयासम् । सूर्य इवाप्रति-  
धृष्यश्चन्द्रमा इव पुनर्भूभूयासम् । मन इवापूर्वं वायुरिव श्लोकभू-  
भूयासम् । अहरिव स्वं रात्रिरिव प्रियो भूयासम् । गाव इव  
पुनर्भुवो मिथुनमिव मरीचयो भूयासम् । आप इव रस  
ओषधय इव रूपं भूयासम् । अन्नमिव विभु यज्ञ इव प्रभुभू-  
यासम् । ब्रह्मेव लोके क्षत्रमिव श्रियां<sup>5</sup> भूयासम् । यदग्न एषा  
समितिर्भवातीति । अत्र विभजाथ वीथेति वीण्यनन्वृचम् ।  
अत्र तिष्ठन्नादित्यमुपतिष्ठते पर्यावृत्ते प्रदक्षिणमावृत्त्यैतैश्चैवा-  
स्वाहाकारैरेह्येवा<sup>3</sup> इदं मधू<sup>3</sup> इदं मधु इमं तीव्रसुतं पिवा<sup>3</sup>  
इदं मधू<sup>3</sup> इदं मध्विति च । प्रेषाः संशास्ति पूर्णकुम्भास्तिस्त्रो  
ऽवमाः षष्ठुत्तमाः । इमं धिषण्यमुदकुम्भं च त्रिः प्रदक्षिणं  
परिव्रजाथ दक्षिणैः पाणिभिर्दक्षिणानूरूनांघ्राना एह्येवा<sup>3</sup> इदं  
मधू<sup>3</sup> इदं मध्विति वदत्यः ॥ १ ॥<sup>8</sup>

<sup>4</sup> om. R in text; it is in A, D, E, F, G, K, L, R in commentary, S. <sup>5</sup> भूयाम्  
add. A. <sup>6</sup> मधू<sup>3</sup> om. F (at end of a leaf). <sup>7</sup> ०नु० G. <sup>8</sup> The accents are  
taken from E and R. R has अनु मा before बृहस्पतिः and अनु वाग्; also उत वा  
यजचास् and मा नु. If मानु is read, with Sāyana, the accent must be altered. In  
देवाः सुहवाः there is probably a vocative, if not, the accent must be changed.

उपाकृते स्तोत्रे चैधं निनयाथाचोत्तरे च मार्जालीये शेषम-  
न्तर्वेदीति । प्रदक्षिणमग्निं निष्क्रम्यायेण यूपं पुरस्तात्प्रत्यङ्मुख-  
स्तिष्ठन्नग्नेः शिर उपतिष्ठते नमस्ते गायत्राय<sup>1</sup> यत्ते शिर इति ।  
तेनैव यथेतं प्रत्येत्य दक्षिणमुदङ्मुखः पक्षं नमस्ते राथन्तराय  
यस्ते दक्षिणः पक्ष इति । अपरेणाग्निपुच्छमतिक्रम्य प्राङ्मुख  
उत्तरं नमस्ते बृहते यस्त उत्तरः पक्ष इति । पश्चात्प्राङ्मुखं  
नमस्ते भद्राय यत्ते पुच्छं या ते प्रतिष्ठेति । दक्षिणतः पुच्छस्या-  
त्मानं<sup>2</sup> नमस्ते राजनाय यस्त आत्मेति ॥२॥<sup>3</sup>

यथेतं सदः प्रसर्पति । पुरस्तात्प्रेह उपकृप्नो भवति । स्थूणे  
रज्जू वीवध इत्येतत्प्रक्षाल्य तीर्थेन प्रपाद्योत्तरेणाम्रीधीयं परि-  
व्रज्य पूर्वया द्वारा सदः सर्वान्धिष्यानुत्तरेण । औदुम्बराणि  
काष्ठानि प्रेहस्य भवन्ति पालाशानि मिश्राणि वा । चीणि  
फलकान्युभयतस्तृष्टानि द्वे वा सूच्यश्च तावत्यः । इषुमात्रः  
प्राङ्मेहो निमुष्टिकस्तिर्यङ्मुदगंग्रः<sup>4</sup> प्रागग्राभ्यां सूचीभ्यां समुतः ।  
दक्षिणोत्तरे स्थूणे निखायाभितो होतृषदनं<sup>5</sup> वीवधमत्यादधात्या-  
स्यसंमितं कर्तुः । कुष्ठासु छिद्राणि प्रेहस्य भवन्ति रज्जुभ्यामू-  
र्ध्वमुद्वयति दक्षिणतो<sup>6</sup> दक्षिणयोत्तरतः सव्यया दार्भ्यं त्रिगुणे  
स्यातां सव्यदक्षिणे पञ्चव्यायामे द्विगुणे वीवधे त्रिः प्रदक्षिणं  
पर्यस्योर्ध्वग्रन्थिं निष्टर्क्य वध्नाति । शाखाभिर्वृसीभिर्वा पर्युषन्त्य-

<sup>1</sup> गाय A.      <sup>2</sup> पुच्छः A.      <sup>3</sup> D omits the number, and so reckons the following Khandas as nos. 2-5 instead of 3-6.

<sup>4</sup> अदग A.      <sup>5</sup> ग्य A.      <sup>6</sup> षदन R in text.      <sup>7</sup> om. R in text.



प्रकम्पि । चतुरङ्गुलेनैष<sup>5</sup> विभूमः प्रेङ्खः स्यान्मुष्टिमात्रेण वा ।  
दक्षिणत उदाहिततरः समो वा । पदमात्रे धिषण्यात् ॥३॥<sup>6</sup>

निष्ठिते प्रेङ्खे होता वाणमौदुम्बरं शततन्तुमुभाभ्यां परिगृ-  
ह्योत्तरत उपोहते यथा वीणाम् । सप्तभिश्छन्दोभिश्चतुस्तैः  
स्थानान्यस्योर्ध्वमुद्गृह्णीयादशभिर्वा । गायत्रेण त्वा छन्दसोद्गृहा-  
म्यौष्णिहेन त्वानुष्टुभेन त्वा वार्हतेन त्वा पाङ्केन त्वा चैष्टुभेन त्वा  
जागतेन त्वा वैराजेन त्वा द्वैपदेन त्वातिछन्दसा त्वेति । छन्दां-  
स्यनुक्रम्य स्थानानामनुपरिक्रमणमौदुम्बर्याद्रया शाखया सपला-  
शया मूलदेशेन वाणं चिरुर्ध्वमुल्लिखति । प्राणाय त्वापानाय  
त्वा व्यानाय त्वोल्लिखामीति । अन्येभ्योऽपि कामेभ्यः पुनरपि  
न तूल्लिखामीति ब्रूयात् । अथैनं सशाखं छन्दोगेभ्यः प्रयच्छति ।  
भूतेभ्यस्त्वेति पश्चाद्धं फलके पाणी प्रतिष्ठापयति प्राणमनुप्रे-  
ङ्खस्वेति प्राञ्चं प्रेङ्खं प्रणयति व्यानमनुवीहस्वेति तिर्यञ्चमपा-  
नमन्वीहस्वेत्यभ्यात्मम् । भूर्भुवः स्वरिति जपति । प्राणाय त्वेति  
प्राञ्चमेव व्यानाय त्वेति तिर्यञ्चमपानाय त्वेत्यभ्यात्मम् । वस-  
वस्त्वा गायत्रेण छन्दसारोहन्तु तानन्वारोहामीति पश्चाद्धं फलके  
ऽरत्नी प्रतिष्ठापयति । अथ पूर्वं फलकं नाना पाणिभ्यामभिपद्येत  
यथाहिः<sup>2</sup> सप्तस्यन् । मध्यमं छुबुकेनोपस्पृशेद्वयोर्वा संधिम्<sup>3</sup> ।  
रुद्रास्त्वा चैष्टुभेन छन्दसारोहन्तु तानन्वारोहामीति दक्षिणं<sup>4</sup>  
सकथ्यतिहरति । आदित्यास्त्वा जागतेन छन्दसारोहन्तु तानन्वा-

<sup>5</sup> ऽङ्गुलेन A.<sup>6</sup> Numbered 2 in D.<sup>1</sup> ऽन्वी० S.<sup>2</sup> यथाहि A, D, E, K, L; यथा हि S; थाहि F, G.<sup>3</sup> संधि A.<sup>4</sup> दक्षिणं—इति om. A.

रोहामीति<sup>4</sup> सव्यम् । विश्वे त्वा देवा आनुष्टुभेन<sup>5</sup> छन्दसारोहन्तु  
तानन्वारोहामीति समारोहति पश्चात्स्वस्य धिष्यस्य दक्षिणं  
पादं प्राञ्चं प्रतिष्ठापयत्यथ सव्यं यदेतरः<sup>6</sup> आस्येदथेतरं यदेतरो  
ऽथेतरं । नोभौ विभूमौ कुर्यात् । कूर्चान्होत्रकाः समारोहन्ति  
ब्रह्मा चौदुम्बरीमासन्दीमुद्गाता । यदि कस्मैचिदवश्यकर्मणे<sup>7</sup>  
जिगमिषेदादिश्य पालं प्राङ्वरुह्य<sup>8</sup> चरित्वा तमर्थमेवमेवाज-  
पयावृतारोहेत् ॥ ४ ॥<sup>9</sup>

प्रस्तोतारं संशास्ति पञ्चविंशस्य स्तोमस्य तिसृष्वर्धतृतीया-  
स्वर्धचयोदशसु वा परिशिष्टासु प्रथमं प्रतिहारं प्रब्रूतादिति ।  
अर्धचयोदशसु प्रवाचयतेति<sup>1</sup> जानूकर्ण्यः । प्रोक्ते जपति ।  
सुपर्णोऽसि गरुत्मान्ग्रेमां वाचं वदिष्यामि बहु वदिष्यन्तीं बहु  
पतिष्यन्तीं बहु करिष्यन्तीं बहु सनिष्यन्तीं बहोर्भूयः करिष्यन्तीं  
स्वर्गंछन्तीं स्वर्वदिष्यन्तीं स्वः पतिष्यन्तीं स्वः करिष्यन्तीं स्वः  
सनिष्यन्तीं स्वरिमं यज्ञं वक्ष्यन्तीं स्वर्मा यजमानं वक्ष्यन्ती-  
मिति । दीक्षिते यजमानशब्दो नादीक्षिते । स्वरमुमिति यो  
ऽस्य प्रियः स्यान्न तु वक्ष्यन्तीमिति ब्रूयात् । उक्थवीर्याणि  
च । सं प्राणो वाचा समहं वाचा सं चक्षुर्मनसा समहं मनसा  
सं श्रोत्रमात्मना समहमात्मना मयि महान्मयि भर्गो मयि  
भगो मयि भुजो मयि स्तोभो मयि स्तोमो मयि<sup>5</sup> ह्योको मयि

<sup>5</sup> अनुष्टुभेन G. <sup>6</sup> यदेतर K, L; यदेत F, G; यदेतरं R in text. <sup>7</sup> कर्मिणे  
D sec. man., F, G, K, L; णो S. <sup>8</sup> प्राङ्व F, G. <sup>9</sup> Numbered 3 in D.

<sup>1</sup> वाचयत्यिति F. <sup>2</sup> स्वर्गंछन्तीं om. A. <sup>3</sup> स्वर्वदिष्यन्तीं om. D, E, S<sup>1-3</sup>.  
<sup>4</sup> स्वरं G. <sup>5</sup> मयि ह्योको om. F.



घोषो मयि यशो मयि श्रीर्मयि कीर्तिर्मयि भुक्तिरिति । आहूय  
वागिति जपति । चय आहावाः शस्त्रादेर्निविदः परिधानीयाया  
इति । शब्दान्ध्वयवः कारयन्ति<sup>6</sup> । एतस्मिन्नहनि प्रभूतमन्नं  
दद्यात् । राजपुत्रेण चर्म व्याधयन्त्याघ्नन्ति भूमिदुन्दुभिं पत्न्यश्च  
काण्डवीणा भूतानां च मैथुनं ब्रह्मचारिपुंश्चल्योः संप्रवादो  
ऽनेकेन साम्ना निष्केवल्याय स्तुवते राजनस्तोत्रियेण प्रति-  
पद्यते ॥ ५ ॥<sup>7</sup>

तदिदास भुवनेषु ज्येष्ठं तां सु ते कीर्तिं मघवन्महत्वा भूय  
इद्वावृधे वीर्याय । नृणामु त्वा नृतमं गीर्भिरुक्थैरिति तिस्रः ।  
अत्र हैके स्वादोः स्वादीयः स्वादुना सृजा समदः सु मधु<sup>1</sup>  
मधुनाभि योधीरित्यात्मन<sup>2</sup> एते पदे उद्धृत्य पक्षपदे<sup>3</sup> प्रत्यवद-  
धात्यश्वायन्तो मघवन्निन्द्र वाजिनो गामश्च रथ्यमिन्द्र सं किर-  
त्येतयोश्च स्थान इतरे । श्रियमह गोरश्चमात्मन्धत्ते सं पक्षयोः<sup>4</sup>  
पतनाय । नदं व ओदतीनामित्येतयैतानि व्यतिषजति पादैः  
पादान्वृहतीकारं नदवन्त्युत्तराणि प्रथमायां च पुरुषाक्षराण्युप-  
दधाति पादेष्वेकैकमवसाने तृतीयवर्जे स खलु विहरति । अपि  
निदर्शनायोदाहरिष्यामः । तदिदास भुवनेषु ज्येष्ठं पु । नदं  
व ओदतीनाम्<sup>6</sup> । यतो जज्ञ उग्रस्त्वेषनृम्णो रु । नदं यो-  
युवतीनोऽम्<sup>7</sup> ॥ सद्यो जज्ञानो नि रिण्यति शत्रून् । पतिं वो

<sup>6</sup> करयन्ति F. <sup>7</sup> Numbered 4 in D.

<sup>1</sup> सुमधुना only, A. <sup>2</sup> अत्तना F, G. <sup>3</sup> पक्ष om. A. <sup>4</sup> ०ररमम् K,  
R in text. <sup>5</sup> संपत्तियोः F. <sup>6</sup> ओदतीनाम् A, E, K, L, R, S; ०नाऽम् D, F, G.

<sup>7</sup> युवतीनोम् K; युवतीनाम् E, L; युवतीनाऽम् F, D pr. man. corrected sec. man.  
to युवतीनोऽम्; text, A, G, R, S (युवतीनो in text).

अघ्नानाम्<sup>8</sup> । अनु<sup>9</sup> यं विश्वे मदन्त्युमाः षो । धेनूनामिषुध्य-  
सोऽमिति ॥ एवमेतां त्रिः । अन्यासु चेत्समाम्नातासु राजनेन  
साम्ना स्तुवीरन्यथास्थानं ता इहैवेमाः । असमाम्नातासु चेत्स्तु-  
वीरन्समाम्नातस्य<sup>11</sup> तावतीरुद्धृत्य तत्र ताः शंसेदिहो एवेमाः ।  
अन्यासु चेत्प्राक्सूददोहसस्ताः । तदिदासेत्येतदादि शस्त्रम् ।  
अविहृतश्चात्र प्रतिगरः । ता अस्य सूददोहस इत्येतदादिः  
सूददोहाः सूददोहाः ॥ ६ ॥<sup>13</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयपञ्चमारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>14</sup>

## ADHYĀYA 2.

ग्रीवाः । यस्येदमारजस्तुजो युजो वनं सहः । इन्द्रस्य रन्त्यं  
बृहत् ॥ नाधृष आ दधर्ष दाधृषाणं<sup>1</sup> धृषितं शर्वः । पुरा यदीमति  
व्यथिरिन्द्रस्य धृषितं सहः ॥ स नो ददातु तं रयिं रयिं<sup>2</sup> पिश-  
ङ्गसंदृशम् । इन्द्रः पतिस्तवस्तमो जनेष्वा ॥ सूददोहाः । शिरो  
गायत्रमिन्द्रमित्राथिनो बृहदिति । अन्यासु चेत्समाम्नातासु  
स्तुवीरन्नुभया<sup>3</sup> संस्थानविपर्ययोऽसमाम्नातासु चेत्स्तुवीरन्मि-  
त्रासु च । सूक्तस्योक्तमां सूददोहाः । विजवः । सुतस्ते सोम-

<sup>8</sup> अघ्नानाम् A; अघ्नियानाम् E; अघ्न्या ३ नाम् D (३ add. sec. man.); अघ्नानाम् K, L, R, S; ०ना३म् F, G. <sup>9</sup> अनु A. <sup>10</sup> ०मिषुध्यसोम् D, F, G, K, L, S.

<sup>11</sup> समाम्नातवतीर F. <sup>12</sup> शंसेह A. <sup>13</sup> Numbered ५ in D. <sup>14</sup> Text, A, R; इति प्रथमोऽध्याय D; पंचमारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः F, G; इति पंचम आरण्ये प्रथमोऽध्यायः K; इति पंचमारण्यके प्रथमोऽध्यायः L; no colophon E. R accents quite irregularly the words of the first two sentences. Cf. V, 2, 2.

<sup>1</sup> दाधृषाणां G; दार्धषाणं L. <sup>2</sup> om. F, G. <sup>3</sup> See explanatory notes.



उप याहि यज्ञं मत्स्वा मदे पुरु वारं मघाय । मंहिष्ठ इन्द्र  
विजरो<sup>3</sup> गृण्यै ॥ स साहर्तुर्वृहत्येषु शत्रून्भुविगाह एषः ।  
स नो<sup>4</sup> नेतारं महयाम् इन्द्रम् ॥ इनो वसुः<sup>5</sup> समंजः पर्वतेष्ठाः  
प्रति वामृजीषी । इन्द्रः शश्वज्जिजोहूच एवैः ॥ सूददोहाः । इत्ये-  
तन्नयं ग्रीवाः शिरो विजवः सर्वमर्धर्च्यम्<sup>6</sup> ॥ १॥<sup>7</sup>

राथन्तरो दक्षिणः पक्षः । अभि त्वा शूर नोनुमोऽभि त्वा  
पूर्वपीतय इति रथन्तरस्य स्तोत्रियानुरूपौ प्रगाथौ चतस्रः  
सतीः षड्वहतीः करोति । इन्द्रस्य नु वीर्याणि प्रवोचं त्वे ह  
यत्पितरश्चिन्न इन्द्रेति पञ्चदश यस्तिग्मशृङ्गो वृषभो न भीम  
उग्रो जज्ञे वीर्याय स्वधावानुदु ब्रह्माण्यैरत श्रवस्याते मह  
इन्द्रोऽत्युपेति पञ्च सूक्तानि । आ न इन्द्रो दूरादा न आसादिति  
संपातः । इत्या हि सोम इन्मद इति पङ्क्तिः । सूददोहाः । वार्हत  
उत्तरः । त्वामिद्धि हवामहे त्वं ह्येहि चेरव इति बृहतः स्तोत्रि-  
यानुरूपौ प्रगाथौ । चतस्रः<sup>1</sup> सतीः षड्वहतीः करोति । तमु  
ष्टुहि यो अभिभूत्योजाः सुत इत्वं निमिष्ठ इन्द्र सोम इति  
चीण्यभूरेको रयिपते रयीणामित्यष्टौ सूक्तानि । कथा महामवृ-  
धत्कस्य होतुरिति संपातः । इन्द्रो मदाय वावृध इति पङ्क्तिः ।

<sup>4</sup> नोतारं A. <sup>5</sup> वसु R in text and commentary, but the commentary clearly had  
वसुः. <sup>6</sup> मर्धर्च्यम् F, G. <sup>7</sup> Numbered 7 in A, E, K, L; 1, 7 in F, G;

1 in D. In R, besides several omitted accents, there occur वृहत्, धृषितं, ददातु,  
सुतस, मंहिष्ठ, साहर्तुर्वृहत्येषु शत्रून्, एषः, पर्वतेष्ठाः, जीषी. ग्रीवाः ३ has the *pluti*,  
as in V, 3, 1.

<sup>1</sup> चस्रः F.

सूददोहाः । राथन्तरो दक्षिणः पक्षः पञ्चदशस्तोम<sup>2</sup> एकशतं  
वसिष्ठप्रासाहो बार्हत उत्तरः सप्तदशस्तोमो<sup>3</sup> द्विशतं भरद्वाज-  
प्रासाहः । भद्रं पुच्छं द्विपदासु । इमा नु कं भुवना सीषधामा  
याहि वनसा सहेति नव समाम्नाताः । अथासमाम्नाताः ।

प्र व इन्द्राय वृत्रहन्तमाय विप्रा गाथं गायत यज्जुजोषत् ॥ १ ॥  
अर्चन्त्यर्कं देवताः स्वर्का आस्तोभति श्रुतो<sup>4</sup> युवा स इन्द्रः ॥ २ ॥  
उप प्रक्षे<sup>5</sup> मधुमति<sup>6</sup> क्षियन्तः<sup>7</sup> पुष्यन्तो रयिं धीमहे तमिन्द्र ॥ ३ ॥  
विश्वतो दावन्विश्वतो न<sup>8</sup> आ भर यं त्वा शर्विष्ठमीमहे ॥ ४ ॥  
स सुप्रणीति नृतमः स्वराळसि मंहिष्ठो वाजसातये ॥ ५ ॥  
त्वं ह्येक ईशिषे सनादमृक्त ओजसा ॥ ६ ॥

विश्वस्य प्र स्तोभ विद्वान्पुरा वा यदि वेहासं नूनम् ॥ ७ ॥  
इषं नो मित्रावरुणा कर्तनेळं पीवरीमिषं कृणुही न इन्द्र ॥ ८ ॥  
शं पदं मघं रयिषणि<sup>10</sup> न सोमो अव्रतं हिनोति न स्पृशद्रयिः ॥ ९ ॥

एष ब्रह्मेति तिस्रः आ धूर्ध्वस्मा इत्येका । सूददोहाः । यद्वा-  
वानेति धाय्या । सूददोहाः ॥ २ ॥<sup>11</sup>

गायत्री तृचाशीतिः । महौ इन्द्रो य ओजसेति तिस्र उत्तमा  
उद्धरति । पुरोळाशं नो अन्धस इति तिस्रः । इन्द्र इत्तोमपा

<sup>2</sup> °दशः in both cases S; °स्तोमो G. <sup>3</sup> See explanatory notes. <sup>4</sup> श्रुते G,  
see explanatory notes. <sup>5</sup> उपप्रक्षे R, see explanatory notes. <sup>6</sup> मति A.

<sup>7</sup> क्षियन्तः G. <sup>8</sup> न om. G. <sup>9</sup> °नेषां F, G. <sup>10</sup> रयीषणि F, G, R in  
commentary.

<sup>11</sup> Numbered 8 in A, E, K, L; 2, 8 in F, G; 2 in D. R has  
the following incorrect accents, besides accenting प्रगाथौ—प्रवोचं, गायत, °तास्वर्का,  
स्तीमति श्रुतो, स्पृशद्रयिः, विद्यस्व.



एक इत्येतत्प्रभृतीनां तिस्र उक्तमा उद्धरति । तासां स्वादवः  
सोमा आ याहीत्येतामुद्धृत्य न ह्यन्यं बळाकरमित्येतां प्रत्यवद-  
धाति । जज्ञानो नु शतक्रतुरित्येका । पुरुहूतं पुरुष्टुतमिति शेषः ।  
उद्धेदभि श्रुतामघमित्युक्तमामुद्धरति । प्र कृतान्यृजीषिण आ घा  
ये अग्निमिन्धत आ तू न इन्द्र क्षुमन्तमिति सूक्ते । सूद-  
दोहाः ॥३॥<sup>1</sup>

बार्हती तृचाशीतिः । मा चिदन्यद्वि शंसतेत्येकया न विंशत् ।  
पिवा सुतस्य रसिन इति विंशतेः<sup>2</sup> सप्तमीं चाष्टमीं चोद्धरति ।  
यदिन्द्र प्रागपागुदगिति चतुर्दश । वयं घ त्वा सुतावन्त इति  
पञ्चदश<sup>4</sup> । मो षु त्वा वाघतश्चनेत्येतस्य द्विपदां चोद्धरति<sup>3</sup>  
राथन्तरं च प्रगाथम् । अथ हास्य न किः सुदासो रथमित्येतं  
प्रगाथमुद्धृत्य त्वामिदा ह्यो नर इत्येतं प्रगाथं प्रत्यवदधाति ।  
अभि प्र वः सुराधसमिति षड्बालखिल्यानां सूक्तानि । यः  
सत्राहा विचर्षणिरिति शेषः । अयं ते अस्तु हर्यत<sup>5</sup> इति सूक्ते ।  
उभयं ऋणवच्च न इति सप्तमीं चाष्टमीं चोद्धरति । तरोभिर्वो  
विदद्वसुमित्युक्तमामुद्धरति । यो राजा चर्षणीनामित्येकादश । तं  
वो दस्ममृतीषहमा नो विश्वासु हव्यो या इन्द्र भुज आभर इति  
नव । सूददोहाः ॥४॥<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Numbered 9 in A, E, K, L; 2, 9 in F; 3, 9 in G; 3 in D.

<sup>2</sup> विंशसते इत्य् R in text; विंशसतिकया L. In a note to the commentary R gives  
एकोनविंशत् as a variant.

<sup>3</sup> विंशते L.

<sup>4</sup> यदिन्द्र—०द्धरति bis G.

<sup>5</sup> पंचद A. <sup>6</sup> अस्तुर्यत F.

4 in D.

<sup>6</sup> Numbered 10 in A, E, K, L; 4, 10 in F, G;

औष्णिही नृचाशीतिः । य इन्द्र सोमपातम इति सूक्ते । तस्वभि प्र गायतेत्युत्तमामुद्धरति<sup>1</sup> । इन्द्राय साम गायत सखाय आ शिषामहीति तिस्र उत्तमा उद्धरति । य एक इद्विदयत आ याह्यद्रिभिः सुतं यस्य त्यच्छस्वरं मद<sup>2</sup> इति त्रयस्तृचा गायत्र्यः संपदोष्णिहः सप्त सप्त गायत्र्यः षट्कुष्णिहो भवन्ति । यदिन्द्राहं यथा त्वं प्र सम्राजं चर्षणीनामिति सूक्ते । उत्तरस्योत्तमे उद्धरति । वार्वहत्याय शवस इत्युत्तमामुद्धरति । सुरूपकृन्तुमूतय इति त्रीणि । एन्द्रसानसिं रयिमिति सूक्ते । य आनयत्परावत इति तिस्र उत्तमा उद्धरति । रेवतीर्नः सधमाद इति तिस्रः । सूददोहाः । इत्येतास्तिस्रस्तृचाशीतयः सर्वा अर्धर्च्याः<sup>4</sup> । अन्नमशीतयः । उदरं वशः । त्वावतः पुरुवसविति वशः । सनितः सुसनितरित्येतदन्तः । ददी रेक्ण इति द्विपदा । नूनमथेत्येकपदा । ता अस्य सूददोहस इत्येतदन्तः सूददोहाः सूददोहाः ॥ ५ ॥<sup>5</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयपञ्चमारण्यके द्वितीयोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> मुद्धारति F. <sup>2</sup> मह K. <sup>3</sup> R joins इति with सूददोहा, against the commentary and the sense. <sup>4</sup> अर्धर्च्याः G; अर्धर्च्याः D pr. man., corrected to ंर्च्याः. <sup>5</sup> Numbered 11 in A, E, K, L; 5, 11 in F, G; 5 in D. <sup>6</sup> इत्यैतरेयपञ्चमारण्ये द्वितीयोऽध्यायः A; इत्यैतरेयारण्यके पञ्चमारण्यके द्वितीयोऽध्यायः R; पञ्चमारण्यके द्वितीयोऽध्यायः F, G; इति पञ्चम आरण्ये द्वितीयोऽध्यायः K; इति पञ्चमारण्यके द्वितीयोऽध्यायः L; इति द्वितीय D; no colophon E.



## ADHYĀYA 3.

ऊरु<sup>१</sup> । इन्द्राग्नी युवं सु न इत्येतस्यार्धर्चाङ्गायत्रीकारमुत्तर-  
 रमुत्तरस्यानुष्टुप्कारं प्रागुत्तमायाः । प्र वो महे मन्दमानायान्धस  
 इति निविद्धानम् । वने न वा यो न्यधायि चाकन्यो जात एव  
 प्रथमो मनस्वानिति ते अन्तरेणा याह्यर्वाङ्गुप वन्धुरेष्टा विधुं  
 दद्राणं समने बहूनामित्येतदावपनम् । दशतीनामैन्द्रीणां त्रि-  
 ष्टुञ्जगतीनां बृहतीसंपन्नानां यावतीरावपेरंस्तावन्यूर्ध्वमायुषो  
 वर्षाणि जिजीविषेत्संवत्सरात्संवत्सराद्दशतो न वा । त्वमू षु  
 वाजिनं देवजूतम् । इन्द्रो विश्वं वि राजतीत्येकपदा । इन्द्रं  
 विश्वा अवीवृधन्नित्यानुष्टुभम् । तस्य प्रथमायाः पूर्वमर्धर्चं  
 शस्वोत्तरेणार्धर्चनोत्तरस्याः पूर्वमर्धर्चं व्यतिषजति पादैः पादा-  
 ननुष्टुप्कारम् । प्रागुत्तमायाः पूर्वस्मात्पूर्वस्मादर्धर्चादुत्तरमुत्तर-  
 मर्धर्चं व्यतिषजति । प्रकृत्या शेषः । पिवा सोममिन्द्र मन्दतु  
 त्वेति षट् । योनिष्ट इन्द्र सद्ने अकारीत्येतस्य चतस्रः शस्वोत्तमा-  
 मुपसंतत्योपोत्तमया<sup>४</sup> परिदधाति । परिहित उक्थ<sup>५</sup> उक्थसंपदं  
 जपति । उक्थवीर्यस्य स्थान उक्थदोहः ॥१॥<sup>६</sup>

<sup>१</sup> ऊरु३ R in text and in commentary. But Sāyaṇa does not note the *pluti*, and probably it is incorrect. Neither S nor the MSS. have it. Cf. on V, 2, 1. <sup>२</sup> जिजी-  
 विषेत् G.

<sup>३</sup> पादानुष्टुप् D pr. man., F, G; पादानानुष्टुप् D sec. man.

<sup>४</sup> पोत्तमाया F, G.

<sup>५</sup> om. F, G.

<sup>६</sup> Numbered 12 in A, E, K, L; 1, 12 in F, G; 1 in D.

मूर्धा लो॒काना॑मसि वा॒चो रस॑स्तेजः प्रा॒णस्या॑यत॒नं मन॑सः ।  
 संवे॑श्चक्षु॒षः संभ॑वः श्रोत्र॑स्य प्रति॒ष्ठा हृद॑यस्य स॒र्वम् ॥१॥<sup>१</sup>  
 इन्द्रः कर्मा॑क्षितम॒मृतं व्योम॑ च॒तुतं स॒त्यं विजि॑ग्या॒नं वि॒वाच॑नम् ।  
 अ॒न्तो वा॒चो वि॒भुः स॒र्वस्मा॑दु॒त्तरं॑ ज्योति॒रुध॑रप्रति॒वादः पू॒र्वम् ॥२॥  
 स॒र्वं वा॒कप॑राग॒र्वाक॑सप्रु सलिलं धे॒नु पि॑न्वति चक्षुः श्रोत्रं प्रा॒णः ।  
 स॒त्यसं॑मितं वा॒कप्र॑भूतं मन॑सो वि॒भूतं हृद॑योयं ब्राह्म॒णभ॑र्तृ॒कम्<sup>२</sup> ॥३॥

अ॒न्नशु॑भे वर्ष॑पवित्रं गो॒भगं पृथि॑व्युपरं वरु॑णवा॒च्यित॑मम्<sup>३</sup> ।  
 तप॑स्त॒न्विन्द्र॑ज्येष्ठं स॒हस्र॑धारम॒युता॑क्षरम॒मृतं दु॒हान॑म् ॥४॥  
 ए॒तास्त॑ उक्थ॒ भूत॑य ए॒ता वा॒चो वि॒भूत॑यः ।  
 ताभि॑र्म इ॒ह धु॑स्त्वामृत॑स्य श्रियं म॒हीम् ॥५॥  
 प्र॒जाप॑तिरि॒दं ब्रह्म॑ वेदा॒नां ससृ॑जे रस॑म् ।  
 तेना॒हं वि॒श्वमा॑प्यासं स॒र्वान्का॑मान्दु॒हां म॒हत् ॥६॥

भूर्भुवः स्व॑स्त्वयो वेदो॑ऽसि । ब्रह्म॑ प्र॒जां मे॑ धु॒स्त्व । आ॒युः प्रा॒णं मे॑ धु॒स्त्व । प॒शून्वि॑शं मे॑ धु॒स्त्व । श्रियं॑ यशो मे॑ धु॒स्त्व । लो॒कं ब्रह्म॑वर्च॒सम॒भयं॑ यज्ञ॒समृ॑द्धिं मे॑ धु॒स्त्व । इति॑ वाचयत्यध्व॒र्युम॑बुद्धं<sup>४</sup> चेदस्य भवति । ओमु॑क्थशा यज सोमस्येती॒ज्यायै॑ संप्रे॒षितो॑ ये३<sup>५</sup> यजामह इत्यागूर्य॑ नित्ययैव यजति व्यवान्येवानु॒-

<sup>१</sup> The verses are divided as prose in the MSS., R and S; see explanatory notes.

<sup>२</sup> भर्तृम् S. <sup>३</sup> वध्वं A, K, S, in consequence, no doubt, of the following *वाच्य* being written as *वध्वि*. <sup>४</sup> विश्वसाप्यासं A. <sup>५</sup> मबुद्धं A; मबुद्धं (?) E.

<sup>६</sup> ३ om. S, but the use in the phrase is constant, and is laid down in Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, I, 5, 5.



वषट्करोति । उक्तं वषट्कारानुमन्त्रणम् । आहरत्यध्वर्युरूक्षपा-  
चमतिग्राह्यांश्चमसांश्च<sup>7</sup> । भक्षं प्रतिख्याय होता प्राङ्मेहादव-  
रोहति । अथैतं प्रेहं प्रत्यञ्चमववधन्ति यथा शंसितारं भक्षयि-  
ष्यन्तं नोपहनिष्यसीति । प्रेहस्य ह्यायतन<sup>8</sup> आसीनो होता  
भक्षयति । अथैतदुक्षपाचं होतोपसृष्टेन जपेन भक्षयति ।  
वाग्देवी सोमस्य तृप्यतु । सोमो मे राजायुः प्राणाय वर्षतु ।  
स मे प्राणः सर्वमायुर्दुहां महदिति । उत्तमादाभिष्वविकात्तृती-  
यसवनमन्यद्वैश्वदेवान्निविद्यानादस्य वामस्य पलितस्य होतुरिति  
सलिलस्य दैर्घ्यतमस एकचत्वारिंशतमानोभद्रीयं<sup>9</sup> च तस्य स्थान  
ऐकाहिकौ वैश्वदेवस्य प्रतिपदनुचरौ । च्यवेत चेद्यज्ञायज्ञीयमग्ने  
तव श्रवो वय इति षट्कोत्रियानुरूपौ यदीळादं भूयसीषु  
चेत्सुवीरन्नाग्निं न स्ववृक्तिभिरिति तावतीरनुरूपः । संपन्नं  
महाव्रतं संतिष्ठत इदमहरग्निष्टोमो यथाकालमवभृथं प्रेहं हरेयुः  
संदहेयुर्वृसीः ॥ २ ॥<sup>10</sup>

<sup>7</sup> चमासं F.<sup>8</sup> ०तनमासीनो S.<sup>9</sup> ०मानोभद्रीयं G.<sup>10</sup> Numbered 13 in A, E, K, L; 2, 13 in F, G; 2 in D.

E omits accents, and R has the accents in many cases obviously wrong. In the case of the double accent of compounds, some of these may be correct; similar instances—some clearly wrong—occur, however, in the Kashmir MS. of the Khilas of the R̥gveda, as Scheffelowitz (p. 39) points out. The chief cases are, v. 1, वाचो, हृदयस्य सर्वं; v. 2, इन्द्रः कर्माचितममृतं, वाचो; v. 3, सर्वं, पिबति, वाक्प्रभृतं, हृदयोयं, ब्राह्मणभर्तृकं; v. 4, वर्षपवित्रं, पृथिव्यपरं, तपस्तन्विन्द्रज्येष्ठं, ०मयुताचरं; v. 6, वेदानां सख्यं, तेनाहं विद्माम्यासं सर्वाङ्कामान्दुहां; v. 7, स्वस and ब्रह्मवर्चसं. विशं मे and यशो मे are conceivable but improbable.

नादीक्षितो महाव्रतं शंसेन्नानग्नौ न परस्मै नासंवत्सर  
 इत्येके कामं पित्रे वाचार्याय वा शंसेदात्मनो हैवास्य तच्छस्त्रं  
 भवति । होतृशस्त्रेषूक्थशा<sup>1</sup> यज सोमस्येत्येकः प्रैषः संनाराशं-  
 सेष्वनाराशंसेषु वा होत्रकाणाम् । [उक्थशा<sup>3</sup> यज सोमाना-  
 मिति ।] तदिदमहर्नानन्तेवासिने प्रब्रूयान्नासंवत्सरवासिने नो  
 एवासंवत्सरवासिने नाब्रह्मचारिणे नासब्रह्मचारिणे नो एवा-  
 सब्रह्मचारिणे नानभिप्राप्तायैतं देशम् । न भूयः सकृद्गदनाद्विर्ग-  
 दनाद्वा द्वय्येव । एक एकस्मै प्रब्रूयादिति ह स्माह जातूकर्ण्यः ।  
 न वत्से च न तृतीय इति । न तिष्ठंस्तिष्ठते न व्रजन्व्रजते न  
 शयानः शयानाय नोपर्यासीन उपर्यासीनायाध एवासीनोऽध  
 आसीनाय । नावष्टब्धो न प्रतिस्तब्धो नातिवीतो नाङ्गं कृत्वो-  
 र्ध्वञ्जुरनपश्चितोऽधीयीत न मांसं भुक्त्वा न लोहितं दृष्ट्वा न  
 गतासुं नाव्रत्यमाक्रम्य नाक्त्वा नाभ्यज्य नोन्मर्दनं कारयित्वा न  
 नापितेन कारयित्वा न स्नात्वा न वर्णकेनानुलिप्य न स्रजम-  
 पिनह्य न स्त्रियमुपगम्य नोल्लिख्य नाविलिख्य । नेदमेकस्मि-  
 न्नहनि समापयेदिति ह स्माह जातूकर्ण्यः समापयेदिति गालवो  
 यदन्यत्प्राक्तृचाशीतिभ्यः समापयेदेवेत्याग्निवेश्यायनोऽन्यमन्य-  
 स्मिन्देशे शमयमान इति । यचेदमधीयीत न तत्रान्यदधीयीत  
 यत्र त्वन्यदधीयीत काममिदं तत्राधीयीत । नेदमनधीयन्स्नातको  
 भवति यद्यप्यन्यद्वह्नीयान्निवेदमनधीयन्स्नातको भवति । ना-

<sup>1</sup> This sentence is of doubtful authenticity, see explanatory notes.

<sup>2</sup> स ना° S.

<sup>3</sup> This occurs in all the MSS. of the text, but was clearly not read by Sāyaṇa, and occurs in none of the MSS. of Sāyaṇa.



स्मादधीतात्प्रमाद्येद्यप्यन्यस्मात्प्रमाद्येनैवास्मात्प्रमाद्येन्नो एवा-  
स्मात्प्रमाद्येत् । अस्माच्चेन्न प्रमाद्येदलमात्मन इति विद्यात् ।  
अलं सत्यं विद्यात् । नेदंविदनिदंविदा समुद्दिशेन्न सह भुञ्जीत  
न सधमादी स्यात् । अथातः स्वाध्यायधर्मं व्याख्यास्यामः ।  
उप पुराणेनापीते कक्षोदके पूर्वाह्णे न संभिन्नासु छायास्व-  
पराह्णे नाध्यूह मेघेऽपतौ वर्षे चिराचं वैदिकेनाध्यायेनान्त-  
रियान्नास्मिन्कथां वदेत नास्य रात्रौ चन चिकीर्तयिषेत्<sup>4</sup> ।  
तदिति वा एतस्य महतो भूतस्य नाम भवति योऽस्यैतदेवं  
नाम वेद ब्रह्म भवति ब्रह्म भवति ॥३॥<sup>5</sup>

॥ इत्यैतरेयपञ्चमारण्यके तृतीयोऽध्यायः ॥<sup>6</sup>

॥ इति पञ्चमारण्यकं समाप्तम् ॥<sup>7</sup>

<sup>4</sup> So I conjecture: च कीर्तयिषेत् all MSS. and edd. <sup>5</sup> Numbered 14 in A, E, K,  
L; 3, 14 in F, G; not numbered in D. <sup>6</sup> Text, A, R; तृतीयोऽध्यायः प्रथमारण्यक-  
मारभ्यं (मारभ्य G) पञ्चमारण्यकपर्यंतं । अष्टादशोऽध्यायः । ओं (om. G) इति आश्वला-  
यनोक्तमारण्यकं नाम समाप्तं । F, G; इति पञ्चम आरण्ये तृतीयोऽध्यायः । समाप्तं ।  
K; इति पञ्चमारण्यके । तृतीयोऽध्यायः । इति पञ्चमारण्यकं समाप्तं । L; इति तृतीयो  
ऽध्यायः । इति पञ्चमारण्यः । समाप्तः । D. E has २४ हरिः ओं । अग्निर्वै देवानां-  
मवमो विष्णुः परमः (the beginning of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, which presumably once  
in this MS. followed the Āranyaka) । नादीक्षितो महाव्रतं शंसत् । मूर्धा लोकानामसि ।  
ऊरू इन्द्राग्नी युवं सु न इति । औष्णिही तृचाशीतिः । बार्हती तृचाशीतिः । गायत्री  
तृचाशीतिः । राधन्तरो दक्षिणः पञ्च । ग्रीवाः यस्त्रिदमारजः । तदिदास भुवनेषु ज्येष्ठं तं  
सु ते कीर्तिं मधवन्महत्वा । प्रस्तोतारं संश्राप्ति । निष्ठिते प्रेङ्खे होता । यथेतं सदः  
प्रसर्पति । उपाकृते स्तोत्रे । महाव्रतस्य पञ्चविंशतिं सामिधेन्यः । महाव्रतस्य षट् ।  
ग्रीवाः सप्त । ऊरू त्रयः । महाव्रतस्य औष्णिही चत्वारि । इति पञ्चमारण्यं समाप्तम् ।  
आरण्यपञ्चकञ्च समाप्तम् । हरिः ओम् । See also the note on I, 1, 1. K sums up

the number of Khaṇḍas thus: खंड ३५ प्र २२ द्वि २६ तु १२ च १ पं १४ । <sup>7</sup> At the end of the Āraṇyaka S adds a second set of Śānti Mantras, see on I, 1, 1. Similarly in the Ānandāśrama edition, 1895, of thirty-two Upaniṣads, there is prefixed to the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, and also appended to it, a set of Śānti Mantras, similar to those in Aitareya Āraṇyaka, II, 7, and Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 1.



# AITAREYA ĀRANYAKA

## TRANSLATION AND NOTES

### ĀRANYAKA I

#### ADHYĀYA I.

Now begins the Mahāvratā<sup>1</sup> rite. Indra having slain Vṛtra became great. When he became great, then there came into being the Mahāvratā. Therefore the Mahāvratā ceremony bears the name of Mahāvratā. Some<sup>2</sup> say the priest should make two recitations with the ghee-offering for that day, but the established rule is one. He who desires prosperity should use the hymn, 'To Agni, to this god of yours, (I sing aloud)' (RV., III, 13). He who desires increase should use the hymn, 'The guest of all your folk' (RV., VIII, 74). For the folk indeed are increase and therefore he gains increase.<sup>3</sup> Some say that one should not use that

<sup>1</sup> The term *mahāvratā* is, Sāyaṇa points out, explained by the Taittirīya school in three ways, either *mahān bhavaty anena vratena* or *mahato devasya vrataṇi* or *mahac ca tad vrataṇi*. The Chandogya give the latter two explanations. See Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 6, 1, and Sāyaṇa, ad loc. For the whole, cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 21, 1; Taittirīya Saṃhitā, VI, 5, 5, 3; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 4, 1, 21; 22; *Pet. Lex.*, s. v.

<sup>2</sup> The two Ājyas recommended are RV., VIII, 74 and VII, 1; the reference is to the view of the Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 2. The former is the *prākṛta* because it is an Ājya Śāstra in the Agniṣṭoma, the latter the *vaikṛta* because it is an Ājya Śāstra in the Viśvajit (see Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXV, 11). The Aitareya holds that only the *vaikṛta*, VII, 1, should be employed, according to Sāyaṇa because the Agniṣṭoma which is the *prākṛti* has twelve Śāstras, and if there were two Ājya Śāstras the Mahāvratā would have thirteen. VII, 1, which is the Ājya Śāstra, is also at the same time a *kāmya ājyashastra* used by those who desire proper food (see I, 1, 2).

<sup>3</sup> This is the rendering adopted by Max Müller from Sāyaṇa, who explains that Vaiśyas making large earnings offer much taxation (*karam api bahulaṇi prayachanti*, which Max Müller takes as 'increase their capital', but this is in view of *prayachanti* (Sāyaṇa on Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 29) hardly possible). Perhaps it would be possible to translate: 'For he (Agni) is the increase of the folk and so he (the sacrificer) becomes prosperous,' but it is probable that the commentator has preserved the correct rendering, though of course in the original the *vilo vilo* is in the genitive. For taxation, cf. Fick, *Die sociale Gliederung*, pp. 79, 80; Rhys Davids, *Buddhist India*, p. 48; Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra, II, 10, 26, 9, &c. Already in the RV., I, 65, 7 (see Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 56, and Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, xvi) the king devours the rich. In a series of passages (XI, 5, 7, 1; XIII, 5, 4, 24; XIII, 1, 5, 4; V, 4, 2, 3) in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, cited by Winternitz (*Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 173, 174) the king receives the people, save only the Brahmins, as his food, because they pay him taxes. So often in the epic the exactions of kings are mentioned, cf. Hopkins, *India Old and New*, pp. 240, 243, n. 3; Keith, *Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka*, p. 68.

hymn because there is in it the word 'guest', and a guest is liable to go begging<sup>4</sup>. But (Mahidāsa<sup>5</sup>) said that one should use that hymn. For he, who becomes good and attains excellence,<sup>6</sup> is indeed a guest. For him who is not so men do not deem worthy of hospitality. Therefore one may by all means use that hymn. If he does use it, he should place first the tristich, 'To him, best Vṛtra-slayer, are we come' (RV., VIII, 74, 4-6). For eager for this day they worship the whole year,

<sup>4</sup> Sāyaṇa renders: 'He who uses that hymn becoming poor has to go begging in other people's houses,' which is clearly wrong. For the construction (II, 3, 5), cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 420 sq.; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 217; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 984. The word *īhvāra* in this sense becomes sometimes stereotyped in form, cf. Taittirīya Saṃhitā, III, 1, 1, 3 (cited by Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 112) with Kāthaka Saṃhitā, XII, 5; 8. It is a construction peculiarly common in the Brāhmaṇas and disappears later.

It will be seen that in the text throughout *padam bhavati* and so forth have been printed, *m* being in every case when final save at the end of a sentence, altered to *anusvāra*, and further, in all cases where *m* occurs as the end of the first member of a compound (e.g. *saṃ<sup>2</sup>m*) *m* is used. It is clear that, in a text of the Brāhmaṇa period, before mutes generally the appropriate nasal should be used; before *y, l, v* either *anusvāra* or those semivowels nasalized; and before *r, ṣ, z, s, h* *anusvāra*, with *m* in pausā (see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 212, 213; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 333, 334; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, pp. 53, 68), but this course merely adds to the unnecessary difficulties of the Devanāgarī script (the continual use of which is an unfortunate necessity), and I have followed most editors, including Prof. Macdonell in his *Byhaddevatā*, in using *anusvāra* before mutes, semivowels and sibilants, as allowed by Pāṇini, VIII, 4, 59. and approved by Whitney, §§ 71, 73. The practice of writing *m* before labials while using *anusvāra* before the other mutes is convenient but illogical, and has not been followed. I have also written *ch* for *cch* of the MSS. (with many exceptions) except where *cch* represents an assimilated letter + *ch*. It is no doubt the case that *ch* in Sanskrit is rarely, if ever (Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 155, allows *puccha* as representing *kh*, but Dr. Scheftelowitz rejects the view), a representation of any save a conjunct consonant in Indo-Germanic (either *s + kh* or (as Dr. Scheftelowitz, in his forthcoming *Zur Stammbildung in den indo-germanischen Sprachen*, tries to prove) *s + k*, normally). But there is no proof that *cch* represents this more properly than *ch* (the fact of position is of no importance), and the use of *cch* for the simple letter prevents any distinction between e.g. *t + ch* and *ch* alone. For this reason I follow Aufrecht (in his *Ṛgveda*), Bloomfield, v. Schroeder, Knauer (see his *Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra*, pp. xxxiv, xxxv, with all his MSS.), Macdonell, and others, in writing *ch* for the simple letter. Lévi, Whitney's and Lanman's use (in the *Translation of the Atharvaveda*) of *ch* even for *t + ch* (for *ṣ*) is the opposite extreme (cf. Prof. Macdonell, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 1105).

<sup>5</sup> The text has only: 'He said.' Sāyaṇa explains by *atithipadatātparyābhijñāḥ siddhānti*. Clearly it must be Mahidāsa Aitareya. Cf. II, 3, 5, n. 4; III, 2, 6, n. 13.

<sup>6</sup> It is not obvious how *atithiḥ* is thus interpreted. Sāyaṇa interprets *bhavati* as *sanmārgavartī bhavati*. Max Müller says one would expect *yo vai atati* (cf. Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 126; but see Hopkins, *A. J. P.*, XIV, 12), and suggests that the obtaining of distinction is probably derived from *ati* above in *atithi*. Another explanation seems possible. *bhū* in the Brāhmaṇas has in composition the sense 'obtain' (cf. Sāyaṇa's rendering—*bhūtiṃ prāpnoti*—of Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 23, 3). *at* according to the lexicographers has the same sense, so that here *yo vai bhavati* is perhaps explained by *yaḥ iṣṭhatām ānute*. *Kāmam* below is already found in Mantra, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 184 sq. For the duty of hospitality, cf. Taittirīya Upaniṣad, III, 10.



and now they draw nigh to it. The next three tristichs<sup>7</sup> begin with *anuṣṭubh* verses. Now the *gāyatrī* verse is *brahman*,<sup>8</sup> the *anuṣṭubh* is *Vāc*, and so he unites *Vāc* and *brahman*. He who desires glory should use the hymn, 'Agni is aroused by the fuel of the folk' (RV., V, 1). He who desires children<sup>9</sup> and cattle should use the hymn,<sup>10</sup> 'The wise sacrificer has been born' (RV., II, 5).<sup>11</sup>

<sup>7</sup> The Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 2, ignores vv. 13-15 of RV., VIII, 74, which form a *dāna-stuti* of Śrutarvan Ārkṣya. The reference here shows clearly that the Aitareya takes the same view of these verses. Verses 8, 9, 11, 12 are in *gāyatrī*, 14, 15 in *anuṣṭubh*.

<sup>8</sup> Sāyaṇa gives as reasons for these identifications that the *parabrahma* is set forth by means of the *gāyatrī* (RV., III, 62, 10), and that, like this *anuṣṭubh*, *Vāc* has four forms (RV., I, 164, 45; Nirukta, XIII, 9, &c.; Z. D. M. G., XXXIX, 58), (*parā palyantī madhyamā vaikharī*, later, see J. A. O. S., XXII, 69; Mallinātha on Kumārasambhava, II, 17). There is no reason to suppose that the identification of *Vāc* and *anuṣṭubh* and *gāyatrī* and *brahman* has any basis beyond mere fancy; for different identifications, cf. J. A. O. S., XVI, 3 sq. The original sense of *brahman* (so throughout to contrast with Brahman, the god) must clearly have been prayer or spell (cf. II, 3, 8), the two ideas blending indefinitely since the prayer could be regarded as a spell and vice versa (Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, p. 315). Deussen's view of *brahman* (*Allg. Gesch. der Phil.*, I, 1, 241 sq.) as 'der zum Heiligen, Göttlichen emporstrebende Wille des Menschen' is quite untenable, see Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 211, 212. That *Vāc* is *brahman* was the doctrine of Jitvan Śailīni and it is set forth by Yājñavalkya, Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 1, 2, and the identification is developed in the late Logos doctrine. Cf. also Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa, XX, 14, 2; Chāndogya Upaniṣad, VII, 2, 2; Hopkins, *India Old and New*, p. 147, n. 1, with whose view of the slight importance of the Logos doctrine in this form I agree.

<sup>9</sup> Sāyaṇa concludes his commentary on this Khaṇḍa by explaining that, though by the *godohananyāya* (cf. for another *nyāya* on this, Mīmāṃsā Sūtra, IV, 3, 10) the *kāmyasūktas* are intended primarily for the gaining of desired results, nevertheless they make up the sacrifice and do not leave it imperfect, on the principle *kāmyena nityasiddhiḥ*. This *nyāya* arises, he explains, from the rule on the new and full moon sacrifice, *camasenūpaḥ pranyayed godohanena paśukāmarya*, where as the sacrifice can be carried out *camasena*, the *godohanena* is merely *puruṣārthatvam* (see Jacob, *Maxims*, 3rd series).

<sup>10</sup> In the references in the translation to the RV., where no line is mentioned, it is to be understood that the whole hymn as accepted by the Āraṇyaka is meant. When only special verses are meant their numbers are given.

<sup>11</sup> For the Śānti verses and their authenticity, see Crit. Note. The verse in S *śatadhāram* is RV., III, 26, 9; *āvadaṃs*, II, 43, 3; *tvam Agne*, VIII, 11, 1; *bhadram*, X, 20, 1; *saṃ no Mitraḥ*, I, 90, 9. *śivā* occurs in Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, I, 1, cf. I, 21; 31, as *śivā naḥ śāntamā bhavantu* | *divyā āpa śadhaḥ* | *sumr̥dīkā Sarasvatī* (so accented in the Ānandāśrama ed.), and as here in that Āraṇyaka, IV, 42; Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, V, 3, 2 (with *v. l. saṃdāśas*). The Atharvaveda, VII, 68, 3, has in the last *pāda*, *mā te yuyoma saṃdāśas* 'may we not be separated from thy sight', which explains the origin of the quite unintelligible *vyoma*.<sup>a</sup> The verse *tac cakṣur* occurs also in Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, IV, 42, where will be found RV., IV, 31, 1-3. For *oṣṭhāpi*, cf. III, 2, 5, n.

In the Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, VI, 4 and 5, verses are given to accompany the recitation of the Samhitās (Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, VIII), and the formulae are placed at the beginning

<sup>a</sup> Cf. also v. Schroeder, *Die Tübinger Kātha-Handschriften*, p. 115, and the Śānti prefixed to the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad in the Ānandāśrama ed.



2. He who desires proper food<sup>1</sup> should use the hymn, 'Agni men kindle from the twigs with splendour' (RV., VII, 1).<sup>2</sup> For Agni is the eater of food. In the other chants accompanying the ghee-offerings men approach as it were more slowly to Agni, but here they come upon Agni at the very beginning; at the very beginning he<sup>3</sup> obtains proper food, at the very beginning they smite away

of the text in the Āraṇyaka thus: *ṛtaṃ vadisyāmi satyaṃ vadisyāmi* | *adabdhāṃ mana iṣiraṃ cakṣuḥ* | *sūryo jyotiṣāṃ śreṣṭho* | *dikṣe mā mā hīmsiḥ* | Other verses are prescribed to precede *adabdhāṃ*, &c., in the case of the Śakvaris and of the Māhāvratas, the Manthas (Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, IX), &c. In Khaṇḍa 5 are given the expiatory formulae: *uditaḥ śukriyaṃ dadhe* | *tad aham ātmani dadhe* | and then other differing formulae (see Oldenberg's ed., pp. 163 sq., and *S. B. E.*, XXIX, 145 sq.) Oldenberg renders *ud itaḥ*, &c., as 'From here I take out the brightness (!)', but I would much rather take *uditaḥ* (and the version in the Ānandāśrama ed., p. 295, accents *ūditaḥ*) as 'He, arisen, gives forth brightness. That (brightness) I appropriate to myself', referring to the beneficial and purifying effects of the radiance of the sun (cf. Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 31). Oldenberg also takes *sūryo*, &c., as predicate to *adabdhāṃ*, &c., which is hardly necessary. The phrase *sarvaḥ*, &c., probably means, 'I arise whole (possibly with a suggestion of *salvus*, i. e. complete, perfect, healthy), with breath, with strength; may prosperity attend me; may the gods attend me.' The assertion, *uttiṣṭhāmi*, may be based on the magic principle exhibited in faith-cures. The other clauses offer no difficulty, but *bhūmim*, &c., is obscure. *idā* (unaccented in R) may be nom. to *upasprīd*, *namaḥ* being interjected, but this is very unlikely, as *agne idā* occurs alone (see Crit. Note). It may be, 'Honour (to thee), O Agni, and oblation,' but this is merely possible.

In the Mānava Śrauta Sūtra, II, 1, 2, 36 (cited by Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, pp. 40\*, 484\*) occurs: *adabdhāṃ cakṣur ariṣṭaṃ manaḥ sūryo jyotiṣāṃ śreṣṭhaḥ dikṣe mā mā hāsiḥ satapā*, which illustrates the position here of *cakṣuḥ*. In Taittirīya Saṃhitā, III, 1, 1, 2: *dikṣe mā mā hāsiḥ* occurs. The exact words used here are found in Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 1; IX, 1.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa explains *annādya* as a compound of *anna* and *ādya*. Max Müller follows this view, cf. Monier-Williams' *Dict.* s. v. *adya*. But it is surely preferable all through to take it as an abstract of *annāda*, an eater of food, with the sense 'eating of food' which passes into the idea 'food', or 'proper food', as *annāda* has the force of 'a healthy man'. For the formation see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1212. Oertel, on Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, II, 11, 10, renders 'food-eating'.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa points out that the hymn is both a *nitya* and a *kāmya* hymn. It is hardly correct to say, as Max Müller does, that it is an obligatory part of the sacrifice, since, as we have seen in I, 1, 1, the *kāmyasūktāni* are sufficient to complete the ceremony. What Sāyaṇa means is that it is both the normal form and also a form for a special purpose. He compares the use of *dadhi* in the Agnihotra both as normal and where strength is desired, and the use of *khādira* in the Agniṣomīyapaśu rite as normal and when might is wished. The possible forms then are: (1) this hymn as normal; (2) this hymn as *annādyakāma*; (3) any of the other *kāmyasūktāni* enumerated in I, 1, 1. In RV., VIII, 1, vv. 1-18 are in *virāj* metre, the rest in *triṣṭubh*, which explains the reference to these metres below.

<sup>3</sup> The distinction between 'he' and 'they' is no doubt deliberate. 'He' corresponds to *annādyakāmaḥ* and 'they' to *āgachanti*. Sāyaṇa explains the singular by *yajamānasanghaḥ*, but this is unnecessary. Max Müller renders 'he' in each case. R reads *sadyaḥ*, which is a correction, probably of his own, for the *samdyah* of most of the MSS. including S<sup>1</sup> S<sup>2</sup> S<sup>4</sup>, but is of course most unfortunate. *Iva* is almost equivalent to *eva*, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische*



evil. Because of the words (RV., VII, 1, 1<sup>b</sup>), 'with moving of the arms they bring to birth 'Agni,' the hymn has the word 'birth' in it. Verily the sacrificer is born from this day, and so the hymn has the word 'birth'. There are four verses (in the *triṣṭubh*), cattle are four-footed, the verses serve to win cattle. There are three verses (in the *virāj*), these are the threefold worlds, the verses serve to gain these worlds. These two verses form a support. Man has a double support, cattle have four feet. The hymn places the sacrificer with his double support among the four-footed cattle.<sup>5</sup> The verses if said straight on number twenty-five. Man consists of twenty-five elements. He has ten fingers, ten toes, two legs, two arms, and the trunk is the twenty-fifth. By this hymn he adorns the trunk, the twenty-fifth. Further, this day (of the sacrifice) is twenty-five, the *stoma* hymn<sup>6</sup> of this day is twenty-five, like is brought about by like. So the two are<sup>7</sup> twenty-five. By repeating the first thrice, and the last thrice, the verses

*Syntax*, p. 477; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 230, and Schefelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, p. 79, who calls this use late, hardly correctly. Cf. III, 2, 6; II, 1, 2; 6, 1; Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 430. I think that *iva* must originally—or at any rate quite early—have had a sense approaching more or less to *eva*. Cf. RV., I, 145, 3: *tān it pṛchanti nā simb vā pṛchati svēneva dhīro mānasā yad āgrabhīt*. The sense is hardly 'by his own mind alone', as Oldenberg (*S.B.E.*, XLVI, 164) takes it. The phrase is softened by *iva*, just as metaphorical phrases are softened by *quasi*, &c. in Latin (Berger, *Stylistique Latine*, p. 140). This sense appears clearly in III, 2, 6: *vāgbrāhmaṇam ivopadāharati*. This avoids amendment to *eva* as proposed for the RV. passage by Oldenberg. So in RV., IV, 5, 8: *vār iva*. See also Eggeling, *S.B.E.*, XLIII, 375, n. 3, on Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 5, 3, 1, 'Sāyana seems to take "iva" here in the sense of "eva", as indeed it often has to be taken, especially in negative sentences.' The real sense is clearly seen in phrases like *pratarām iva kriyante*, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, III, 48, 4. See also n. 5 on II, 1, 2. So in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 2, 2, for the Kāṇva text *eva*, the Mādhyandina has *iva* explained as *eva* by the commentator (Max Müller, *S.B.E.*, XV, 159, n. 3); *ibid.*, III, 9, 28, 5, for the Kāṇva *iva vai*, the Mādhyandina has *u vai* (*S.B.E.*, XV, 150, n. 5). This use is not found in independent passages of the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, where in VIII, 10, *eva* takes the place of *iva* in *Aitareya Āraṇyaka*, III, 2, 6. Cf. also Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, LXI, 824 sq.

<sup>5</sup> Sāyana is probably correct in taking *janayanta* in a timeless or present sense. Cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 930; Avery, *J. A. O. S.*, XI, 326–361.

<sup>6</sup> The hymn has two metres and in one of these metres four feet; man has two and cattle four feet, and the union in the hymn produces union in reality. *catuspātsu* occurs also in *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, VI, 2, 7, where the whole phrase occurs with *°pādāḥ*. For *catuspādāḥ paśavaḥ* cf. Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XII, 2, 2, 20, and often in the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa. The whole phrase is also identical with *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, III, 31, 13, &c.

<sup>7</sup> For this see I, 1, 4; II, 3, 4; Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 1. The reference is to the *pañcaviṃśa stoma* in the Pṛṣṭha Stotra corresponding to the Mahaduktha.

<sup>8</sup> The plural is explained by Sāyana as due to the *pes* being thought of and not the hymn, but here the 'attraction' of the predicate is an adequate explanation, since such examples of carelessness are very rare. Cf., however, RV., III, 6, 3, where Oldenberg (*S.B.E.*, XLVI, 24, 6) refers *yajñīyāṣaḥ* to Heaven and Earth; RV., II, 5, 6 (*ibid.*, 204); RV., VII, 93, 7: *yāt sim āgas cakṛmā tāt sū mṛṣa tād aryamādītīḥ śīrathantu* | where Agni and perhaps the other



become thirty less one, that is equivalent to a *virāj* verse minus one syllable. For in the small (womb) seed is deposited,<sup>8</sup> in the small (heart) the vital spirits, in the small (stomach) food is placed. So (the *virāj* small by one) serves for the obtainment of these desires. He who knows this obtains those desires. The verses include also the *br̥haṭī* metre<sup>9</sup> and the *virāj* metre, and the perfection of that day. They also include the *anuṣṭubh* metre,<sup>10</sup> for the chants accompanying the ghee-offerings depend on *anuṣṭubhs*.<sup>11</sup>

3. 'The Praūga' should be in the *gāyatrī* metre,' some say,<sup>2</sup> 'for the *gāyatrī* is brightness and splendour and thus (the sacrificer) becomes bright and splendid.' Others say, 'The Praūga should be in the *uṣṇih* metre, for the *uṣṇih* is life

Ādityas are in the mind of the poet. Ibid., X, 85, 47 (altered in Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 8, 9), *hr̥dayānī* is used of a man and wife. In Maitrāyaṇīya Saṃhitā, I, 5, 12, *sr̥jāvahai* is used of the gods, cf. *brav̥vāhai* in IV, 1, *infra*. Cf. too the verse cited V, 2, 2, *iṣam no Mitṛavaruṇā kartaneṣām* and Atharvaveda, XIV, 1, 39, with Whitney's note. Cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 102; Speijer, *Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 26, n.; Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, XXXIX, 62, n. 1.

<sup>8</sup> See I, 3, 7, where this recurs.

<sup>9</sup> The verses taken together make up eighteen *virāj* verses (it is not necessary to assume the repetition of the first *virāj* thrice as does Max Müller), and seven *triṣṭubh* verses. Repeating thrice the last *triṣṭubh*, and taking away eight syllables from each verse, we reach nine *br̥haṭī* verses plus nine sets of eight syllables which taken all together give two *br̥haṭī* verses. Cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 2.

<sup>10</sup> The first verse, though called *virāj* in the Anukramaṇī, is really a verse of thirty-three syllables, and by the doctrine that one or two syllables make no difference, it can easily be regarded as an *anuṣṭubh* of thirty-two syllables. The acc. is due to the force of *abhi*, cf. *janitvām abhi sambabhūta*, RV., X, 18, 8 as explained by Whitney, *A. J. P.*, XIII, 297, and Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, II, 306. Later *√bhū* governs the acc., see Hopkins, *Great Epic of India*, pp. 265, 473. For the exact sense of *abhi*, cf. *abhi samcinutē*, Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 2, 4, 1 with Eggeling's note; Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 22, 6: *virājan dātinim abhisampadye-tām*, and elsewhere in the Brāhmaṇa and Sūtra literature.

<sup>11</sup> Ājya here, as above, must mean Ājya Śastra as Śāyana takes it. The reference is to RV., III, 13, which is an *anuṣṭubh* hymn and is the Ājya Śastra of the Agniṣṭoma.

<sup>2</sup> After the eating of the *ṛtugrahas* and the recitation of the Ājya Śastra comes the *Vilve-devagraha* and the Praūga. In the *pratyūti*, the Agniṣṭoma, the Praūga consists of seven *tr̥cas*, comprising RV., I, 2, and 3, ascribed to the poet Madhuchandas; so in Kauṣṭaki Brāhmaṇa, XV, 5. The Aitareya Āraṇyaka keeps these *tr̥cas* for the Praūga; in the Śāṅkhāyana there is used a set apparently of seven *tr̥cas* (RV., VII, 91, 1-3, 4-6; VII, 61, 1-3; IV, 43, 1-3; IV, 23, 1-3; IV, 55, 1-3; VII, 95, 4-6), in the *triṣṭubh* metre, ascribed to Vāmadeva *chatrinnyāyena*, though only three are his (Govinda on Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 8, 10). The series of deities, Vāyu, Indra-Vāyu, Mitra-Varuṇa, Aśvinan, Indra, Viśvedevāḥ, Sarasvatī, is the same as in the original *tr̥cas* of RV., I, 2; 3. There can be no doubt that the Śāṅkhāyana version is the later. The order of the *grahas* is different in Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, IX, 13, 33. For the metres and their relation to the *savanas* see Bergaigne, *Journal Asiatique*, XIII, 166 sq.; Bloomfield, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, 4 sq.; Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 301.

<sup>3</sup> The *triṣṭubha* Praūga is preferred in the Śāṅkhāyana, but nothing is there said as to the reason here given, while arguments for the *gāyatra* are there mentioned, which here are not used. This adds another reason for regarding the Śāṅkhāyana as the later version.



and so (the sacrificer) wins life.' Others say, 'The Praṭiga should be in the *anuṣṭubh* metre, for the *anuṣṭubh* is valour, and so it serves to obtain valour.' Others say, 'The Praṭiga should be in the *brhāṣi*, for the *brhāṣi* is prosperity, and so (the sacrificer) becomes prosperous.' Others say, 'The Praṭiga should be in the *pañkti* metre, for the *pañkti* is food and so (the sacrificer) wins food.' Others say, 'The Praṭiga should be in the *triṣṭubh* metre, for the *triṣṭubh* is strength and so (the sacrificer) becomes strong.' Others say, 'The Praṭiga should be in the *jagatī* metre, for cattle<sup>3</sup> are like the *jagatī* and so (the sacrificer) acquires cattle.' But (the sacrificer) should take a *gāyatrī* hymn only. For the *gāyatrī* is *brahman*,<sup>4</sup> and that day is *brahman*, and so through *brahman* is *brahman* commenced.<sup>5</sup> The hymn should be one by Madhuchandas. For Madhuchandas desires<sup>6</sup> honey for the singers and so he is called Madhuchandas. Now food truly is honey; all is honey; all desires are honey; therefore if one recite the hymn of Madhuchandas, it serves to obtain all desires. He who knows this obtains all desires. Now this Praṭiga in the one day form<sup>7</sup> is perfect.<sup>8</sup> Much indeed on that day is done that is forbidden,<sup>9</sup> and (the Praṭiga) is the atonement.<sup>10</sup> Now atonement

<sup>3</sup> Cf. I, 1, 2, n. 5. The point of resemblance is the number of feet. See Taittirīya Saṃhitā, III, 2, 9, 4; VI, 1, 6, 2; Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, I, 21, 15; 28, 11. Elsewhere the *gāyatrī* is connected with *aṣṭāṣṭakāḥ paśavaḥ*, Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa, III, 241; Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa, III, 8, 2, or *paśavaḥ* are *pañktāḥ*, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 23, 5.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. I, 1, 1 ad fin.

<sup>5</sup> The day is *brahman* because it causes men to attain *brahman*. This passage appears to be quoted or referred to in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 2: *brahma vā ekāho (?) brahmaitad ahar brahmaṇaiva tad brahma samardhayati*. See I, 2, 2, *infra*.

<sup>6</sup> Sāyaṇa so takes *chandati*. The compound may rather have meant 'praising honey', as the Naighaṇṭuka, III, 14 gives *chandati* as an equivalent of *arcati* and cf. also RV., VI, 11, 3 when *chanda* occurs; or possibly 'winning honey', cf. Winternitz (*Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 146, n. 3), who takes the meaning of *chand* as 'gefallen, befriedigen, oder befallen machen'. Cf. also Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 154; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 31, n. 3; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, VIII, 4 sq., as to the connexion of *chandas* with *skandati*, which if real would be natural as giving a basis for the meaning of *chandas* as right time (cf. *pes*, 'foot,' 'scansion,' &c.). *chand* and *chad* 'cover' are not separated by the Indian grammarians, but are of very doubtful connexion (Whitney, *Roots, &c.*, pp. 49, 50; Ryder, *J. A. O. S.*, XXIII, 77; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XVII, 236). Madhuchandas appears in Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXVIII, 2; Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 17; Bṛhaddevatā, II, 126; III, 57; Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, &c. For *tad yad*, &c., cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 575.

<sup>7</sup> The Agniṣṭoma, which is the *prākṛti* of the Viśvajit and that of the Mahāvratā, is a one day sacrifice. Cf. Sabbathier, *Agniṣṭoma*; Caland and Henry, *L'Agniṣṭoma*.

<sup>8</sup> Because, Sāyaṇa says, it can easily be performed by remembering the Agniṣṭoma, which it exactly follows. This passage is repeated in I, 2, 1, &c.

<sup>9</sup> Max Müller renders 'to be hidden'. Sāyaṇa says: *siṣṭair nivāraṇiṇaṃ varjanīyam*. The reference is clearly to the *dāsinṛtyabakubhūtamaithunabrahmacārīpūṣṭicalisampṛavādādikaṃ* (so R; S has what is better: *dāsinṛ (?) vṛttabaṭumaithuna*); see V, 1, 5, i. e. the popular part of the old ritual.

<sup>10</sup> This is perhaps better than Max Müller's 'and has to be atoned for (by recitation)'.



is rest, and at the end (of the sacrifice) the sacrificers rest on the atonement of the one day (Praṭga)<sup>11</sup> as their rest. He rests who knows this, and they also rest for whom the Hotṛ priest, who knows this, recites this Praṭga.

4. (There is the word 'ready' in the verse,) 'Come hither, O Vāyu, conspicuous; these Soma draughts have been made ready' (RV., I, 2, 1); this day indeed is ready for the sacrificer and for the gods. Truly the day is ready for him who knows this or for whom a Hotṛ priest who knows this recites. In the verse, 'Indra and Vāyu, these draughts are poured forth, come to what is prepared' (RV., I, 2, 4), by 'prepared' (*niṣkṛta*) he denotes what is 'well prepared' (*saṃskṛta*).<sup>1</sup> Indra and Vāyu approach what has been well prepared by him who knows this or for whom a Hotṛ priest who knows this recites. In the verse, 'Mitra of holy might I summon (and Varuṇa) who make perfect<sup>2</sup> the oil-fed rite' (RV., I, 2, 7<sup>ac</sup>), speech is the oil-fed rite. Speech is his who knows this or for whom a Hotṛ priest who knows this recites. In the verse 'Aśvins, (accept) the sacrificial offerings' (RV., I, 3, 1<sup>a</sup>), the sacrificial offerings are food and this serves to gain food. The Aśvins go to the sacrifice of him who knows this or for whom a Hotṛ priest who knows this recites the verse, 'Come hither, ye whose path is red'<sup>3</sup> (RV., I, 3, 3). In the verses, 'Indra of bright splendour, come hither; Indra impelled by prayer, come hither; Indra hastening, come hither' (RV., I, 3, 5<sup>a</sup>; 6<sup>a</sup>; 4<sup>a</sup>), he recites, 'Come hither, come hither.' Indra goes to his sacrifice who knows this or for whom a Hotṛ priest who knows this recites. The All-gods come to the call of him who knows,

It is a curious inversion of ideas by which the old popular rites retained no doubt reluctantly in the ritual become regarded as improper and needing atonement.

<sup>11</sup> Max Müller takes *pratiṣṭhāikāhaḥ* as separate from *śāntiām*, but suggests that *ekāhaḥ* may go with *śāntiām*. This certainly seems better, as it avoids the identification of *ekāhaḥ* and *śāntiḥ*. 'At the end' refers to the fact that the Mahāvratā is the last day but one of the Sattrā. For *pratiṣṭhā* as a medical term, see Hoernle, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 14.

<sup>1</sup> From *niṣkṛta* comes the Vedic *iṣkṛti* according to Bloomfield, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, xxvi. For *saṃskṛta* as 'well-cooked', see Thomas, *J. R. A. S.*, 1904, p. 748; Kirste, *J. R. A. S.*, 1905, p. 353. For *iṣ* and *√iṣ*, cf. Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 2-4. For *aram* above, which as against *alam*, V, 2, 3, is a sign of early date, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 211 sq.; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, pp. 43 sq. *alam* already appears in the Atharvaveda. The syntax is normal, see Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 146, 147. Sāyaṇa, probably correctly, explains that the hymn has the word *aram* because the day is *aram*, not vice versa. The use of *vai* favours this.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa interprets *sādhantā* either as dual or as equivalent to *sādhayantam*. In the original, the *śāda* has *Varuṇam ca riṣādasam* (cf. Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, III, 190).

<sup>3</sup> This is the most probable interpretation of *Rudravartanī*, Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 53, but cf. III, 71; Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 49. Others take as 'whose path is terrible'. Sāyaṇa renders 'whose path is like that of Rudra unobstructed'. According to R's division, here and above, *āha* must be taken as 'He says' (the verse), but the position of *asya* is hardly possible and the later examples show conclusively that *ā ha* goes with what follows, as it is taken in S.



or for whom a Hotṛ priest who knows recites the verse, 'Ye All-gods, protectors, supporters of men, come hither' (RV., I, 3, 7). In the verse, 'Ye givers, (come to) the libation of the giver' (RV., I, 3, 7<sup>c</sup>), he means the libation of every giver. Whatever a man wishes when he recites this verse, that wish the gods fulfil, if this he knows or if for him a Hotṛ priest who knows recites. In the verse, 'May the holy<sup>4</sup> Sarasvatī accept our sacrifice, she that is rich in prayer' (RV., I, 3, 10), speech is denoted by 'rich in prayer'. Speech is his who knows this or for whom a Hotṛ priest who knows this recites. When he says, 'May she accept our sacrifice,' he means, 'May she bear it away.' These verses if said straight on number twenty-one.<sup>5</sup> Man consists of twenty-one elements. He has ten fingers, ten toes, and the trunk is the twenty-first. By this hymn he adorns the trunk, the twenty-first. By repeating the first thrice and the last thrice the verses become twenty-five. The trunk is the twenty-fifth, and Prajāpati is the twenty-fifth. He has ten fingers, ten toes, two legs, two arms, and the trunk is the twenty-fifth. By this hymn he adorns the trunk, the twenty-fifth. Further the day (of the sacrifice) is twenty-five, the *stoma* hymn of that day is twenty-five,<sup>6</sup> like is brought about by like. So the two are twenty-five.

## ADHYĀYA 2.

The two tristichs, 'Thee like a car to aid us' (RV., VIII, 68, 1-3), and, 'This juice is poured, O Vasu' (RV., VIII, 2, 1-3) are the first and second of the Marutvatīya hymn.<sup>1</sup> Both are perfect in form as belonging to the one day ceremony.<sup>2</sup> Much indeed is done on this day that is forbidden, and (the Marutvatīya) is the atonement. Now atonement is rest, and so at the end (of the sacrifice) the sacrificers rest on the atonement of the one day (Marutvatīya) as their rest. He rests who knows this and they also rest for whom the Hotṛ priest, who knows this, recites this Marutvatīya. In the verse, 'Indra, come

<sup>4</sup> Probably the original form was *parvākā*, Arnold, *Vedic Metre*, p. 143; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xi; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 110.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. I, 1, 2 ad fin.

<sup>6</sup> The *stoma* peculiar to the Mahāvratā is the *pañcaviṃśa stoma* in the *rājana* melody in the Pīṣṭha Sotra corresponding to the Mahadukṭha, Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sutra, XVII, 7, 3; 4. The explanation of Prajāpati as twenty-fifth is variously given, cf. Friedländer's note on Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 1, and see also below, II, 2, 4.

<sup>1</sup> This is the first Śastra at the midday pressing. The *pragāthas* used are made up of two verses expanded (Sāyaṇa: *yasminn ṛgdevayasamūhe pragrathanena tṛcaḥ sampadyate so 'yaṃ pragāthakā*). The *dhāyūs* are interpolated verses to fill up the Śastra. For the terminology, *pratipad* and *anucara*, see Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 103. For *uktha* below, see Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLI, xii-xv.

<sup>2</sup> See I, 1, 3.

nigher, with thy strengths preserve thy singers'<sup>3</sup> (RV., VIII, 53, 5-6), (there is<sup>4</sup> the word 'singers'); this day indeed is a hymn, and being possessed of a hymn, the form of this day is perfect. (There is the word 'hero') in the verse, 'Let Brahmanaspati come forth, hither the hero' (RV., I, 40, 3<sup>ac</sup>); the form of this day indeed is perfect as endowed with strength. (There is the word 'heroic might') in the verse, 'Rise up, O Brahmanaspati; heroic might' (RV., I, 40, 1<sup>a</sup>, 2<sup>b</sup>); the form of this day is perfect as endowed with might. (There is the word 'hymn') in the verse, 'Now doth Brahmanaspati proclaim the hymn of praise' (RV., I, 40, 5); this day indeed is a hymn and the form of this day as endowed with a hymn is perfect. (There is the word 'slaying Vṛtra') in the verse, 'Agni, the slayer of Vṛtra, will bear' (RV., III, 20, 4<sup>ac</sup>); the slaying<sup>5</sup> of Vṛtra is a characteristic of Indra, this day is Indra's, and Indra's is the form of this day. (There is the word 'strong') in the verse, 'Thou art strong by insight, O Soma, thou art mighty in thy might and greatness' (RV., I, 91, 2<sup>ac</sup>); might indeed is a characteristic of Indra, this day is Indra's, and Indra's is the form of this day. (There is the word 'strong') in the verse, 'They fill full the waters; they lead forth the strong one<sup>6</sup> like a horse for rain' (RV., I, 64, 6<sup>d</sup>); strength indeed is a characteristic of Indra, this day is Indra's, and Indra's is the form of this day. Further in that verse, 'They milk the thundering never-failing spring' (RV., I, 64, 6), (there is the word 'thundering'); thundering indeed is a characteristic of Indra, this day is Indra's, and Indra's is the form of this day. (There is the word 'great') in the verse, 'To great Indra' (RV., VIII, 89, 3); what indeed is great, is large, the form of this day as endowed with largeness is perfect. (There is the word 'great') in the verse, 'Sing a great song to Indra' (RV., VIII, 89, 1); what indeed is great is large, the form of this day as endowed with largeness is perfect. (There are the words 'was in the way of' and 'stayed not') in the verse, 'No one was in the way of,<sup>7</sup> none stayed, the chariot of

<sup>3</sup> Sāyaṇa takes *prasūtir* as a noun = *anujñā deyā*.

<sup>4</sup> This is, I take it, the meaning. The verses contain words because the day has certain qualities. It is also possible to invert the relation, and derive from the epithets in the verses the qualities of the day, but the position of the verse in the sentence points to the former interpretation as slightly the more probable, and that view is supported by Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 3 ad fin.: *mahadvad hy etad ahaḥ*. The literal version is 'As to the words, &c.'

<sup>5</sup> The argument seems to be (1) *Vṛtrahā* occurs in the verse, because (2) Indra is *Vṛtrahā*; and (3) the day is Indra's. Possibly it may be, because the word *Vṛtrahā* occurs, therefore, Indra is *Vṛtrahā*, and this is Indra's day.

<sup>6</sup> *vājīnam* means 'having food' according to Sāyaṇa. It clearly meant originally 'having energy'. Cf. Oldenberg, *S.B.E.*, XLVI, 18 and Index, s. v. *vāja*; Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 10, 45.

<sup>7</sup> Sāyaṇa renders *paryāsa* as *svārthaṃ na cālitaṃ* and *na rīramad* as *tena rathena ramaṇam api śatrur na kṛtaṃ*, and *paryastavat* as *lokāntaragamanāya paritācalanavat*. It is difficult not to believe that this absurd interpretation, which is that of the Āranyaka, was



Sudās' (RV., VII, 32, 10); the form of this day as endowed with the terms *paryasta* and *rānti* is perfect. He recites all the Pragāthas to obtain all the days, all the Ukthas,<sup>8</sup> all the Pṛṣṭhas,<sup>9</sup> all the Śāstras, all the Praūgas, all the pressings of the Soma.

2. He recites<sup>1</sup> the hymn, 'Fair has been my effort, singer; slayer of truth' (RV., X, 27). True, indeed, is this day and perfect its form as endowed with truth. This hymn is composed by Vasukra. Vasukra indeed is *brahman*, and this day is *brahman*. Thus by *brahman* is *brahman* commenced. Here they ask: 'Why then is the Marutvatīya Śāstra commenced by Vasukra's hymn?' Because no other than Vasukra produced<sup>2</sup> a Marutvatīya Śāstra nor separated it. Therefore by the hymn of Vasukra the Marutvatīya Śāstra is commenced. This hymn is not addressed to any definite deity<sup>3</sup> and is therefore Prajāpati's. For Prajāpati is undefined, and the hymn serves to win Prajāpati. Once<sup>4</sup> he describes Indra, and so the hymn retains its form as Indra's. He recites the hymn, 'Drink the Soma, for which in anger thou breakest' (RV., VI, 17). (There is the word 'mightily') in the verse, 'The cow stall, Indra, mightily being lauded;' the form of this day as endowed with the word mightily<sup>5</sup> is perfect. This hymn is

deliberately chosen wrongly. The exact sense of the original is, however, open to doubt, cf. Ludwig and Griffith's translations.

<sup>8</sup> The Ukthas here meant, Sāyaṇa says, are those for the *ukthyakratuḥ*, following the Yajñyājñīya Sāman. The Pṛṣṭhas are the four Pṛṣṭha Stotras of the midday pressing. The Śāstras are those of the Ājya and other rites. The Praūgas are the Śāstras of the Praūga and are specially mentioned on the *nyāya, brāhmaṇā āgatāḥ parivrajakā aṣṭy āgatāḥ* (so S; R reads *abhy*<sup>o</sup>, which is nonsense).

<sup>9</sup> For these, see Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 339. For *āptyai* and the very numerous similar datives, cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 274; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 970. They differ from ordinary infinitives in not being construed clearly as verbal forms, but governing the genitive as here and in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 5; 6, &c., and as always in Celtic (Lindsay, *Latin Language*, p. 535).

<sup>1</sup> This Khaṇḍa contains the general form as well as the specifically Mahāvratā part of the Marutvatīya. See on V, 1, 1, which gives only the special part, and cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 3, where Vasukra is equated to Indra. He occurs also in Bṛhaddevatā, VII, 30, &c.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. brought out of the Samhitā. The perf. here has a certain propriety; it expresses a relation not exactly that of mere past, and approximates to a present. Cf. n. 6. For *atha kasmāt*, cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 24, 7, &c.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. Macdonell, *Sarvānukramaṇī*, p. 183, *Bṛhaddevatā*, II, 256; Sieg, *Die Sagenstoffe des Rgveda*, pp. 7, 8. See Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 30, 3: *te ete dhāyī anirukte Prajāpatye*, VI, 20, 18; Kauṣṭhiki Brāhmaṇa, XXIII, 2; Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā, III, 6, 5; Nirukta, VII, 4. Sāyaṇa says Prajāpati is *anirukta* as he has no *mūrti*. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 1 has: *anirukto vai Prajāpatiḥ*. Cf. Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XVII, 333; Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, p. 16.

<sup>4</sup> In RV., X, 27, 22. The Bṛhaddevatā and Sarvānukramaṇī ascribe X, 27-29 generally to Indra, with certain exceptions (Macdonell, *Bṛhaddevatā*, I, 127).

<sup>5</sup> Clearly the Āraṇyaka takes *māhi* as an accusative = *mahad*, and presumably, like Sāyaṇa, *gṛhṇā* as active. *Māhi* in the original is taken by Griffith in his translation as a vocative from

composed by Bharadvāja, and Bharadvāja was of seers the most learned, the longest lived, and the greatest practiser of austerities. By this hymn he drove away evil. When<sup>6</sup> therefore a man recites the hymn of Bharadvāja, it is that

*mahin* against the accent. Cf. also Grassmann and Ludwig's translations. For the passive sense of *grṇāna* cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, p. 362; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 264.

<sup>6</sup> The form *apahatyā* may be either a dative, 'for the driving away,' or an ablative, more probably the latter, as presumably the sense is that Bharadvāja attained his length of years by the hymn rather than the reverse. *āsa* above is clearly differentiated in time from the narrative; cf. Śāākhāyana Āraṇyaka, VI, 1, where the imperfect *avasat* describes the dwelling from time to time of Gārgya Bālāki, while *āsa* is used to denote his permanent character, and *uvāca* in describing his conversation with Ajātasatru. This use of the perfect as a narrative tense is not a sign of lateness when the use is different from that of the imperfect. In the Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa itself *uvāca* and *āsa* (XIII, 6, 9) are both found in such cases. Cf. also Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 48, 5: *Bharadvājo ha vai kṛṣo dīrghah palita āsa* (so 'bravit'), and III, 48, 4. The position of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa and Āraṇyaka as early appear clearly from the following table of the proportion of perfects to imperfects (see Whitney, *P. A. O. S.*, May, 1891, pp. lxxxv sq., slightly modified):—

Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa, I: 130.	Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XII, 1: 2.
Taittirīya Saṃhitā, I: 70.	Jaiminīya Brāhmaṇa, I: 4.
Maitrāyaṇīya Saṃhitā, I: 64.	Gopatha Brāhmaṇa, II, 1: 5.
Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I: 20.	" " I, 1: 2.
Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, I: 9.	Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, 3: 5.
Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VI-VIII, 1: 20; I-V,	Chāndogya Upaniṣad, 4: 1.
9: 11.	Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, I-IV, 1: 40.
" " XIII, 1: 5; XI, 5: 4.	" " V, 1: 16.
" " IX, 2: 5; XIV, 7: 5.	" " VI, 1: 2.
" " X, 1: 3; (including	" " VII, 4: 1.
Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad.)	" " VIII, 5: 3.

The earlier part of the Aitareya (I-XXVI) can thus claim to be older than anything save the Pañcaviṃśa and the Saṃhitās, and may be as old (for in such small matters as those of the Aitareya the proportions are not fair) as the Saṃhitās (Brāhmaṇa parts, of course). Against this sporadic cases like *saṃ lokete*, *lajjate*, *saciva* (Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xxx) cannot be regarded as of decisive weight. *lajjamānā* indeed as a Prākṛitism<sup>a</sup> would be note-

<sup>a</sup> Fick, *Bezz. Beitr.*, VII, 270 takes *lajj* from Ind. Germ. *logg* according to the ordinary and early phonetic rule; if so the Prākṛitism would disappear. The view of Leumann (Wackernagel, I, 220) is, however, more probable; cf. also Dr. Scheftelowitz's forthcoming book, *Zur Stammbildung in den indogermanischen Sprachen*, § 10. Dr. Scheftelowitz gives an interesting example of the way in which the texts were corrupted (though he does not apply it for this purpose). In later Vedic times *ts* and *kṣ* became frequently *ckṣ*, and such forms found their way into the text of old work instead of the proper forms. Later still efforts were made to replace correct forms instead of obvious Prākṛitisms with in some cases unfortunate results. E.g. in Sāmaveda, I, 3, 1, 4, 9 (=I, 231) *prkṣu* as Benfey (*Glossar*, p. 128) says is for RV, VIII, 31, 15, *prisu* via *prichu*. So may be explained *ekṣva*, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 9 (cf. Aufrecht's ed., p. 428) for *entsva* (*ā + √indh*). Cf. in Naighaṇṭuka, II, 17, *prisudhah* (cf. Roth's crit. note, p. 16) for RV. *prkṣu*, and for *rkṣāla* (*K. Z.*, XL, 264 sq.) the MSS. of Atharvaveda, X, 9, 23, offer either *ṛisāra* or *ṛechāra* (Lanman, *Album Kern*,



he may become, by the driving away of evil, learned, long-lived, and versed in asceticism; for that he recites the hymn of Bharadvāja. He recites the hymn, 'With what splendour do ye who are of equal age and dwell together?' (RV., I, 165). (There is the word 'praises') in the verse, 'They call for me, the praises long for me' (RV., I, 165, 4<sup>o</sup>); this day is praise and the form of this day as endowed with praise is perfect. This is the *kayāsubhīya* hymn,<sup>7</sup> and it is harmony and

worthy, but when it is considered that the form is unique (III, 22, 7), that the later language had always *√lajj* and that *lajjā* was a common word, there can surely be no hesitation in restoring *lajyamānā*, just as the Atharvan Prākritisms, cited above, must be removed. The exact verbal form of the text cannot always be relied upon, and it may be noted that, as Sāyaṇa's note on VII, 10; 11 shows, in his time some versions of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa had, which some had not, these chapters, of which the second is a mere corruption of Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, VII, 11 (see Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, pp. 236, 382, 444). The case of the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa may be held to contradict the deductions here accepted, since Bloomfield (*Atharvaveda*, pp. 164 sq.) has shown grounds for holding that the Pūrva is not later than the Uttara, but this objection is not of importance, since it is the case that the two parts owe most of their grammatical forms to these sources and the Pūrva borrows from the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI and XII, in the first of which books the number of perfects is very high, while the Uttara exploits the Aitareya, &c. The potential in *īta* (see Aufrecht, p. 429) also urged as a sign of late date is merely, in all probability, an inaccurate analogical form to forms like *īta* (*dadhīta*, &c.), and gives no criterion of date (cf. Liebhich, *Pāṇini*, p. 32). *āmantrayāṃ āsa* occurs only in VII, 17 and proves nothing for the earlier part of the Brāhmaṇa. Pāṇini, III, 1, 40, allows only *kr* (Liebhich, p. 33); but as there can be no doubt of the priority of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa to Pāṇini (cf. Liebhich's own paper, *Bezz. Beitr.*, XI, 309), this clearly shows either the selective character of Pāṇini's work or more probably the incorrect transmission of the text (the Śākhāyana has *cakre*, Liebhich, pp. 80, 81). The use of *āvām* (for *āvam*) is apparently a note of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa's style, not a proof of date.<sup>b</sup> Liebhich (p. 30) holds that *āsa* was obsolete in Pāṇini's day in prose and says Yaska uses only *babhūva*. I cannot accept this view as to Pāṇini.

<sup>7</sup> The story of Indra, Agastya, and the Maruts has received full treatment from Sieg (*Die Sagenstoffe des Rgveda*, pp. 108-119). He holds that RV., I, 170, 171, and 165 make up an Itihāsa to the effect that Agastya offered a sacrifice to the Maruts. Indra came and claimed it, and Agastya had to pacify Indra and the Maruts. The result is possible, but not certain. The Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXVI, 9, has (as amended by Sieg, p. 117, n. 7): *kayā subhā*

p. 302; Whitney, *Translation of Atharvaveda*, p. 604). So in Khila, I, 2, 9<sup>a</sup>, MSS. read *prīṇayanti* for *prīṇanti* and this Prākritism is found in Varttika 1 to Pāṇini, VII, 3, 37. See also Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 135.

<sup>b</sup> Aufrecht's view (*Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. vi) of the dependence of the Brāhmaṇa parts of the Taittirīya Saṃhitā seems borne out by the citations in his 'Anmerkungen'. It may be noted that the Brāhmaṇa parts of the Saṃhitā cannot well be separated much in point of time from the Brāhmaṇa itself and that Brāhmaṇa deals with the late Puruṣamedha (Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 167). Cf. also Taittirīya Saṃhitā, VI, 3, 10, 5 and Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 5, 5, 6 with Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 13, 3 (ibid., p. 184, n. 2). Noteworthy also is Winternitz's remark (p. 175, n. 1) that in Vājasaneyi Saṃhitā, XXX, Buddhists are not mentioned, though that section must be later than the oldest Brāhmaṇas.



abiding, the *kayāsubhīya* hymn. For by means of it Indra, Agastya, and the Maruts came to harmony. So the recitation of the *kayāsubhīya* hymn tends to harmony. Further the hymn tends to long life. So if the sacrificer be dear to the priest, let him recite for him<sup>8</sup> the *kayāsubhīya* hymn. He recites the hymn, 'Indra, with the Maruts, powerful, for joy' (RV., III, 47). There are the words 'Indra, powerful'; power indeed is a characteristic of Indra, this day is Indra's and Indra's its form. This hymn is composed by Viśvāmitra. Now Viśvāmitra was the friend of all, and all is the friend of him who knows this and of those for whom a Hotṛ priest, who knows this, recites this hymn. The hymn 'Thou art born, terrible, for strength, for energy' (RV., X, 73) is one containing *nivids*,<sup>9</sup> and, as belonging to the one day ceremonial, is perfect in form. Much indeed is done on this day that is forbidden, and (this hymn) is the atonement. Now atonement is rest, and at the end (of the sacrifice) the sacrificers rest on the atonement of the one day (*nividdhāna*) as their rest. He rests who knows this, and they also rest for whom a Hotṛ priest, who knows this, recites this *nividdhāna*. If recited straight on, the verses number ninety-seven.<sup>10</sup> The ninety is made up of three *virāj* sets of thirty, and then

*savayasah sanīdā iti marutvatīyam | tad etat sanjñānaṃ santani sūktam | etena hendraś ca Marutā ca samojānatām*, which must go back to the same source as the Aitareya version, found also in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 16, which agrees verbally with this passage. For *sanjñāna* see also Bloomfield, *Atharvaveda*, pp. 72, 73.

<sup>8</sup> The gen. here is probably possessive and predicative (*eius faciat*), cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, §§ 63 and 71; Liebhich, *Bezz. Beitr.*, XI, 307 sq.; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 162, while the gen. with *priya* is adnominal and regular from RV. onwards. Not unnatural is the transition from such genitives to the genitive which is really a dative, e.g. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 15, 7: *tasya śataṃ dattvā* would if *kṛtvā* were put for *dattvā* be quite regular. On the other hand in *tasya śrad dadhāti* (ibid., II, 40, 6) the gen. is practically datival. In Pāli (Müller, *Pāli Grammar*, p. 67) and in Prākṛit (Pischel, *Prākṛit Grammar*, p. 246) the dative of the indirect objective is always represented by the genitive, the dative of purpose alone surviving. Cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 297. Note the dative with *mītram* below, and genitive in *ekeṣāṃ paśūnām*, I, 2, 3; and Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, I, 283. On the low morality of the Brāhmaṇas, cf. Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, p. 9; Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 180 sq.; Garbe, *Philosophy of Ancient India*, p. 62.

<sup>9</sup> In Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 3, the *nivid* is in RV., VI, 19; see Śrauta Sūtra, VII, 19, 20. The *prākṛti* is as here, ibid., 15; Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXV, 3. *Nivids* are early and apparently were known in Rgvedic times, cf. Haug, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, pp. 32 sq.; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, IX, 355; XVIII, 96; Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, p. 387, n. 2; Eggeling, *S.B.E.*, XII, 114, n. 2; Scheffelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, pp. 136 sq. Here the *nivid* comes in after the sixth verse.

<sup>10</sup> Sāyaṇa explains thus: the two *tycas* referred to in I, 2, 1 = 6; six *pragāthas* each of two verses made into a *tyca* = 18; three *dhāyās* = 3; *asat su* = 24; *pība somam* = 15; *kayā subhā* = 15; *marutvān Indra* = 5; *janiṣṭhā ugrāḥ* = 11; total 97. But in I, 2, 1 there are seven *pragāthas* which would give 100. Apparently the author overlooked this, although of course the explanations are possible. Oldenberg (*Prolegomena*, p. 353) thinks that some of the *pragāthas* may have been counted as two, others as three verses.



there are seven which are over. Whatever is praise of the seven is also praise of the ninety. If the first and last are repeated thrice the verses number 101. There are five four-jointed<sup>11</sup> fingers, two pits, the arm, the collar-bone, the shoulder-blade; these make up twenty-five. The other parts<sup>12</sup> have twenty-five each, making a hundred, and the trunk is the one hundred and first part. The hundred is life,<sup>13</sup> health, strength, glory; the sacrificer is the hundred and first, resting on life, health, strength, glory. These verses become *triṣṭubh*.<sup>14</sup> For the midday pressing is accompanied by *triṣṭubh* verses.<sup>15</sup>

3. They ask, 'Why is a swing<sup>1</sup> a swing?' He who blows is the swing. He

<sup>11</sup> The four are, according to Sāyaṇa, *agra*, *madhya*, *mūla*, *tanmūla*, and he notes that though the *aiṅguṣṭha* has really only three, it is given a fourth for the sake of symmetry. So in the systems of Caraka and Suśruta (Hoernle, *Osteology*, pp. 122, 123) there are sixty phalanges, giving fifteen in each hand. Here the phalanges and the metacarpus are reckoned as phalanges. In Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 5, each *pāṇi*, on the other hand, is given three *parvāṇi*, which is the more correct view, and perhaps later. The expression *kakṣasī* is doubtful. It cannot mean 'armpits', for there is but one on each side; Max Müller says the pits 'in the elbow and the arm'; Monier-Williams, *Dict.* (where the reference is inaccurate) gives the sense as the two depressions on the wrist; Sāyaṇa says *kakṣasya pārvadvayam*, and possibly the armpit may be conceived of as in some way double. He takes, followed by Max Müller, *akṣaḥ* as eye, but (a) *śīras* is a separate element and the eye belongs to it; (b) the form is unparalleled. Friedländer holds that *akṣa* (Ar. *akṣa*, Lat. *axilla*, O.H.G. *ahsala*) means 'shoulder-blade', but that is the meaning of *amṣaphalaka* in the systems of Caraka (Hoernle, *J.R.A.S.*, 1907, p. 13), perhaps of Suśruta and Vāgbhaṭa (*J.R.A.S.*, 1906, p. 931; *Osteology*, pp. 76, 91). So *akṣa* must mean 'collar-bone', as I would take it in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 4 (*akṣā* and *akṣaḥ*) and as in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa (*akṣa*). The later form is usually *akṣaka*, though *akṣa* is found in the 'non-medical version of Ātreya', see Hoernle, *Osteology*, pp. 55, 134, n. 1, and my review, *Z.D.M.G.*, LXII, 135 sq. Sāyaṇa's error is found in the commentators on Yājñavalkya and in the modern translations.

<sup>12</sup> i.e. the left side, and the two sides of the lower body, which have five four-jointed toes, a thigh, a leg, and three *parvāṇi* ('joints'), Max Müller, rather 'articulations', Hoernle, *J.R.A.S.*, 1906, p. 931 according to Sāyaṇa.

<sup>13</sup> Because life is one hundred years and the other things depend upon it, Sāyaṇa explains, probably correctly, as there is no doubt that life as one hundred years is a very early idea, see Lanman, *Sanskrit Reader*, p. 384 and ref., and Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XVII, 193; *Festgruss an Roth*, p. 137. Cf. Vājasaneyi Samhitā Upaniṣad, 2.

<sup>14</sup> Because the last hymn is *triṣṭubh* (Sāyaṇa). But all the hymns in that Khaṇḍa are in *triṣṭubh*.

<sup>15</sup> Cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 12, 3-5; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, IV, 2, 5, 20, and other passages cited by Bloomfield, *J.A.O.S.*, XVI, 4. For the form *praiṅga*, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 41; *Z.D.M.G.*, XL, 678.

<sup>1</sup> The use of the swing refers, in the opinion of Oldenberg (*Religion des Veda*, p. 444), to the sun, which is called 'the golden swing in heaven' in RV., VII, 87, 5. This is quite probable, as the Mahāvratā rite is, at least to some extent, a sun-charm (cf. *Intro.*, p. 28). Sāyaṇa's interpretation follows the text and makes the swing Vāyu, as does Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 7. I, 2, 4 below is in favour of the sun; cf. Kāthaka Samhitā, XXXIV, 5, cited in *Ind. Stud.*, III, 477. Compare the *dolāyātrī* of the young Kṛṣṇa, clearly a vegetation rite.



swings forward in these worlds and then is a swing a swing. 'There should be one plank,' some say, 'for the wind blows in one way and (the swing should be) like the wind.' But this is not to be accepted.<sup>2</sup> Others say, 'There should be three planks, for threefold are these worlds and (the swing should) resemble them.' But this is not to be accepted. There should be two planks, for these two worlds<sup>3</sup> seem most real, and the ether between them is the sky. So let there be two planks. Let them be of *udumbara* wood.<sup>4</sup> The *udumbara* is sap and proper food, and planks of it serve to win sap and proper food. Let them be raised in the middle. For in the middle food delights men, and so he places the sacrificer in the middle of proper food. There are two kinds of ropes,<sup>5</sup> the right and the left. The right serves for some animals, the left for others. When there are both kinds, they serve to win both kinds of animals. The ropes should be of *darbha*<sup>6</sup> grass. For of all plants *darbha* is free of evil,<sup>7</sup> and so they should be of *darbha* grass.

<sup>2</sup> This is the constant phrase of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa. That of the Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa and it may be added of the Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, is *na tad ādriyeta*. Cf. Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 432; Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, pp. 38, n. 6; 44, n. 1.

<sup>3</sup> The ether or sky is, as Sāyaṇa points out, invisible. *Addhātama* (for *addhā*, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 178, and Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 228) is a curious word, which occurs also in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, which also has, VI, 3, 1, 24, *anaddhāpurnuṣa*, on which see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 221, n. 2; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLI, 197; Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 167.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 7, where there is one plank only: *tad vā audumbaraṇ bhavaty ūrg vā annādyam udumbara ūrjo 'nnādyasyopāptyai*. The seat of the Udgātṛ also is of *udumbara* wood. Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa, V, 5, 2: *audumbari bhavaty ūrg udumbara ūrjam evāvarundhe*. The Śāṅkhāyana passages look like an imitation, while the Aitareya may well have followed the Tāṇḍya (cf. *avaruddhyai*). Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 6, 5, has *ūrg vā dnnam udumbārah*. Cf. also Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, III, 2, 1, 23, and often.

<sup>5</sup> Sāyaṇa explains right and left as fashioned by the right and left hands respectively; perhaps twisted from left to right and right to left respectively. The plural *rajjavah* is probably due, as he says, to the fact that as is said in V, 1, 3; Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 2, 3, the ropes are each of three strands. It should be noted that Āranyaka V differs in the purpose assigned to the ropes, which it associates with the holding together of the swing. Similarly it recognizes the number of planks as three or two, while two is here prescribed. Again, I, 2, 4, the height of the swing is fixed at a *muṣṭi*, while V, 1, 3 gives as alternatives *caturahgula* or *muṣṭi*. These remind us that the last book must differ considerably in date from the first.

<sup>6</sup> On *darbha* cf. Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XII, 84; Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, p. 70.

<sup>7</sup> The construction of the genitive with a positive is based on the analogy of the superlative, e.g. *infra*, I, 2, 4 (Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, §§ 65, 91 II). Similarly the ablative is found dependent on a positive, e.g. RV., V, 10, 4 (Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 390), Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 58, *Sanskrit Syntax*, p. 78; Delbrück, *Grundriss*, III, 1, 216; Pischel, *Gött. Gel. Anz.*, 1884, p. 509, *Vedische Studien*, I, 309; Geldner, *ibid.*, III, 76, 77; and see II, 3, 1, n. 6. For the word *apahatapāpmā*, cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 25, 4: *apahatapāpmāṇaḥ* and *anapahatapāpmāṇaḥ*; Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 3, 21 (Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, 168, n. 3); Chāndogya Upaniṣad, I, 2, 9; VIII, 1, 5; 4, 1; 7, 1.



4. Some say, 'The swing should be one ell above the ground, for by that are the heavenly worlds measured.' But this is not to be accepted. Others say, 'It should be a span, for by that are the breaths measured.' But this is not to be accepted. It should be one fist<sup>1</sup> above the ground, for by that all proper food is made and all proper food is taken. So let it be just one fist above the ground. Some say, 'Let him mount the swing from east to west, like the sun here who shines, for he mounts these worlds from east to west.' But this is not to be accepted. Some say, 'Let him mount sideways,<sup>2</sup> for men mount a horse<sup>3</sup> sideways, thinking thereby to win all their desires.' But this is not to be accepted. They say, 'Let him mount from behind, men indeed mount a ship from behind and the swing is a heavenfaring<sup>4</sup> ship.' Therefore let him mount from behind. Let him touch the swing with his chin.<sup>5</sup> For thus does the parrot mount a tree, and the parrot eats most of all birds. Therefore let him touch the swing with his chin. Let him mount the swing with his arms.<sup>6</sup> So the hawk sweeps down on birds, and so he mounts trees, and he is the strongest of birds. Therefore let him mount with his arms. Let him not withdraw from the earth one foot, lest he lose his hold of it. The Hotṛ mounts the swing, the Udgātṛ the seat of *udumbara* wood. The swing is masculine, the seat feminine, and they are united. This union is made at the beginning of the hymn for the sake of offspring. Children and cattle are his who knows this. Now the swing is food, the seat prosperity. Thus

<sup>1</sup> The fist is a convenient measure and a fistful is a good mouthful, so Sāyaṇa explains. Cf. for these measures, Hopkins, *J. A. O. S.*, XXIII, 141 sq.

<sup>2</sup> The swing is east and west; north and south is sideways, says Sāyaṇa. The accusatives below are quasi predicative, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 78, 79; III, 2, 4.

<sup>3</sup> As Max Müller points out, this is a clear reference to horse-riding, which is not certainly known or referred to in the Ṛgveda. But it is known to the Yajurveda and the Atharvaveda, Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, p. 230; Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 166. Similarly in the Homeric age riding is only gradually coming into use in Greece. So Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VII, 3, 2, 17; and cf. RV., I, 163, 9; Weber, *Berl. Sitz.*, 1898, p. 564.

<sup>4</sup> This and the comparison with the sun are certainly in favour of the theory of Oldenberg, referred to above (n. 1 on I, 2, 3), and see App. to my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, pp. 73 sq.

<sup>5</sup> Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 16, 1, gives the breast. The parrot in mounting strikes the tree with its chin. It is kept by princes, ministers, &c., and so is well fed, says Sāyaṇa. The form is strange (Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 184; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 37) and probably not Indo-European. Cf. Hoernle, *Osteology*, pp. 39, 40.

<sup>6</sup> That is the forearm from the elbow. For further details of this ceremony see V, 1, 4. For *ned* below, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 317; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 240, n. The agreement of *annādatamaḥ* with *īyenaḥ* is characteristic. See Taittiriya Saṃhitā, V, 9, 11, 1: *īyēno vai vāyasāṃ pātīṭhaḥ*; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 80. Speijer (*Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 95 c) is unable to cite an example from Sanskrit. It is the general rule in Latin, where, however, post-Augustan exceptions occur, e.g. *velocissimum animalium delphinus est* (Pliny, *Nat. Hist.*, ix, 8, 20).



they<sup>7</sup> mount to food and fortune. The Hotrakas<sup>8</sup> with the Brahman sit down on seats of grass. Plants and trees having grown up bear fruit. So then if they mount all together on this day they mount on strength, on sap, on proper food. This serves to win sap<sup>9</sup> and proper food. Some say, 'Let him descend<sup>10</sup> after saying *vaṣaṭ*.'<sup>11</sup> But this is not to be accepted. For the honour done to one that sees it not<sup>12</sup> is indeed not done. Others say, 'Let him descend after taking the food.' But this is not to be accepted. For the honour done to one that has approached near is indeed not done. Let him descend after seeing the food. For that is honour indeed which is done to one who sees it. Therefore only after seeing the food, let him descend. Let him descend towards the east, for in the east is born the seed<sup>13</sup> of the gods. Then let him descend towards the east.

<sup>7</sup> They, i.e. the Hotṛ and Udgātṛ. Max Müller follows R in translating 'he', but this makes nonsense and the commentary shows that R is wrong.

<sup>8</sup> They are the Hotṛ's assistants, viz. Praśāstr, Brāhmaṇaccharṣin, Potṛ, Neṣṭṛ, Agnīdhra, and Acchāvaka. The division is not strictly accurate, as the second, third, and fifth are really classed with the Brahman and the Neṣṭṛ with the Adhvaryu, but it corresponds to facts better than the later classifications, see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, X, 144 sq.; Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 383 sq.; Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 97. *ṛṣiḥ* may perhaps be better spelt *bṛṣiḥ*. Both the *v* or *b* and *s* present difficulties, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 184, 233; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 36. See Geiger, *Litt. und Sprache d. Singhalesen*, p. 28. The following sentence is quoted in the Naigeya Anukramaṇī, *Ind. Stud.*, XVII, 373, 374.

<sup>9</sup> Max Müller suggests that *iṣo* before *ūrjaḥ* is expected. If it had occurred, it would have been quite natural, but it is not necessary to suspect the text as the reading above is *iṣam eva tad ūrjam annādyam* and the *eva tad* renders it less unnatural that *iṣo* should not occur. The phrase *eva tad* is very common in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, *tad* being of course adverbial. For the usual asyndeton, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 59.

<sup>10</sup> The descent does not of course come here in its proper order, but is inserted to complete the discussion of the topic of the movements of the priests.

<sup>11</sup> The reason for this being rejected is that it is only after the second *vaṣaṭ* (the *anuvaṣaṭ*) that this *bhākṣa* comes up, so that it could not see the priest on the swing descending in its honour (Sāyana). For the word, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 172; Foy, *Z.D.M.G.*, L, 139; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 34; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XVIII, 269; for the form, Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1091.

<sup>12</sup> For the form *apāyate*, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 77; Delbrück, *Vergl. Syntax*, II, 529 sq., *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 540 sq. *Adhyṛṣṭāya* appears clearly to come from *√ṛṣ* in the sense 'move' (cf. Greek *παλίστροφος*). The separation into two roots (maintained in Böhtlingk and Monier-Williams' *Dict.*) seems quite needless (cf. Whitney, *Roots*, &c., p. 140), as *ṛṣṭi*, spear, can easily be derived from *√ṛṣ* as trans. Cf. also Khila, IV, 5, 3 (ed. Schefstelowitz).

<sup>13</sup> Max Müller suggests, and S apparently independently also suggests, that the reading may be *devaretaḥ samprajāyate*. But the use of *samprajāyate* is curious, as the *sam* has no intelligible force, and on the other hand the form *retasa* is not impossible, as forms from *a*, *as*, *asa*, exchange more or less freely throughout Sanskrit, see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 415, 1319, and a long list in Wackernagel, op. cit., II, i, 113, 114; in a Bahuvrīhi *agniretasā* occurs in the Śatapatha, *ibid.*, 111. In Pāli of course the *asa* form prevails, Müller, *Pāli Grammar*, p. 65. Cf. also Pischel, *Prākṛit Grammar*, §§ 407 sq.



## ADHYĀYA 3.

They say, 'Let him begin this day' with saying the word *him*.<sup>1</sup> In the word *him* is *brahman*, this day is *brahman*, and so he begins *brahman* by means of *brahman*,<sup>2</sup> who knows this. Now with regard to his beginning with the word *him*, the word is masculine,<sup>3</sup> and the *ṛc* feminine. They make a pair and so he makes a pair at the beginning of the hymn for the sake of offspring. Children and cattle are his who knows this. Again with regard to his beginning with the word *him*, the word is to *brahman* like a wooden shovel.<sup>4</sup> Just as one desires to dig up anything with a wooden shovel, so with the word one digs up *brahman*. Whatever he desires, he digs up with the word *him*, who knows this. Again with regard to his beginning with the word *him*, the word is the discrimination of divine and human speech.<sup>5</sup> So he, who begins with the utterance of the word *him*, discriminates divine and human speech.

<sup>1</sup> The time of *hinvṛtya* and *pratipadyate* are obviously really identical. This is readily explained by the originally timeless force of the form *ṛtya* (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 889, 894). So the aorist participle in Greek sometimes coincides with the time of the verb, e.g. Monro, *Homeric Grammar*, p. 212. Delbrück (*Altindische Syntax*, pp. 405-409) holds that in all these cases the distinction of time between the main verb and the gerund exists, but, however natural the growth of this use is, it is only to be found in the examples by forcing the sense. Speijer (*Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 223) lays stress on the 'aoristic' effect of the weak root and appears to think that this accounts for the past force. But it should be noted that in Vedic we have no evidence that the forms were ever felt as other than participles either present or past. In *striyaṃ dṛṣṭvāya kṛtvāya tatāpa* it is most probable that the writer did not feel *dṛṣṭvāya* as 'after having seen', but as 'seeing'. Cf. my remarks in *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 164. For beginning the Mahāvratā with *him*, cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 1. For *hinv + √hr*, cf. Whitney, § 1079. It is obsolete in the classical language.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. I, 1, 3; 2, 2.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. I, 2, 4. The use is found in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VI, 3, and often in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa. For the idea, cf. the stories of the wedlock of the *sāman* and *ṛc* in the Śatapatha (IV, 6, 7, 11, &c.), and Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇas, and Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 23, 1.

<sup>4</sup> Sāyana explains this as a metaphor from the search of hidden treasure, a probable supposition in the case of India, where burial of treasure (cf. Gautama Dharma Sūtra, X, 43-45; Vasiṣṭha Dharma Sūtra, IV, 13, 14; Manu, VIII, 35-39; Yājñavalkya, II, 34, 35) has always been frequent in consequence of the uncertainty of life and government. A different idea is found in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VI, 3, 2; 5, 4, &c.

<sup>5</sup> That is, it distinguishes ordinary conversation from divine service. The Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 1, gives different reasons for the importance of *him*. In Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VI, 3, 1, 34, where the same distinction occurs, Sāyana explains as Sanskrit and Apabhraṃśa (Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLI, 200, n.); *daivya* must be correct, *devya* cannot well be adjectival, and the error in the MSS. is trifling. Cf. III, 2, 5. It is noteworthy that later *daivī vāc* is used for Sanskrit, cf. Daṇḍin, *Kāvya-darśa*, I, 33: *saṃskṛtaṃ nāma daivī vāg avākhyātā maharṣibhiḥ*. Franke (*Pāli und Sanskrit*, p. 89) compares the fact that Mathurā was called 'city of the gods' because of the Kuṣāṇa title *devoputra*, and is inclined to think that 'secondary' Sanskrit came to India from Kāśmīr via Mathurā, a hypothesis which can hardly be regarded as probable.

2. They say, 'What is the beginning of this day?' Let him reply, 'Mind and speech.'<sup>1</sup> All desires rest on the one, the other yields all desires. All desires rest on the mind,<sup>2</sup> for with the mind man conceives all desires. All desires rest on him who knows this. Speech yields all desires, for by speech man expresses all desires. Speech yields all desires to him who knows this. Then they say, 'One should not really begin the day with a *ṛc*, *yajus*, or *sāman* verse, nor start from<sup>3</sup> a *ṛc*, *yajus*, or *sāman* verse.' So one should say the *vyāhṛtis* first. The *vyāhṛtis* are *bhūh*, *bhuvaḥ*, and *sva*,<sup>4</sup> and they are the three Vedas. *Bhūh* is the R̥gveda, *bhuvaḥ* the Yajurveda, and *sva* the Sāmaveda.<sup>5</sup> Therefore

The real meaning of the discrimination is suggested by Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 18, 13: *om iti vai daiṣyaṃ tatheti mānuṣaṃ \ daivena caivainaṃ tan mānuṣeṇa ca pāpād enasaḥ pramuñcati*, cf. Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 162, n. 1. The later use of *daiṣvī vāc* must be related to Devanāgarī. For the question of Prākṛit, cf. I, 5, 2, n. In the Rāmāyaṇa passage where Hanumant ponders as to addressing Sītā, the possibilities he contemplates are (according to Jacobi) *vācaṃ mānuṣīṃ saṃskṛtām*, or *dvijātir iva, vācaṃ saṃskṛtām*, which appears clearly to discriminate between the popular and sacerdotal forms of Sanskrit. That the former expression means (as Dr. Grierson, *Ind. Ant.*, XXIII, 56, holds) the Prākṛit of the educated Kṣatriyas and well-to-do persons round the court appears excessively improbable. Nor is it correct to say that these forms of Sanskrit were practically alike. The Epic and the Sanskrit of the Brahminical schools are of distinctively different style, and Sītā might well have been surprised at being addressed not in the Kṣatriya fashion but by priestly expressions, much as a lady of the middle ages would find a great difference between the address of a countess and a monk, even when both spoke the same Latin language.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa explains this as referring to the need for care in going through the service, composed as it is of mixed verses.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa explains that the desires are phases of mind, *manovṛttivileśāḥ*, which is too subtle for the Āraṇyaka. Cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III, 2: *manasā hi kāmān kāmāyate*; and Jacob, *Concordance*, p. 292; Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VI, 2, 3.

<sup>3</sup> Max Müller, following Sāyaṇa, takes the words *narco—iyād iti* as giving the ground for the rule referred to in *tad āhur*. But this leaves no *iti* to mark the end of the rule referred to in *tad āhur*, and in view of the usual practice of the Āraṇyaka, it is safer to take the quotation as extending to *iyād*. There is no doubt that the construction of the last part of the sentence is not easy. For the abl., cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 107 sq.; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 51.

<sup>4</sup> For the later history of the triad see Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, p. 196; E. T., p. 217. See also Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 15; IV, 28, and I, 1. Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I, 5, 6, shows clear signs of a later origin than the Aitareya by its elaboration.

<sup>5</sup> On the three Vedas and the Atharvaveda, see especially Bloomfield, *Atharvaveda*, pp. 21 sq.; Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 191 sq.; Hopkins, *Great Epic of India*, pp. 2 sq. The silence of the Āraṇyaka is certainly in favour of its early date. It is of course true that the Atharvaveda contains much old material<sup>\*</sup> and probable that a Saphitā existed before the Āraṇyaka was written (cf. Taittirīya Saphitā, VII, 5, 11, 2, where the Aṅgirasas are referred to

<sup>\*</sup> I agree with Winternitz that Oldenberg's view (*Literatur des alten Indien*, p. 41) that prose magic formulae are older than 'poetic' which are imitations of the poetry of the hymns of the R̥gveda is not probable.



he does not really begin the day with a *ṛc*, *yajus*, or *sāman* verse, nor start from a *ṛc*, *yajus*, or *sāman* verse.

3. He begins with *tad*,<sup>1</sup> this. Now 'this this'<sup>2</sup> is food, and so thus he obtains food. Prajāpati indeed uttered this as the first word consisting of one syllable or of two,<sup>3</sup> viz. *tata* or *tāta*. So a child when it first speaks utters the word of one or two syllables, *tata* or *tāta*. So with this very word with *tata* in it<sup>4</sup> he begins. A Ṛṣi says (RV., X, 71, 1), 'O Bṛhaspati, the first point of speech,' for this is the first point of speech. 'Which they have uttered making a name,' for by speech are names made. 'That of them which was the best and flawless,' for this is the best and flawless. 'That is hidden in secret by their love and yet is made manifest,' for this as regards the body is secret, merely the deities (who enter the body), but as regards the gods<sup>5</sup> it is made manifest. This is the meaning of the verse.<sup>6</sup>

(apparently as a fourth Samhitā), and Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 110), but the recognition is a sign of later date (Taittirīya Samhitā, VII, is not probably early, but, like VI, is later than the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa).

<sup>1</sup> *Tad* is the first word of the first stanza of the first hymn of the Niṣkevalya Śāstra, the so-called Rājana, RV., X, 120, 1.

<sup>2</sup> It may be rendered 'this word *tad*' (= *tat tad-itī*), but Sāyaṇa takes it as a repetition. The repetition of *annam* is apparently not connected with that of *tad*, though it may have been helped by it.

<sup>3</sup> Max Müller seems to regard the two alternatives as *tat* and *tata* or *tāta*. This of course is the usual signification of *ekākṣara* and *dvayakṣara*, but Sāyaṇa refers these words to the quantity of the first and second syllables in *tata* and *tāta* respectively. The form of the sentences makes this seem certainly correct, however unusual it may be. We may have here early evidence of the omission of the final *a* in ordinary conversation.

<sup>4</sup> I take *tat tatavatya* separately and *eva tat* as = 'so'. This seems also to be Sāyaṇa's interpretation. Max Müller says: 'With this very word, consisting of *tat* or *tatta* [cf. the reading of L], he begins,' and in a note: 'If *tat* is called the very same word, *eva* is used in the sense of *iva*.' This appears rather unsatisfactory, and Sāyaṇa is probably right in thinking *tat* and *tata* similar enough for the purpose here in view. This passage, indeed, seems to be a deliberate and somewhat elaborate variant of the older legend (preserved in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI, 1, 6) by which Prajāpati when he first spoke uttered *bhūh*, *bhuvaḥ*, and *sva*, which are words of one and two syllables respectively. Sāyaṇa has: *ekena hrastvenopetaikākṣarā dvābhyāṃ hrastvādīrghābhyām upetā dvayakṣarā*. *Ekadvayakṣara* is apparently an adj. Dvandva with disjunctive force; cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 70; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 73 sq.; *Vergl. Syntax*, III, 224 sq., for early examples. The whole sense is little more than that *tad* which is equal to *tat(a)* or *tāt(a)* is the name which, as *brahman*, is revealed in the deities and implicit in man in whose organs, &c., the deities are (as in II, 1, 5; Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, IX, 1, &c.).

<sup>5</sup> For *adhidaivatam*, cf. Chāndogya Upaniṣad, I, 3, 1, &c.; Whitney, *P. A. O. S.*, Oct., 1890, p. li. So often in Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa.

<sup>6</sup> This stanza is very obscure. Sāyaṇa quotes Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 15, 8, where it is laid down that a child's secret name is only to be known by father and mother until the *upanayana*. That this is what is referred to here is not impossible, as Max Müller points out,



4. He begins with,<sup>1</sup> 'That was the oldest in the worlds' (RV., X, 120, 1), for that<sup>2</sup> is indeed the oldest in the worlds. 'Whence sprung the terrible one with brilliant might,' for from it he was born who is terrible with brilliant might. 'Immediately on birth he destroys his foes,' for immediately on being born he destroyed evil. 'After whom all helpers rejoice,' for all creatures are helpers, and they rejoice after him, saying, 'He<sup>3</sup> has risen, he has risen.' 'Growing by strength, the powerful one' (RV., X, 120, 2), for he grows by strength, the powerful one. 'As foe he smites fear into the Dāsa,' for all fear him. 'Taking that which breathes and that which breathes not,' this refers to the living and the lifeless. 'What was offered in the feasts came to thee,' this means, 'all is in thy power.' 'All turn their thoughts on thee' (RV., X, 120, 3), this means all beings, all minds, all thoughts, turn on thee. 'When these two become three helpers,' these two being united produce offspring. Children and cattle are his who knows this. 'Join what is sweeter than sweet with the sweet,' for the pair is sweet, the offspring sweet, and so with the pair he joins the offspring. 'He<sup>4</sup> conquered by the sweet that which is sweet,' for the pair is sweet, the offspring is sweet, and thus through the pair he conquers offspring. A Ṛṣi<sup>5</sup> says,

but the interpretation adopted in n. 4 above seems to render the reference quite unnecessary. The last verse he explains as meaning that the form of the gods who enter the body is hidden from men, but the gods themselves know the name well. This is practically meaningless, and Max Müller suggests that it may be that the name refers to the gods or to *tad*, the *brahman*. The reference, however, to the deities who enter the body is clearly meant in some form, cf. II, 4, 2; I, 5; and the sense is the *brahman* = *tad*, which is the beginning of speech and the first of names is revealed (as the gods) and implicit in man. This section is referred to by 'Sāyaṇa' on Atharvaveda, XVIII, 4, 77; see Lanman in Whitney's *Atharvaveda*, p. 892.

<sup>1</sup> The *īṣa*, RV., X, 120, 1-3, which begins is a *stotriya*, because it corresponds to the Rājana Sāman.

<sup>2</sup> i.e. *brahman* (Sāyaṇa). The explanations of this hymn in the Āranyaka must be deliberately perverse, so absurd are they. Cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xxix, n. 6.

<sup>3</sup> The double *udagūd* is, according to Sāyaṇa, because he is Āditya or heaven, and Agni or earth. The exact use of the aorist is characteristic of the early character of the text, cf. Whitney's criticism of Delbrück (*Synt. Forsch.*, II, 8-86; *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 280-289) in *A.J.P.*, XIII, 290; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 174.

<sup>4</sup> Sāyaṇa takes *adaḥ* as referring to *mithunam* which is *sumadhu* as consisting of the son and daughter-in-law. *Madhunā* is equal to grandchildren, and *abhiyodhiḥ* is 'provide', i.e. 'provide that dear pair with dear offspring, our grandchildren'. He does not therefore even follow the Āranyaka, which clearly took *sumadhu* as accusative. Max Müller translates: 'And this (the son when married) being very sweet conquered through the sweet.' But this represents neither the Āranyaka nor Sāyaṇa.

<sup>5</sup> This verse, which is not in the Ṛgveda, is not by any means clearly connected with the rest. Sāyaṇa gives two alternatives, that it is connected with the verse *svādoḥ svādīyaḥ svādunā rjā sam*, or with the whole Śāstra (not, as in Max Müller, that it is connected with the hymn *tad id āsa*, or the Veda in general). In the first case 'this body' is the body of the sacrificer, the other



'Since he raised this body in that body;' he means this body consisting of the Veda in that corporeal body.<sup>6</sup> 'Then let this body' be the medicine of that,' he means this body consisting of the Veda is to be the medicine of that corporeal body. Of this eight<sup>8</sup> syllables are *gāyatrī*, eleven are *triṣṭubh*, twelve *jagatī*, and ten *virāj*. This consisting of ten syllables rests in the other three metres. The three syllable word *puruṣa*<sup>9</sup> goes into the *virāj*. These indeed are all metres, the three and the *virāj*. To him who knows this<sup>10</sup> thus is this day completed with all the metres.

5. He extends the verses by the use of *nada*.<sup>1</sup> *Nada* indeed is man. So a man speaking sounds as it were. In the words *nadaṃ va oḍaṣinām*<sup>2</sup> (RV., VIII, 69, 2), *oḍaṣyaḥ* are the waters in heaven, for they water all this; and they are the waters of the mouth, for they water all proper food. In *nadaṃ yoyuvāsinām*, *yoyuvāṣyaḥ* are the waters of the sky, for they inundate as it were; and they are the waters of perspiration,<sup>3</sup> for they run constantly as it were. In the words *patiṃ vo aghnyānām*, *aghnyāḥ* are the waters that are born of the smoke of fire,<sup>4</sup> and they are the waters that spring from the organ. In *dhenūnām*

body the body of the parents and the result is seen in *svādoḥ*, &c. The other case gives the interpretation of the Āraṇyaka, as Sāyaṇa himself admits, *tad etad dvitīyaṃ vyākhyānam aśyam ity ādinā brāhmaṇena spaṣṭikriyate*. This shows how little Sāyaṇa felt bound to follow his authorities. The words *svām—ārayata* occur in various guises in Atharvaveda, VII, 3; Taittirīya Saṃhitā, I, 7, 12, 2; Maitrāyaṇī Saṃhitā, I, 10, 3; Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, II, 19, 32; Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 17, 1.

<sup>6</sup> The body of the sacrificer (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>7</sup> The hymn *tad id āsa* (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>8</sup> The hymn, RV., X, 120, is *triṣṭubh*, and the desired metres are only obtained by torturing it. The first, second, and fourth *pādas* have ten syllables, the third eleven. The first eight of the first *pāda* give the *gāyatrī*, the remaining two added to the ten of the second and fourth *pādas* the *jagatī*, and the first, second, and fourth (or rather the fourth), the *virāj*.

<sup>9</sup> Because by adding *pu* to the first *pāda*, *ru* to the second, *ṣaḥ* to the third, the verses all become *triṣṭubh*. See V, 1, 6.

<sup>10</sup> In *evaṃ vid* (perhaps one word), cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 68. *viduṣa* may be genitive (cf. n. 8 on I, 2, 2) or dative.

<sup>1</sup> The exact meaning is explained in V, 1, 6. After each *pāda* of RV., X, 120, 1, is inserted (besides the syllables *pu*, *ru*, *ṣaḥ*) one *pāda* of the hymn, RV., VIII, 69, 2, so as to make a *brhatī*. Cf. Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 6, 2, 3, and Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, 113, n. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa explains the verse with reference to juice produced at the third pressing of the Soma, the *ṛjīṣa* (cf. Hillebrandt, *Ved. Myth.*, I, 235 sq.), and takes *nadaṃ* as the sacrificer, and supplies *raśata*. For the real sense see Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 191 sq.

<sup>3</sup> *svadate* is clearly correct, the accusative being cognate. R's *svadante* is primarily attractive but is improbable, and as a perusal of p. 80 will show, he (like the MSS., cf. Whitney, *P. A. O. S.*, Oct., 1887, p. xxv) is very uncertain about nasals. Cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 275; Spelizer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 24; Delbrück, *Vergl. Syntax*, I, 366-368.

<sup>4</sup> Sāyaṇa gives two interpretations, either smoke (in the shape of a cloud) produced by fire, or from smoke and fire, quoting Kālidāsa, Meghadūta, 4, *dhūmajyotiḥśalīlamarutāṇ*

*iṣudhyasīti*, the *dhenavaḥ* are the waters, for they stir all this, and by *iṣudhyasi* he means 'thou art lord'.<sup>5</sup> He extends<sup>6</sup> a *triṣṭubh* and an *anuṣṭubh*. For the *triṣṭubh* is male, the *anuṣṭubh* female, and the two are a pair. So a man having taken to himself a wife regards himself as it were more complete. By repeating the first verse thrice, the verses become twenty-five.<sup>7</sup> The trunk is the twenty-fifth, Prajāpati is the twenty-fifth. He has ten fingers, ten toes, two legs, two arms, and the trunk is the twenty-fifth. He adorns this trunk, the twenty-fifth. Further the day (of the sacrifice) is twenty-five, and the *stoma* hymn of this day is twenty-five, like is brought about by like. So the two are twenty-five.

6. He begins<sup>1</sup> with *tad*, this. Now 'this this' is food, and so thus he obtains food. Prajāpati indeed uttered this as the first word consisting of one syllable or of two, viz. *tata* or *tāta*. So a child when it first speaks utters the word of one or two syllables, *tata* or *tāta*. So with this very word with *tata* in it he begins. A Ṛṣi says (RV., X, 71, 1), 'O Bṛhaspati, the first point of speech,' for this is the first point of speech. 'Which they have uttered making a name,' for by speech are names made. 'That of them which was the best and flawless,' for this is the best and flawless. 'That is hidden in secret by their love and yet is made manifest,' for this as regards the body is secret, namely the deities (who enter the body), but as regards the gods it is made manifest. This is the meaning of the verse.

7. He begins with the hymn, 'That was the oldest in the worlds' (RV., X, 120, 1). What is oldest is great; the form of this day as possessing greatness<sup>1</sup> is perfect. (There is the word 'greatness' in the verse, 'That fame of thine, O Maghavan, through thy greatness' (RV., X, 54, 1); the form of this day as possessing greatness is perfect. (There is the word 'strength' in the verse, 'He groweth more for strength' (RV., VI, 30, 1); the form of this day as possessing strength is perfect.

*saṇipātāḥ kva nūghaḥ*. The waters are *aghnyā*, he says, because plants and trees are to be tended by all. Cf. also Bṛhaddevatā, IV, 41, which explains RV., I, 164, 43: *śakamayaṇi dhūmam*; Atharvaveda, IX, 10, 25.

<sup>5</sup> 'Thou art food', in Max Müller's translation must be a slip, *patīyasi* is regular, see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1061, and is found in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa in this form.

<sup>6</sup> *tad id āsa* is in *triṣṭubh*, *nadaṇ va odatīnām* in *anuṣṭubh*. The former is male because bigger than the latter. For the following, cf. Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, p. 157.

<sup>7</sup> The twenty-five are made up by nine verses of RV., X, 120, 1; six of X, 54; five of VI, 30, and three of I, 51, 4 which are mentioned in I, 3, 7 below. Cf. I, 1, 2, 4 and n. 6 on V, 1, 5.

<sup>1</sup> This is a mere repetition of Kṛṣṇa 3, and the insertion of it here according to Sāyaṇa is for the glory of the whole hymn, whereas the purpose of it as Kṛṣṇa 3 was to extol the word *tad*. This may be correct, but it is very obscure.

<sup>2</sup> The difference in the first two verses, of course, is that in the first *jyēṣṭham* needs to be equated to *mahad*, whereas *mahitvā* actually occurs in the second. For the construction, cf. I, 2, 1, n. 4.



(There is the word 'hymns') in the verse. 'Then, manliest of men, with songs, with hymns' (RV., III, 51, 4); this day is indeed a hymn, and the form of this day as possessing a hymn is perfect. He extends the first two<sup>2</sup> verses, which are deficient, by a syllable. In the small<sup>3</sup> (womb) seed is deposited, in the small (heart) the vital spirits, in the small (stomach) food is placed. This serves for the obtainment of these desires. He obtains these desires who knows this. The two of ten syllables serve to obtain both kinds of proper food, that which is footed and that which is footless.<sup>4</sup> They become eighteen syllables apiece.<sup>5</sup> Of the ten, nine are the breaths,<sup>6</sup> one is the self. This is the perfection of the self. Eight syllables<sup>7</sup> remain in each. Who knows this obtains whatsoever<sup>8</sup> he desires.

8. He extends the verses by means of *nada*.<sup>1</sup> Now breath is sound. Therefore every breath, when it sounds, sounds loud as it were. The verse *nadam va odafinām* (RV., VIII, 69, 2) is by its syllables<sup>2</sup> an *uṣṇih*, but by its feet an *anuṣṭubh*. *Uṣṇih* is life, *anuṣṭubh* speech. Thus he places speech and life in him. By repeating the first verse thrice, the verses become twenty-five. The trunk is the twenty-fifth, Prajāpati is the twenty-fifth. He has ten fingers, ten

<sup>2</sup> That is RV., X, 120, 1<sup>a</sup>, with ten syllables, and VIII, 69, 2<sup>a</sup>, with seven. He adds *pu* to them.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. I, 1, 2 ad fin.

<sup>4</sup> i.e. animals and vegetables (Sāyana).

<sup>5</sup> i.e. ten syllables in RV., X, 120, 1<sup>a</sup>, the syllable *pu*, and seven in VIII, 69, 2<sup>a</sup>. Similarly with the other three *pādas*.

<sup>6</sup> (*śirasi*) *chidrāṇi* is the version of Sāyana and it is as probable as any other, though the word originally meant breath and only metaphorically is transferred to its use as describing the organs of sense. The nine 'orifices', seven in the head and two in the body, according to a Śruti (Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, II, 5, 9; 10; 6, 8, is the reference, I think) cited by Sāyana (*saṁpta vai śirṣanyāḥ prāṇā dvau avāṇcau*), are referred to in the Kāthaka Upaniṣad, V, 1 (where in all, however, there are eleven), Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, III, 18, Yogasikhā Upaniṣad, 4, Yogatattva Upaniṣad, 16, and elsewhere. They are ears, eyes, mouth, nostrils and organs of evacuation, with the navel when ten are counted, as in the Jaiminiya Upaniṣad, and Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa, II, 77 (*J.A.O.S.*, XV, 240), and *brahmarandhra* when eleven are counted. Cf. Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, p. 243; E. T., p. 265; *Sechzig Upanishads*, p. 281, n. 1, and *nava vai śirasi prāṇāḥ*, Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 2, which points to a different idea, for which see I, 4, 1, n. 5; 5, 1, n. 6; 2, n. 13.

<sup>7</sup> That is, after deducting the ten from the eighteen.

<sup>8</sup> In his interesting note on relative clauses in the Veda, Edgren, *P. A. O. S.*, May, 1883, pp. xii-xv, points out that unlike Greek, Vedic Sanskrit uses the indef. rel. pronoun with the indic. This rule is not observed in the later Vedic literature, e.g. Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 3, 1: *atha khalu yatra kva ca hoṣyan syāt*, &c.

<sup>1</sup> i.e. by the stanza, RV., VIII, 69, 2.

<sup>2</sup> It has four *pādas*, and is therefore like an *anuṣṭubh*, which of course it really is. But it has in the Samhitā form only twenty-seven syllables, or resolving the *y* in *aghnyānām* in *pāda* 3, twenty-eight, which is the number of syllables in an *uṣṇih*, which, however, has three *pādas* (8 + 8 + 12) only.

toes, two legs, two arms, and the trunk is the twenty-fifth. He adorns this trunk, the twenty-fifth. Further this day (of the sacrifice) is twenty-five, the *stoma* hymn of this day is twenty-five, like is brought about by like. So the two are twenty-five. This is the twenty-fifth with regard to the body. Now with regard to the deities. The eye, ear, mind, speech, and vital spirits, these five deities<sup>3</sup> have entered into this person, and he has entered into these five deities. He is then<sup>4</sup> pervaded wholly in all his limbs up to his hair and nails. So all beings, down to ants, are born thus pervaded. A Ṛṣi says (RV., X, 114, 8), 'A thousandfold are these fifteen members,'<sup>5</sup> for five arises from ten. 'As large as heaven and earth, so large is it,' for the self is as large as heaven and earth. 'A thousandfold are the thousand might,'<sup>6</sup> thus does the poet please and magnify the members. 'As far as *brahman* extends so far does Vāc,' wherever there is *brahman*, there is Vāc,<sup>7</sup> wherever Vāc, there is *brahman*, is what is meant. The first<sup>8</sup> of these hymns has nine verses, for nine are the breaths, and it serves to win them. The second has six verses, the seasons are six, and it serves to win them. The third has five verses, the *pañkti*<sup>9</sup> has five feet, and it is food, so it serves to win proper food. Then comes a tristich, there are three threefold worlds, and it serves to conquer them. These verses become *br̥hatī*,<sup>10</sup> the

<sup>3</sup> Cf. I, 3, 3 above; II, 4, 2.

<sup>4</sup> 'Then' is taken by Max Müller as referring to the five deities, by Sāyaṇa as referring to the body in which *puruṣa* is. But the latter view seems quite sound. The senses and *puruṣa* are absolutely inter-connected. For *sāṅgaḥ*, cf. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 3, 3. For *ā*, cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 88; J. A. O. S., XXIII, 151 sq.

<sup>5</sup> *ukthā* Sāyaṇa translates *utkṛṣṭāṇy aṅgāni* and, as hymns will not do, he must be approximately right. His view is that the fifteen are made up of the five above mentioned and the corresponding five elements (earth, water, fire, wind, and ether) forming the mother and father. But this is more than doubtful. For the ten the *ātman* comes with its five organs and a complete body.

<sup>6</sup> Because the senses are applied to a great variety of objects (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>7</sup> *Brahman* is in all and wherever a name is given, it is there, cf. I, 3, 3. Sāyaṇa quotes a Śruti, Taittirīya Āranyaka, III, 12: *sarvāṇi rūpāṇi vicitya dhīraḥ | nāmāni kṛtvābhivadan yad āste ||* For the very close connexion of *brahman* and Vāc, see I, 1, 1, n. 8; Atharvaveda, IV, 20; Bloomfield, *Atharvaveda*, p. 88.

<sup>8</sup> RV., X, 120, has nine verses. The repetition of *eṣām* is due, says Sāyaṇa, to the comparative nature of these hymns as used in the Śāstra, the first *eṣām* refers to the hymns as they stand in the Śāstra, the second to them alone as they stand in the Samhitā. This is of course impossible. For the nine *prāṇas*, see I, 3, 7, n. 6. For the seasons, cf. Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, pp. 373, 374; Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 184.

<sup>9</sup> *annaṃ ca pañktichandasā sādhyatvāt kṣetreṣu pañktirūpeṇotpannatvād vā pañktirūpam*, Sāyaṇa. For the tristich and the worlds, cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, II, 3.

<sup>10</sup> The first *pāda* of RV., X, 120, 1, has, with *pu*, eleven syllables, the first *pāda* of RV., VIII, 69, 2, seven verses, making eighteen. So two *pādas* give thirty-six syllables, or a *br̥hatī*. The twenty-three verses give forty-six *br̥hatīs*, as each is extended similarly (Sāyaṇa).



metre, the immortal, the world of the gods. This is the body. Even so he who knows this comes by this way near to the undying self.<sup>11</sup>

## ADHYĀYA 4.

Then comes the *sūdadohas* verse.<sup>1</sup> *Sūdadohas* is breath and by breath he joins together all joints. Then the neck verses.<sup>2</sup> They denote them as *uṣṇīh* verses according to their metre. Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse. *Sūdadohas* is breath and by breath he joins together all joints. Then come the head verses. They are in *gāyatrī*, for it is the beginning of the metres, and the head is the beginning of the members of the body.<sup>3</sup> They are in *arkavat*<sup>4</sup> verses. *Arka* is Agni. They are nine verses, the head is of nine pieces.<sup>5</sup> He recites the tenth verse. It is the skin and hairs of the head. It serves for reciting more than

<sup>11</sup> Sāyaṇa explains this obscure statement as referring to a birth as a *deva*. It may be doubted if it means more than he comprehends the immortal body (cf. *ātmā*, just above), i. e. he who knows these verses thus performs that part of the rite which corresponds with the body of the bird to which the Nisikavāya Śāstra is likened (cf. I, 1, 1). That *ātmā* above means body or trunk seems certain, and the second *ātmānam* can hardly refer to anything else. If it does, it may simply mean, 'he becomes immortal.' The acc. is governed by *abhi*; cf. I, 1, 2, n. 10.

<sup>1</sup> The Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka treats all this very briefly, II, 1, covers all Adhyāya 3 and the *sūdadohas*. The *śiṣṇan* comes in II, 2, before the *grāiva*, II, 3; then the *pakṣau* (*akṣa*, *bāhū*, *prahastaka*), II, 4-5; then the *caturuttarāṇi*, II, 6; the *aśītis*, *gāyatrī*, *bārhaṭi*, *auṣṇīh*, II, 7-10; the *vaśa*, II, 11; the *dvīpādāh*, II, 12; the *aindrāgna sūkta*, II, 13; the *āvapaṇa*, II, 14; the *ānuṣṭubha samāmnāya*, II, 15; the *triṣṭupchala*, II, 16; then two miscellaneous chapters, II, 17; 18.

*Sūdadohas* is interpreted as yielding milk and it represents the verse, RV., VIII, 69, 3, *tā aya sūdadohasaḥ sōmaṃ śrīṇanti pṣṇayaḥ jñanman devānāṃ vīśas triṣṭv ā rocanē divdāh* || This is the verse immediately after the *nada* verse. Its use here is explained by Sāyaṇa because it is *prāṇasvarūpā*. Cf. Śāṅkhāyana, II, 1: *imāni parvāṇi saṃhitāni bhavanti*. *parvan* is apparently used vaguely; cf. I, 2, 3, n. 12.

<sup>2</sup> For them see V, 2, 1, which is expressly here ascribed to Śaunaka by Sāyaṇa, Introd., p. 20. *grīvāḥ* here means 'cervical cartilages', see n. 7.

<sup>3</sup> *siṣṭkṣh* *Prajāpateḥ* *prathamam* *mukhato* *gāyatrī* *saṃutpannā* (Sāyaṇa quoting the Yajurbrahmaṇa); see Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, pp. 18, 53.

<sup>4</sup> That is, RV., I, 7, 1-9; in v. 1 *arkebhīr* occurs.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Taittiriya Saṃhitā, VI, 2, 1: *tasmān navadhā tiro viśyūtam* | (Sāyaṇa); *nava vai śirasi prāṇāḥ*, Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 2, and I, 3, 7, n. 6. The first expression of this precise idea seems to be in the Atharvaveda, X, 8, 43; *puṇḍrīkaṃ nāvadoṣaṃ tribhīr guṇebhīr dvṛtam*. Whitney in his *Translation*, p. 601, thinks that the later *guṇas* are already referred to, but as Lanman (*Translation*, p. 1045) points out, Garbe (*Sāṃkhyatattvakaumudī*, *Abh. der Bayerischen Ak. der Wiss.*, XIX, 529) renders the three coverings as skin and nails and hair (cf. n. 6). A different view of the *prāṇas* appears in Kāthaka Saṃhitā (XXXIII, 3, cited by Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 113, n. 2 for a grammatical point): *dāśa vai puruṣa prāṇāḥ stanau dvādaśau* (= 11th and 12th). Cf. also Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, II, 15.



the *stoma*.<sup>6</sup> These form the *trivṛt stoma* and the *gāyatrī* metre, and it is after the production of this *stoma* and this metre that there arises all that is. These verses serve for production. Children and cattle are his who knows this. Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse. *Sūdadohas* is breath, and by breath he joins together all joints. Then come the vertebrae verses.<sup>7</sup> They are in *virāj* metre. So one man says to another, 'Thou shinest above us,' or, 'Thou bearest a high neck,' to one who is proud.<sup>8</sup> Or, again, because they run<sup>9</sup> close<sup>10</sup> together, they

<sup>6</sup> In the *trivṛt stoma* only nine verses of the hymn are used, but here the tenth verse of the hymn is also employed. This is not the case in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 2. Sāyaṇa cites Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 6: *trivṛt chiro bhavati* | *tredhā vihītaṃ hi śiras* | *loma chavīr asthī parācā stuvanti* | Cf. also Śāṅkhāyana, I. c.: *trīṇi vā aya śirṣṇaḥ kapālāni bhavanti*; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XIV, 3, 1, 19.

<sup>7</sup> *vijavaḥ* is taken by Sāyaṇa as a masculine singular; he derives it from *viśeṣa javaḥ*, and calls it the part at the root of the wings, or, taking it perhaps as plural, from *viju*, the lower bones of the neck. It is most probably a plural. Max Müller's dictum that *tā-virājo* proves nothing as it must be attracted goes too far. The exact sense of *vijavaḥ* is doubtful. But as *grīvāḥ* is plural and properly means 'the cervical cartilages' or windpipe, the front part of the neck, then most probably *vijavaḥ* is also plural and denotes the back part of the neck, the cervical vertebrae, which are usually denoted by *skandhāḥ* (Hoernle, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, p. 918; 1907, pp. 1, 2). This gives a perfectly good sense and seems imperatively demanded by the allusion below to a stiffnecked man; in the proverb *grīvāḥ* is used (in a way which spoils the argument formally), either (a) as neck generally or (b) as cervical vertebrae, a sense found in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XII, 2, 4, 10 (Hoernle, p. 918). The *grīvāḥ* of the Āraṇyaka must, however, be different from the *vijavaḥ*. Eggeling (*S. B. E.*, XLIII, 112, n. 1) takes *vijavaḥ* as 'the roots (sinews) of the wings' (cf. Böhtlingk and Monier-Williams, *Dict.*, s. v.) and Friedländer (Introd., p. 10) translates 'Flügelansatz'.

For *tā virājo bhavanti*, if it is, as is not likely, attracted, cf. examples in Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 564-566; Chāndogya Upaniṣad, VI, 16, 2: *etat ātmyam idaṃ sarvaṃ tat satyaṃ sa ātmā*; infra, II, 6, 1, and for Sanskrit, Speijer, *Sanskrit Syntax*, § 27. Examples, however, on non-attraction are found when needed to make plain the sense, e. g. the Chāndogya passage cited has *tat tvam asi* and so passim in the Upaniṣads (see Jacob's *Concordance*, p. 137). The use is very old, being found in Greek and Latin also. Cf. below, II, 2, 2: *eṣa vā rg eṣa*, &c.; *eṣa vai padam*, &c. A case or two seems to occur of the reverse attraction, e. g. Maitrāyaṇī Upaniṣad, I, 2: *etat vṛttam purastād duḥśakyam etat praśnam*, where see, however, Max Müller's note (*S. B. E.*, XV, 288, n. 1).

<sup>8</sup> This is the translation adopted by Max Müller from Sāyaṇa. This may be correct, but the passage would certainly run better if it were taken all as one sentence. 'So one man says to another, "Thou shinest above us, thou bearest indeed a stiff neck," that is to one who is proud.' But the position of *stabhamānaṃ vā* renders this doubtful. On the other hand Sāyaṇa feels that it is difficult to explain the *grīvā vai dhārayasi* if taken alone, and this seems to me to turn the balance in favour of the translation here suggested. For this meaning of *grīvāḥ* see Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XII, 2, 4, 10, and Hoernle, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, pp. 916-922. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 2: *trīṇi vā āsām grīvāṇām parvāṇi bhavanti*.

<sup>9</sup> *duṭāḥ* must be from *√du gatau* (Dhātupāṭha, XXII, 46) as Sāyaṇa says. Monier-Williams' *Dict.* omits this form, giving *daviṣāṇi*, RV., X, 34, 5, as the only quotable form (see v. Schroeder, *Vienna Oriental Journal*, XIII, 119-122). v. Schroeder (*ibid.*, 297, 298) finds the same root with *upa + ā* in the sense 'anlegen' in Kāthaka Samhitā, VI, 2: *kakṣa upādityaḥ*, and



are taken to be<sup>11</sup> the best food. For *virāj* is food, and food strength. Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse. *Sūdadohas* is breath, and by breath he joins together all joints.

2. Now comes the right wing. It is this world,<sup>1</sup> it is this Agni, it is speech, it is the Rathantara, it is Vasiṣṭha, it is a hundred.<sup>2</sup> These are the six powers of it. The *sampāla* hymn serves to win desires and for firmness. The *pañkti* verse serves for proper food. Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse. *Sūdadohas* is breath, and by breath he joins together all joints. Then follows the left wing. It is that world, it is that sun, it is mind,<sup>3</sup> it is the Bṛhat, it is Bharadvāja, it is a hundred.<sup>4</sup> These are the six powers of it. The *sampāla* hymn serves to

Kaṣiṭhala Samhitā, IV, 1: *kakṣa upādutyah*, and compares Greek *δύω*, *ἰδύω*, *ἰκδύω*, and Latin *induo*, *enuo*. Winternitz (*Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 98) still treats *daviṣāṇi* as if it meant 'I will play', as taken by Geldner (*Siebenzig Lieder*, pp. 158 sq.). It cannot be from *√du* 'burn', as suggested doubtfully in Whitney, *Roots*, &c., p. 75.

<sup>10</sup> *sambāḥatamāḥ* is clearly the reading, from *√baḥ* (i.e. *bāḥa* for *baḥa*). It occurs in the Taittirīya Āraṇyaka. Cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 954; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 58; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 44.

<sup>11</sup> *annatamāṃ pratyacyante* is thus construed by Max Müller, who says the adverbial form is vouched for by Pāṇini, V, 4, 11. The free use of comparatives and superlatives of this class is a sign of early style, but in the earliest literature (RV. and AV.) the accusative neuter is preferred, see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 1111 e, and 1119. Cf. also Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 1, 2, 5: *ātamaṃ khyāyate*; *ibid.*, X, 5, 2, 10: *anutamāṃ gopāyati*, and Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 194; *pratarāṃ iva kriyante*, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 48, 4. *te natarāṃ pāpmānam apāhata*, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 25, 3. But none of these or similar cases seem to justify *annatamāṃ*, and the sense given by Sāyaṇa as *prāpyante* would equally be obtained by rendering 'they approximate towards (*prati* + *√ac*) that which is most truly food' (fem. because *virāj* is fem.). For such a use of *annatamā*, cf. RV., II, 41, 16 (*ambitama, naditama, devitama*), and many examples in Delbrück, l.c., p. 193; and for the acc., cf. *abhisampadyante* with acc., I, 1, 2, n. 10. The acc. is governed by the preposition. *yad* may be taken with *dutaḥ* as equivalent to a finite verb, which is not very probable, or with *pratyacyante*, as giving the explanation of 'the *vijavaḥ* are *virāj*'.

<sup>1</sup> Agni is the guardian of this world and he is also Vāc, II, 4, 2, and Vāc is Rathantara, III, 1, 6 (Sāyaṇa), while Vasiṣṭha brought the Rathantara.

<sup>2</sup> See V, 2, 2 for the verses. They are RV., VII, 32, 22 and 23; VIII, 3, 7 and 8 (three each according to the reckoning of the Āraṇyaka); I, 32 (15 vv.); VII, 18, 1-15; VII, 19 (11 vv.); 20 (10 vv.); 23 (6 vv.); 25-29 (26 vv.); IV, 20 (11 vv.); making 100 in all, and then the *pañkti*, I, 80, 1; IV, 20, is styled the *sampāla* hymn.

<sup>3</sup> The moon is the deity of mind, but here the identity of sun and moon is meant, says Sāyaṇa, and *manas* is Bṛhat, and Bharadvāja made the Bṛhat.

<sup>4</sup> See V, 2, 2 for the verses. They are RV., VI, 46, 1 and 2; VIII, 61, 7 and 8 (three each according to this reckoning); VI, 18 (15 vv.); 23 (10 vv.); 24 (10 vv.); 25 (9 vv.); 31-38 (40 vv.); IV, 23 (11 vv.); making 101 in all, and then the *pañkti*, I, 81, 1. The *sampāla* is IV, 23; cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 30, 2. The *śatam* is not precisely accurate, but the inaccuracy is deliberate. There are 100 in the right and 101 in the left, and the *pañkti* verse adds one to each of them. For the varying sizes of the wings see Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 6, 3.



win desires and for firmness. The *paṅkti* verse serves for proper food. These two are deficient and excessive. The Bṛhad is male, the Rathantara is female. The excess is of the male, the deficiency of the female. Therefore are they deficient and excessive. Now by one feather is the left wing of the bird the better and therefore the left wing is the better by one verse. Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse. *Sūdadohas* is breath, and by breath he joins together all joints. Then follows the tail. This consists of twenty-one *dvipadā* verses.<sup>5</sup> For twenty-one are the backward feathers of the bird. Again of all *stomas* is the *ekaviṃśa* the support, and the tail the support of all birds. He recites a twenty-second verse. This is given the form of two supports.<sup>6</sup> So all birds support themselves on their tails, and having supported themselves on their tails, they fly up. For the tail is a support. He (the bird) is supported by two decades of *virāj* verses. He again, the man, is supported by these two *dvipadās*, the twenty-first and twenty-second. That which forms the bird serves to obtain the desires of the man. That which forms the man serves for his prosperity, glory, proper food, and honour. Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse, next an additional verse, next the *sūdadohas* verse. The *sūdadohas* is male, the additional verse female. Therefore he recites the *sūdadohas* verse on either side of the additional verse. Therefore the seed of the two when effused obtains oneness with regard to the woman alone. So birth takes place in and from the woman. Therefore he recites the additional verse in that way.<sup>7</sup>

3. He recites the eighty *gāyatrī* tristichs.<sup>1</sup> The eighty *gāyatrī* tristichs are this world, and whatever glory, might,<sup>2</sup> wedlock, proper food, and honour there is in this world, may I obtain it, may I win it, may I possess it, may it be mine.

<sup>5</sup> These verses, RV., X, 157 (5 vv.); 172 (4 vv.), besides twelve from other Śākhās are given in V, 2, 2. Cf. Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 6, 4: *ekaviṃśaṃ pūcam | dvipadāsu stuvanti prātiṣṭhīyai* |

<sup>6</sup> The feet, Sāyaṇa says. The idea seems to be, when there are twenty-two verses, that twenty represent the feet of the bird, and two those of the man. When twenty-one, it is the tail that is in question. See also V, 2, 2.

<sup>7</sup> *atra* is rendered *asmin vijavavibhāge* in Sāyaṇa. It seems rather to refer to the position of the additional verse between the *sūdadohas*. For *abhi* in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, cf. Liebhich, *Beiz. Beitr.*, XI, 281; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 88. *Yoṣātas* (Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1098) is possible and must be so taken if *ājānā* is a noun as given in Böhtlingk and Monier-Williams' *Dict.* But it is simpler to take it and *prā* as adjectives. Cf. II, 1, 2: *prthivītaḥ*, where *itaḥ* is probably meant. Cf. *ājānājāḥ* in Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 8 (*S. B. E.*, XV, 61, n. 2); *ājānadevaḥ*, Jacob, *Concordance*, p. 162. For the *ekateja*, see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, X, 142, n. 3; XIII, 113, n. 2; Bolling, *J. A. O. S.*, XXIII, 321 sq.

<sup>1</sup> The three sets of tristichs are the food of the bird. They are set forth in detail in V, 2, 3; 4; 5, respectively.

<sup>2</sup> Might is interpreted by Sāyaṇa as *vedaśāstra-prayuktā pūjā* and is opposed to *apacitīḥ* as *dhanadhānyādīsamṛddharipā pūjā*, but he gives *tejas* as an alternative rendering.



Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse. *Sūdadohas* is breath, and by breath he links together all this world. He recites the eighty *bṛhaṭi* tristichs. The eighty *bṛhaṭi* tristichs are the sky-world, and whatever glory, might, wedlock, proper food, and honour there is in the sky-world, may I obtain it, may I win it, may I possess it, may it be mine. Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse. *Sūdadohas* is breath, and by breath he links together all the world. He recites the eighty *uṣṇiḥ* tristichs. The eighty *uṣṇiḥ* tristichs are that world, heaven,<sup>3</sup> and whatever glory, might, wedlock, proper food, and honour there is in that world, and the divinity of the gods,<sup>4</sup> may I obtain it,<sup>5</sup> may I win it, may I possess it, may it be mine.<sup>6</sup> Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse. *Sūdadohas* is breath, and by breath he links together all that world.

## ADHYĀYA 5.

He recites the *vaśa*<sup>1</sup> hymn desiring all to be in his power. There are twenty-one<sup>2</sup> verses, for twenty-one are the parts in the stomach. Then the *ekaviṃśa* is the support of all *stomas* and the stomach the support of proper foods. They are in different metres. For the intestines are larger one than the other,<sup>3</sup> some small,

<sup>3</sup> The insertion of *dyaus* is curious and Sāyaṇa notes it as being *vispaṣṭārthaṃ*.

<sup>4</sup> This is taken by Sāyaṇa as being equal to *brahman*, the honoured of the gods, Indra, &c., and he quotes for it a passage intended to be Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, VI, 7: *taṃ īśvarāṇāṃ paramaṃ mahēśvaraṃ taṃ devānāṃ paramaṃ daivaṃ* (so R, read with S *devatānāṃ* (or *daivatānām* with ed.) *paramaṃ ca daivatam*). But, though Max Müller accepts this view, it is simpler to equate it merely to the divinity of the gods, i.e. the divine nature.

<sup>5</sup> Probably *āpnavāni* is suggested by the *aś* of *asīti* equated to *√aś*, as stated by Eggeling (*S. B. E.*, XLIII, 112, n. 1). The view that *asīti* contains the *√aś*, eat, probably led to the identification of the *asīti* with *anna* as throughout the Āraṇyaka and also in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 5, 2, 17; but when Sāyaṇa in his commentary on this passage calls the *asīti* *annarūpāḥ*, he merely refers, I think, to that identification and does not base it on etymology, as suggested by Eggeling.

<sup>6</sup> For the subjunctive as optative in sense, cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 186, and for the question of subj. and opt., Goodwin, *Greek Moods and Tenses*, App. I. For subjunctives in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, see Aufrecht, pp. 429, 430; and a full list in Böhtlingk, *Chrestomathie*<sup>2</sup>, pp. 349, 350. See also Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 306 sq., *Vergl. Syntax*, II, 365 sq.

<sup>1</sup> In Sāṅkhya-Āraṇyaka, II, 11, the *sūdadohas* verse is repeated twenty-four times. It agrees in counting the *vaśa* hymn as referring to the *udara*. The hymn is RV., VIII, 46. See V, 2, 5. It is called a *nivid* in I, 5, 2 below. The name is given because the author is *Vaśa* (Āśvya) says Sāyaṇa, and this is probably the case, showing the early date of the traditional authorships. Cf. Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 6, 2, 3, and Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, 112, n. 2. See also Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, XLII, 215 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Only twenty of RV., VIII, 46, but the *sūdadohas* verse is counted in; see, however, on V, 2, 5 ad fin.

<sup>3</sup> *Vikṣudram* is rendered 'confused' by Max Müller. The rendering in the text is that of Sāyaṇa and is supported by the use of *vikṣudrā iva hi paśavaḥ* in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 6, 5,



some big. He recites them with the word *om* according to the metre and according to the manner of the occurrence.<sup>4</sup> For the intestines are as it were according to the manner of their occurrence, some shorter, some longer. Next comes the *sūdadohas* verse. *Sūdadohas* is breath, and by breath he joins together all joints. Having recited this verse twelve times,<sup>5</sup> he leaves off. Twelfefold are these breaths,<sup>6</sup> seven in the head, two in the breast, three below. There are they contained, there are they perfected. Therefore there<sup>7</sup> he leaves off. The hymn, 'O Indra and Agni, ye two' (RV., VIII, 40), forms the two thighs which belong to Indra and Agni,<sup>8</sup> the two supports with broad bones. The

where see Sāyaṇa's explanation. For the compar., see Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 196 sq. The *hṛdaya* is *sthūla* according to Sāyaṇa. The metres of RV., VIII, 46, are very various in the eyes of the Anukramaṇī. For the form *antastya*, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1245 c. The twenty transverse processes (*kuntāpa*) in the abdominal portion of the spine (*udara*), Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XII, 2, 4, 12; 14 (Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIV, 164, n. 1; Hoernle, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 8, 10) suggest a different rendering, but the tradition is quite plausible. The epithet used too does not suit bones. It is, however, to be noted that in Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, II, 6, the *anūka*, which can mean the lumbar portion of the spine (RV., VI, 163, 2, cited by Hoernle, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, p. 917) as well as the thoracic portion (Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XII, 2, 4, 14, cited *ibid.*, 1907, p. 9), is said to have twenty-one *parvāṇi*, and certainly this is so strikingly parallel to the *udara* with its twenty *kuntāpas* (Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XII, 2, 4, 12), since the twenty-first may be the *anūka* itself, that it is possible that this passage should be so interpreted. But to do so would only be justified by the belief that these early medical statements rest, as Hoernle (*Osteology*, pp. 101-109) holds, on acquaintance with current medical views, an opinion I do not share for reasons given in *Z. D. M. G.*, LXII, 134 sq.

<sup>4</sup> *yathopapādām* is a difficult phrase. Max Müller, following Sāyaṇa, renders 'according to rule'. Sāyaṇa explains this with reference to the technical rule, given by Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 5, 11; 12, that *dvipadā* verses are to be recited with a pause in the middle and *om* at the end, while *ekapadā* verses are to have *om* prefixed and affixed. This is artificial and perhaps it only means (cf. Monier-Williams' *Dict.*, s. v.) 'just as it may happen', which version suits the *antastya* better, and Sāyaṇa ends up with practically this version. *Chandaskāram* (for the Sandhi, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 340; Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 420; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 71) refers of course to the different metres of the hymn. Cf. V, 2, 5, and note. For the gerund, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 995; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 402 sq.; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 224.

<sup>5</sup> That is once each in the verses representing the body, neck, head, vertebrae, right side, left side, tail, food in three sets of eighty tristichs, and the *vaśa* hymn. In the case of the tail there is a *sūdadohas* before and one after the additional verse, and so the number twelve is made up.

<sup>6</sup> The number twelve is clearly to suit the twelve repetitions of the *sūdadohas* verse. It is probably got by taking the seven openings in the head, I, 3, 7; 8, and adding the two in the breasts, and the *nābhi*, *pāyu* and *gudi*. For other fanciful enumerations cf. Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, pp. 255 sq.; E. T., pp. 283 sq., and Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa cited in note 6 on I, 3, 7.

<sup>7</sup> He does not use that verse in the 'thigh' verses.

<sup>8</sup> Indra and Agni are the strongest of gods and the thighs enable the bird to fly aloft (Sāyaṇa). In Śāṅkhāyana these verses form part of what represents the tail in the Aitareya, but



verses have six feet<sup>9</sup> for firmness. Man<sup>10</sup> has a double support, cattle have four feet. So he places the sacrificer with his double support among the four-footed cattle. The second verse has seven feet,<sup>11</sup> and he makes it into a *gāyatrī* and an *anuṣṭubh*. Now the *gāyatrī*<sup>12</sup> is *brahman*, the *anuṣṭubh* is *Vāc*, and so he unites *Vāc* and *brahman*. He recites<sup>13</sup> a *triṣṭubh* at the end. The *triṣṭubh* is strength and so with strength he surrounds animals. Therefore animals<sup>14</sup> depend on strength for their rising and their going forth.

2. In the Niṣkevalya hymn addressed to Indra,<sup>1</sup> 'To thee, the mighty, the intoxicated one' (RV., X, 50), he inserts a *nivid*.<sup>2</sup> For clearly thus does he place strength in himself. They are *triṣṭubhs* and *jagatis*.<sup>3</sup> They say, 'Why then does he insert a *nivid* among *triṣṭubhs* and *jagatis*?'<sup>4</sup> 'One metre only

in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 6, 2, 3, they are referred to the wings, see Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, 111, 112. See also V, 3, 1, n. 1; above, p. 37.

<sup>9</sup> They, except two and twelve, are in the so-called *mahāpāṇkti* metre. For the correct expression *urvaṣṭhīve*, cf. the use of *ūruphalaka* for the thighs, Hoernle, *Osteology*, pp. 206, 215, perhaps wrongly read for *uru*. If *ūru*<sup>10</sup> is read here, it means 'the thighs and knees are supports', cf. Vājasaneyi Samhitā, XVIII, 23; Āpastamba Śulba Sūtra, XI, 2 and 3 (*Z. D. M. G.*, LVI, 362).

<sup>10</sup> Cf. I, 1, 2, n. 5.

<sup>11</sup> It consists of seven *pādas* of eight syllables, and can be made into an *anuṣṭubh* preceded by a *gāyatrī*. According to Sāyaṇa, following Āśvalāyana, in the latter case there is a pause after the second *pāda*, and *om* after the third. In the former the *om* follows the fourth, and there is a pause after the second *pāda*.

<sup>12</sup> Cf. I, 1, 1, n. 8.

<sup>13</sup> Sāyaṇa holds this to refer to a special mode of recitation, by which after the first *pāda* there is a pause, and *om* follows the second, and so for the third and fourth, and which he calls *triṣṭupsamaya*. This is from Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 15, 6; RV., VIII, 40, 12, is in *triṣṭubh*.

<sup>14</sup> This must mean, as Sāyaṇa says, and as Max Müller takes it, that animals obey a master. The last two accusatives are loosely connected as accusatives of point in which; such acc. are more frequent in Greek and Latin (e.g. Tacitus, *Ann.*, I, 27: *deserunt tribunal . . . manus intentantes, causam discordiae et initium armorum*). In the Maitreya Upaniṣad (Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, xlv): *sa tatra paramaṇi tapa ādityam udikṣamāṇa ūrdhvas tiṣṭhati*. Max Müller observes that *āsthāya* would be expected, but it is not necessary to suspect the text. For the compound, cf. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 47 and 48. In *paśūn parigachati* the acc. is dependent on *pari*: so Āitareya Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 28, 1, 2; *tam etāḥ pañca devatāḥ parimriyante* (correct Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 88).

<sup>1</sup> Forming part of the thigh verses.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa says the *nivid* (cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III, 9, 1, for a Vaiṣvadeva *nivid*) is to come after the fourth verse and is to be *Indro devaḥ somaṇ pibatu* (*pinvāmāṇaḥ S*), &c. (Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VIII, 17, 1). 'In himself' he renders as 'in the bird in the shape of the Śastra'. It may mean 'in himself' only. For the *nivids* see Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, pp. 136 sq. The *nivitsamjñake granthe* in R is, unhappily, a myth, the reading (in R<sup>3</sup>, S, &c.) is *saṅghe*.

<sup>3</sup> The metre is irregular. According to the Anūkramaṇī, one and seven are *jagatī*, the rest *triṣṭubh*. Sāyaṇa offers the alternative of the last two being *jagatī*.

<sup>4</sup> The *prakṛti* has *triṣṭubhs* at the midday pressing, and so the deviation needs explanation. Note that the answer is repeated, and is not that of the Āraṇyaka itself, though it is adopted.

cannot support or fill the *nivid* of this day,' so he inserts the *nivid* among *triṣṭubhs* and *jagatis*. Let him know that this day has three *nivids*.<sup>5</sup> The *vaśa* hymn is a *nivid*, the Vālakhilyas are a *nivid*, and the *nivid* is a *nivid*. So let him know that there are three *nivids* in this day. Then come the hymns, 'Who in the forest as it were has been put down' (RV., X, 29), and 'Who first is born, the wise one' (RV., II, 12). In these is the verse, 'When the hopes of all are on food' (RV., X, 29, 4), and it serves to win proper food. Then comes an insertion. As many decades of verses<sup>6</sup> in *triṣṭubh* and *jagati* addressed to Indra as they insert between these two hymns, after transforming them into *brhatis*, so many years do they live beyond the normal life.<sup>7</sup> By this insertion life is gained. Next he recites the *sajaniya*<sup>8</sup> hymn that cattle may come to his offspring. Then he recites the Tārksya<sup>9</sup> hymn. Tārksya is welfare, and the hymn leads to welfare. Thus he procures welfare. He recites

<sup>5</sup> Sāyaṇa says the *nivid* here referred to above is the *mukhyā nidid*, and the others are *aupacārike*, and he assigns the use of several metres in the *vaśa* and of *triṣṭubhs* and *jagatis* in the Vālakhilyas as the reason for their being styled *nivids*. The Vālakhilyas occur in the *brhātī* tristichs, see V, 2, 4. The Vālakhilyas and Nivids are printed from the Kāśmīr MS. by Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, 1906. See also Oldenberg, *Gött. gel. Anz.*, 1907. Scheftelowitz (pp. 10 sq.) argues that the Vālakhilyas are among the old Khilas which were accepted by some schools (probably the Bāskala and Māṇḍukeya) and not by others (Śākalya), who only included 'Nationalhymnen' in their tradition. Oldenberg (pp. 221-235) effectually—in my opinion—demolishes this argument and leaves the Khilas what they have hitherto been considered, later additions to the Rgvedic tradition, though doubtless in themselves old. The Vālakhilyas are mentioned by that name in Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXX, 8; Taittirīya Āranyaka, I, 23; Maitrāyaṇī Upaniṣad, II, 3, &c. Cf. also Macdonell on *Bṛhaddevatā*, VI, 48; III, 116; Max Müller, *Marut-Hymns*, pp. xxxiii sq., who is, however, wrong in saying that they do not occur in any Khila collection; *St. Petersburg Dict.*, VI, 954.

<sup>6</sup> Sāyaṇa renders *daśatīnām* as 'taken from the ten thousand numbered Samhitā', and Max Müller takes it as 'taken from the ten Maṇḍalas'. Neither meaning appears certain. *daśatī* elsewhere means a decade, *daśatayī* refers to the Samhitā, and I think *daśatīnām* must mean decades. They are decades of *triṣṭubhs* and *jagatis* turned into *brhatis*, and it may be noted that six *triṣṭubhs* and two *jagatis* give ten *brhatis*. This may be the reference, or the reference may be to the fact that three *triṣṭubhs* and seven *jagatis* give thirteen *brhatis*. Sāyaṇa contents himself with explaining that of three *triṣṭubhs* and four *jagatis* nine *brhatis* can be made, which does not seem to be of much help. V, 3, 1, appears to support the view here taken.

<sup>7</sup> That is, no doubt, one hundred years, V, 3, 1, and I, 2, 2, n. 14. For *ūrdhvam* with abl., cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, §§ 58, 90; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 113; Liebh, *Beiz. Beitr.*, XI, 295.

<sup>8</sup> That is, RV., II, 12, called *sajaniyam* in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 2, 1. For *arjayan* cf. Speijer, l. c., § 188; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 587; Delbrück, pp. 353 sq. The form is given by Whitney, *Roots, &c.*, p. 14, as only found in the Sūtras and Epic.

<sup>9</sup> RV., X, 178, addressed, says Sāyaṇa, to Tārksya Garuḍa, but cf. Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 145. R reads *Tūrksya*, but the Sarvānukramaṇī and Bṛhaddevatā agree with the RV. Cf. Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXX, 5, and III, 1, 6, n. 5. For the form, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 233; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 43.



the *ekapādā*<sup>10</sup> verse that he may at once be all and win all the metres.<sup>11</sup> In the hymn, 'All songs have caused Indra to grow' (RV., I, 11), there are additions<sup>12</sup> to the verses. Seven verses does he make additions to. For seven are the breaths<sup>13</sup> in the head, and so does he place breaths in the head. He makes no addition to the eighth. The eighth is speech, and (he thinks), 'Let not speech be mingled with my breaths.' Therefore speech, though it has the same abode as the breaths, is not mingled with them. He recites the *virāj* verses.<sup>14</sup> *Virāj* verses are food, and serve to win food. He ends with the hymn of Vasiṣṭha,<sup>15</sup> that he may become Vasiṣṭha. (He should end) with the perfect verse,<sup>16</sup> with the word 'great' in it, 'This praise to the great, the terrible, the bearer' (RV., VII, 24, 5). In the verse, 'Like a steed labouring at the yoke, he has taken his place' (RV., VII, 24, 5), the yoke is the end (of the car). This day is the end.<sup>17</sup> Thus is (the verse) fit for the day. (He should end) with the perfect verse, with the word 'praise' in it, 'O Indra, this praise celebrates thee' (RV., VII, 24, 5<sup>o</sup>). With regard to the verse, 'As heaven over

<sup>10</sup> Sāyana gives it as *Indro viśvaṃ virājati*, see V, 3, 1.

<sup>11</sup> It is the last of the metres used.

<sup>12</sup> The phrase occurs also in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 12, and is further explained in V, 3, 1, where Sāyana is much more explicit than in his commentary here. The idea is 1<sup>a</sup>, 1<sup>b</sup>, 1<sup>c</sup>, 2<sup>a</sup>, 1<sup>d</sup>, 2<sup>b</sup>; 2<sup>c</sup>, 3<sup>a</sup>, 2<sup>b</sup>, 3<sup>b</sup>; and so on. The result is a curious intertwining, *vyatīṣaṅga*, of verses. A similar proceeding is found in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 3; VI, 24. For other examples of this process, called *viḥaraṇa* also, cf. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VII, 15, 4 (at the Āpyāyana of the Madhyandina Savana); IX, 5, 4 (at the Śoḍaśin); XII, 11, 5, and Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VIII, 2, 7 (Vālakhilyas, when a *vyatimarīṣaṃ viḥaraṇa* takes place); Roth, *Z. D. M. G.*, XXXVII, 109, who traces the practice even in the R̥gveda, and Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 103.

<sup>13</sup> The openings are referred to above, I, 3, 7; 8; 4, 1; 5, 1. The eighth as Vāc refers no doubt to the tongue. The first reference to seven openings is not (as Deussen seems to hold) that in Atharvaveda X, 8, 9, which is there practically unintelligible, and which is given up by Whitney (*Translation*, p. 597), but which appears in a more plausible form in Bhṛadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, II, 2, 3, where the verse has as its last *pāda*: *vāg aṣṭamī brahmaṇā samvidānā*, but that in AV., X, 2, 6, where the seven *khāni* are given as eyes, nostrils, ears and mouth (see Whitney, *Translation*, p. 568; Hoernle, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 12). In ver. 7 the tongue is specially mentioned. The seven, however, seem already to have included Vāc, to judge from the explanation in that Upaniṣad, II, 2, 4, where, according to Deussen's translation, it is intended to stand for the tongue, as indeed seems clear from its being connected with Atri and *atti*, though Böhtlingk, in his translation, p. 26, takes it otherwise. Sāyana here refers to the other *prāṇas* as *jihvātvagādibhiḥ*. Vāc apparently then is little more than a duplicate. Cf. I, 3, 7, n. 6. For the seven *prāṇas*, cf. also Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, IX, 5, 2, 8.

<sup>14</sup> RV., VII, 22, 1-6; see V, 3, 1.

<sup>15</sup> RV., VII, 24. For the word *vīṣa* in ver. 5, see Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 135.

<sup>16</sup> The sixth verse is placed after the fourth and the fifth comes at the end, V, 3, 1.

<sup>17</sup> The last day is the *udayanīyātirātra*. For *dhūḥ*, cf. RV., II, 2, 1: *dhūḥśādam* 'charioteer'; Hopkins, *J. A. O. S.*, XIII, 237 sq.

heaven,<sup>18</sup> give us glory' (RV., VII, 24, 5<sup>d</sup>), wherever the speech of the Brahmin<sup>19</sup> is uttered, this is his glory, when he who knows ends with this verse. So let him who knows this end with this verse.

<sup>18</sup> Sāyaṇa renders, 'as in heaven, so in the worlds (the *maharloka*, &c.) above the heaven!' The same *maharloka* is dragged in to explain II, 4, 1.

<sup>19</sup> Sāyaṇa vaguely says *vedasambandhi vākyam*. But I think there is a clear reference to the speech of the Brahmins. The opposition is probably as yet mainly to non-Aryan tongues, cf. Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa, XVII, 1, 2, 9. Whatever be the history of Vedic and Sanskrit, it is difficult to believe at this date (800-700 B.C.) in very much development of Prākṛitic forms so as to render contrast with them natural, though no doubt such forms existed. (Cf. the discussions in *J. R. A. S.*, 1903, pp. 435 sq.) See also I, 3, 1, n. 5; III, 2, 5; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, III, 2, 1, 23, with Eggeling's note on the Kāṇva reading; Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 20-24; Lanman's notes on Whitney, *Atharvaveda*, III, 12, 4; X, 9, 23; XII, 4, 4; XIX, 8, 4; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xviii. The Atharvan passages point to the possibility that some of the Prākṛitic forms are due to the later tradition and are no evidence for the time of the Atharva. Similar considerations are familiar in the Homeric question, see especially Monro, *Odyssey*, XIII-XXIV, Appendix, pp. 455-484. The early date of the Epic if adopted (cf. my notes, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, pp. 1 sq., 1907, pp. 681-683) would bear out the view that Prākṛit was not so early as has been claimed (cf. Franke, *Pāli und Sanskrit* (1902), pp. 49 sq.) the ruling speech of the people. No doubt the Mantra literature represents a poetic diction (cf. Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 38 sq.), but it has not yet been made even plausible that contemporaneous with it were really Prākṛitic dialects, though no doubt in certain cases the tendencies which produced Prākṛit were already in full force. The subsequent history is doubtless that of the more and more marked separation of the literary and the vulgar speech (cf. Delbrück's neat summary of the history, *Altindisches Verbum*, pp. 3 sq.), and the place of the Epic must (it seems to me) be found either before the decay of speech had rendered the Sanskrit unintelligible to the warrior classes of the populace—and the Epic appears in origin to have been precisely like the Homeric Epic (see Lang, *Homer and His Age*, 1906) poetry composed by poets at the courts of princes who sang to the retainers and friends of their patron—not of course an epic of the lower classes or the mere cultivator, though he would understand it in part—or after the general revival of Sanskrit in the second and third centuries A.D. The latter view seems to raise more serious difficulties in our conception of the history of language and literature than it can pretend to solve. I still think the earliest epic (as distinguished from mere *ākhyānas* or *itihāsas*) must date from the eighth to sixth centuries B.C. and be contemporaneous with the Brāhmaṇas and Āraṇyakas, though of course in the case of both Mahābhārata and Rāmāyaṇa extensive additions have been made by priestly hands in the two or three centuries before the Christian era. Only thus can a real place be found for Pāṇini's *bhāṣā*, or for the custom of the Drama which must represent a real state of affairs when Sanskrit could be used by kings and nobles as intelligible to their inferiors. For what Kṣatriyas spoke in the eighth to sixth centuries B.C. we have no evidence save the Brāhmaṇas, where they speak Sanskrit, and the Epic, so far as we can regard it as contemporaneous. In view of the fact that Patañjali knew the Drama (*Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 486 sq.), it seems only reasonable to assign to his period the separate use of Sanskrit and Prākṛit for the different characters, and either then or earlier the state of affairs must have been real. Nor is it possible to accept the theory of Lévi, Barth, and Grierson (*Ind. Ant.*, XXIII, 110) that an originally Prākṛit drama was turned into Sanskrit. This theory leaves no plausible explanation open of the use of Prākṛit for some characters, since *ex hypothesi* both men and women equally used Prākṛit in conversation, and, while it is quite intelligible that after the drama was an



3. 'We choose that of Savitr' (RV., V, 82, 1-3) and 'O god, Savitr, this day' (RV., V, 82, 4-6), are the strophe and antistrophe (of the Vaiśvadeva hymn<sup>1</sup>) and are perfect in form as belonging to the one day ceremonial.<sup>2</sup> Much indeed is done on this day that is forbidden and (the Vaiśvadeva)<sup>3</sup> is the atonement. Now atonement is rest, and so at the end (of the sacrifice) the sacrificers rest on the atonement of the one day (the Vaiśvadeva) as their rest. He rests who knows this, and they also rest for whom the Hotṛ priest who knows this recites this Vaiśvadeva. Then comes the Savitr hymn, 'Of Savitr, the god, this great and desirable thing' (RV., IV, 53). Great<sup>4</sup> is the end. This day is the end. So the verse fits this day. Then comes the Dyāvā-Pṛthivī hymn, 'Which is the elder, which the younger' (RV., I, 185), in which (the verses) end alike.<sup>5</sup> This day is one on which (the sacrificers) end alike. So the hymn fits the day. Then comes the Ṛbhu hymn, 'Born not for steeds nor reins, worthy of praise' (RV., IV, 36). With regard to the words, 'The chariot of three wheels,' the hymn is possessed of three (*trivat*), and what is possessed of three<sup>6</sup> is the end. This day is the end. So the hymn fits the day. The hymn, 'Of this benignant, greyhaired, priest' (RV., I, 164), addressed to

established fact it could remain popular long after it had ceased to be intelligible, the popularity of a literary form *ex initio* unread is very strange. People in England would not go to Italian opera (which by the by is certainly understood by fifty per cent. of the spectators), but for the fact that there was once and still is a popular drama in England.

Of course it cannot be contended—nor is it so claimed—that Sanskrit was ever the vernacular of the lower classes. What we have to conceive is rather a parallel series of languages diverging from vernaculars older than the Vedic of the earliest hymns, each current among certain portions of the people, but in their earlier stages intelligible to all. The Greek and English dialects give a fair parallel, in both cases ending in a common form of educated and literary speech. Cf. Jacobi, *Z.D.M.G.*, XLVIII, 407 sq.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 18, which differs in detail as usual. This section refers to the evening Soma pressing, when the Vaiśvadeva and Āgnimāruta Śāstras are recited, see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, X, 353, 354, n. 3; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 325, 361 (Vaiśvadeva), 369 (Āgnimāruta); Caland and Henry, *L'Agniṣṭoma*, pp. 354 sq.

<sup>2</sup> The *prakṛti* is here the Viśvajit, and the *mūlaprakṛti* the Agniṣṭoma, as usual.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. I, 2, 1. Sāyaṇa selects the two tristichs as the immediate point of reference.

<sup>4</sup> Because greatness is the *ne plus ultra* of all things (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>5</sup> *udarka* is equal to *anta* in the one case and to *uttarakāla eva bhāvi phalaṇ* in the other, according to Sāyaṇa. The sacrificers obtain *brahman*, he adds, but this is hardly meant. Most of the verses end alike in this and the following cases. Cf. for the word, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 1, 3; 12.

<sup>6</sup> This is not obvious. Sāyaṇa refers it to the case where two wheels are inadequate and a third is found necessary. This wheel, as before the *dhuḥ*, is the end, I, 5, 2. Zimmer (*Altindisches Leben*, pp. viii, ix) points out that *trivakra* in the Samhitās is merely an epithet of the cars of the Aśvins where its sense is mythological and he therefore denies the existence of three-wheeled cars in the Vedic period, but cf. Weber, *Berl. Sitz.*, 1898, p. 564, n. 1.

the All-gods, is multiform.<sup>7</sup> This day is multiform. So the hymn fits the day. (Of what he recites) the end<sup>8</sup> is, 'Forming the waters, the buffalo hath lowed' (RV., I, 164, 41). The hymn, 'May powers auspicious come to us on every side' (RV., I, 89), addressed to the All-gods, is one containing an insertion, and is perfect in form as belonging to the one day ceremonial. Much indeed is done on this day that is forbidden and (the hymn with the insertion<sup>9</sup>) is the atonement. Now atonement is rest, and so at the end (of the sacrifice) the sacrificers rest on the atonement of the one day (insertion) as their rest. He rests who knows this, and they also rest for whom the Hotṛ priest who knows this recites the hymn with the insertion. The verses, 'To Vaiśvānara, who strengthens law, our praise' (RV., III, 2, 1 sq.), are the strophe of the Āgnimāruta Śāstra. Praise is the end. This day is the end. So the hymn fits the day. The hymn, 'The Maruts, rushing onward, with gleaming lances' (RV., V, 55), addressed to the Maruts, is one in which (the verses) end alike. This day is one in which (the sacrificers) end alike. So the hymn fits this day. He recites, before the next hymn, the verse, 'To Jātavedas let us pour the Soma' (RV., I, 99, 1), addressed to Jātavedas. The Jātavedas verse is welfare and wins welfare. So he makes this into welfare. The hymn, 'To Jātavedas, who deserves our praise' (RV., I, 94),<sup>10</sup> addressed to Jātavedas, is one in which (the verses) end alike. This day is one in which (the sacrificers) end alike. So the hymn fits this day.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>7</sup> It is of multifarious content, as indeed is the case and is recognized in the Anukramaṇī. The day is multifarious because of its collection of Vedic mantras and popular elements like dancing.

<sup>8</sup> That is, only forty-one verses are to be taken. Cf. V, 3, 2.

<sup>9</sup> The insertion is after the ninth verse, *vilve devāḥ somasya matsan* (Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des R̥gveda*, p. 137), &c.

<sup>10</sup> On RV., I, 94, see Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 108 sq.

<sup>11</sup> At the end Sāyana observes that this ends the *karmakāṇḍa* of the Āranyaka. The next two books are the *jñānakāṇḍa* or the Upaniṣad. This regular opposition really of course means very little. Both parts deal with *jñāna* and not with the performance of the rite, but the first Āranyaka does of course treat the rite in some detail, explaining its mystic significance, while the second Āranyaka diverges to speculations less closely associated with the actual Mantras of the ceremonial. A more real opposition of *karma* and *jñāna* would be to oppose books V and I-III. For the relation of *karma* and *jñāna* in Śāṅkara's view, see his commentary on Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I, 12.

In some MSS. (see Crit. Note) a summary of the chapters of each Āranyaka is given at the end. For similar summaries, cf. those of the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, xxviii, xxix; that in VIII, 3 of the Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, and Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, IV, 2.



## ARANYAKA II

## ADHYĀYA 1.

THIS is the path; this<sup>1</sup> is the sacrifice; this is *brahman*; this is truth. Therefore let no man diverge<sup>2</sup> from it; let no man transgress it. For they did not transgress it; of old, those that did transgress it were overcome. A R̥ṣi<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa, following, as throughout this part of his commentary, Śaṅkara (cf. Śaṅkara on Taittiriya Upaniṣad, I, 12, translated by S. Sitārāma, *Upanishads*, V, 112-122), discusses the relation of the *karmakāṇḍa* and the Upaniṣad. His conclusion is that it is that of *sādhana* and *sādhya*, the sacrifices serving to purify the mind through the destruction of evil and the production of a desire for knowledge. He quotes and rejects the views: (1) that knowledge is unnecessary, it being sufficient to give up all works, good or evil, and to perform the various regular and occasional sacrifices, and to exhaust what one has begun by enjoying it, so that at death freedom is attained. He points out that it is not possible to abandon good and evil, such acts being endless, and that the sacrifices performed must bear fruits and the actions of previous births must produce many other births. (2) Others held that a union of knowledge and sacrifice is the cause of freedom. But knowledge is directly contradictory to sacrifice, since the latter involves the conception of the self as active, whereas the former recognizes that the self is *nirvikāra*. (3) Others hold that sacrifice is the ladder which beginning with the simplest and ending with the most complicated sacrificial rites leads to knowledge as the cause of freedom. Sāyaṇa points out life is too short for this. (4) Others think the *karmakāṇḍa* is used in a subsidiary manner, just as in catching cranes one throws curd on their heads and it melting blinds them, so one should sacrifice. The reply is that this is surplusage: one should catch one's crane straight off. The story is reminiscent of putting salt on the tail of a bird. (5) The use of sacrifice is to exhaust desire through the enjoyment of the desires produced by such acts, but clearly, it is replied, desire is not so quenched. Sāyaṇa also explains at length the *viśaya*, *prayojana*, *adhikārin*, *prāmāṇya*, and *prameya* of the system which he attributes to the Upaniṣad. Cf. Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, pp. 57 sq.; E. T., pp. 61 sq. 'This' means both what is just past and what is to come, and so Sāyaṇa refers the *etat karma* to Āraṇyaka I, and *etat brahma* to Āraṇyaka II and III. The latter alone is true.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa thus discriminates: the divergence is due to mere laziness, the transgression to interest in other matters, ploughing or industry, or such forms of devotion as relic worship, &c. For *pra* + *mad*, cf. Taittiriya Upaniṣad, II, 5; I, 11, 2; Kāthaka Upaniṣad, II, 6, which support my emendation *pramattam* in Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, XII, 29.

<sup>3</sup> The verse is, of course, absurdly construed. It is impossible on any theory to make much sense of it. As taken in the translation, the idea is that three peoples were ruined, the others settled round Agni, in the sense that with Agni as their helper one people has been prosperous, the others not. Compare the view of the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, I, 4, 1, 10-18, that no country is civilized until Agni burns over it; Eggeling, *S.B.E.*, XII, xli sq.; Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 214, 215. The last two verses of the stanza of course are hopeless, save as indicating vaguely the connexion between Agni, the Sun, and Vāyu. The Atharvaveda, X, 8, 3, has a different version; see Whitney, *Translation*, p. 596.

says (RV., VIII, 101, 14), 'Three peoples transgressed. Others settled round the sun. The great one stands in the middle of the worlds. The blowing one enters the dawns.' In the verse, 'Three peoples transgressed,' the three peoples which transgressed are the Vayases,<sup>4</sup> the Vāṅgavagadhas, and the Cerapādās. In the

<sup>4</sup> Sāyaṇa and Ānandatīrtha agree in taking this as referring to the fates which in another life befell the three peoples who transgressed. The peoples are Brāhmaṇas, Kṣatriyas, Vaiśyas, and Śūdras, and only one set was saved. The others suffer a *narakajanma* (cf. for this idea Hopkins, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, pp. 581 sq.), as birds, &c. Only they differ as to the meaning of the words *vayāṃsi vāṅgavagadhāḥ cerapādāḥ*. Sāyaṇa renders them as birds, trees (*vanagatā vṛkṣāḥ*), plants (*avanti manuṣyādīn* and *grdhyaṇte 'bhikāṅkṣyaṇte*), and snakes (*urapādāḥ sarpāḥ*). Ānandatīrtha prefers Piśācas, Rākṣases (*vāṅga* is from *vaṅ jñānam* and *gamayanti*, and *avagadha* from *grdhu abhikāṅkṣyām*), and Asuras. We are justified therefore in holding that there was no trustworthy tradition, and it is therefore possible to consider whether Max Müller's suggestion that the words are perhaps old ethnic names is correct. In its favour it may be noted that Sāyaṇa and Ānandatīrtha compel us to assume that the Āranyaka accepts the fullest form of the doctrine of transmigration as a punishment (e.g. Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, I), which is a comparatively late view, and which I do not think is found in this Upaniṣad. If they are ethnic names, then *Vayāṃsi* gives us a people like the Matsyas, Ajas, &c., in whose names we may, if we like, see totemism<sup>a</sup>. The *Vāṅgavagadhāḥ* are a composite tribe or group of tribes like the Kuru-Pāṇcālas, whose name reminds us of the later Vāṅga (known to Mahābhāṣya (Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 386) and to Mahābhārata, Dharmasūtras, &c. in conjunction with Aṅga), as part of what is now Bengal. The *Cerapādāḥ* are a third tribe, whose name points to the later Ceras of Southern India. It is of course possible (cf. Rhys Davids, *Buddhist India*, p. 32) to argue that these verses show a later date and a wider geographical knowledge than is compatible with the early pre-Buddhistic date here attributed to the Āranyaka. But in this respect it may be observed that Rhys Davids (cf. Bühler, *S. B. E.*, II, xxxv sq.; *Ind. Ant.*, XXIII, 246-248; Weber, *ibid.*, XXX, 273; *Z. D. M. G.*, XLIX, 479) presses unduly the argument from the Buddhist texts. There is in addition to the grave doubts as to the age of the Buddhist texts the possibility that these texts show only the regions where Buddhism had penetrated and that there were Brahminical countries beyond these limits (cf. Bühler, *Ind. Ant.*, XXIII, 245 sq.; Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 254 sq.; *Mantrapāṭha*, I, p. xv). It may be questioned whether Buddhism early gained a direct hold on much of Southern India; at least there is no evidence that it ever did. Besides the question arises whether the Cerapādās must have been settled in the South at this date. It should be noted that the text says they were destroyed, and this may refer to a disaster to the old tribe, a remnant of which wandered south and later appear as the Ceras, who are known in the south to Aśoka and to Kātyāyana, Weber, l. c., p. 371; Bhandarkar, *History of Deccan*, p. 143.

The version of Sāyaṇa takes *cerapādāḥ* as *ca irapādāḥ*. This seems very unlikely, because a single *ca* with the second of three connected words is not elsewhere found in this Āranyaka, and is nowhere common. (For examples, cf. RV., I, 77, 2 (Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 101) and Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 475.) It is, I think, much more likely that three names of defeated tribes should not appear in the precise forms here found elsewhere than that names of plants and beasts should so disappear. At any rate they must all three be plants and

<sup>a</sup> Mere animal names prove little as to totemism, which is not demonstrated for any Aryan stock, cf. Farnell, *Cults of the Greek States*, IV, 116, 256; Macdonell, *Ved. Myth.*, p. 153; Hopkins, *P. A. O. S.*, 1894, p. cliv; Keith, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 929 sq.; Bühler, *Ind. Stud.*, III, 48.



verse, 'Others settled round the sun,'<sup>5</sup> these people are settled round Agni here, as the sun. In the verse, 'The great one stands in the middle of the worlds,' that great one in the middle of the worlds means this sun. In the verse, 'The blowing one enters the dawns,' the meaning is the purifying air enters the quarters.<sup>6</sup>

2. People<sup>1</sup> say, 'Hymn, hymn.'<sup>2</sup> The hymn is indeed the earth.<sup>1</sup> For from it all that exists springs. It praises Agni. Food are its eighty verses,<sup>3</sup> for by food one obtains all. The hymn is the sky. For (birds) fly along the sky, and along the sky men drive. It praises Vāyu. Food are its eighty verses, for by food one obtains all. The hymn is also yonder heaven. For by

animals or names of tribes. Monier-Williams' *Dict.* takes *vaṅga* as plants, *avagadha* and *cerapāda* as names of peoples, which is quite impossible. Dr. Scheftelowitz in his forthcoming *Zur Stammbildung in den indogermanischen Sprachen* (which he has been so good as to show me in MS.) considers that *vaṅga* is formed from *van* by the suffix *ga* (when *g = gu*). He compares *madgu* (not for \**mag*, but from *mad + gu*), *khadga*, *phalgū*, *svargā*, *varga*, *phaligā*, *tuhga*, *śṛṅga*, *ārbhaga*, *ulig*, *vanig*, *sphigī*, *dāga* (not = IG. *ozguo*), &c. But even if this is the case the origin of the word throws no light on its being used as a tribal name, nor do I feel sure of the equation *vaṅga* = tree. Possibly *Vaṅgā-Magadhāḥ* may be read, cf. my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 46, n. 4; Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra, I, 2, 13 and 14.

The citation of the Rgvedic verse in full is of course natural when an explanation is being given. So verses are cited and explained in full at II, 1, 6 (RV., I, 164, 31); II, 1, 8 (RV., I, 164, 38); II, 5, 1 (RV., IV, 27, 1); III, 1, 6 (RV., X, 114, 4); III, 2, 3 (RV., I, 115, 1). In the last case the verse is cited entire to indicate the sense desired to be understood. So also verses are cited in full in the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 15, 18, 20; VIII, 4, 6; IX, 1; XII, 8, 35.

<sup>1</sup> Ānandatīrtha, here and throughout, interprets in a Vaiṣṇava sense. *arkam* is Viṣṇu, Āditya is Viṣṇu, and *tasthau* is *upāsām cakre*. To Sāyaṇa, *arkam* is Agni *āhavanīya*.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa justifies this by *prācyādidiśaḥ tattatkarmasu vīhitāḥ satyo 'nuṣṭhānavaikalyam haranti*.

<sup>3</sup> Sāyaṇa explains, following the Mīmāṃsā, III, 4; IV, 1; III, 3, that the purpose of Āraṇyaka, II, 1-3, is to enable men to attain concentration of thought by meditating on things connected with the sacrifice. There are five principles in such meditation. (1) The meditation falls to the lot not of the *yajamāna* but of the *ṛtvij*. (2) The meditation must be on the *pratikas* of the hymns, as deities like earth, &c., and not vice versa. (3) If the *dhyāna* is prescribed for a certain thing only in one Śākhā, it can nevertheless be taken over by another Śākhā, e. g. by the Kauṣītakina. (4) It is not obligatory in every case to go through all the forms of meditation which are prescribed in connexion with any part of the rite. It is sufficient to make the choice desired. (5) Nor is it necessary to adopt the meditation along with the sacrifice as an essential part. It is a matter of choice.

The last rule shows the manner in which the Brahmins avoided the open rejection of sacrifice and yet justified their own speculations as a practical substitute for sacrifice.

<sup>4</sup> That is, not knowing its secret reference. Sāyaṇa follows the Āraṇyaka in deriving *ukthaṃ* from *ut-tiṣṭhati*. Ānandatīrtha, of course, explains the whole by the doctrine that Viṣṇu is omnipresent and so all things can be identified with him and through him with one another. Cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, V, 13, 1 (where *utthāpayati* is the derivation of *uktha*); Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, III, 3.

<sup>5</sup> The three sets of eighty tristichs, in *gōyatrī*, *brhatī*, and *uṣṇih*, V, 2, 3; 4; 5.

its gift all that exists springs. It praises the sun. Food are its eighty verses, for by food one obtains all. So much as regards the gods. Now as regards the self. The hymn is man. He is great and is Prajāpati. Let him know that he is the hymn.<sup>4</sup> The hymn is his mouth, as in the case of the earth. It praises speech. Food are its eighty verses, for by food one obtains all. The hymn is the nostrils, as in the case of the sky. It praises breath. Food are its eighty verses, for by food one obtains all. The bend of the nose<sup>5</sup> as it were is the place of the brilliant one. The hymn is the forehead,<sup>6</sup> as in the case of the heaven. It praises the eye. Food are its eighty verses, for by food one obtains all. The eighty verses are food both with reference to the gods and with reference to the self, for by food all these beings breathe<sup>7</sup>; by food<sup>8</sup> he conquers this world and by food that world. Therefore the eighty verses are food both with reference to the gods and to the self. The food and the feeder are the earth, for all that exists springs from it. Whatever goes forth, (heaven) consumes it all.<sup>9</sup> Whatever goes thence, the (earth) consumes it all. So earth is both food and feeder. He<sup>10</sup> becomes feeder and food. He is lord of nothing that he eats not, or that eats him not.

<sup>4</sup> Sāyaṇa points out that this contradicts the Mīmāṃsā, see Brahma Sūtra, IV, 1, 3, 4, but solves the contradiction by saying the first view rests on *nyāyabalāt*, that here on *vacana-balāt*, *kim iva hi vacanam na kuryān nāsti vacanasyātibhāra iti hi lāstrakārāṇām dīṇḍimah*. *Vidyāt* here means *dhyāyet* since both knowledge and meditation are concerned with mind (*jñānadhyānāyor mānasatvasāmyena*).

<sup>5</sup> The reference is to the bend just below the brows where the nose springs out. Sāyaṇa cites the Jābāla Upaniṣad, II, *kalamaṃ vārya sthānam bhavati* | *bhruvoh prāṇasya ca yaḥ sandhiḥ (saṃbandhaḥ R<sup>2</sup>) sa eṣa dyaulokasya parasya sandhir bhavati* | This refers to *brahman*; so Āditya, who is *bradhna*, is here an *upādhi* of *brahman*. Ānandatīrtha takes *iva* as meaning *kiñcid*, while Sāyaṇa says it is equal to *eva* or has no meaning; cf. I, 1, 2; III, 2, 6.

<sup>6</sup> Viśveṣvaratīrtha says: *lalāṭasabdena cakṣur gṛhyate*. The word, found in the Atharvaveda, X, 2, 8, properly denotes 'brow' or 'superciliary ridge', see Hoernle, *Osteology*, pp. 122 sq., 177 sq.

<sup>7</sup> The *pluti* with the nasal is *uktārthaprasiddhyarthā*, says Sāyaṇa. The neut. pred. *saṃānam* is noteworthy; see Delbrück, *Vergl. Syntax*, III, 247, 248.

<sup>8</sup> By giving food to retainers and by sacrifice respectively.

<sup>9</sup> Sāyaṇa and Ānandatīrtha take this as referring to the doctrine of transmigration. But this is hardly necessary. The earth consumes what the heaven sends, e.g. rain, not persons who are born again, or as Sāyaṇa says, sacrificers who having enjoyed heaven after death return again to earth. It is not proved that such an idea is known to this Āranyaka. Cf. II, 1, 1, n. 4; 3, n. 5; 3, 2, n. 3; 7, n. 5; 8, n. 15; 4, 1, n. 1; 5, nn. 6, 7, 9. For the use of *prerte* (for the form, cf. Oldenberg, *S.B.E.*, XLVI, 2; Bartholomae, *Iran. Grundr.*, I, 54, 70) as *prati* Sāyaṇa has reference to the analogy of *pra* + *√i*. The form of the *pluti* is that laid down in Pāṇini, VIII, 2, 107; cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 298 sq.

<sup>10</sup> This is very obscure. There seems little doubt, however, that it is intended as the expression of a vague pantheism. Cf. Emerson's 'I am the doubter and the doubt, And I the hymn the Brahmin sings.' The priest identifies himself with the hymn and also with Prajāpati (see above), and so becomes, as Max Müller says, subject and object in one.



3. Then comes<sup>1</sup> the origin of seed. The seed of Prajāpati are the gods.<sup>2</sup> The seed of the gods is rain. The seed of rain is herbs. The seed of herbs is food. The seed of food is seed. The seed of seed is creatures. The seed of creatures is the heart.<sup>3</sup> The seed of the heart is the mind.<sup>4</sup> The seed of the mind is speech. The seed of speech is action.<sup>5</sup> The act done is this

Ānandatīrtha interprets it that Viṣṇu consumes all worlds, and all beings enjoy him, which is the same idea attached to the name of Viṣṇu. Sāyaṇa contrasts the *upāsaka* and the *anupāsaka* and explains the matter slightly differently in the last sentence as meaning that other men do not enjoy him (*yad vā = yasmāc ca kāraṇāt*). He reconciles this with the fact that he is *ādyaś* because that refers to *svātmabhūtasarvabhogyajātārūpatvam*. This explanation is not probable, but undoubtedly the construction of the last words contains a serious difficulty as *yad* cannot correspond to *adyuḥ*. The fact perhaps is that *yad* is used for formal correspondence with the previous *yad* though it is not quite parallel in construction. It must be taken literally as an accusative of point in which—'or in so much as they do not consume him.' For the metaphor cf. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 2: *anādyamāno yad udantam atī*; Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 2: *adyate 'tī ca bhūtāni*; III, 7, 9, &c.; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 6, 2; XII, 9, 1; Maitrāyaṇī Saṃhitā, I, 10, 13; Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XI, 3; *A. J. P.*, XX, 446, and the Puruṣa Sūkta. Another possible explanation, however, is suggested by Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 5, 3: *sā (satyam as devatā) ha tasya nele yad enam apasedhet*, 'She is not able to drive him away,' where *yad* is a conjunction. So here the exact sense may be, 'He cannot help eating them and their eating him;' *tasya* being used to introduce the dependent clause. Cf. II, 1, 5, n. 5. No doubt originally *yad* was a relative, but the pronominal quality is clearly minimal in such cases. The opt. in such a case is one of consequence or characteristic, cf. *brahmīṇaṃ kurvīta yo pāyēt*, III, 2, 3, n. 3. So I would explain Rāmāyaṇa, III, 19, 7: *na hi pāyāmy ahaṃ loka yaś kuryān mama vipriyam*, which Speijer (*Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 271) explains (see § 191, 4) as merely indefinite. But the sense is slightly different from a mere indefinite. So Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 3, 23: *nā tū tād dvitīyam asti tāto 'nyad vībhaktam yāt pāyēt*; *ibid.*, 24-30, &c.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa says this section is intended to explain the greatness of *puruṣa*, mentioned in II, 1, 2. Ānandatīrtha, on II, 1, 2, much more correctly says: *vidyāntaratvān na pūrvakhaṇḍenārya saṃgatīḥ | uttaratrūpy etad anusaṃdheyam |* Cf. Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 88 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa says that the element of *sattva* is represented in the gods, of *rajas* in men, and of *tamas* in animals, &c., and this explains the high position here given to the gods. This doctrine is of course later, appearing first most clearly in the Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, see Deussen, *Philosophie der Upaniṣads*, pp. 226 sq.; E. T., pp. 250 sq.; Garbe (*Sāṃkhyatattva-kaumudī*, p. 592) has conclusively, I think, dispersed the assumption countenanced by Weber (*Ind. Stud.*, IX, 11), Muir (*Texts*, V, 309), and Whitney (*Translation of Atharvaveda*, p. 601) that Atharvaveda, X, 8, 43 refers to the *guṇas*, see Lanman, *ibid.*, p. 1045.

<sup>3</sup> Because the *jīvātman* is here, says Sāyaṇa. Cf. Deussen, *op. cit.*, p. 259; E. T., p. 287.

<sup>4</sup> Ānandatīrtha distinguishes *hṛdaya* and *manas* as being *saṃkalpātmaṇi antaḥkaraṇam* and *vikalpātmaṇi* respectively. Sāyaṇa's explanation is much more probable that *manas* denotes the knowing part of the heart, a frequent early use of the word, cf. Deussen, *op. cit.*, pp. 243 sq.; E. T., pp. 270 sq.

<sup>5</sup> Sāyaṇa renders speech as the Veda, and action as sacrifice. Ānandatīrtha evidently takes it as equal to *adṛṣṭam kriyā vā*. He also (unlike Sāyaṇa) construes *karmakṛtam* as one word, *karmanirmītam*. Rājendralāla prints in the text *karmakṛtam* against the commentary. Sāyaṇa of course explains *kṛtam* as done in a former birth, but this again is an unnecessary intro-

man, the abode of *brahman*. He consists of food,<sup>6</sup> and because he consists of food, he consists of gold. He becomes golden<sup>7</sup> in yonder world, he is seen as golden for all mortals, who knows this.

4. *Brahman*<sup>1</sup> entered into that man by the tips of his feet. Because *brahman* entered that man by the tips of his feet, so men call them the tips of the feet (*prāpadyata-prapade*), but in the case of other animals hoofs and claws. Then he crept higher up, and they became the thighs. Then he said, 'Swallow<sup>2</sup> widely,' and that became the stomach. Then he said, 'Make it wide for me,' and that became the chest. The Śārkarākṣyas<sup>3</sup> meditate on the stomach as *brahman*, the Āruṇis on the heart. These two are indeed *brahman*. But he crept upwards still, and arrived at the head. Because he arrived at the head (*aśrayata*) then it became the head (*śiras*). So the head is the head. These delights settled in the head, sight, hearing, mind, speech, breath. Delights settle on him who

duction of the transmigration theory, see II, 1, 1, n. 4; 2, n. 9, and Ānandatīrtha does not accept it. The passage only means that action is the man; the man is what he does; a perfectly plausible view. For the relation of speech and action see Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 33, 4; II, 2, 8; III, 32, 9; Mahānārāyaṇa Upaniṣad, IV, 7; Oertel, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, 231.

<sup>6</sup> Ānandatīrtha renders *sa* as *bhagavān* and *irāmayaḥ* as *ichānurūpasukhapūrṇaḥ*, and *hiraṇmayāḥ* as *bāhyānandavilakṣaṇasukhapūrṇaḥ*. Sāyaṇa quotes Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 1, 1: *sa vā eṣa puruṣo annarasamayaḥ*. He explains that as man is composed of food, so he is gold in the shape of the egg of Brahman. Really the thing is a mere play on words. For the form *hiraṇ(ya)mayāḥ*, cf. Bloomfield, *P. A. O. S.*, April, 1893, p. xxxv; *A. J. P.*, XVII, 418; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 279, 280; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 58.

<sup>7</sup> Ānandatīrtha explains: *Nārāyaṇaṁ jānaṁ karmajaṁ rūpam utsrjya nījānandaikarūpako bhavati*. Sāyaṇa says he appears as golden as the sun for the benefit of all creatures. Really it means, he appears (*dadṛśe* passive, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 264 sq.) to all creatures, no doubt originally as the sun. The passage is like all this part of the Āranyaka, II, 1-3, pantheistic. In Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 1, 4, 9, the Agnicit is promised birth in the other world as *hiraṇmayāḥ*, rendered by Sāyaṇa *hiraṇyasaṁānavarṇaḥ*, see Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, 295, n. 2.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa explains that this chapter shows *prāṇa*, the *upādhi* of Brahman, entering the subtle body. His entry into the gross body is seen on II, 1, 2. He compares Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 6, 1; Maitrāyaṇīya Upaniṣad, II. For *prapada* Lanman in Whitney, *Translation of Atharvaveda*, II, 33, 5, suggests toe as the meaning, but the dual renders that impossible here, and I believe in all the passages cited at p. xcvi the sense 'front part of the foot' as opposed to 'heel' is correct.

<sup>2</sup> Make a large hole, says Sāyaṇa. Max Müller's 'grasp' is a slip. The form is overlooked in the *Dict.* and in Whitney's *Roots*, &c.

<sup>3</sup> Śārkarākṣyāḥ is rendered *sūkṣmadṛṣṭayāḥ* by Ānandatīrtha, who, however, calls the Āruṇayāḥ Ṛṣis. He explains *udaram* as locative in sense, as does Sāyaṇa, tacitly. The Śārkarākṣyas are a subdivision of the Hāridravīyas according to the Caraṇavyūha and are mentioned in the Mahābhāṣya, IV, 1, 74; 75. Max Müller points out that neither in Chāndogya Upaniṣad, V, 11, 15, 17 nor in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 6, 1, do these views appear—at least in terms. Āruṇayāḥ appears also in Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, II, 5, 1, wrongly amended by Oertel to *Āruṇayāḥ*, against the MSS. *brahmā* may be meant, but the neut. is more likely. Cf. Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XVIII, 140; v. Schroeder, *Ind. Lit.*, p. 91, n. 1. That the heart (*hṛdaya*) is *brahman* was the view of Vidagdha Śākalya, see Yājñavalkya's exposition in Brhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 1, 7. See also Chāndogya Upaniṣad, III, 12, 4; VIII, 3, 3; *Ind. Stud.*, II, 177.



knows thus why the head is the head. They strove together,<sup>4</sup> saying, 'I am the hymn, I am the hymn.' They said, 'Come, let us leave this body, then that one of us at whose departure the body falls, will be the hymn.' Speech went forth, yet (the body) remained, speechless, eating and drinking. Sight went forth, yet (the body) remained, sightless, eating and drinking. Hearing went forth, yet (the body) remained, without hearing, eating and drinking. Mind went forth, yet (the body) remained, blinking as it were,<sup>5</sup> eating and drinking. Breath went forth, when breath went out, (the body) fell. It was decayed. (Because men) said it had decayed, it became the body. Therefore is the body the body. Who knows this, his enemy, the evil one, who hates him decays, the enemy, the evil one, who hates him is defeated. They strove together, saying, 'I am the hymn, I am the hymn.' They said, 'Come, let us again enter this body; then that one of us, on whose entrance the body rises, will be the hymn.' Speech entered, (the body) lay still. Sight entered, (the body) lay still. Hearing entered, (the body) lay still. Mind entered, (the body) lay still. Breath entered, (the body) arose, and (breath) became the hymn. Therefore breath only is the hymn. Let men know that breath is the hymn. The gods<sup>6</sup> said to breath, 'Thou art the hymn, thou art all this, we are thine, thou art ours.' A R̥ṣi says (RV., VIII, 92, 32), 'Thou art ours, we are thine.'

<sup>4</sup> There are similar passages in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, VI, 2; Chāndogya Upaniṣad, V, 1; Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, II, 12-14; III, 2; Praśna Upaniṣad, II, 1. The comparative antiquity of the versions must be open to doubt. But this version certainly seems simpler and more original than those of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka, Chāndogya, or Kauṣītaki Upaniṣads, which seem to embellish the theme with further details. The account in the Praśna Upaniṣad is simple, but as that Upaniṣad is on other grounds late, that may be explained as merely a reference to a well-known theme, and indicates the danger of arguments from comparative simplicity. For *hanta* with subj., cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 23, 43; Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 430.

<sup>5</sup> The masculine, *milita*, is explained by Sāyaṇa as referring to *dehaḥ* understood. It is probable that the idea in the mind of the writer throughout was *puruṣa* as the subject; hence the masculines as long as *prāṇa* remains in the *śarīra*. *mil* is Brāhmaṇa style first. Cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 4, 11 and 12 (2, 22 and 3 in the Mādhyandina text) where *brahma* is followed by *sa*. On the other hand in Bṛhadāraṇyaka, IV, 3, 22, the Kāṇva text, after a series of masculines, produces *ananvāgatam puṇyena*, and Śaṅkara explains; *rūpaparātvaṁ na puṁsakalīṅgam*. The Mādhyandina version (as in Weber and Böhtlingk) has the masc., but as Max Müller (*S.B.E.*, XV, 169) points out, Dvivedagaṅga had *ananvāgatam*, as he says: *ananvāgatam iti rūpaviṣayo na puṁsakanirdelaḥ*. There are also difficulties in the genders in Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, III, 7, see Max Müller, *S.B.E.*, XV, 245, n. 4. In Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 22, *kāmarūpī* and *kāmacārī*, according to one MS., agree with *brahma*. Such uses are not rare in Latin and Greek, e.g. *φίλε τέκνον*; *Vergl. Syntax*, III, 244. For *iti* 3 *m*, cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 22, 2, against Böhtlingk, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1890, p. 170.

<sup>6</sup> The gods are those presiding over the parts of the body, see II, 1, 5, n. 3. For *Prāṇa* as *brahma*, cf. Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, II, 1; 2; Chāndogya Upaniṣad, IV, 10, 5; Taittirīya Upaniṣad, III, 3, 1; Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 33, 2. It was held by Udaṅka Śaulbāyana (Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 1, 2) and is refuted, *ibid.*, V, 13, 1; Oertel, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, 230.

5. The gods carried him forward.<sup>1</sup> Being carried forward he was stretched out. (Because men say) he has been carried forward, the morning came into being. (Because men say) he has gone to rest, the evening came into being. Day is breathing forth,<sup>2</sup> night is breathing down. Speech is fire,<sup>3</sup> sight yonder sun, mind the moon, hearing the quarters, this is the union<sup>4</sup> of those sent forth. These deities are such in the body, but they openly appear among the deities; this is the meaning. This indeed said Hiranyadant Vaidā who knew this; 'Whatever they give me not,<sup>5</sup> I own not myself. I know the union of those sent forth in the body which they enter. This it is.' To him who

<sup>1</sup> Sāyana explains that this section treats of *prāṇa* under various forms. Ānandātīrtha as usual equates *prāṇa* and *Viṣṇu*. The section is composed of bad etymologies. The first alludes to *pra + √nī* (*pra-anayanta*).

<sup>2</sup> For the meanings of *prāṇa* and *apāna* see Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, pp. 249-251; E. T., pp. 276-279. The oldest view is that they mean expiration and inspiration respectively, whence *apāna* comes to refer to the wind of digestion. Cf. I, 3, 7; 4, 1; II, 3, 3.

<sup>3</sup> This idea originates with the *Puruṣa Sūkta*, RV., X, 90, 13; 14, see Deussen, *Allgemeine Einleitung*, p. 157, and later it develops into a regular system of gods who correspond to and guard the several psychic faculties. Cf. Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, p. 241; E. T., p. 267. It is developed most in II, 4, 1; 2, where Agni, &c., become speech, &c., and enter man, while here they are merely considered as the several parts of the body. Cf. also I, 3, 3; Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, X and XI; Lanman, *Hindu Pantheism*, p. 18.

<sup>4</sup> The idea seems clearly to be that these four are gathered together in the body, and exist openly as deities, as Sāyana says. But *prahitām* is very difficult, and the whole seems an explanation of what was even then obscure. Cf. the varying versions of *pūrṇam apravartī, amṛtaṁ satyena channam*, &c., cited in Deussen, op. cit., p. 20; E. T., p. 20, n. 3.

<sup>5</sup> This authority occurs also in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 6. Is his name a reference to gold stoppings in his teeth? They were known to the XII Tables (B. C. 450?) and to very early Egypt. *Yam* is read by Rājendralāla and in the Ānandāśrama edition and also by Sāyana. But it seems obvious that it stands for *yan* written before *m* carelessly as *anusvāra*, cf. Max Müller, *Marut Hymns*, p. 1x; II, 3, 3, n. 2; III, 1, 4, n. 3; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 62; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 333. To Sāyana *yan* presents no difficulty as he merely supplies *padārtham abhīṣṭam*. The word *dadyuḥ* is difficult, because the plural is unexpected after *īte* if that is a third person, when the sense would be 'nobody owns what the deities give not to me'. This is rather awkward but not impossible. The rendering of II, 1, 2 suggested in n. 10 there would give in this passage (though *yan* would still remain properly a pronoun), 'He owns nothing that they will not give me also,' which by an easy process of development would slide over into the sense, 'He cannot help them giving me (it),' showing the origin of such a developed construction as that in II, 1, 2. This comes to an assertion of the fact that all that the cosmic *puruṣa* has (he must be the subject of *īte*), that has man. It is simpler to neglect the commentators and take *īte* as first person, thus asserting the intimate union of man and the deities. In this use *yad* is used with consecutive force; cf. the Mantra use of *yad* as final with subj. or opt. (Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 321, 341), and the classical use (Speijer, *Sanskrit Syntax*, § 466). The absence of such a use in the Brāhmaṇas (cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 279 e) is improbable. *īte* as a third person belongs to a type which occurs in all Brāhmaṇas, and is not a mere imitation of Mantra forms (as held by Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 429, where see other examples), see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 613. The form *prahitām* presents great



knows this all creatures unconstrained pay homage. That is *satya* (truth). For *sat* is breath, *ti*<sup>6</sup> is food, *yam* is yonder sun. That is threefold. Threefold as it were is the eye, white, dark, and the pupil.<sup>7</sup> Even though he speaks falsely,<sup>8</sup> yet speaks he truth who thus knows why truth is *satya*.

6. Speech is his rope, names the knots.<sup>1</sup> So by his speech as rope, and by names as knots, all this is bound. For all this is names, and by his speech he names everything. Men<sup>2</sup> bound with ropes carry him who knows this. His hairs are the *uṣṇih*, his skin the *gāyatrī*, his flesh the *triṣṭubh*, his sinews the *anuṣṭubh*, his bones the *jagatī*, his marrow the *pañkti*, his breath<sup>3</sup> the *bṛhatī*. He is covered with the metres. Since he is covered with the metres, therefore they call them metres (coverings). Thus the metres cover him from illhap<sup>4</sup> in

difficulty. To take it as Vedic for *prahitānām*, as Sāyaṇa does, is to introduce a very rare<sup>\*</sup> form (cf. Whitney, L.C., p. 114) into the text: on the other hand the word *prahit* has no parallel (save conceivably in form (*Ind. Stud.*, III, 225) in *prahitoḥ saṃyojane* in the Ārṣeya Brāhmaṇa, if we may take that as dual form gen. and not as in Monier-Williams' *Dict.* as a gen. of *prahitu*) at any rate in sense. Whitney (*Roots*, L.C., p. 205) gives *-hit* as a form from *√hi*. I think that *prahit* should probably be taken as the 'impeller', i.e. the deities cause the organs to work, cf. II, 4, 1, and 2.

<sup>\*</sup> The *i* of *ti* is to enable it to be pronounced (Sāyaṇa). Chāndogya Upaniṣad, VIII, 3, 5, gives a different version, from *sat + tī + yam*, as the binding of the immortal and the mortal (*tī* being the dual of *tī*). Cf. Deussen cited in n. 4 above. Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 6, derives *sat-tyam* from *sat* 'manifest', and *tyat* 'not-manifest'. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, V, 5, 1, gives *sa + t* (so Śaṅkara (as here), but Kāṇva text, *tī*) + *am* when *sa* and *am* are = true, and *t* (*tī*) = untrue (for *t* occurs in *anṛta* and *mṛtyu*!). Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, I, 6, gives *sat* (what is other than the gods and the senses) + *tyam* (the gods and the senses).

<sup>7</sup> Cf. Jaiminīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 254 (*kanīnikā*); Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XII, 8, 2, 26; *A. J. P.*, XVII, 400; elsewhere *puruṣa* is the third member, Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 26, 1; 34, 1 and Oertel's note.

<sup>8</sup> This doctrine undoubtedly shows the moral disadvantages of the doctrine of salvation by knowledge, and it is the precursor of the later immunity from moral censure of the *jīvanmukta*. Cf. Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, III, 1; Sadānanda, *Vedāntasāra*, 235: *śubhāśubhayor audāśīnyam*, and Jacob's note in his *Translation*; Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, pp. 164-167. In *asya* the genitive is presumably possessive, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 153; Franke, *Beiz. Beitr.*, XVI, 112; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, §§ 69, 92, n.; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 296 b. Compare *evaṃ me sutaṃ* with *itī naḥ śrutiḥ* (Introd., p. 57); *J. A. O. S.*, XXV, 116, 117. For the position, cf. *Z. D. M. G.*, LXII, 129.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa explains the metaphor from a rope for tying up cattle. Ānandatīrtha explains as usual by identifying all with Viṣṇu. 'His' refers to *prāṇa* of course.

<sup>2</sup> Like oxen who carry men.

<sup>3</sup> *prāṇaḥ* here refers to the air in the strict sense, and has not the wider sense of *prāṇa* (Sāyaṇa); perhaps it = *gṛhṇa*, as in II, 1, 7, and often; cf. my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 21.

<sup>4</sup> This must be the sense. Sāyaṇa, however, appears to render it 'whatever evil he desires to do, the metres keep him from contact with it'. The connexion of *√chad* and *chandas* is very doubtful; see I, 1, 3, n. 6; Leumann, *Et. Wört.*, p. 103.

<sup>\*</sup> See also RV., IV, 2, 3 and 11: *martām*; VI, 47, 16: *manuṣyām*; Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 319; Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 44; Bartholomae, *Studien*, I, 48.

whatever quarter he desires who knows thus why metres are called metres. A Ṛṣi says (RV., I, 164, 13), 'I saw the guardian,' for he is a guardian, for he guards all this. 'Never tiring,' for he never rests. 'Coming and going on his ways,'<sup>5</sup> for he comes and goes on his ways. 'Illuminating' the principal and intermediate,' for he illuminates these quarters only, the principal and intermediate. 'He moves up and down in the worlds,' for he moves up and down in the worlds. Then there is the verse<sup>7</sup> (RV., I, 55, 8), 'Covered' like caves by the makers.' For all this is covered by breath. This ether is supported by breath as *brhāṇi*, and one should know that, even as this ether is covered by breath as *brhāṇi*, so all things including ants<sup>9</sup> are covered by breath as *brhāṇi*.

7. Now come the powers of this person. By his speech are created earth and fire. On the earth plants grow; fire ripens them. 'Take this, take this,' thus saying do these two, earth and fire, serve their parent, speech. As far as the earth extends, as far as fire extends, so far extends his world, and as long as the world of earth and fire decays not, so long does his world decay not who knows thus the power of speech. By breath<sup>1</sup> the sky and the air are created. People follow the sky, and hear along the sky, and the air bears

<sup>5</sup> The veins, says Sāyaṇa. He explains that *prāṇa* is the guardian by referring to Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, III, 2: *yāvad(hy)asmiñ charīre prāṇo vasati tāvad āyur*. This passage of the Rgveda later served as the authority for the activity of *prāṇa* even in *śuṣupti*, Praśna Upaniṣad, IV, 3; Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, p. 268; E. T., p. 297. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 37, takes the *prāṇāḥ* and the sun's rays as meant.

<sup>6</sup> The four quarters and the four intermediate quarters, SE., SW., NE., and NW. For the number of the quarters, at first four, later, ten, cf. Hopkins, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, 283. *Prāṇa*, Sāyaṇa explains, is internally what Ādītya is externally, see Praśna Upaniṣad, I, 5; III, 8: *ādītyo ha vai bāhyah prāṇa udayati*. In the original and in Jaiminiya Upaniṣad, I. c., *vaste* means 'wears'.

<sup>7</sup> Not RV., I, 55, 81 (Max Müller following Rājendralāla), nor I, 56, 8 (Ānandāśrama series).

<sup>8</sup> Ānandatīrtha and Sāyaṇa both cite and explain, quite differently, the whole verse, but they agree in taking the caves as holes for concealing wealth. Cf. I, 3, 1, n. 4.

<sup>9</sup> Ānandatīrtha renders, 'beginning with ants.'

<sup>1</sup> In the nose, i.e. the power of smell (Sāyaṇa). The use of the masc. *ṣṛṣṭau* with a masc. and a neut. and of *ṣṛṣṭāḥ* below do not entirely agree with the rules of concord later accepted. Delbrück (*Altindische Syntax*, p. 88) gives only one doubtful example (RV., I, 8, 10) and Speijer (*Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 101) thinks that in classical Sanskrit with names of things the neuter is a more common predicate if the genders differ and one is neuter. This is laid down in a Vārttika (not in the Kāśikā Vṛtti, it appears) on Pāṇini, I, 2, 72, which runs: *tyadādītaḥ leṣe puṃnapuṃsakato liṅgavacanāni | sā ca Devadattaḥ ca tau | tac ca Devadattaḥ ca Yajñadattaḥ ca tāni | tac ca Devadattaḥ ca te |* So the neuter appears in Mahābhārata, III, 58, 10; VI, 6, 26; Rāmāyaṇa, VI, 62, 37. If only persons are concerned the masc. is regular, e.g. Mahābhārata, XVII, 1, 29: *Pāṇḍavāḥ ca mahātmāno Draupadī ca yalarvinī | kṛtopavāsāḥ Kauravya prayayuh prāṇmukhās tataḥ ||* Raghuvamśa, III, 23: *tathā nṛpaḥ sā ca sūtena Māgadhī nanandatus tatsadṛṣṭena tatsamaṁ, &c.* That this is old is indicated by the rule in Homeric Greek, thus formulated by Monro (*Homeric Grammar*<sup>2</sup>, p. 157), 'Where an adjective



pure scent.<sup>2</sup> Thus do sky and air serve their parent, breath. As far as the sky extends, as far as air extends, so far extends his world, and as long as the world of sky and air decays not, so long does his world decay not who knows thus the power of breath. By his eye are created the heaven and the sun. Heaven gives him rain and proper food, the sun causes his light to shine. Thus do heaven and sun serve their parent, the eye. As far as the heaven extends, as far as the sun extends, so far extends his world, and as long as the world of heaven and sun decays not, so long does his world decay not who knows thus the power of the eye. By his ear were created the quarters and the moon. From the quarters they come unto him, from the quarters he hears, the moon produces for him the bright and the dark halves for good deeds.<sup>3</sup> Thus the quarters and the moon<sup>4</sup> serve their parent, the ear. As

refers to more than one noun, it follows the most prominent: or (if this is at all doubtful) the masc. is used of *persons*, the neut. of *things*: e. g., *Il.* ii, 136:—

αἱ δὲ πον ἡμέτεραί τ' ἄλοχοι καὶ νῆπια τέκνα  
ἦσαν ἐνὶ μεγάροις ποτιδόμεναι,

because the wives are chiefly thought of, but *Od.* xiii, 434:—

ἀμφὶ δὲ μιν βάκος ἄλλο κακὸν βάλεν ἥδ' ἑ χιτῶνα,  
βαργαλέα ῥυπόαντα.

The neut. plur. is especially used of sheep and cattle. *Il.* xi, 244:—

πρῶθ' ἐκατὸν βοῦς δῶκεν, ἔπειτα δὲ χίλι' ὑπέστη,  
αἴγας ὁμοῦ καὶ οἰς.

The first example shows that a fem. can prevail over a neut. in the case of persons, the second that in regard to things the neut. prevails over the masc., the third that in regard to things the neut. may be used of masc. and fem. animals. Here *antarikṣam* is a deity and so naturally the masc. prevails, cf. *Manu*, VIII, 86, where *hṛdayam* is personified. In Latin the rule is (Allen and Greenough, *Latin Grammar*, p. 173), 'generally, a predicative adjective will be masculine, if nouns of different genders mean *living beings*; neuter, if *things without life*:' as *Livy* ii, 40 *uxor deinde ac liberi amplexi*, but *Livy* v, 4 *labor voluptasque societate quadam inter se naturali sunt iuncta*. Even if masc. nouns and fem. occur, the neut. can be used if one of the subjects is a thing, e. g., *Livy* xlv, 24 *natura inimica sunt libera civitas et rex*, or even if two fem. nouns represent things, e. g. *Cicero, de Fin.* iii, 11 *stultitia et temeritas et iniustitia sunt fugienda*. The basis of discrimination, therefore, is rather between living creatures, especially persons, and things (which include sometimes the animals).

The use of the dual and plural of the verb is regular, cf. *Delbrück*, pp. 83 sq.; *Speijer*, l. c., though as in Greek and Latin and Anglo-Saxon the nearest subject may determine the verb, as is usual in the *Bṛhaddevatā*. Cf. *ibid.*, VII, 74, for a set of mixed genders with a neut. plur.; VIII, 47, for a masc. plur. with a masc. sing., a fem. sing., and a masc. dual, which follow. Cf. *Delbrück, Vergl. Syntax*, III, 244-247, which this supplements.

<sup>2</sup> *Sāyana* refers to *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad*, I, 3, and *Chāndogya Upaniṣad*, I, 2, for the reasons, interference by *Asuras*, for the existence of bad smells; cf. *Farnell, Evolution of Religion*, pp. 99 sq. *Ānandatīrtha* takes 'him' throughout as meaning *Viṣṇu*.

<sup>3</sup> Probably it refers to sacrificial acts.

<sup>4</sup> *Sāyana* admits the apparent inconsistency of this and II, 4, 1 where the moon is derived from the mind, but explains it away that the creation here is merely an imaginary one for

far as the quarters extend, as far as the moon extends, so far extends his world, and as long as the world of the quarters and the moon decays not, so long does his world decay not who knows thus the power of the ear. By his mind were created the waters and Varuṇa. The waters yield to him faith for good deeds and Varuṇa preserves his offspring by his law. Thus the waters and Varuṇa serve their parent, mind. As far as the waters extend, as far as Varuṇa extends, so far extends his world, and as long as the world of the waters and Varuṇa decays not, so long does his world decay not who knows thus the power of mind.

8. Was it water<sup>1</sup>? Was it water? This world was water. This was the root, that the shoot. This the father, those the sons. Whatever there is of the son's, that is the father's; whatever of the father's, that is the son's. So it is said. Mahidāsa Aitareya<sup>2</sup> who knew this said, 'I know myself as reaching to the gods, and the gods as reaching to me.'<sup>3</sup> For hence are they gifted, hence are they supported. This is the hiding-place,<sup>4</sup> eye, ear, mind, speech, and breath. They call it the hiding-place of *brahman*. He who knows this throws down the enemy, the evil one, who hates him. The enemy, the evil one, who hates him is defeated. He is the life, the breath, being,<sup>5</sup> and not-being. The gods adored him as being, and so became great. So in sleep a man breathes *bhūr bhūh*. The demons adored him as not-being, and so were overthrown.<sup>6</sup> He becomes great by himself who knows this. The enemy, the evil one, who

purposes of worship, a *yathāvacanaṃ* as opposed to a *yathāvastu* creation. Such inconsistencies are not very important, but this small point adds to the evidence against II, 1-3, and II, 4-6, being by one hand. For Varuṇa, cf. Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, pp. 152 sq.

<sup>1</sup> Khaṇḍa 7 treats of *puruṣa* as the efficient cause, this Khaṇḍa of him as the material cause. *Ap* is to be considered as an expression of the five elements according to Sāyana, an unnecessary idea. The *pluṭi* indicates a question. The cause and effect are naturally identified. Ānanda-tīrtha identifies them in Viṣṇu. The Garbha Upaniṣad, I, traces the five elements in the human body, but the idea is not necessarily contained here.

<sup>2</sup> This mention is enough to prove that Mahidāsa did not write the Āranyaka. But it is quite probable that he was the redactor of the Brāhmaṇa, in its form of forty chapters. The saying here may no doubt be regarded as one of his Upaniṣads in the sense of secret teachings. Cf. Introd., p. 16. For the form, cf. Leumann, *Gurupūjākaumudī*, p. 42.

<sup>3</sup> Rājendralāla's commentary is wrongly printed. *Vedā* is an error for *veda*, and *omad* is resolved wrongly. The end of the sentence explains the dependence of deities on men for devotion.

<sup>4</sup> It is called *giri*, because *prāṇa* is swallowed up and hidden by the other senses. Cf. the doctrine that the senses enter in sleep into the *prāṇa*. The *prāṇa* forms thus the basis of the senses. Probably the idea of the Āranyaka is something like this, and the translation 'mountain' misleading. For *itaḥ*, cf. Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, p. 38, n. 1.

<sup>5</sup> Because the presence of *prāṇa* secures the *jīvātman* (Sāyana).

<sup>6</sup> Sāyana solves the difficulty of the evil effects of *abhūti* by discriminating between the desire of *abhūti* for oneself, as shown in the ruin of the demons, and for one's foe.



hates him, is overcome. He is death and immortality. A Ṛṣi says (RV., I, 164, 38), 'Down and up he goes, grasped' by food,' for this up-breathing restrained by down-breathing does not go forth. 'The immortal dwells with the mortal,' for through him all this dwells together. For these bodies are mortal, the deity immortal. 'These two even go in different directions, they increase the one, but not the other,' for they increase the bodies, but the deity is immortal. He who knows this becomes immortal in yonder world and is seen as immortal by all beings.\*

## ADHYĀYA 2.

He who shines approached this world<sup>1</sup> in the shape of man. For he is the breath. So he approached it. For he who shines is the breath. For a hundred years he approached it. Therefore a hundred are the years of the life of man.

<sup>1</sup> Ānandatīrtha renders *svadhayā* by Viṣṇu. Sāyaṇa takes it more properly as referring to digestion. The end of the verse means, according to Sāyaṇa, that men nourish the body by food and drink, but not the *prāṇa*. Ānandatīrtha renders, 'at death they see the bodies deserted by Vāyu.' The epithet *śaśvantā* can only be justified by the fact that one of the two is immortal, and on the principle *chatrinō gachanti*. For more or less analogous cases, cf. *uśāsā, āhanī* (Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 102), and *kṣapāḥ*, RV., I, 70, 7, as interpreted by Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 70. On the same *chatrinnyāya* Govinda on Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 8, 10, explains why the Praūga Śāstra in the Mahāvratā according to that school is called Vāmadeva's though less than a half of it is by him (Friedländer, p. 33, n. 1); Weber (*Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 113) quotes *dvādaśdu māśau* from Taittirīya Saṃhitā, VII, 5, 2, 1; Kāṭhaka Saṃhitā, XXXIII, 1; Pāṇcaviṃśa Brāhmaṇa, IV, 1, 2; *stōmau dvādaśau*, Kāṭhaka, XXXIII, 3, and similar cases from Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, IV, 5, 7, 2; XI, 6, 3, 5; XIV, 6, 9, 3; XII, 3, 2, 2; Pāṇcaviṃśa Brāhmaṇa, VI, 2, 5 (cf. *Ind. Stud.*, IX, 18). *Viṣūcinā* is explained as having diverse functions, the breath moving the bodily senses, the body supporting the *prāṇendriyas*. *Viyaṇtā* is referred to the fact that on death the body remains on the ground, while *prāṇa* seeks another world. Cf. Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 574 sq.; Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, II, 221; Böhtlingk, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1893, p. 92; Hillebrandt, *Ved. Myth.*, I, 336, n. 1; II, 8.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa explains 'immortal' as united with Hiraṇyagarbha; Ānandatīrtha says 'emancipated'. But that this Āraṇyaka knows emancipation, instead of immortality, as the highest end is not even probable. *Dadyā* (II, 1, 5) and *menē* (III, 1, 1) are both clearly present passives in sense. The original sense of the perfect was not distinguished from the present in point of time but denotes a state, cf. Giles, *Comp. Phil.*, § 549; Monro, *Homeric Grammar*<sup>2</sup>, pp. 31, 32; Delbrück, *Synt. Forsch.*, II, 192 sq.; *Vergl. Syntax*, II, 211 sq.; *Altindische Syntax*, p. 297; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 823. The oldest sense is quite frequent in the Ṛgveda. In cases like *bībhāya* (I, 3, 4) and *dādāhāra* (I, 5, 2) the naturally intensive form of the perfect is further strengthened.

<sup>3</sup> This Khaṇḍa shows that the names of the seers of the Ṛgveda can be deduced from *prāṇa*'s actions. Ānandatīrtha explains the section as proving that Viṣṇu is superior to all the gods. He takes *abhyārcat* as 'he entered into', *brahman* and the other gods. He justifies his theory by quoting the Vāc Sūkta, RV., X, 125, as proving that Vāc, i.e. *Ramā*, is superior to the gods, and she of course is inferior to Viṣṇu.

The sun and *prāṇa* are as usual identified, the one being the *adhivāsita*, the other the *adhyātman* representation. The former attracts the vision, the latter impels the body.

Because he approached him for one hundred years, therefore they are the Śatarcins.<sup>2</sup> Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) the Śatarcins. He placed himself in the middle of all that is. Because he placed himself in the middle of all that is, therefore they are the Mādhyamas. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) the Mādhyamas. As up-breathing he is the swallower, as down-breathing delight. Because as up-breathing he is the swallower, as down-breathing delight, therefore he is Gṛtsamada. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) Gṛtsamada. All whatsoever was his friend. Because all whatsoever was his friend, therefore he is Viśvāmitra. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) Viśvāmitra. The gods spake to him, 'Let him be dear to all of us.' Because the gods spake to him, 'Let him be dear to all of us,' therefore he is Vāmadeva. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) Vāmadeva. He protected all this from evil. Because he protected all this from evil, therefore they are the Atris. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) the Atris.

2. He also is a bearer of offspring. Offspring is *vāja*,<sup>1</sup> and he supports offspring. Because he supports offspring, therefore he is Bharadvāja. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) Bharadvāja. The gods spake to him, 'Let him be the richest<sup>2</sup> of us all.' Because the gods spake to him, 'Let him be the richest of us all,' therefore he is Vasiṣṭha. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) Vasiṣṭha. He went forth<sup>3</sup> to all this whatsoever. Because he went forth to all this whatsoever, therefore they are the Pragāthas. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) the Pragāthas. He purified all this whatsoever. Because he purified all this whatsoever, then they are the Pāvamānis.<sup>4</sup> Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) the Pāvamānis. He said, 'Let me be everything, small and great.' They became the Kṣudrasūktas and Mahāsūktas.<sup>5</sup> Therefore

<sup>2</sup> Really, Max Müller points out, the name refers to their composing about 100 verses each. They are the seers of RV., I. The Mādhyamas are the seers of Books II-IX, Gṛtsamada of II, Viśvāmitra of III, Vāmadeva of IV, the Atris of V. For the rest see Khaṇḍa 2. The Mādhyamas appear in Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XII, 3; Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 4, 2; Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 10, 3; Bṛhaddevatā, III, 116 (Madhyamāḥ); Sarvānukramaṇī, Introd., II, 10, &c. For the plur., *Atrayaḥ*, cf. Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, XLII, 226, n. 1.

<sup>1</sup> *Vājāḥ* is taken as either the body from the  $\sqrt{v}$  in the sense of going, or as food by Sāyaṇa.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa translates 'causing to dwell by his entry into us', and Ānandatīrtha has 'best of dwellers'. The ordinary sense seems preferable. Cf. II, 2, 4, n. 5.

<sup>3</sup> This seems to be the sense, and it is so taken by Sāyaṇa. Ānandatīrtha takes it either as 'he obtained' or 'he sang'. Sāyaṇa says the verses are called *Pragāthās* and also the poets. Probably the poets, of Book VIII, are meant. Bharadvāja and Vasiṣṭha correspond to Books VI and VII respectively. The same lists appear in Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 4, 2, and Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 10, 3.

<sup>4</sup> Presumably the poets of Book IX are so described. Cf. Ārṣeya Brāhmaṇa (ed. Burnell), p. 42; *Vedische Studien*, III, 99. In Āśvalāyana *pāvamānās* and in Śāṅkhāyana *pāvamānās* occur.

<sup>5</sup> The poets of Book X are referred to. Perhaps also the hymns were called *kṣudrasūktāḥ* as Max Müller suggests, but this is not certain. The last *kṣudrasūktāḥ* no doubt implies



they are the Kṣudrasūktas. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) the Kṣudrasūktas. (He said), 'Ye have said what is well said.' These became a hymn.<sup>6</sup> Therefore there is a hymn. Therefore men call him who is (*prāṇa*) hymn. He is a verse, for he went to<sup>7</sup> all beings. Because he went to all these beings, therefore he is a verse. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) a verse. He is also a half-verse, for he went to all these places.<sup>8</sup> Because he went to all these places, therefore he is a half-verse. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) a half-verse. He is a quarter-verse,<sup>9</sup> for he has entered all these beings. Because he has entered all these beings, he is a quarter-verse. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) a quarter-verse. He is a syllable, for he pours forth gifts to all these beings and because none can pour forth<sup>10</sup> gifts beyond him. Because he pours forth gifts for all these beings, and because none can pour forth gifts beyond him, therefore he is a syllable. Therefore they call him who is (*prāṇa*) a syllable. Therefore one should know that all these verses, all these Vedas, all sounds<sup>11</sup> are one word, *prāṇa*, and that *prāṇa* is all the verses.<sup>12</sup>

*mahāsūktāḥ*. See besides Āśvalāyana and Śāṅkhāyana, Bṛhaddevatā, III, 116; Sarvānukramāṇī, Introd., II, 10, with Macdonell's note.

<sup>6</sup> The poet is also called Sūkta, says Sāyaṇa, but there is no authority for this.

<sup>7</sup> The construction is obscure, but the rendering 'he went' seems best. The dat. is natural, cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 44; Whitney, *P. A. O. S.*, April, 1892, p. clxiv, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 286 b. Ānandatīrtha renders 'he went'. Sāyaṇa's version is *svapraveśena pūjitaṃ akaroṭ*, taking *bhūtebhyaḥ* as *sarvabhūtarthaṃ deham*, and Max Müller renders, 'he did honour to.' He also adds that the poet is called R̥c as well as the Mantra. Cf. Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, III, 95.

<sup>8</sup> *Ardha* is taken as 'place' (cf. *ordo*) by both Ānandatīrtha and Sāyaṇa, and is probably so intended, as Max Müller takes it.

<sup>9</sup> Sāyaṇa renders 'word', but this is less likely. He adds that it means also 'quarter-verse'. For the intrans. *pādi*—which (as *apādi*) is recognized by Pāṇini—cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 266; Whitney, l. c., § 845; Speijer, l. c., § 170. In Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 9, 9, *avāci* seems transitive, but see Oertel's note. The use of the aor. here is hard to distinguish from that of the imperfect, as with *abhiprāgāt* above. But in these cases it is possible that the aor. has a sense almost present, a natural derivation from the true aorist sense of the immediate past (cf. Monro, *Homer's Grammar*, pp. 66, 67; Giles, *Comp. Phil.*, § 552 (iii); Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 930, who points out that it is especially frequent in the Maitrāyaṇī Saṃhitā). It is also possible that the imperfect sense may be old (despite Whitney, § 929 a), for it is found in the Mantra literature. In the case of *abhiprāgāt* there is the further possibility that after all it means 'he sang of all this' or 'he sang towards all this' (*abhiprāgāyata* occurs in the RV.), and is an imperfect from *√gā*, for *gātī* occurs in the Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa and the Mahābhārata (cf. Whitney, § 855, and *St. Petersburg Dict.*, s. v.), or even from *√gā*, go. I do not therefore think these forms are signs of late date.

<sup>10</sup> 'Without him' is Max Müller's rendering. That of the text is supported by Ānandatīrtha, the other version by Sāyaṇa. Cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 441.

<sup>11</sup> Sāyaṇa takes *ghoṣāḥ* as the aspirated sonants, *jh, gh, bh, dh, dh*, as in R̥gveda Prātiśākhya, 714; Siddhāntakaumudī (ed. Tārānātha), p. 14; Max Müller, *R̥gveda Prātiśākhya*, p. cclxi. It can hardly here, however, have this limited sense. Cf. Chāndogya Upaniṣad, II, 22, 5; all vowels are *ghoṣavant*.

<sup>12</sup> Oldenberg (*Z. D. M. G.*, XLII, 199-247) has shown conclusively that few if any of the

3. Indra<sup>1</sup> sat down beside Viśvāmitra who was about to recite the hymns of this day. He saying, 'This is food,' recited the thousand *brhatis*. Thus he went to Indra's dear home. Indra said to him, 'Seer, thou hast come to my dear home. Do thou, seer, repeat a second<sup>2</sup> hymn.' He saying, 'This is food,' recited the thousand *brhatis* verses. Thus he went to Indra's dear home. Indra said to him, 'Seer, thou hast come to my dear home. Do thou, seer, repeat a third hymn.' He saying, 'This is food,' recited the thousand *brhatis* verses. Thus he went to Indra's dear home. Indra said to him, 'Seer, thou hast come to my dear home. I give thee a boon.' He said, 'Let me know thee.' Indra said, 'I am breath, thou, seer, art breath, all creatures are breath, he that shines is breath. In this form I pervade all the quarters. This my food is my friend, my support.<sup>3</sup> This is the food of Viśvāmitra.<sup>4</sup> I am he that shines.' Thus said he.<sup>5</sup>

4. This is produced as a thousand *brhatis*.<sup>1</sup> The consonants<sup>2</sup> are the body, hymns of the R̥gveda go back to their nominal composers when these composers are the heads of the great families, but that they were written by members of the family. The only possible exceptions are Vasiṣṭha and Viśvāmitra under Sudās (p. 236). It is possible that here (p. 226, n. 1) a recollection of the facts is seen in that book V is ascribed to the Atris, while the others to individuals, Gṛtsamada, Viśvāmitra, &c., but more probably the plural is used because it gives the proper play of words with *atṛiyata*. This is not, however, a sign of late date, for it seems likely that in RV., X, 181, the author held the same view as he attributes to Vasiṣṭha the *rāthantara* (VII, 32, 22; 23) and to Bharadvāja the *brhat* (VI, 46, 1; 2), later attributed to Śamyu Bārhaspatya (Oldenberg, pp. 225, 227, n. 1).

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa explains that this Khaṇḍa shows the nature of the *asītis* as being Indra's food. The form *upaniṣasāda* is wrong and can easily be corrected, but it is as old as Śāṅkara. The Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 3, 7, has *upaniṣasāda*.

<sup>2</sup> The collection of verses is regarded as three *asītis* of tristichs, in *gāyatrī*, *brhatī*, and *uṣṇīh* respectively. For them, see V, 2, 3-5 and notes.

<sup>3</sup> Ānandatīrtha explains *dakṣiṇam* as *dakṣabhōge sthita īnaḥ patiḥ yasyāḥ sā dakṣiṇā mitravīṣejanatvād dakṣiṇam iti napuṃsakaprayogaḥ*. Sāyaṇa refers the use to *abhiṣṛddhihetutvāt*, citing Dhātupāṭha, XVI, 7. This sense must be somewhat as in the text.

<sup>4</sup> Ānandatīrtha explains *Vaiśvāmitram* as *Ramayābhimananyamānabrhatīśahasrākhyam annaṃ Viśvāmitreṇa sampādītatvād Vaiśvāmitram ity ucyate*. Sāyaṇa has: *Viśvāmitreṇa śaṃsanakāle sampādītatvād idaṃ Vaiśvāmitram*.

<sup>5</sup> In Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 6, there occurs a dialogue between Indra and Viśvāmitra. It seems to show clear signs of a later origin, though it verbally reproduces some of this dialogue. It is much more philosophical. The Jaiminiya version, l. c., is very much altered, but all have clearly a common source, and use the narrative perfect (cf. *Introd.*, p. 67). The threefold boon may be compared with the story of Naciketas (Kāthaka Upaniṣad).

<sup>1</sup> This Khaṇḍa gives the correspondence of the various *akṣaras* of the 1000 *brhatī* hymn, which is got by the addition of the verses of the whole Niṣkevalya Śāstra, to parts of the body of *prāṇa* (Sāyaṇa). Ānandatīrtha explains it as an identification of the various deities who preside over the sounds, &c. The number 36,000 is merely theoretical; Eggeing (*S. B. E.*, XLIII, 111) counted about 37,200, and though the number could be reduced in various ways, it is not worth while.

<sup>2</sup> What are called by Pāṇini *hal* (Sāyaṇa). The Kaumāra school adopt the term *vyāñjana*



the vowels<sup>3</sup> the soul, the sibilants<sup>4</sup> the breath. Knowing this he became Vasiṣṭha.<sup>5</sup> Thence took he the name. Indra proclaimed this to Viśvāmitra, Indra proclaimed this to Bharadvāja, so Indra is in sacrifices invoked by him as a friend.<sup>6</sup> This is produced as a thousand *br̥hatis*. Of this produced as a thousand *br̥hatis* there are thirty-six thousand syllables. So many thousands are the days of a hundred years. They make up the nights by the consonants, the days by the vowels.<sup>7</sup> This is produced as a thousand *br̥hatis*. After this being produced as a thousand *br̥hatis* he who knows this becomes full of knowledge,<sup>8</sup> of the gods, of *brahman*, of the immortal, and goes to the gods. What I am,<sup>9</sup> he is; what he is, I am. A Ṛṣi says (RV., I, 115, 1), 'The sun is the self of all that goes or stands.' Let one consider this.

## ADHYĀYA 3.

He who knows himself as the fivefold hymn<sup>1</sup> from whence all this springs, he is wise. Earth, air, ether, water, light, these form the self, the fivefold hymn. From him all arises, into him all resolves. He who knows this is a refuge

for *kādīni*, as do the Śārasvata. The term corresponds with the use of the R̥gveda Prātiśākhya, see Max Müller's edit., pp. xli sq., and with the Śrauta Sūtras, *St. Petersburg Dict.*, s. v.

<sup>3</sup> Sāyaṇa takes this as in II, 2, 2, n. 11, as aspirated sonants. This can hardly be accepted. *Ātmā* is taken by him as *madhyakṣarīram*. The vowels must somewhere be alluded to, and *ghoṣa* can be = *svara*.

<sup>4</sup> Ānandatīrtha and Sāyaṇa both render *śaśasūh*. The Kaumāra school also take this term. In the R̥gveda Prātiśākhya it includes *anuvāra*, *visarga*, *jihvāmūliya*, and *upadh-māniya*; in the other Prātiśākhyas it refers to *śaśasahāh*.

<sup>5</sup> Sāyaṇa here ascribes the name to his causing to dwell, and his covering, cf. II, 2, 2, n. 2. Ānandatīrtha prefers 'best of dwellers'.

<sup>6</sup> Sāyaṇa refers this to the Subrahmanyā rite of the Soma sacrifice, where Indra is called, *Indra ā gacha*, *hariva ā gacha* (Śaṭvimpśa Brāhmaṇa, I, 1, 12; Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, I, 12, 3, &c.).

<sup>7</sup> The Kaumāra school thus defines *svarāh*, Katantra, I, 1, *siddho varṇasamāmnāyaḥ* | *tatra caturdaśādan svarāh* (Sāyaṇa). See Max Müller, op. cit., p. x.

<sup>8</sup> Sāyaṇa appears to take the first part of the sentence as independent, and as describing *prāṇadevaḥ*. For *devatā apyeti*, cf. Bhāṣya Upaniṣad, IV, 1, 2; Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 24, 5. No doubt the acc. is mainly governed by the verb, but the prep. force of *api* is too much ignored in Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, §§ 87, 88.

<sup>9</sup> This no doubt refers to the identity of the sun and the self, one of the oldest forms of Brahminical monism. Sāyaṇa illustrates the doctrine by a quotation from the commentary on the Brahma Sūtras, III, 3. Sun-worship is a very early and widespread form of religion; cf. Farnell, *Cults of Greek States*, IV, 143; Evans, *Journal of Hellenic Studies*, 1901, pp. 108 sq.; Manucci, *Storia di Mogor* (trans. by Irvine), III, 3, for its real importance in Indra.

<sup>1</sup> Ānandatīrtha explains that there are three *āśītis* and a *pūrvabhāga* and an *uttarabhāga*. These correspond to the five forms of Viṣṇu, Nārāyaṇa, Vāsudeva, Saṃkarṣaṇa, Pradyumna. Aniruddha, who represent earth, ether, air, light, and water respectively.

for his friends. To him<sup>2</sup> who knows food and feeder a feeder<sup>3</sup> is born, and food is his. Food is water and earth, for of them are foods compounded. Light and air are the feeder, for by them<sup>4</sup> he eats food. Ether is the bowl, for in the ether is all poured. He who knows this becomes the refuge (bowl) of his friends. To him who knows food and feeder a feeder is born, and food is his. Plants and trees are food, animals the feeder, for animals eat plants and trees. Of animals, those who have teeth above and below and are formed like men,<sup>5</sup> are feeders, the rest food. They overcome therefore the other animals, for the feeder is over his food. He becomes over his friends who knows this.<sup>6</sup>

2. He who knows more and more clearly the self obtains fuller being.<sup>1</sup> There are plants and trees and animals, and he knows the self more and more clearly (in them). For in plants and trees sap only is seen, in animals consciousness. In animals the self becomes more and more clear, because in them sap also is seen, while thought is not seen in others.<sup>2</sup> The self is more and more clear

<sup>1</sup> *Tasmin* may refer to the *uktha* as Sāyaṇa and Max Müller take it. Or it may be merely a precursor of *asmin*, in accordance with the usual preference of Sanskrit for the order *sa yaḥ*.

<sup>2</sup> i.e. a son able to eat. The second *asya* must, I think, refer to the father, not the son. The change of reference is too abrupt to be probable, and either version is good sense. Sāyaṇa takes it as referring to the son. For the form *ā-jāyate*, cf. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 27, 6.

<sup>3</sup> They aid digestion.

<sup>4</sup> Zimmer (*Altindisches Leben*, pp. 74-76) shows the identity of the contrast between *ubhayādant* and other animals, which is found in the Samhitās, with the old Latin contrast of *ambidens* (in Festus not = *bidens*) and *ἀμφάδων* in Aristotle. That, however, *ubhayādant* originally included the first class of sacrificial animals with man, as he holds (p. 76), appears doubtful. In this passage the resemblance to man is made explicit, and this is scarcely so likely if man were naturally one of the *ubhayādant* class. Either *anu vidhām* or the indeclinable *anuvīdham* (as in III, 2, 3) is grammatically possible, but the corruption to *anuvīdham* would be much easier than to *anu vidhām*. *Anu vidhāḥ* is also possible. *Vidhā* occurs several times, *infra*, II, 3, 4; 5. Cf. *vidhām anuvīdhīyate*, Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā, III, 2, 4: 10.

<sup>5</sup> In *adhīva carantī* the acc. is governed by *adhī*, a use found in Mantra and Brāhmaṇa alike (Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, §§ 87, 88; Atharvaveda, XIX, 49, 2: *adhī viśvāny aruḥ gabbhīrā*; RV., VIII, 68, 15<sup>b</sup>: *adhī tiṣṭhan navaṇi ratham*; Vājasaneyi Samhitā, VI, 2: *adhī tvā sthāsyati*, &c.). I do not, however, think it can well be construed with the gen., so I think the gen. *saṁnānām* is a partitive one, 'of his friends he, &c.' For similar cases of the partitive gen., cf. I, 2, 3, n. 6, and Harivaṃśa, II, 79, 12, where Hopkins, *J.A.O.S.*, XXII, 152, n. 1, takes the gen. as local. Delbrück (*Altindische Syntax*, p. 441) is, I think, wrong in holding that *adhī* rarely has the accusative. The root *sthā*, e.g., would not naturally take an acc. without the aid of a preposition. Cf. II, 2, 4, n. 8.

<sup>6</sup> This is the most philosophical part of the whole Āranyaka and is a determined effort to explain the different stages of conscious life. It will be observed that the distinctive marks of man are all elements which make his consciousness into an ordered system and they imply self-consciousness, as opposed to the mere consciousness of animals, in the form of their receptivity of external stimuli. The theory of the soul in Aristotle, *De Anima*, II, 4 sq., is worth comparing. For the form *āvistarām*, cf. I, 4, 1, n. 11; Böhlingk, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1893, p. 11.

<sup>7</sup> Max Müller renders, 'but in others thought is not seen, the apparent meaning being that



in man. For he is most endowed with intelligence, he says what he has known, he sees what he has known, he knows to-morrow, he knows the world and what is not the world. By the mortal he desires the immortal, being thus endowed. As for the others, animals, hunger and thirst comprise their power of knowledge. They say not what they have known, they see not what they have known. They know not to-morrow, they know not the world and what is not the world. They go so far, for their experiences are according to the measure of their intelligence.<sup>2</sup>

3. This man is the sea,<sup>1</sup> he is above all the world. Whatever he reaches, he desires to be beyond it.<sup>2</sup> If he gains the sky world, he desires to be beyond it. If he were to gain yonder world, he would desire to be beyond it. Fivefold is this man.<sup>3</sup> What is hot in him is fire; the apertures are the ether; blood, mucus, and seed are water; the body is earth; the breath is air. Fivefold is the air,<sup>4</sup> up-breathing, down-breathing, back-breathing, out-breathing, on-breathing.

some animated beings have not thought. What must be meant is that others, i.e. plants and trees, have no intelligence, and so Sāyana and Ānandatīrtha construe it. *Itara* frequently means, like ἄλλος and *alius*, others, not as opposed to a part of a species, but as another species; *A. J. P.*, VII, 101. Stones have only *sattā*, says Sāyana, i.e. are only objective, not also subjective.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyana takes the last sentence as meaning they are born according to their knowledge in a former birth. This, however, assumes the transmigration theory, which is not certainly known in this Āraṇyaka. The better meaning seems to be that taken above, which is more suited in point of fact to the context, for the idea of former birth is nowise necessary or in point. Sāyana cites Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 4, 2 and 7, but this Upaniṣad is earlier. The word *yathāprajñam* does not occur in Jacob's *Concordance*. Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, I, 2, has *yathāvidyam* of transmigration. See also Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, pp. 96 sq.

<sup>1</sup> The sea is typical of all unsatisfied desires. Sāyana cites Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa, II, 2, 6: *kāmaṇi samudram āviveśety āha | samudra iva hi kāmāḥ | naiva hi kāmasyānto 'sti na samudrasya* | The same idea appears over and again in the Greek Anthology, cf. Butcher, *Greek Genius*, pp. 266 sq. For the separation of the prefix and verb, cf. *Intro.*, p. 57, and examples from the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa in Liebhich, *Pāṇini*, p. 24, and from Bṛhadāraṇyaka, p. 28.

<sup>2</sup> *Enaṃ* in R and in Sāyana must stand for *ṇi* in place of an assimilated *n*, as in II, 1, 5, n. 6. For *ati-man*, cf. Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa, I, 42 (*J. A. O. S.*, XV, 234).

<sup>3</sup> Cf. II, 3, 1, n. 1. Ānandatīrtha here repeats the identifications with the different forms of Viṣṇu.

<sup>4</sup> The five *prāṇas* frequently occur. No intelligible explanation of them all is possible. *Prāṇa* and *apāna*, once originally the same, were first divided as expiration and inspiration, then as breath, and the wind of digestion, cf. II, 4, 1 and 2. *Vyāna* 'through-breathing or circulating air' (Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, 263, n. 1) is the bond between the *prāṇa* and *apāna*. *Samāna*, which 'distributes the digested pieces through the limbs' (Eggeling, p. 264, n. 1), leads to union of the two first. *Udāna* conducts the soul from the body at death. See Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, pp. 249-252; E. T., pp. 276-280, and I, 3, 7, n. 6. Sāyana says that *prāṇa* is in the mouth and nose, rising from the heart, *apāna* is in the lower parts, *vyāna* in all the veins, *udāna* in the throat to lead forth the soul, *samāna* leads food and drink evenly through the whole body. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, II, 5, 6 adds *avāna* to the number. For further variations see on I, 3, 7; 4, 1. The same five as here occur in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 1, 4, 2-6, and Maitrāyaṇī Upaniṣad, II, 6, where see Cowell's

The deities, sight, hearing, mind, and speech, are comprised in up-breathing and down-breathing. For they depart with the departure of breath. He is the succession<sup>5</sup> of speech and thought which is the sacrifice. The sacrifice is fivefold, Agnihotra, new and full moon sacrifices, the four-monthly sacrifices, the animal sacrifice, and the Soma sacrifice. The Soma sacrifice is the most perfect of the sacrifices, for these five kinds are seen in it; that which precedes the libations,<sup>6</sup> is one; then there are three libations, and the rest (of the sacrifice) is the fifth.

4. He<sup>1</sup> who knows one sacrifice above the other, one day above the other, one god above the gods, is clever. This great litany is the sacrifice above the other, the day above the other, the god above the others. This litany is fivefold. As a chorus<sup>2</sup> it is *trivṛt*, *pañcadaśa*, *saptadaśa*, *ekaviṃśa*, and

notes, and Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, 293. With the following, cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (Kaṇva), I, 4, 17, where man, animal, sacrifice, and *sarvam idam* are all fivefold, and Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I, 7, 1, where mind, speech, breath, sight, and hearing are man.

<sup>5</sup> For *uttarottar*<sup>2</sup>, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, 1, 60. For *api + √i*, cf. Caland, *Altind. Zauberrit.*, p. 18.

<sup>6</sup> That is the *dikṣā*. The last is the *avahytha udavasāniya*, &c. See Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, pp. 97 sq. It is worth noting that the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa does not deal with the new and full moon or the four-monthly sacrifices, though the Kauṣītaki does, cf. *Introd.*, p. 32.

<sup>1</sup> This section is unusually foolish. Ānandatīrtha exercises much ingenuity in equating the five forms of Viṣṇu to the several members of each of the sets of five. The parts of the *sāman* are also dealt with in Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, IV, 9, 10. See Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 100.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyana explains these as follows: *trivṛt stoma* is formed by the three hymns at the beginning of the Sāmaveda Uttarārcika, 1-9; RV., IX, 11, 1-3; 64, 28-30; 66, 10-12. The first three verses are taken from the first verse of each *sūkta*, the second from the second verses, and the third from the third. It is called *udyañi*. The *pañcadaśa* is formed out of one hymn, by repeating the first verse three times, the second and third once each, then repeating the second three times, and so on. The *saptadaśa* is the *pañcadaśa* save that in the third round the second and third verses each are repeated thrice, i.e. (1) aaabc; (2) abbbc; (3) abbbccc. The *ekaviṃśa* is made by singing all verses three times, except the last first and second respectively in the three rounds, i.e. (1) aaabbbc; (2) abbbccc (or aaabccc—the MSS. vary); (3) aaabccc (or abbbccc). The *pañcaviṃśa* is formed by singing in the first round the first verse thrice, the second four times, the third once; in the second round, the first once, the second thrice, the third four times; in the third round, the first five times, the second once, the third three times, according to Dhananjaya, or the first four times, the second twice, the third thrice, according to Gautama. (This seems to be the sense; R's version is corrupt and S is imperfect.) These *stomas* are called *pañcapañcinī* (not as Max Müller, *viṣṭuti*, which is the generic title of which these are species), *daśasapta*, and *saptasaptinī*, no name for the last being given. Max Müller quotes Mahidhara on Yajurveda Saṃhitā, X, 9, for the *trivṛt*. More in point is Sāyana on Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 42, which closely resembles this passage. The *St. Petersburg Dict.* (s.v. *trivṛt*) gives the *trivṛt* as consisting of one *sūkta*, RV., IX, 11 only, see Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 308, 309; *Pañcaviṃśa Brāhmaṇa*, I, 99 sq.; II, 1, 1; 7, 1; 14, 1; Hillebrandt, l.c., p. 101, and schemes in Caland and Henry's *L'Agniṣṭoma*.



*pañcaviṃśa*. As a *sāman*<sup>3</sup> it is *gāyatrī*, *rathantara*, *bṛhat*, *bhadra*, and *rājana*. As to metre it is *gāyatrī*, *uṣṇih*, *bṛhatī*, *triṣṭubh*, and *dvipadā*. The explanation<sup>4</sup> is that it is the head, the right wing, the left wing, the tail, and the body (of the bird). He performs<sup>5</sup> the *prastava* five times, the *udgītha* five times, the *pratihāra* five times, the *upadrava* five times, the *nidhana* five times. This forms a thousand syllables.<sup>6</sup> The verses here are recited as five orders.<sup>7</sup> What precedes the eighty tristichs is one order; then come the three sets of eighty tristichs; and the fifth consists of the rest. This makes a thousand (verses).<sup>8</sup> That is the whole; these ten by tens are the whole. For number is such. Ten tens are a hundred, ten hundreds a thousand, and that is the whole. These are the three metres; this food indeed is threefold, eating, drinking, and chewing. He obtains this food by these.

5. This is produced as a thousand *bṛhatīs*. Some recognize a thousand of various metres, saying, 'Is there another?'<sup>1</sup> let us say there is.' Some say a thousand *triṣṭubhs*, some a thousand *jagafīs*, some a thousand *anuṣṭubhs*. A Ṛṣi says (RV., X, 124, 9), 'Sages in their wisdom discovered Indra dancing an *anuṣṭubh*.'<sup>2</sup> That denotes, they discovered in speech then the breath of Indra. He can become famous and of splendid renown. 'Rather<sup>3</sup> he is liable to die untimely,'

<sup>3</sup> The *gāyatrī sāman* is formed from RV., III, 62, 10; *rathantara* from RV., VII, 32, 22; the *bṛhat* from RV., VI, 46, 1; the *bhadra* from RV., X, 157, 1; the *rājana* from RV., VII, 27, 1, according to Sāyaṇa's note; cf. V, 1, 2, n. 2.

<sup>4</sup> See Āraṇyaka, I, 4, 2.

<sup>5</sup> The *sāman* of the Nis̥kevalya is the *rājana*, and each of its usual five parts is repeated five times. The *upadrava* falls to the Udgātṛ and all join in the *nidhana* (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>6</sup> The *stobhas* are meaningless syllables, added to verses sung to make up the metre. See Chāndogya Upaniṣad, I, 13. These syllables are marked in Sāmaveda MSS., but they have not as yet been satisfactorily explained. Cf. Burnell, *Samhitopaniṣad Brāhmaṇa*, p. xviii; Hillebrandt, l. c., p. 104, n. 15; Caland and Henry, op. cit., App. II.

<sup>7</sup> The verses corresponding to the body, head, wings, &c., are the first order; the three *ālītīs* follow, then come the belly and chest verses.

<sup>8</sup> There are 1000 *stobhas* and also in the whole Śāstra a 1000 *bṛhatīs*. The rest refers to the nature of number as being measured by tens. There are nothing but sets of ten. The three 'metres' mean, according to Sāyaṇa, the numbers 10, 100, 1000 which govern all numbers. This, however, is inadequate, as the reference is clearly to the three sets of *ālītīs*. The reference to food is because these *ālītīs* are the food of the bird. There is no sign that the numbers 100 or 1000 are to be treated as specially important. Sāyaṇa's explanation is otherwise good. He quotes for *dalataḥ*, Pāṇini, V, 1, 60. Ānandatīrtha is very weak on this point.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa takes *kim anyat* as the question, *śad* the answer. The others do not include the Śāṅkhāyanas, who also recognize a thousand *bṛhatīs*. This is rather in favour of an early date; the dispute had disappeared before the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka. *Nānā* may be adverbial, 'variously.'

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa explains that the clouds rumbling produce a sound with an *anuṣṭubh* in it; cf. Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, II, 304; v. Schroeder, *Mysterium und Mimicry*, pp. 40, 41.

<sup>3</sup> Ānandatīrtha takes the whole as one argument and as meaning, 'he can die when he likes.' This is impossible. For the construction, cf. I, 1, 1, n. 4.

he<sup>4</sup> declares. For the self that is speech is imperfect, since<sup>5</sup> a man understands if driven to thought by breath, not if driven by speech. Let him produce the *br̥hātī*,<sup>6</sup> for the *br̥hātī* is the whole self. The self is on all sides surrounded by members, and, as the self is on all sides surrounded by members,<sup>7</sup> so is the *br̥hātī* on all sides surrounded by metres. The self is the middle of the members, and the *br̥hātī* of metres.<sup>8</sup> He can become famous and of splendid renown, while the other<sup>9</sup> will die untimely, so said he. For the *br̥hātī* is the whole self. Therefore let him produce the *br̥hātī*.

6. This is produced as a thousand *br̥hātīs*. Of this produced as a thousand *br̥hātīs*, there are eleven hundred and twenty-five *anuṣṭubhs*.<sup>1</sup> For by the larger the smaller is comprehended. A Ṛṣi says (RV., VIII, 76, 12), 'I a speech of eight feet,' for there are eight feet of four syllables. 'Of nine corners,' for the *br̥hātī*.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>4</sup> Ānandatīrtha points out that 'he' is Aitareya Mahidāsa or Mahaitareya. Sāyaṇa vaguely says 'a wise man'. Cf. I, 1, 1, n. 5.

<sup>5</sup> This is very obscure. The version here adopted means that the activity of *manas* if evoked by speech (= *anuṣṭubh*) only is imperfect, but it is more perfect if evoked by breath (= *br̥hātī*). *Manas* will then stand in its wider sense, not as an *indriya*, as later, cf. Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, p. 245; E. T., p. 271. This is very strained, but at least it is less absurd than (1) Sāyaṇa's version, 'If he proceeds with the Śāstra with reference to the *anuṣṭubh* which is proclaimed as Vāc, and not with reference to the *br̥hātī* which is proclaimed as *prāṇa*, then being driven by his mind he does not manage the Śāstra by speech alone.' He adds that without breath speech merely conceived is inadequate, breath being essential for any sense activity. The idea is not unlike the one adopted above. (2) Ānandatīrtha renders, 'Being urged to objects of sense by *prāṇa*, i.e. Vāyu, and by *manas*, i.e. Śiva, he enjoys them, and not by voice alone.' He read *manase* because he tries to account for the *ε*. Sāyaṇa must have read *prāṇe na* and taken *vāg* as an accusative or locative, as Max Müller points out. For the dat., which is rarely found in the local sense in the Brāhmaṇa style (Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 144), see Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 43, and cf. II, 2, 2, n. 7.

<sup>6</sup> i.e. make out that the *br̥hātī* is the metre.

<sup>7</sup> Because it is surrounded in the Śāstra (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>8</sup> Because metres are both bigger and smaller than the *br̥hātī*.

<sup>9</sup> Sāyaṇa ignores the difficulty of this passage. Ānandatīrtha of course renders it, 'he is able to die at will.' The text follows Max Müller's version. The syntax *yad br̥hātī* is very common in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 43, &c.; Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 4, &c.; *Altindische Syntax*, p. 564.

<sup>1</sup> 1000 × 36 syllables (*br̥hātīs*) = 1125 × 32 syllables (*anuṣṭubhs*).

<sup>2</sup> i.e. it is nine feet of four syllables and is formed by adding one to the eight feet of the *anuṣṭubh*. Sāyaṇa says the MS. *navasakti* is *chāndasaḥ*. Cf. Benfey, *Sāmaveda*, Glossary, p. 87. The correction *navasaktir*, though easy, is more convincing, because of *r* following. Cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 31; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 68, n. 15. MSS. frequently differ in such points, cf. Whitney's note on AV., VI, 33, 2 (*vyathī(s)*); cf. V, 1, 1, n. 18; 2, 1, n. 6. Note should be taken here of the readings of the Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 2, 6: *caturviṃśatī* in the acc., and I, 23, 15 and 23: *pañcaviṃśaty anuvākān* combined with Mānava Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 2, 6: *sā ekaviṃśaty ayaṇi te* (see Knauer, p. xli). I confess that the possible explanation suggested by Dr. Knauer of these cases as either contractions with omission of *anuvāra* or *visarga* or as neuters is not attractive. In the last case, as perhaps here, the original may have been as Dr. Knauer also suggests *ekaviṃśatī(h) | ayaṇi te*, &c., with the loss



becomes nine-cornered. 'Touching the truth,' for speech<sup>2</sup> united with verse is truth. 'I made<sup>4</sup> the body out of Indra,' for from this thousand *br̥hātī* made into *anuṣṭubh*s, which is *prāṇa* connected with Indra, and from the *br̥hātī* he makes speech, the *anuṣṭubh*, as a body. The great litany is the highest development of speech, and it is fivefold, measured, unmeasured, music, true, and untrue. A *ṛc* verse, a *gāthā*,<sup>5</sup> a *kumbyā*,<sup>6</sup> are measured; a *yajus* verse, an invocation, conversation,<sup>7</sup> are not measured; a *sāman* or part of it is music; *om* is true, no is untrue. The flower and fruit of speech is what is true. He can become famous and of splendid renown, for he speaks the truth, the flower and fruit of speech. The untrue is the root of speech, and, as a tree with roots exposed dries up, and perishes, so a man who speaks untruth exposes his roots, dries up, and perishes. Therefore let a man speak not untruth, but guard himself against it. The syllable<sup>8</sup> *om* is empty and goes forward. So if

of *h* (as often in MSS. in *pausā*) and subsequent erroneous contraction. So *pañcaviṃśati(m)* may have been written by error in the MS. and then the *m* dropped and contraction applied. But in verse, of course, we find clear cases of contraction or of the use of shortened forms, especially *va* for *iva*, e.g. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, XII, 29: *puṣṭam iva* must *metri causa* be *puṣṭeva* or *puṣṭam va*, probably the former, Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, LXI, 830; Roth, *ibid.*, XLVIII, 682.

<sup>2</sup> Speech is *anuṣṭubh*, verse *br̥hātī*, and united they touch *prāṇa*. Ānandatīrtha explains by equating *br̥hātī* with a form of Viṣṇu and speech with Umā!

<sup>4</sup> 'He makes,' in Max Müller's translation, ignores *aham*. Sāyaṇa does not do this, but he explains the sentence by the action of the Hotṛ, as the Āraṇyaka uses the third person. It only means that the *anuṣṭubh* is made out of the *br̥hātī* which is identified with *prāṇa*, and *prāṇa* is (see II, 2, 3) Indra.

<sup>5</sup> Sāyaṇa defines a *gāthā* as *sarvalokaprasiddhārthapratipādikā*, e.g. *prātaḥ prātar anṛtaṃ te vadanti* (a *yajñagāthā* from Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 31, 6; the example is not very happy); Ānandatīrtha as *parasparam asamāni viśamasamkhyākṣarāṇi svaranīyamarahitāni khaṇḍavākyaṇi*. Cf. Hopkins, *Great Epic of India*, pp. 365 sq.; *St. Petersburg Dict.*, II, 731; Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 429; Bloomfield, *Religion of Veda*, p. 196.

<sup>6</sup> Sāyaṇa defines as *ācāralikṣārūpā*, e.g. *brahmacāry aya apo 'sāna karma kuru divā mā svāpsih* or *mā susupthāh* (the MSS. vary), i. e. Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 22, 2; Ānandatīrtha as *yajñāṅgavākyaṇi*. In the parallel passage, Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI, 5, 7, 10 (where see Eggeling's trans., *S. B. E.*, XLIV, 101), *kumbyā* is read, which Weber (*Ind. Stud.*, X, 111, n. 1) suggests as equal to 'refrain', cf. *kumba*, *kurīra*.

<sup>7</sup> Sāyaṇa explains *brāhmaṇagatā ye 'rthavādā yā ca rājasadhādan parihāsādirūpenocyate sā sarvā vṛthā vāk*; Ānandatīrtha simply has *vyarthavāk*. Cf. *Vedische Studien*, I, 118, 328. For *nigada* see *St. Petersburg Dict.*, s. v.; Bṛhaddevatā, VIII, 104; Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 142, n., who describes them as a kind of Yajus to summon the other priests to perform their tasks. Sāyaṇa gives as an example of a *nigada*: *Agne mahān asi brāhmaṇa bhārata* (= Taittiriya Saṃhitā, II, 5, 9, 1; Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 26\*). For *sāman*, cf. Winternitz, p. 146, n. 3, who renders it as originally 'Besänftigungslied', 'ein Mittel zur Beschwichtigung von Göttern und Dämonen'; Bloomfield, *Religion of Veda*, p. 38.

<sup>8</sup> A curious piece of common sense (cf. Mr. Falconer's advice to Pepys, *Diary*, Aug. 8, 1662) interpolated to avoid the danger of the preceding doctrine that *om* is truth. For *om* as *tathā*, see Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 18, and Chāndogya Upaniṣad, I, 1, 8. The comparison with *āmen* is of course accidental, Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 162, n. 1.

a man says *om*, then that<sup>9</sup> is taken from him; if he should say *om* to everything, he would empty himself and be unable to have delights. The syllable 'no' is full<sup>10</sup> for one's self. If a man should say 'no' to everything, his fame would be evil and he would destroy himself. Therefore should one give at the proper time, and at the proper time he should refrain<sup>11</sup> from giving. So does he unite the true and the untrue. From their union he grows and becomes greater. He who knows this speech of which (the great litany) is a modification, he is clever. 'A' is the whole of speech and being manifested<sup>12</sup> through the mutes and sibilants it becomes manifold and various. If uttered in a whisper it is breath, if aloud it is body. Therefore it is as it were hidden, for what is incorporeal is as it were hidden, and breath is incorporeal. But spoken aloud it is body and visible, for body is visible.

7. This is produced as a thousand *br̥hatis*. It is glory,<sup>1</sup> it is Indra, it<sup>2</sup> is the lord of creatures. 'He who knows it as Indra, as the lord of creatures, leaves this world shaking<sup>3</sup> off all ties,' so said Mahidāsa<sup>4</sup> Aitareya. Having departed, having become Indra,<sup>5</sup> he shines in those worlds. They say, 'If by this form he gains yonder world, then by what form does he experience this world?'<sup>6</sup>

<sup>9</sup> Sāyana construes as 'he is emptied for that, viz. the enjoyment of house, fields, &c.' This is to force the meaning of *asmāi* overmuch; it is a *dativus incommodi*.

<sup>10</sup> Is selfish. Sāyana cites Bhagavadgītā, II, 34: *sambhūvitasya cākīrtir maraṇād atiricyate* |

<sup>11</sup> Rājendralāla prints in text and commentary *kālena*. It should be *kāle na* as the commentary, and also Ānandatīrtha, shows.

<sup>12</sup> 'A' with the different letters is the source of the alphabet. It may be interesting to speculate if this denotes that writing where the 'a' was not expressed was already known. It may be so, but it is not clear. In any case as the date of writing is very doubtful, no great light would be thrown on the date of the Āranyaka; cf. V, 3, 3 ad fin., where the reference is clear but cogent only for Śaunaka's period. For later reference to the *akāra*, see Jacob, *Concordance*, p. 2, and cf. Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa, XX, 14, 2.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyana compares Taittirīya Āranyaka, I, 1: *na tasyete kalcana tasya nāma mahad yasaḥ* | For Indra, cf. II, 4, 3; Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I, 4; Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, II, 6; III, 1; Bṛhad-āraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III, 2, 2.

<sup>2</sup> This is the sense, rather than, 'Indra is the lord' as taken by Max Müller. *Etan* below is the usual Sanskrit attraction of a pronoun to the gender of the predicate; *Vergl. Syntax*, III, 240 sq.

<sup>3</sup> This must be the sense, and so both Sāyana and Ānandatīrtha take it. Originally the word meant the decay of old age.

<sup>4</sup> The quotation ends here, it seems. The new sentence looks like a prose version of a Śloka, cf. V, 3, 2.

<sup>5</sup> Sāyana quotes Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 1, 2: *devo bhūtvā devān apyati* | He refers also to Brahma Sūtra, IV, 3, 15, and discusses whether this deification is a hindrance to real *mukti*, and decides it is really a step towards it. But of course the doctrine of *mukti* is not clearly found in this Āranyaka; see II, 1, 2, n. 9; Hopkins, *Religions of India*, pp. 232, 238 sq.

<sup>6</sup> For the nasal in *pluti*, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 299, 300; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 78.



The blood in the woman<sup>7</sup> is the form of Agni, therefore one should despise it not. The seed in the man is the form of Āditya, therefore one should despise it not. This self gives itself to that self, that self gives itself to this self.<sup>8</sup> They thus gain each other. In this form<sup>9</sup> he gains yonder world, in that form he experiences this world.

8. Here there are these verses:<sup>1</sup>—

<sup>7</sup> Ānandaīrtha has a wonderful explanation. This world and that world are both *svastrīrūpam* of Bhagavānt. Sāyaṇa explains that there are six elements in the body; three, fat, bone, and marrow, are white and represent the man; three, skin, blood, and flesh, are red and represent the woman. *ayam* is used of the woman because she is connected with earth, *asau* of the man because he is connected with the sun and the upper world.

<sup>8</sup> The fact that Sāyaṇa does not comment on *imasmai* shows how little he can be relied on to note points in the text. The reading is quite certain, and cf. Whitney, l. c., § 502 b.

<sup>9</sup> This is taken by Sāyaṇa and by Max Müller as referring to the words at once preceding. But it is perhaps rather a reference to the question above. Then *anena* will refer to the knowledge of Indra, and *amunā* to the human form produced by the union of the parents. Sāyaṇa seems to have been misled by the use of Agni and Āditya into misinterpreting *lokam*. The tone of the section is noteworthy when contrasted with the pessimism which the body and its imperfections induces in Buddhism and the later Upaniṣads (Maitrāyaṇī Upaniṣad, I, 2-4; Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 224). Max Müller's view (*S. B. E.*, XV, 1-11) that, despite its references to Nirvāṇa (p. xlv) and other hints at Buddhism (e. g. VII, 8), this Upaniṣad is anti-Pāṇinian cannot be supported. The irregular Sandhi is merely a conscious and deliberate archaism (so perhaps also in the Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra, a piece of patchwork), and generally the language is quite recent in form compared to the really old Upaniṣads. Deussen recognizes the later character and style of the Upaniṣad, and Winternitz (p. 225) definitely refers it to a post-Buddhistic date. Indeed Weber (*Indian Literature*, pp. 96 sq.) and Macdonell (*Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 230, 231) tend to refer it to classical times, though its doctrine is no doubt earlier. The optimism of the Upaniṣads is natural: what is other than the *ātman* is miserable, but not the *ātman*, cf. Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad, III, 5; Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 9; III, 6; Īśa Upaniṣad, 7; Hopkins, *Religions of India*, p. 240.

<sup>1</sup> The verses are probably older than the prose. They are earlier than the *tristubhs* cited by Patañjali (cf. Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 483 sq.) and show every sign of antiquity in their metrical form (cf. *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, pp. 1-10; Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XXX, xxxv; Hopkins, *Great Epic of India*, pp. 194 sq.) which is decidedly irregular. The third verses of 1, 2, 4 are *jagatis*, the first verse of 1 has only ten syllables, the last verse of 4 only 9, and even if by resolutions they are altered into 11 syllable verses, then the characteristic *tristubh* ending is missing. In no case are the four verses assimilated, and indeed in no case are even two verses assimilated. The last stanza, *pāda* 1, is in iambic-ended *anustubh*, a very early verse indeed. It is of course true, as Bloomfield (*Atharvaveda*, pp. 41, 42) points out, that the actual development of the *anustubh* (*pādas* 1 and 3) cannot possibly have been from  $\cup \cup \cup \cup \cup \cup \cup \cup \cup \cup$  to  $\cup - \cup - \cup - \cup - \cup$ , and thence to the Epic Śloka with its differentiated *pādas*, but that the iambic *anustubh* is a priestly as opposed to a popular verse with free *pādas* 1 and 3. But it is equally clear that the development of the iambic *anustubh* in the priestly circles was comparatively early and that the later verse-writers tended more and more to fall back (with sporadic cases of imitation such as in the Vināda hymns, see my criticisms<sup>a</sup> of Arnold's *Vedic Metre*, in *J. R. A. S.*, 1906,

<sup>a</sup> I may note here a small point confirmatory of my criticism of Prof. Arnold's views. The term *dakṣiṇa* (*pāda*) occurs in RV., X, 61, 8, which is therefore naturally called one of the

That fivefold body the undying enters,<sup>2</sup>  
 That which the harnessed steeds<sup>3</sup> draw to and fro,  
 In which is yoked the trueness of the true,<sup>4</sup>  
 In that are all the gods in one combined || 1 ||  
 Which from the undying<sup>5</sup> the undying joins,  
 That which the harnessed steeds draw to and fro,  
 In which is yoked the trueness of the true,  
 In that are all the gods in one combined || 2 ||

pp. 484 sq., 720) on the popular *anuṣṭubh* and its later development  $\cup \cup \cup \cup \cup - - \cup$ . That development is shown in the late Mantras found in the Gṛhya Sūtras, e.g. in thirty out of thirty-nine cases in the Śāṅkhāyana (Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, XXXVII, 67 sq.; *S. B. E.*, XXX, xxxv sq.); in the R̥gveda Prātiśākhya of Śaunaka (*S. B. E.*, l. c.); in the Bṛhaddevatā (*J. R. A. S.*, l. c.); in the Epic (Hopkins, l. c.; Jacobi, *Ind. Stud.*, XVII, 443 sq., *Das Rāmāyaṇa* (1893), and in *Gurupūjākaumudī* (1896)). It is quite possible and even probable that Oldenberg is right in thinking that the iambic hymns are in the R̥gveda earlier than the bulk of those hymns where the endings of the first *pāda* of each hemistich is unrestricted in point of form, the period of the Kuru princes, Parikṣit and Janamejaya\* (*Z. D. M. G.*, XXXVII, 65).

It is obvious that these verses are of the same type as the *yajñagāthās* of the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa and Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra (I, 3, 10), i.e. they were composed to illustrate and sum up the doctrines which the Āranyaka supports, and here as used are older than the work in which they occur (cf. Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XXX, xxxv-xxxvii; *Ind. Stud.*, XV, 11). These verses form an interesting parallel to the rise of the Ākhyāna, in which the verses perhaps denoted the chief movements in the narrative and were fixed before the prose (or verse later) connecting parts (Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, XXXVII, 54 sq.; XXXIX, 52 sq.; Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 89 sq.). For similar verses, see Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 6, 23; Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 8, &c. In Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, II, 4, 10, Śloka are mentioned after Vidyā, Upaniṣads, and before Sūtras in such a way as to suggest that such Śloka are as here occur are denoted. *Asyāḥ* is also a pre-Brāhmaṇa and R̥gvedic form, though occasionally found later, e.g. III, 2, 3.

<sup>2</sup> This is not very clear. Ānandatīrtha explains that the fivefold body is that composed of Nārāyaṇa, &c., and is male and female united, in which all the gods, Nārāyaṇa, &c., are united. Sāyaṇa explains that the breath enters the body, and the worshipper meditates on himself as identical with the breath and thus with all the gods. The five are presumably the five senses.

<sup>3</sup> The metaphor is common, cf. Kāthaka Upaniṣad, III, 4: *indriyāṇi hayān ākuḥ* | The senses are meant. Cf. Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, 12, and n. 14.

<sup>4</sup> i.e. *brahman* probably. At least so it was later interpreted, and the idea may well be early, though it might be enough to take it merely as 'the essence of truth'. Cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka, II, 3, 6: *atha nāmādheyaṇi satyasya satyam iti prāṇa vai satyaṇi teṣāṃ eṣa satyam* | For the position of *brahman* in the body with *prāṇa* Sāyaṇa cites Praśna Upaniṣad, VI, 3: *sa ikṣāṇ cakre kasmin nū aham utkrānta utkrānto bhaviṣyāmi kasmin vā pratiṣṭhite pratiṣṭhāsyāmīti sa prāṇam asṛjata* | For the next line, cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 4, 7: *ātmety evopāsītātra hy ete sarva ekaṇi bhavanti*; other examples are given in Jacob, *Concordance*, pp. 260 sq.

<sup>5</sup> The undying here is *brahman*, the other undying breath as in ver. 1 (Sāyaṇa).

latest hymns by Rhys Davids, *Buddhist India*, p. 30. But Prof. Arnold (*Vedic Metre*, p. 286) assigns this hymn to the archaic (by which he means the oldest) period!

\* Cf., however, Whitney in Colebrooke, *Essays*, I, 118, on legendary contemporaneities.



Of speech that which is 'yes' and which is 'no',  
That which is harsh<sup>6</sup> and that which is immense,  
Laying aside<sup>7</sup> have poets found their quest,  
They, bound by names,<sup>8</sup> rejoiced in the revealed || 3 ||

In which<sup>9</sup> revealed the poets did rejoice,  
In it in unity the gods exist,  
Casting aside all evil by this lore,<sup>10</sup>  
The wise one rises to the world of heaven || 4 ||

Neither by name of woman<sup>11</sup> is he called,  
Nor yet by name of neither man nor woman,  
Nor yet by name of man may he be named  
By him who fain would tell the name of breath || 5 ||

*Brahman* is called 'a' and the 'I' is there contained.<sup>12</sup> This is produced as a thousand *bṛhatis*. Of this produced as a thousand *bṛhatis* there are thirty-six thousand syllables. So many are the thousands of the days of man's life. By the syllable of life<sup>13</sup> alone does he obtain the day of life, and by the day of life the syllable of life. There is a chariot of the gods which destroys desires.<sup>14</sup> Its seat

<sup>6</sup> Sāyaṇa cites Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, IV, 27 (Ānandāśrama ed., p. 333): *khaṭ phad jāhi chindhi bhindhi handhi kaḍ iti vācaḥ krūrāṇi* | *ulbaṇiṣṇu* he renders *ākrośādikam*. Cf. also Āpastamba Śrauta Sūtra, XIV, 14, 1; Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 166; *Ved. Myth.*, III, 366.

<sup>7</sup> *vīyūya* like *nāmā* in ver. 4 appears 'metrical'.

<sup>8</sup> This merely means they rose above mere names to the unity of *brahman* or *prāṇa*. Sāyaṇa renders 'dependent on the letter "a" which is the name of *prāṇa*'. Ānandatīrtha refers to the names of Bhagavān.

<sup>9</sup> *nāmā* is rendered by Sāyaṇa as equivalent to *nāmāyattāḥ* above. This cannot be the case, nor can it well be for *nāmāni* as Ānandatīrtha construes it. It must be for *nāma*, the last *a* being lengthened *metri causa*. For such cases, cf. Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 62; Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 427; Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 9, 7; XVIII, 22, 10, even in prose (cf. *Intro.*, p. 70); *J. A. O. S.*, XXV, 98; below, III, 1, 2, n. 2.

<sup>10</sup> By the help of *brahman* is Sāyaṇa's version, and so also Ānandatīrtha takes it. More probably it is 'by aid of this doctrine'. For *apahatya*, cf. Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, II, 1; 10, 2.

<sup>11</sup> Sāyaṇa quotes Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, V, 10 (the late metre is noteworthy):—

*naiva strī na pumān eṣa naiva cāyaṃ napuṃsakaḥ* |

*yadyac charīram ādatte tena tena sa codyate* ||

For the nominative, cf. passages like Bṛhaddevatā, V, 39, where I would read *Iṣaspatih* with MSS. h. d.; Ṛgveda Prātiśākhya, XVII, 26; Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 4, &c.

<sup>12</sup> This must be taken as a clear assertion that *brahman* includes the individual self. Sāyaṇa says it refers to Hiraṇyagarbha quoting the very late Nṛsiṃhottaratāpanīya Upaniṣad, V: *īrāvāhaṃmānī Hiraṇyagarbhah* |

<sup>13</sup> Ānandatīrtha explains the *akṣara* as the female form of Viṣṇu, the *aḥas* (sic) as the male. As a matter of fact the sentence merely asserts he obtains *brahman* or *prāṇa* by means of *brahman* or *prāṇa*, as both are revealed in the syllable and the ritual of the Mahāvratā day, as in I, 2, 2.

<sup>14</sup> Sāyaṇa explains this as a chariot of Hiraṇyagarbha. Ānandatīrtha renders *anakāma-*

is speech, its two sides the ears, the horses the eyes, the driver the mind. Breath mounts upon it. A Ṛṣi says (RV., X, 39, 12), 'Come hither on what is quicker than mind,' and (RV., VIII, 73, 2), 'On what is quicker than the winking of an eye.'<sup>15</sup>

#### ADHYĀYA 4.

In the beginning<sup>1</sup> the one self was this, there was nothing else blinking. He<sup>2</sup> thought, 'Shall I create worlds?' He created these worlds, water, lights,

*māraḥ* as, 'Prāṇa has no desires and delights in *Māyā*,' i.e. *Ramā*. Really all that is meant is that there is a chariot, viz. the body, where *prāṇa* mounts, as contained above in the verses. Ānandatīrtha explains the *uddhi* as *Ramā* in snake form, *śrotr* as Candra and his wife, *pakṣas* as Candra and his wife, *caḥṣuṣi* as *Sūrya* and his wife, *manah* as *Rudra*. The metaphor is not rare, e.g. n. 3; quotation in Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 5, 3; Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 8; RV., III, 14, 7, as interpreted by Bergaigne (Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 270) where the prayer is a chariot; Atharvaveda, VIII, 8, 22, where *uddhi* and *pakṣas* also occur, and are rendered as above by Whitney; Maitrāyaṇī Saṃhitā, III, 4, 4; Kāthaka Saṃhitā, VIII, 8.

<sup>15</sup> Sāyaṇa adds a long disquisition (cf. Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, I, 235, 236) on the difference of this *prāṇavidyā* from that of the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad and the Chāndogya Upaniṣad, in which *prāṇa* is not related to the Mahāvrat ceremony. Following as usual Śaṅkara he also discusses what is the result of this *prāṇavidyā*, and concludes that it leads after death and absorption in the *paramātman* to rebirth in the *brahmaloka* where after enjoyment of all the powers of a deity, he proceeds to obtain full knowledge and *mukti*. But Śaṅkara ignores the fact that *mukti* is not as yet known to this Āranyaka, which in its philosophic doctrine reaches only the unity of existence and the identity of the self and *brahman*, and which promises immortality, not liberation, to the devout. It is impossible even to say that this Āranyaka, II, 1-3, realizes clearly the doctrine that all is consciousness, though it approaches this standpoint. It does not assert that the self is unknowable as pure subject or the unreality of existence, as is done by the later Upaniṣads and the Vedānta. To the writer of this Upaniṣad immortality meant a continuance of conscious existence, because the identity of the self and the world did not involve in any way the destruction of self. All that it involved was the destruction of what is really self from its accidents. It is of course true that this position is not strictly consistent, but it is no more unsatisfactory than that of Vedāntism.

<sup>1</sup> Śaṅkara, Ānandatīrtha, and Sāyaṇa all expend great efforts in explaining this short Upaniṣad, II, 4-6, but they mainly deal with difficulties which do not arise if no effort is made to reconcile this text with pure Vedāntism or to explain logically its inconsistencies. The real advance on II, 1-3, consists in (1) the fact that *ātman* is the subject, not as before *prāṇa*, *puruṣa*; (2) that *ātman* and *brahman* are more explicitly recognized as intelligence, but both these points are foreshadowed in II, 1-3. Max Müller (*S. B. E.*, I, 236) leans to the view that this Upaniṣad rises from the conception of life to that of the self, but this is rather too great a distinction. This Upaniṣad is a little more advanced than II, 1-3, but not much so. Deussen (*Sechzig Upanishads*), of course, interprets it as a later Upaniṣad and reads into it doctrines not contained in it. Colebrooke (*Essays*, I, 47-53); Röer (*Trans.*, pp. 26-34); and S. Sitārāma (*Upanishads*, V, 1-64) follow Śaṅkara. On *idam*, cf. Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, xix. Böhtlingk has rendered the Upaniṣad, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1890, p. 162; cf. 1891, p. 85; 1897, p. 95. For Rāmānuja's interpretation, cf. *S. B. E.*, XLVIII, 71, 81, 201, 206, 391, 417, 461, &c.

<sup>2</sup> This is an imitation of the *Puruṣa Sūkta*, RV., X, 90; cf. Taittirīya Āranyaka, III, 12, but, as Deussen points out, with the essential difference that the metaphysical *prīus* of the *puruṣa* is the *ātman*. The view of the relation of the *ātman* to the world is cosmogonic,



mortal, and waters. This water is above the<sup>3</sup> heaven, and heaven supports it. The lights are the sky. The mortal is the earth, those under the earth are the waters. He thought, 'There are these worlds. Shall I create guardians of the world?' He formed the person,<sup>4</sup> taking him out from the waters.<sup>5</sup> He brooded<sup>6</sup> on him, and when he was brooded over, a mouth burst forth as an egg does. From the mouth came speech, from speech fire. Nostrils burst forth. From the nostrils came forth scent,<sup>7</sup> from scent wind. Eyes burst forth. From the eyes came forth sight, from sight the sun. Ears burst forth. From the ears came forth hearing, from hearing the quarters.<sup>8</sup> Skin burst forth. From the skin came forth hairs, from hairs plants and trees. The heart burst forth. From the heart came forth mind, from mind the moon. The navel burst forth. From the navel came forth down-breathing,<sup>9</sup> from down-breathing death. The generative organ burst forth. From the organ came forth seed, from seed water.

not pantheistic. Of course the orthodox view of the commentators that the *ātmā* is the *Īvara*, not *virāj*, and the creation is *adhyāropa*, from II, 4, 1, to II, 4, 3. This is not, it is admitted by Sāyaṇa, clear from the text, but he appeals to Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad, IV, 10, *māyām tu prakṛtiṃ vidyād*, and Brahma Sūtra, I, 4, 23, *prakṛtiḥ ca pratijñād dṛṣṭāntānu-rodhāt*, besides other passages equally irrelevant. In Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 1, 1, *aikṣata* the regular form occurs. The Aitareya Brāhmaṇa often has unaugmented pasts, see p. 56; Böhtlingk, *Sachs. Ber.*, 1900, p. 413. The next clause, here and II, 4, 3, may be interrogative or merely an expression of determination (so commentators and translators). For *āpas*, cf. Atharvaveda, VI, 23, 2; *Ind. Stud.*, X, 440, n. 1; *J. A. O. S.*, XXV, 110.

<sup>2</sup> The translation of Max Müller, 'and it is heaven,' can hardly be right, and it is not supported by the commentators. It is true that heaven must come in somewhere, for it is sufficient if it comes in as a support, and so Böhtlingk and Deussen, with Colebrooke, Sītārāma, Rājārāma, and Röer take it. Ānandatīrtha explains *ambhas* as *mahas* and the other worlds beyond the heaven where the waters were originally placed; 'the blue firmament,' Rājārāma.

<sup>4</sup> This is the later *virāj* of the Vedānta. Ānandatīrtha calls it Brahman, in accordance with the Viṣṇu legend. Cf. Hopkins, *Rel. of India*, pp. 232 sq.

<sup>5</sup> The five elements (Sāyaṇa), Brahman, &c. (Ānandatīrtha).

<sup>6</sup> The sense of *√tap*, to create by will, is pointed out by Śaṅkara, who (cf. Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 87 sq., 91 sq.; Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 402 sq.) cites Muṇḍaka Upaniṣad, I, 1, 9: *yasya jñānamayaṃ tapas*. The translation here is borrowed from Max Müller (cf. also *S. B. E.*, XV, 28, n. 2). For *yathāṇḍam* below, cf. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 14, 8; Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa, II, 12. There are sets of three, the organ, the activity, and the natural phenomenon corresponding, which is later called the presiding deity. See e.g. the Anugītā, Mbh., XIV, 1119 sq. For this *syṣṭikrama*, cf. Chāndogya Upaniṣad, VI, 2; Taittiriya Āraṇyaka, II, 1.

<sup>7</sup> *Prāṇa* here means clearly the power of smell. Originally (1) it meant the breath in the widest sense, from which it came to denote (2) life or the principle of conscious life, as frequently in II, 1-3. On the other hand, (3) it was narrowed down to denote one of five *prāṇas*, II, 3, 3, and these *prāṇas* were contrasted with *manas* and the *indriyas*, though in death or sleep the fundamental character of the *prāṇas* came out. (4) The sense 'smell' is an independent and not very common development. (5) Another development applies it to all the organs of life, e.g. eyes, nose, tongue, see I, 3, 7, n. 6. Cf. *Sāṅkhya* Āraṇyaka, p. 21, n. 1.

<sup>8</sup> Ānandatīrtha explains them as Indra, Yama, Varuṇa, and Kubera.

<sup>9</sup> *Apāna* here has the other meaning of down-breathing, not inspiration, but breathing,

2. These deities<sup>1</sup> being created fell into this great ocean.<sup>2</sup> He troubled him with hunger and thirst. The deities spake to him, 'Grant us a place, where we can rest and eat food.' He led a cow<sup>3</sup> for them. They said, 'This is not enough for us.' He led a horse for them. They said, 'This is not enough.' He led man<sup>4</sup> to them. They said, 'Well done!'<sup>5</sup> Man is indeed well done. He said to them, 'Enter according to your places.'<sup>6</sup> Then fire,<sup>7</sup> having become speech, entered the mouth. Air, having become scent, entered the nostrils. The sun, having become sight, entered the eyes. The quarters, having become hearing, entered the ears. The plants and trees, having become hairs, entered the skin. The moon, having become mind, entered the heart. Death, having become down-breathing, entered the navel. The waters, having become seed, entered the generative organ. Hunger and thirst said to him, 'Grant us two a place.' He said to them, 'To these deities I assign you, I make you sharers

or wind, in the lower part of the body. Cf. on II, 3, 3, and II, 4, 3. Rājārāma takes it as 'air inhaled by mouth, *not through nostrils*'. Colebrooke has 'the air drawn in by deglutition', explaining that swallowing was considered a parallel to inhaling. Cf. *Z. D. M. G.*, LV, 261; LVI, 556; *J. A. O. S.*, XXII, 249.

<sup>1</sup> This section really reverses the former section. There *ātman* produced the worlds, then *puruṣa* and the deities. The deities now enter into *puruṣa*. Compare the common process in the Brāhmaṇas where the *brahman* creates the world and then enters it, but here the deities have no creative power, and the section only seems to show the reciprocal dependence (cf. Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 218, 219) of the deities and the senses, of the great cosmic forces and the microcosm. I take the subject of action to be the *ātman* throughout, so do Śaṅkara and Sāyaṇa. Röer apparently takes *puruṣa* as subject of all save the first two sentences. Colebrooke apparently read *abhyāchan* and so makes the *ātman* alone subject and object in the sentences.

<sup>2</sup> This must mean the ocean of being, from which *puruṣa* is evolved. Sāyaṇa says into the *virāj*, but this seems less probable. The *v. l.*, below, *āsanāyāpipāse* is the form in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, while in Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, IV, 23, *āsanayā ca pipāsā* is found. Cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 15: *āsanayāparītaḥ*; Aufrecht, p. 431; Böhtlingk, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1900, p. 418.

<sup>3</sup> Because it has no upper teeth, says Sāyaṇa. He is, however, right in quoting II, 3, 2, as showing the real reason for the preference of man, as the most intelligent.

<sup>4</sup> The commentators Ānandatīrtha and Sāyaṇa, who often follows him, Colebrooke, followed by Röer, Max Müller, and Deussen, explain this *puruṣa* as different from though allied to the *puruṣa* of II, 4, 1. This hardly seems likely, and the confusion of thought is just as great on the former theory as on the latter. The exact parallelism with II, 4, 1, of what follows is against their view. For the particle *su*, cf. *P. A. O. S.*, Apr. 1893, pp. xli-xliii.

<sup>5</sup> Śaṅkara suggests it may mean 'self made' (cf. Max Müller's trans. (*S. B. E.*, XV, 58) of Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 7) because man is created by his own illusion, or that he is the 'abode of all good actions', which S. Sitārāma in his trans. accepts. Max Müller (*S. B. E.*, XV, 20, n. 4) equates *sva*<sup>2</sup> and *sukṛta* as = deeds performed by oneself and believed to be good.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 18, 3, which may be borrowed.

<sup>7</sup> This means, Sāyaṇa says, that in the absence of the deity, the faculties cannot work. He quotes Brahma Sūtra, II, 4, 14: *jyotirādy adhiṣṭhānaṃ tadāmanāt*! Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, II, 11, 12, seems reminiscent of this passage.



in them.' Therefore to whatever deity an oblation is offered, hunger and thirst are partners in it.<sup>8</sup>

3. He thought, 'There are these worlds and the guardians of these worlds. Shall I create food for them?' He brooded over the waters.<sup>1</sup> From the waters brooded over form<sup>2</sup> was born. The form that was born was indeed food. The food when created sought to go away.<sup>3</sup> He was fain to seize it. He sought to grasp it with speech. He could not grasp it with speech. Had he been able to grasp it with speech, man would have enjoyed food by uttering its name alone. He sought to grasp it by scent.<sup>4</sup> He could not grasp it by scent. Had he been able to grasp it by scent, man would have enjoyed food by scenting it alone. He sought to grasp it by the eye. He could not grasp it by the eye. Had he been able to grasp it by the eye, man would have enjoyed food by seeing it alone. He sought to grasp it by the ear. He could not grasp it by the ear. Had he been able to grasp it by the ear, man would have enjoyed food by hearing it alone. He sought to grasp it by the skin. He could not grasp it by the skin. Had he been able to grasp it by the skin, man would have enjoyed food by touching it only. He sought to grasp it by the mind. He could not grasp it by the mind. Had he been able to grasp it by the mind, man would have enjoyed food by thinking of it alone. He sought to grasp it by the generative organ. He could not grasp it by that organ. Had he been able to grasp it

<sup>8</sup> Sāyaṇa, following Ānandatīrtha, explains that, as hunger is mitigated by the knowledge of its (i. e. food's) proximity, or by hearing of it, so the senses all appease hunger and thirst. Śaṅkara's view is that the sensations become eaters by sharing in the deities, i. e. fire, &c., in the body and in the world; so they share in every offering to a deity (i. e. the deity and the worshipper both eat).

<sup>1</sup> The five elements (Śaṅkara and Sāyaṇa).

<sup>2</sup> Form or organism, as Rājārāma translates it, is natural, not something imposed on matter, and it plays no such part in Indian thought as in Greek. Even the Buddhist *rūpam* is not a pregnant conception.

<sup>3</sup> Röer reads *nadat*, 'crying,' so Rājārāma, and see crit. notes. Śaṅkara explains 'that mice, &c., try to run away from cats that eat them'. He takes *ajighāmsat* as, 'it sought to run away,' and this is followed by Sāyaṇa and Ānandatīrtha and by Viśveśvaratīrtha, besides being accepted by Colebrooke, Röer, S. Sitārāma, and Rājārāma, Max Müller, and Deussen. But that this is correct seems very unlikely. Rather it may mean, 'He sought to strike, grasp it,' which idea is later developed in detail. This leaves the exact sense of *parāṇ* difficult. If it is neuter, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1117; Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 4; 6, 1; Kāṭha Upaniṣad, II, 4, 1; Maitrāyaṇīya Upaniṣad, VI, 17; Oertel, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, 226. But if it = to no purpose (cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 46, 2; Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 4) a tolerable sense is made as masculine. But I prefer Böhtlingk's *atyajighāmsat*; cf. Roth, *Z. D. M. G.*, XLVIII, 106-111. If *enat* is nom., cf. *Introd.*, p. 56. In Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 12, 5, occurs: *athainau dadhimadhu samānutah*, which Knauer (p. xlii) defends by quoting the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa passage (VII, 22) and Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXII, 1, and by the fact that *na* in Pāli occurs in the nom. (cf. Müller, *Pāli Grammar*, p. 88). Böhtlingk, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1896, p. 155; 1900, pp. 418, 428, denies the use.

<sup>4</sup> As above in II, 4, 1. For a rather similar list, cf. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 60.

by that organ, man would have enjoyed food by sending it forth alone. He sought to grasp it by down-breathing. He obtained it.<sup>5</sup> Thus it is Vāyu who lays hold of food, and Vāyu is he who lives by food.<sup>6</sup> He thought, 'How can this be without me?'<sup>7</sup> He thought, 'By which way<sup>8</sup> shall I enter?' He thought, 'If speech distinguishes, if scent smells, if the eye sees, if the ear hears, if the skin feels, if the mind thinks, if down-breathing digests, if the organ sends forth, what then am I?' Having split open the top of the skull he entered by that door. That door is called *vidyā*, the place of happiness.<sup>9</sup> There are three<sup>10</sup> dwelling-places of him, three dreams, this dwelling-place, and this, and this. Born he looked through all beings, to see whether any one wished to proclaim

<sup>5</sup> *Vāyu* is derived from *āvayat*. The use of this causal form is confined to this sense, but is found both in *Saṃhitā* and *Brāhmaṇa*. The sense is perhaps 'consumed' rather than 'seized'. Possibly *ā vī* is the source (Monier-Williams' *Dict.*), but this is less likely; cf. *J.A.O.S.*, XVII, 53; *Ind. Stud.*, XVIII, 24.

<sup>6</sup> Or he who gives life by food, as Sāyaṇa and Ānandatīrtha take it, quoting *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad*, II, 2, 1; *annaṃ dāma*, IV, 3, 6, and *Kauṣṭhiki Upaniṣad*, III, 2. Sāyaṇa describes the passage as *śiṣubrāhmaṇa*. For the long series of conditionals, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 950; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 366; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 198. These cases are all normal: they refer to a past unreal condition, for the act of creation is not conceived as continuous, and correspond to the Latin pluperfect subject or the Greek aorist indic. in protasis with *ἄν* with aorist in apodosis. The form *agrahaṭiṣyat* is remarkable; cf. *Altareya Brāhmaṇa*, VI, 24: *paryagrahaṭiṣam*; *ibid.*, 35: *pratyajagrahaṭiṣam*, and see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 904 b, 1068 a, for other cases of the anomaly. The *Suparādhya* also contains the form *agrahaṭiṣam*, Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xxxii; see *Mantrapāṭha*, II, 8, 3, *agrahaṭiṣam*; cf. Böhlingk, *Z.D.M.G.*, LIV, 511, with Bloomfield, *ibid.*, XLVIII, 577; *J.A.O.S.*, XXV, 135.

<sup>7</sup> Śaṅkara illustrates by the metaphor, 'Unless the lord the city keep, the watchers watch in vain.' There must be the soul in the body. Sāyaṇa compares *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad*, III, 4, 1. Contrast with Aristotle, *De Animā*, III, 5, is interesting.

<sup>8</sup> I.e. by the tip of the foot, as in II, 1, 4, or the skull. Sāyaṇa connects the former with the *karmendriyas*, the latter with the *jñānendriyas*. Ānandatīrtha refers to a variant in Śaṅkara's commentary *antar* for *ataḥ*. It obviously must have been wrong, but it is worth noting that Śaṅkara's text was not very complete or certain. It is noteworthy that here we have no hint of *karmaṇ* (cf. *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad*, III, 2, 13 sq.; IV, 4, 2-5).

<sup>9</sup> So called because connected with Hari, says Ānandatīrtha. The *Jaiminīya Upaniṣad* *Brāhmaṇa* knows a *nāndana sāmān* and *Sāmaveda*, II, 651, a *nāndana svarga*.

<sup>10</sup> These three are variously interpreted. Śaṅkara gives two explanations. The first is that of right eye, inner mind, and ether in the heart. Ānandatīrtha explains the mind as in the throat, and identifies the heart with the ether. He thus gets, in his own commentary, the triad, right eye, throat, and heart, and so Colebrooke. Sāyaṇa as often follows him rather than Śaṅkara, and after him cites the *Brahma Upaniṣad*, III: *netre jāgaritaṃ vidyāt kaṇṭhe svapnaṃ samā-dīṣet | suṣuptaṃ hrdayasya tu* (al. *hrdayastham*) | Śaṅkara and the others explain the states as of waking, dreaming, and deep sleep, for all are sleep as compared with true knowledge of *brahmaṇ* (cf. *Kaivalya Upaniṣad*, XII). The other explanation is that referring to another birth, viz. one's own body, and those of one's mother and father; this is no doubt quite wrong, but Sāyaṇa reconciles the two theories by assigning two kinds of *saṃsāra*, *dinavya-vahāra* and *janmāntaravahāra*, to which the theories correspond.



another self.<sup>11</sup> He saw this person only as the most widely extended *brahman*.<sup>12</sup> I have seen it, so he said. Therefore he was Idamdra by name, he was indeed

<sup>11</sup> Śaṅkara does not explain this passage. Ānandatīrtha says that either he regarded it as clear or his copyists (cf. n. 8) omitted it. His own explanation gives us a choice. (1) He identified himself with creatures because he did not see the true self, *itī* being used in the sense of *yasmāt*, or simply, he identified himself with creatures: he did not see the true self, *itī* marking the close of the *adhyāropa* section. (2) The *adhyāropa* ends with *āvasatha itī*, and with *sa jāta* begins the *apavāda*. He examined the creatures separately, whether they had *svatātā* *sattā* or not, and concluded that 'there is nothing that I can call different from the true self'. *Vadīyāmi* is given for *vāvadiṣat*. Sāyaṇa follows this one of Ānandatīrtha's explanations, using some of the actual words. Colebrooke has, 'What else (but him) can I here affirm (to exist)?' S. Sītārāma renders, 'How should he speak of any other?' and Röer has, 'How could he desire to declare any other thing different from him?' Rājārāma, 'Can any (element) here call (the ruler) different?' Max Müller and Deussen render, 'whether anything wished to proclaim here another self.' This must be right, or perhaps the subject should be 'any person', the difference is, however, slight. This version is supported by Ānandatīrtha in his own commentary, *ika bhūteṣu anyam matto 'nyam pravartakam vāvadiṣat kiṃ vadet*, says Viṣṇu. *Vāvadiṣat* cannot refer to the subject of *abhiyāikhyat* and *anyam* must refer to *ātmanam*. *Vāvadiṣat* may be an intensive aor. subj., or the injunctive of a desid. from the intensive, both rare forms (Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 1019, 1025). Nilakanṭha thinks this passage is referred to in the Mokṣadharmā, Mbh., XII, 10060, no doubt wrongly, see Deussen's trans., p. 493. For *abhiyāikhyat*, *abhiyāikṣat* should certainly be read. The confusion between *khy* and *kṣ* is very frequent in all sorts of MSS, cf. Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, IV, 273; Hillebrandt's notes on Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, IV, 12, 10; 15, 1; Gobhila Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 3, 18 (Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XXX, 21); Knauer, *Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra*, p. xxxv; Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, pp. 174, 175, and at great length in his forthcoming work, *Zur Stammbildung*, &c., on *kṛcchra*; Z. D. M. G., L, 42; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 136; *Epigr. Ind.*, IV, 122, *prakhyālita* for *prakṣālita*. The Nirukta, III, 20, already recognizes it and uses it in connecting *√khyā* with *rkṣa*. On the other hand T, a South Indian MS., has the correct *°kṣat*, though perhaps only by conjecture. Rājārāma gives the form as Vedic for *abhiyāikhyat*, and no doubt a confused remembrance of such a form may have helped to keep the absurdity in the text when once it had forced its way in. *Vāvadiṣat* he gives as *let* of *√vad*. For *ātman* he accepts the etymology from *√at*, the 'motor' or 'vital force'. Geldner (*Vedische Studien*, III, 116, 117) adopts the etymology of Weber and Garbe (*Die Sāṅkhya-Philosophie*, p. 293) of *ātman* from *√at* and so denoting (1) the wandering wind, (2) the *saṃsārīn* soul, whence come the other meanings, person, self, body, nature. It is quite possible that the soul and the wind were deemed to be closely connected—there are plenty of parallels—but of course in this case we cannot take *saṃsārīn* in the technical sense. The more usual derivation is from *√an* (Roth), while Deussen (*Allg. Gesch. der Phil.*, I, 1, 285 sq.) prefers to derive *ātman* from two pronominal stems. No explanation as yet offered is satisfactory, since none explains Vedic *tmanā*, &c. (Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 61). Böhtlingk's conj. *vāva diṣet*, 'to see if it referred to any one save himself,' is good, but not essential.

<sup>12</sup> The commentators all read *brahma* separately, and though the sense would be much the same this is better than to take *brahmatatamam* (with S text) as one word. The commentators and translators all agree it is for *tatatamam*, and Deussen compares *durniṣprapataram* in Chāndogya Upaniṣad, V, 10, 6. We may also compare *navamam* (= *navatamam* according to Max Müller in RV., V, 27, 3, see Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 422) *Varuṇavāyvitamam* for *°itatomam* in V, 3, 2, though there the Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 10, 1, reads *pari-*

Idamdra by name. Him who is Idamdra they call Indra<sup>13</sup> mysteriously. For the gods love mystery.<sup>14</sup>

#### ADHYĀYA 5.

In man<sup>1</sup> he is from the first as a germ.<sup>2</sup> That seed is strength gathered from all the limbs and he thus bears a self in his self. When he connects the seed to the woman, then he causes it to be born. That is his first birth. The seed becomes the self of the woman like one of her own limbs. Therefore it hurts her not. She nourishes the self he has given her there. She, as nourisher, is to be nourished. The woman bears the germ. The man before the birth of the child and thereafter<sup>3</sup> supports him. When he supports the child before its birth and

*yatanam*, and for a large number of somewhat similar (but often doubtful) cases, Wackernagel; *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 280; II, i, 128; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, pp. 58, 59; Bloomfield, *P. A. O. S.*, April, 1893, p. xxxv; *A. J. P.*, XVII, 416-418. Otherwise it might be translated 'just that' in accordance with Pāṇini, V, 3, 93, for which use Bhāgavata Purāṇa, X, 36, 28 is also cited; so Böhtlingk, and in Chāndogya, I, c., *ātana* is now read.

<sup>13</sup> For Indra as a designation of *ātman* cf. II, 3, 7, n. 1. For *adarśam*, Lévi, p. 107.

<sup>14</sup> The phrase here occurs in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 43, 1: *ity ācakṣate parokṣaṃ parokṣakāmā hi devāḥ*; a similar but characteristically slightly different phrase occurs repeatedly in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VI-X, but not in I-V; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 268; X, 127. Cf. also Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 2, 2, where Indra is mysteriously called Indha as the person in the right eye, for the same reason as here. Winternitz (*Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 161) happily compares the riddles found in the Rgveda, the Atharvaveda, and the Yajurveda. The gods require amusement as well as reverence. So also the gods must have animals to play with (Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 148; Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, p. 74, and Keith, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 936). Other examples of obscurity are Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VI, 1, 1, 2; VII, 5, 1, 22 (Winternitz, p. 177). Cf. also Winternitz, *Mantrapāṭha*, I, xxix, n. Śaṅkara sums up the result of this chapter in an interesting and polemical discussion of the *ātman* as eternal and unthinkable subject (U, pp. 50-64, trans. by S. Sītārāma, pp. 39-49); but what he says bears rather on his system than on the Upaniṣad. See also Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, p. 38, n. 6.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa following Śaṅkara thus sums up the result of the Upaniṣad in the introduction to this Adhyāya. There is (1) *brahman* undeveloped and truly real; (2) then *adhyāropa* in (a) the fourteen worlds in *brahman's* egg, (b) *virāj* who regards the worlds as his body, (c) the *indriyas* arising in his body, (d) the presiding deities, (e) the subjects of the *indriyas* including man, (f) the food of the deities and its appropriation, (g) the three states of the self; (3) the *apavāda*, beginning with *sa jātāḥ* and ending with the end of II, 4, 3. This section takes up as regards other births than the present the question of the three states of the soul. This section seems to be referred to in the Mokṣadharmas, Mbh., XII, 10862, and 9494. Cf. Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI, 2, 1, 1; Lévi, p. 107. For the egg, cf. Gomperz, *Greek Thinkers*, I, 93.

<sup>2</sup> This simple and early narrative should not, of course, be explained by the *pañcāgnividyā* as Sāyaṇa proposes, but is much earlier in conception. Ānandatīrtha explains the whole as a question of the different manifestations of Viṣṇu. The edd. except Sītārāma and U and Rājārāma punctuate at *retas*, but the comm. and the parallelism *yad etad—tad etad* are in favour of the other punctuation. The sense is the same. Böhtlingk's *enam* (= *ātmanam*) is not essential.

<sup>3</sup> The commentators here differ. Śaṅkara and Ānandatīrtha in his *tīkā* take (1) *janmano* 'gre' as 'before birth'; (2) *agra eva* as *jātamātram*; (3) *adhi* as 'after birth'. This seems preferable, except that *agra eva* must be considered as explained by *janmano* 'gre'. Ānandatīrtha in his *bhāṣya* explains (1) as above; (2) as *agryaḥ, sarvagunāgryaḥ*; (3) *adhi* as



thereafter, he supports in truth himself, for the continuation of these worlds.<sup>4</sup> For thus are these worlds continued. This is his second birth. This self<sup>5</sup> is appointed for holy deeds. The other self having done its duty and attained old age departs, and departing hence is born again. This is his third birth.<sup>6</sup> A poet says (RV., IV, 27, 1), 'Within the womb, I learned all the races of these gods. A hundred brazen forts restrained me, but like a hawk I escaped swiftly downward.'<sup>7</sup> Vāmadeva lying in the womb thus declared this. Knowing this, he

*adhikatvena*. Sāyaṇa renders (1) *agra eva* as *prasavāt prāg eva*; (2) *janmano 'gre* as *prasavād ūrdhvam*; (3) *adhi* as *adhikatvena*, apparently borrowing this from Anandatīrtha's *bhāṣya*. The services before and after birth which Rājārāma Rāmākṣṣa Bhāgavata alone recognizes, as apparently also Colebrooke, are explained as the nourishing the mother and performing the usual ceremonies before and after birth. It is just possible, however, that *adhibhāvayati* is the verb, and the reference is only to what is done before birth. Böhtlingk omits *agra eva*.

<sup>4</sup> Contrast the late and elaborate passage in Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, II, 15. The passage, Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 11, is fundamentally different.

<sup>5</sup> That is the son. The following passage is quoted by Śaṅkara on Bṛhadāranyaka Upaniṣad, p. 307.

<sup>6</sup> Śaṅkara explains that as father and son are one *ātman* (cf. V, 3, 3), the three births are correct. Sāyaṇa says either (1) the *ātman* being one, it has three births, two as son, one as father; or (2) the two births of the son have analogies in the case of the father and that of the father in the case of the son, so that each has three births. The third birth is taken by the commentators as rebirth in heaven, hell, or in the world of men. Probably, as there is no proof that the Upaniṣad knows the doctrine of transmigration, it refers to being born in the next world, an idea familiar in the Brāhmaṇas (cf. Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, pp. 168, 169; *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 223, 224) which differs essentially from transmigration, i.e. birth into this world again, see Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, pp. 294, 295; E. T., pp. 325 sq.; Lévi, pp. 96, n. 1, 97, n. 1; Hillebrandt, *Ved. Myth.*, II, 8; contra, Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, II, 288; Böhtlingk, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1893, p. 92. For *vayo-gata*, see Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 190.

<sup>7</sup> This verse is very obscure in this connexion. Śaṅkara, Anandatīrtha, and Sāyaṇa all explain it as referring to the innumerable bodies through which Vāmadeva had passed until he obtained *mukti* through knowledge. This meaning cannot be got from the passage. The context seems to show that it only means that Vāmadeva knew the three births of *ātman*, and so escaped and became immortal. The doctrine of *mukti* is not apparently known to the writer of the Upaniṣad. If it were, it would be made clear. For the meaning of the verse in the original cf. Bergaigne, *Rel. Véd.*, III, 322; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, xx, n. 1; Roth, *Z. D. M. G.*, XXXVI, 353; Hillebrandt, *Ved. Myth.*, I, 282; and especially Bloomfield, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, 1-24, who explains the myth as referring to Agni. When the cloud is rent in the storm, the lightning (= *īyena*) breaks from the cloud and simultaneously the Soma flows upon the earth. Sāyaṇa in his R̥gvedic commentary follows this passage. On RV., IV, 26, 1, Sāyaṇa says that Vāmadeva, who had in his mother's womb the knowledge of Brahman, sets forth that knowledge of the identity of himself and Brahman, in the verses *aham Manur*, &c. (so Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, IV, 4, 2, 21 and 22). So [Sāyaṇa] on Atharvaveda, XVIII, 3, 15: *sa khalu garbhāvastha eva sann utpannatattvajñānaḥ svaya sārvaśmīyam anusaṃdadhau*. Sieg (*Die Sagenstoffe des R̥gveda*, pp. 76 sq.) holds, no doubt, rightly that the idea is not found in the RV. passage, but no conclusion as to the priority of the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, I. c., can of course be drawn from the fact that no mention is there made of the legend, which may quite well have been known to the Śatapatha, though not referred to. His version

stepped forth after the destruction<sup>8</sup> of the body, and having enjoyed all delights in the world of heaven he became immortal.<sup>9</sup>

#### ADHYĀYA 6.

Who is he<sup>1</sup> whom we meditate on as the self?<sup>2</sup> Which is that self? That by which one sees, by which one hears, by which one smells scents, by which one forms speech, by which one discriminates sweet and sour? That which is the heart and the mind,<sup>3</sup> perception, injunction, understanding, knowledge, wisdom, vision, firmness, thinking, considering, helping, memory, resolution, will, breath, love, and desire?<sup>4</sup> All these are only names of knowledge.<sup>5</sup> That (self) is

(pp. 88 sq., cf. Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 211 sq.) of this verse takes the last part as meaning, 'Then came the eagle; through the swift one (*javasā* as an adj.) I escaped,' the speaker being (as in IV, 18) Indra himself. Sieg reconstructs the myth as one in which Indra even before birth desires lordship over the gods, who therefore try first to prevent his birth and then seek to restrain him, until he escapes by the eagle's aid. This is very ingenious but not proved.

<sup>8</sup> *Sarirabhandāt* according to Anandatīrtha. After death, Śaṅkara and Sāyaṇa. This seems certain and is followed by the translators including Sītārāma and Rājārāma.

<sup>9</sup> The end of this section is, Sāyaṇa says, to produce disgust with the body and with the series of lives undergone by the unenlightened. There is no trace of this in the original. Rājārāma Rāmakaṣṇa Bhāgavata has an original view of this section (ed., Bombay, 1898, p. 7). He takes it as dealing with (a) the seminal soul which as transferred has its first birth, (b) the second birth as a human being, (c) death and rest in the indestructible heaven. 'The third sleep is the sleep of death beginning in this, and ending in the heavenly world.' This version of the Upaniṣad—though coloured by Christian influences—yet seems to me to recognize the fact that transmigration is not referred to. Similarly he derives from II, 4, 3 that the human brain is entered by the highest spirit and so becomes worthy of life.

<sup>1</sup> This Adhyāya is the final answer to the questions proposed; *upāsmahe* may also be translated 'worship' or 'service'. Colebrooke takes it: 'What is this soul? that we may worship him.'

<sup>2</sup> Max Müller and Böhtlingk read *ko yam*, but Śaṅkara undoubtedly took it as *ko 'yam*; and though awkward the construction is not impossible, cf. RV., VIII, 4, 6; *J. A. O. S.*, XV, 257. *Kataṛaḥ* no doubt refers to the two views of *ātman* hinted at in II, 4, 3 and here developed as a mere spirit or a central function.

<sup>3</sup> The idea that there is one central function is clearly here developed, and this denial that the senses, &c. are essentially different is creditable to the thought of the Upaniṣad. It is the idea developed in the *Theaetetus*, 184 sq.; *Republic*, 533 sq. Cf. Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, III; Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 5, 3, which is the famous assertion that it is by *manas* man sees and hears. See Deussen, op. cit., p. 246; E. T., p. 273. Sāyaṇa endeavours to discriminate *hṛdayam* and *manas* as *buddhi* and *manas*, but Śaṅkara regards them as one. The construction is clearly as taken in the translation, though Röer and Sītārāma differ.

<sup>4</sup> That these terms, which remind us of the later meaningless Buddhist repetitions, had ever any definite meanings is most improbable. Śaṅkara renders them thus: *saṃjñānam* = *cetanabhāvaḥ*, *ājñānam* = *īśvarabhāvaḥ*, *viññānam* = *kalādīpariññānam*, *prajñānam* = *prajñatā*, *medhā* = *granthadhāraṇasāmarthyam*, *dyōtir* = *indriyadvārā sarvaviśayopalabdhiḥ*, *dhṛtir* = *dhāraṇam*, *matir* = *mananam*, *manīṣā* = *svātantryam*, *jūtiḥ* = *cetaso rūjādiduḥkhitvabhāvaḥ*, *smṛtiḥ* = *smaraṇam*, *saṃkalpaḥ* = *śuklakṛṣṇādibhāvena saṃkalpanam rūpādīnām*, *kratur* = *adhyaśāsāyaḥ*, *asuḥ* = *prāṇanādijīvanakriyānimittā vṛttiḥ*, *kāmaḥ* = *asaṃnikṛtaviśayākāṅkṣā*, *trīṣṇā*, *valaḥ* = *strīvyatikarādyaḥkūlāḥ*. Anandatīrtha's explanations are, in order, *saṃjñakjñāna*,



*brahman*,<sup>6</sup> Indra, Prājapati, all the gods, the five great elements,<sup>7</sup> earth, air, ether, water, lights, all these and those which are mixed with small as it were,<sup>8</sup> seeds of various kinds, born of eggs, born from the womb, born from heat,<sup>9</sup> born from germs,<sup>10</sup> horses, cows, men, elephants, and all that breathes, whether it walks or *ātatajñāna*, *vividhajñāna*, *prakṛstajñāna*, *avisprstajñāna*, *darśana*, *dhāraṇa*, *māsu pramāṇesu tatatvān matiḥ*, *brahmādīnām īśatvam*, *sarvapreraṇa*, *sarveṣu deśakāleṣu svarūpeṣu ca samam ramate*, *sarvaktipti*, *sarvakatyatvam asana*, *amṛtānanda*, *svatantratva*. Sāyaṇa borrows from both; he refers *samjñānam* to *samyak*, *medhā* to *granthatadārtihadhāraṇam*, *jūtiḥ* to *javas* or as in Śaṅkara, *samkalpaḥ* to *asamīcīne 'pi vastuni samyaktvena kalpanam*; for the rest he follows faithfully Śaṅkara. Rājārāma renders: 'consciousness, direction, sagacity, intelligence, retentive power, understanding, courage, power of thinking, freedom of thought, intrepidity, memory, will, capacity, vitality, ambition, obedience.' Böhtlingk makes these subjects and *prajñāmetram* predicate.

<sup>5</sup> This may fairly be construed as an assertion of the pre-eminence of knowledge. The parallel passage in the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, III, is clearly later, for it combines elaborately the doctrine of *prāṇa* (see II, 1-3, above) and that of *prajñā*. The relations cannot be reversed.

<sup>6</sup> Possibly masculine as Śaṅkara, Ānandatīrtha, and Sāyaṇa think, followed by Colebrooke, Röer, Sītārāma, Rājārāma, Max Müller, Böhtlingk, and Deussen. But this is not necessary nor likely in view of the neuter below, and Brahman (m.) is not found as a deity in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa (but only as priest, p. 68). The occurrence in Maitrāyaṇī Saṃhitā, II, 9, 1, is interpolated, v. Schroeder, *Ind. Lit.*, p. 91, n. 1. Muir, *Sansk. Texts*, V, 323, finds the masc. in various Śatapatha passages, unnecessarily. But it occurs, e.g. Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, I, 3. The masc. is natural and is helped by the following masc.

<sup>7</sup> This passage is relied on by Deussen (op. cit., p. 168; E. T., pp. 185, 186) in support of his view (accepted by Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 217 sq., and Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 205) of the lateness of the Aitareya Upaniṣad. But there is nothing in the expression itself to demand a late date, and the fact that the version in the Upaniṣad of the creation is so detailed, instead of being a proof of lateness, may rather be considered a sign of early date, when the creation still was considered a real act and the doctrine of the omnipresence of *brahman* as consciousness was not so fully developed. The passages, Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 4, 7; Chāndogya Upaniṣad, VI, 2, 3, both contain a reference to name and form, a conception familiar to Buddhism but not apparently at all early. The Taittirīya, II, 6, is evidently a mere *résumé* of a well-known doctrine. But that Upaniṣad bears conspicuous traces of lateness; indeed it already quotes Ślokaḥ very often and becomes quasi-metrical, while it knows the Atharvāṅgīrasas (II, 3) and has a much developed theory of the *kośas* of *ātman*. For the elements (*ākāśa* = empty space), see Böhtlingk, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1900, pp. 149-151; Keith, *J. R. A. S.*, 1909, July.

<sup>8</sup> Mixed with small (Śaṅkara). *Iva* he calls meaningless. Cf. I, 1, 2, n. 3; III, 2, 6. 'Mixed from smaller portions (of the former)' is Röer's version, which is no doubt the sense. The others of various sorts are opposed to the great elements. Colebrooke has: 'joined with minute objects and other seeds.'

<sup>9</sup> Śaṅkara explains as *yūkādīni* which Ānandatīrtha accepts. Sāyaṇa renders *krimīdaṇṣādīni*. The word does not occur in the Chāndogya Upaniṣad, VI, 3, 1, but it is impossible to accept that as a valid proof of later date since such lists (cf. those of the *prāṇas*, I, 3, 7; 4, 1) vary enormously in the same book. In *jārujāni*, cf. *jāru*, Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa, II, 430, 6 (*J. A. O. S.*, XIX, 100); Böhtlingk's *jarāyu* is not necessary. For a similar list cf. Anugītā, Mbh., XIV, 1134.

<sup>10</sup> Rendered by Śaṅkara *vykṣādīni*, by Ānandatīrtha *bhuvanā bhittvā jātāni tṛṇādīni*, and by Sāyaṇa *tarugulmādīni*. Rājārāma has 'shoot-born'. The form is normal and is not a case

flies, and what is immovable. All that is guided by knowledge, it rests on knowledge. The world is guided by knowledge. Knowledge is its foundation.<sup>11</sup> Knowledge is *brahman*. He<sup>12</sup> by his knowing self having left this world and having obtained all delights in the world of heaven became immortal.

## ADHYĀYA 7.

My speech rests on mind, my mind on speech. Be thou revealed to me.<sup>1</sup>

of *gy=dy* for *udbhīdya* (cf. Scheftelowitz, *Zur Stammbildung in den indo-germanischen Sprachen*, § 10).

<sup>11</sup> The question is whether this justifies an attribution to the author of the doctrine that knowledge alone exists. It is quite open to argue that we only are given the doctrine that the world is guided by knowledge, which leaves us with a final dualism. I think probably the author went further and intended to assert the origin of all from knowledge, cf. II, 4. If so, he represents exactly the later Bhāgavata view,<sup>a</sup> perhaps that of Bādarāyaṇa, of the nature of reality. The self, or god, is conceived as creating the material world as a reality,<sup>b</sup> but the exact nature of the creation is left vague. The relation of *brahman* and *ātman* is likewise left vague, a mere identification such as may have been meant being of little value. But of course none of the questions had yet clearly presented themselves. Cf. Thibaut, *S.B.E.*, XXXIV, xcvi sq.; XLVIII, Introd., for Rāmānuja's view, and my reviews of Deussen's *Philosophie der Upanishads*, *J.R.A.S.*, 1906, pp. 590 sq., and of his *Vier philosophische Texte*, *J.R.A.S.*, 1907, pp. 462 sq.; Grierson, *J.R.A.S.*, 1908, p. 361. Rājārāma renders *prajñāna* 'source of intelligence'.

<sup>12</sup> According to Śaṅkara, this refers to Vāmadeva, see II, 5.

<sup>1</sup> *āvīr āvīr ma edhī* is apparently the correct reading, but the second *āvīr* is very curious. Sāyaṇa escapes the difficulty by equating the *āvīr* to *svaprakāśaṃ brahmācāitanyam* and taking it as a vocative, the rendering *āvīr edhī* as *prakaṣi bhava*, which (though followed by Colebrooke) is unfortunately quite impossible. The phrase *āvīr + √as*, &c. is not at all rare, e.g. RV., I, 31, 3: *āvīr bhava Vivāsvate* (where Bergaigne, *Rel. Vtd.*, I, 55, conjectures, no doubt rightly, *bhavaḥ*, see Oldenberg, *S.B.E.*, XLVI, 25); I, 146, 4; IV, 10, 8 (= AV., XX, 77, 8); I, 16; V, 1, 9: *āvīr yāsmāi cārutamo babhūtha*; V, 2, 9: (Agni) *āvīr vīsvāni kṛṇute mahitvā*, VII, 103, 8; AV., XII, 1, 60, and *āvīr āvīr edhī* (as read in K) would be perfectly natural, but could hardly have been corrupted into the traditional text. I would suggest that we have here in external combination an example of the working of the tendency which causes *is* in internal combination to be lengthened where it is part of the stem (e.g. *āśīḥ*, *sajūḥ*, see Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 10; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 42, 43; II, i, 126). This point may be noted in favour of the view that in *āvīs* the *vis* is part of the stem (cf. *St. Petersburg Dictionary*, s. v.). With the whole should be compared Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 4, 4: which has *vān me manasi pratiṣṭhitā mano me vāci pratiṣṭhitam āvīr āyur mayi dhehi vedasya vānīḥ* (sic) *sthaḥ*, and, preceding all this, after the words *prāk sviṣṭakṛto 'tha jāpati*, the words *ṛtaṃ vadīṣyāmi* to the end. The reading *vānīḥ* is no doubt wrong, being a corruption of *ma ānī* by Sandhi, *mānī* with *h* incorrectly restored (it of course would in any case in most MSS. disappear before *sth*). It appears from Knauer's Crit. Note (p. 6) that

<sup>a</sup> Cf. Rājārāma Rāmakṛṣṇa Bhāgavata's ed., p. 7, where he finds in II, 6 the doctrine that all has its source in the highest spirit.

<sup>b</sup> Cf. Windelband, *History of Philosophy*, pp. 252 sq.



You are the two pins<sup>2</sup> of the Veda. May my lore forsake<sup>3</sup> me not. I join day and night with what I have learned. I will proclaim the real, I will proclaim the true.<sup>4</sup> May this protect me, may this protect the teacher. May it protect me, may it protect the teacher.

*vāṇīḥ* is a conjecture of his: the text MSS. in I, 4, 4 have either *vāṇīm* or *vāṇī*, while, *ibid.* 8, all save one (*vāṇīm*) have *vāṇī*. Only one Paddhati (cf. p. iv) has *vāṇīm*, obviously an error for *vāṇīm* (which of course (cf. V, 1, 6, n. 4) is the Sandhi of *vāṇī om*), if it is not a mere misreading of the MS. There is thus no real support for *vāṇīḥ* (how exactly Dr. Knauer would take it, I am not sure), and in the Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra the simple Sandhi *mātmā* for *me + ātmā* is actually found in I, 3, 2 (so also I, 9, 11: *viṣṭarāsi*<sup>o</sup>; I, 11, 16: *viśvādī*, &c., see Knauer, p. xxxix). Probably *mānī* lead to the more intelligible (to the scribe) *vāṇī*.

For *vāṇī*, &c., Knauer, who does not notice the Aitareya passage, quotes Pāraskara Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 3, 25; Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 5, 9, 2; Taittirīya Āraṇyaka (Āndhra text), X, 72; Atharvaveda, XIX, 60, 1. There is also the parallel version in Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 1, where *vedasāmatsārīṇīḥ* takes the place of *vedasya*, &c. This may perhaps mean 'hidden in', but probably we have a mere corruption; see my translation. The Mantras are no doubt old enough. Colebrooke, who comments on the use of Mantra as applicable to part of an Upaniṣad, renders, 'May my speech be founded on understanding, and my mind be attentive to my utterance.'

<sup>2</sup> *Ānanayasamarthe*, Sāyaṇa. Colebrooke renders, 'For my sake (O speech and mind!) approach this Veda;' perhaps reading *mānu*. Dr. Scheftelowitz takes it as 'navel'. The word in the Rgveda, I, 35, 6, &c. (cf. Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 39), seems to refer to the pin of the axle of a cart, and the metaphor is natural enough; cf. Leumann, *Et. Wört.*, p. 31.

<sup>3</sup> *prahāsīḥ* may be a second person, or a problematic third person based on a false analogy (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 889; Weber, *Berl. Sitz.*, 1895, p. 830), or an error for *prahāsīt*. Precisely the same difference of reading occurs in Khila, IV, 8, 5, *śrūtaṃ me mā prā hāsīḥ*, where Peterson's MS. has *hāsīt*, and cf. Mānava Śrauta Sūtra, II, 1, 2, 36 (*hāsīt*) with Taittirīya Saṃhitā, III, 1, 1, 2 (*hāsīḥ*), in the same phrase, *dikṣe mā mā hāsīḥ*, and in Hiraṇyakeśi Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 6, 20, 1, *yathāśat for yathāśaḥ* (Oldenberg, *S.B.E.*, XXX, 189). Scheftelowitz renders: 'das von mir Gehörte möge man nicht verspotten vermittels des Erlernten,' taking *hāsīḥ* from *√has*. The long *ā* would be unusual,<sup>a</sup> but in any case a derivation from *√hā* seems preferable in point of sense and is supported by Atharvaveda, VI, 41, 3; Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, IV, 42 (Ānandāśrama ed., pp. 352, 355). The translation will be literally: 'O lore, forsake me not,' reading *śrūta*, perhaps, as the nom. is unusual, and the neuter voc. is perfectly well supported (cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, § 66), and the reading *śrūta me* is easily corrupted into *śrūtaṃ me*, cf. Lanman's note on Whitney, *Atharva Veda*, XVIII, 2, 3; Whitney, *P.A.O.S.*, Oct., 1887, p. xxv, and my note in *J.R.A.S.*, 1907, p. 225, although the nominative can stand, cf. Winternitz, *Mantrapāṭha*, I, p. xviii.<sup>b</sup> For the sense cf. Atharvaveda, I, 1, 4; Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I, 4, 1.

<sup>4</sup> From here to the end this is identical with the Taittirīya Upaniṣad, Śikṣāvalli, I, 1, or Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, VII, 1, 1. The sense of *ahorātrān* is no doubt, 'I work all day and night,' as Sāyaṇa takes it. Colebrooke renders, 'Day and night may I behold this, which I have studied.' In III, 1, 2, the neut. is used.

<sup>a</sup> Compare, however, *sākṣye* which Whitney, no doubt rightly, reads in Atharvaveda, II, 27, 5, although the form elsewhere is always *sakṣye*, and III, 1, 6, n. 5. *Ahasīt*, given as only grammatical by Whitney (*Roots*, &c., p. 203), is found in the Daśakumāracarita (Bühler, *Ind. Ant.*, XXIII, 147).

<sup>b</sup> See also my note in *J.R.A.S.*, 1908, pp. 1124 sq.

## ĀRANYAKA III

## ADHYĀYA 1.

NEXT comes the Upaniṣad of the Saṃhitā text. The former half<sup>1</sup> is the earth, the latter half the heaven, their union the air, says Māṇḍūkeya. The union is the ether,<sup>2</sup> so proclaimed Mākṣavya. 'For it is not considered independent,<sup>3</sup> and so I do not agree with his (Māṇḍūka's) son,' he said. 'They are alike<sup>4</sup> and it is considered independent,' said Āgastya; for the air and the ether are both alike. So far as regards the deities. Now as regards the self. 'The former half is speech, the latter half the mind, their union is the breath,' so said Śūravīra Māṇḍūkeya. Then said his eldest son, 'The former half is mind, the latter half is speech. For by mind one first resolves and then utters speech. Therefore is mind the first half, speech the second half, and truth their union.' It is indeed alike<sup>5</sup> with both, father and son. This compact of mind, speech, breath, is like a chariot<sup>6</sup> with three horses. He who knows thus this union, obtains children,<sup>7</sup> cattle, fame,

<sup>1</sup> e. g. in *Agnim īle*, *m* is *pūrvarūpam*, *ī* *uttararūpam*, and *mī* Saṃhitā (Sāyaṇa). For all this Āranyaka, cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, VII, VIII, printed in Appendix, and my translation, pp. 41-56.

<sup>2</sup> *Ākāśa* is rendered 'void' by Böhtlingk in his translations of Chāndogya and Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣads; see II, 6, n. 7, contra, Whitney, *P. A. O. S.*, Oct., 1890, p. liii.

<sup>3</sup> This is not at all easy. *Mene* (like *dadyše*, II, 1, 3; 8) seems to be passive, because it is difficult to make out a translation either as *nīleitivān* (Sāyaṇa) or *manye* (Ānandatīrtha). The subject must be *vāyuḥ*, and the sense must be as in Sāyaṇa (cf. Śaṅkara on Taittirīya Upaniṣad, III, 10, 4; Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, 68, n. 1) that *vāyu* is included in *ākāśa* and therefore is inferior to it. Ānandatīrtha takes *putreṇa* as referring to the fact that *ākāśa* is the father of *vāyu*. The subsequent identification he explains on the ground that *vāyu* is the stronger. In Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I, 3, 2, the earth, sky, ether (= *antarikṣa*, Śaṅkara) and *vāyu* are given as the four factors. *Aya* is obscure: it may be a gen.=dat. and refer to Māṇḍūkeya, or possibly a vague reference (cf. Rgveda Prātiśākhya, I, 2) to the subject, helped by such genitives as that in V, 1, 1.

<sup>4</sup> *Samāne* is neut., probably because *māte* is understood, or perhaps it is fem. The solution is that the two views are equally correct, because in *upāsanaś* it is not things but words that are considered (Sāyaṇa). Ānandatīrtha rightly takes the last words as giving the opinion of Mahaitareya. Otherwise they must be Āgastya's in which he concurs. Max Müller reads, as S, *ceti*, but it is not in B or the other MSS. and it is merely a misunderstanding of the commentator.

<sup>5</sup> They give a similar result, and so are alike, and equally justifiable, *na hy upāsanaś vastutattoam apekṣate*. For *manas* and *vāc*, see Lévi, *La Doctrine du Sacrifice*, pp. 30, 31.

<sup>6</sup> Viṣṇu is made the subject by Ānandatīrtha. The real subject is clearly the meditation on the Saṃhitā. For three horses, cf. RV., I, 39, 6; 100, 17; VI, 47, 24; VIII, 7, 28. The metaphor recurs constantly in different forms in Sanskrit Literature, e.g. Mbh., XIV, 1427 sq. The analogy with the *Phaedrus*, 246, is obvious. For *saṃhataḥ* cf. RV., III, 1, 7; Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, I, 164.

<sup>7</sup> Ānandatīrtha renders the children as *prajānā*, and the cattle as Vedas. Sāyaṇa with



glory, and the world of heaven. He lives all his days. So teach the Māṇḍūkeyas.<sup>8</sup>

2. Then comes (the teaching) of Śākalya.<sup>1</sup> The first half is the earth, the second half the sky, their union is rain, Parjanya is the uniter. Thus it is when he rains strongly and continuously for day and night, then people say, 'Earth and heaven have united.' So far as regards the deities. Now as regards the self.

Śaṅkara regards this Upaniṣad as intended for persons who are neither fit for *mukti* (II, 4-6) nor even for union with Hiraṇyagarbha (II, 1-3).

<sup>8</sup> This section gives us the views of certain Māṇḍūkeyas. The Māṇḍūkeyas occur in Rgveda Prātiśākhya, § 200, and in the Purāṇa tradition (Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, II, 100 sq.; III, 253). Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, p. 12, has revived the theory that certain of the Khilas represent parts of their Samhitā, but cf. Oldenberg's review, *Gött. gel. Anz.*, 1907, pp. 218 sq., and my review, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 226 sq. The word Upaniṣad in this section clearly means 'secret doctrine'. This is certainly the earliest sense of the word (derived, no doubt, from teaching in the forest, which was done for the sake of secrecy, cf. *Introd.*, p. 15). I cannot accept Deussen's view (*Philosophie der Upanishads*, pp. 13 sq.) that the earliest sense was 'secret word' (a case like *tajjalān*, &c.), then 'secret text', then 'secret sense' of a ritual action. The earliest sense may well have been 'secret meaning' of a ritual action, whence it seems to me the other meanings are very easily derived. Deussen's theory is bound up with his view of the Kṣatriyas as propounders of a secret lore, as to which cf. *Introd.*, pp. 50 sq.; III, 2, 6, n. 11. I agree with Deussen, however, and with Winternitz (*Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 208, n.) in rejecting Oldenberg's view (*Z. D. M. G.*, L, 458 sq.) of Upaniṣad as *upāsana*. See, however, also *Z. D. M. G.*, LIV, 70 sq., and Max Müller's view in 1869, *Rgveda Prātiśākhya*, p. iv; Hopkins, *Rel. of India*, p. 218.

A muddled version of this section occurs in the Rgveda Prātiśākhya, I, 2; 3: *Māṇḍūkeyaḥ samhitāṃ vāyū āha tathākāṣaṇ cāsyā Mākṣavya eva | samānatām anile cāmbarā ca matvā-gastyo 'viparihāraṇ tad eva || 2 || adhyātmaḥ śūravīraḥ sūtās\* ca vāhmanasor vivadanty ānupūrye | sandher vivartanaṃ nirbhujāṃ vadanti śaundhākṣarocāraṇaṃ ca pratyūṣam || 3 ||* See Max Müller, pp. iii-vi. The Śāṅkhāyana has, VII, 2, an attempt at an improved version, reading in one MS. *parihvṛtaḥ* in both cases. Böhtlingk, in the smaller *Dict.*, I, 130, renders *aviparihṛta* as 'identical', but this makes no sense. The reference in the Prātiśākhya is of course valuable as giving Śaunaka's date as a *terminus ad quem* for the lowest date of the Āraṇyaka.

<sup>1</sup> It refers to the case of *iko yaṇ aci*, Pāṇini, VI, 6, 77, i. e. where vowels like *i* become *y* before *a*. A fourth party is introduced. Śākalya must of course be the great grammarian to whom the Samhitā is ascribed, and this gives us not a very ancient date for this Upaniṣad. But it need not have been written long after Śākalya. Rather it seems to be early. For Śākalya's date see *Introd.*, p. 71. He must probably go back to 700 B.C. Geldner (*Vedische Studien*, III, 144 sq.) considers that Śākalya must be identical with Vidagdha Śākalya mentioned in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI, 6, 3; XIV, 6, 9 (see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, IX, 277 sq.; *Indian Literature*, p. 33) and identified with the maker of the *padapāṭha* by the Vāyu Purāṇa, LX, 58. He was therefore a contemporary of Āruṇi and Yājñavalkya in opposition to Oldenberg's view (*Prolegomena*, pp. 371 sq.) which refers him to the end of the Brāhmaṇa period.<sup>b</sup> Weber (l. c.) thinks that *Sākala* in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 43, 5, refers to his school, but the

\* *sūtās*, which is wrong in fact, illustrates the inaccuracy of the reproduction.

<sup>b</sup> Geldner evidently takes a much more respectful view of the antiquity of these sages than I would. I think it quite possible to hold that Śākalya and they belong alike to the end of the Brāhmaṇa period. On the other hand I think Hoernle's dating (*Osteology*, pp. 106 sq.) wrong; see *Z. D. M. G.*, 1908, pp. 138, 139; *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, p. 368.

Every man is egg-like,<sup>2</sup> there are two halves, they say;<sup>3</sup> this is the earth, this is the heaven, and between them is the ether, just as there is the ether between earth and heaven. In this ether<sup>4</sup> the breath is fixed, as is the air in that ether.

reference is too far-fetched to be worth consideration—indeed such comparisons hinder rather than aid progress. The evidence of the Vāyu Purāṇa is worthless. Identifications are easy and obvious, and we cannot tell that we have a piece of tradition at all. The fact that the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa does follow the rule of Śākalya (Pāṇini, VI, 1, 128), that *ā* before *r* becomes *a* and that *a* may remain, cannot prove that Śākalya is prior to it: the reverse may be the case. As Geldner admits, the RV.—and the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa is in the same position—do not follow his rule (VI, 1, 127) as to *ī ā* before dissimilar vowels, and we are left with grave doubts whether Geldner's view that Śākalya was merely to Pāṇini the author of the *padapāṭha* and author of the Prātiśākhya is sound. The fact therefore remains that when Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 46, recognizes *bhavāsi ūtibhiḥ* as the pronunciation, it cannot have before it Śākalya's text, unless we admit (which is too bold) that the Samhitā is later than Śākalya. I prefer, therefore, Oldenberg's date of Śākalya, and I would lay stress on the fact that in the Āranyaka he is Sthavira Śākalya,<sup>5</sup> in the Brāhmaṇa Vidagdha. These names are too distinct to permit of identification. The Śākalya of the Prātiśākhya is likewise Sthavira and must be the same as the man here.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>2</sup> *Āndam* (later *āṇḍa*, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 171; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 33, n. 14) *āṇḍasādṛṣaṃ varṇavikāraḥ chāṇḍasaḥ* (Sāyaṇa). The neut. is noteworthy as comparatively rare in Sanskrit. Cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 13: *kṛpaṇaṃ ha dūhitā*; also II, 3, 5, *madhyam ātmā*, &c. Parallels are common in Greek and Latin (*ὄνκ δ'γαθὸν πολυκοιρανίη*, Monro, *Homeric Grammar*<sup>2</sup>, p. 166; *malum mihi videtur (esse) mors*, Cicero, *Tusc.*, I, 5, 9). The use is thus substantival rather than adjectival as is clearly felt in the case of *madhyam*. See also the striking case, Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 4, 3: *tāsmād idam ardhahygalām iva svaḥ* (so Böhtlingk, *Chrestomathie*<sup>2</sup>, p. 357; Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, 85, n. 3). In *itī nu* there is a lengthening found also in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa in prose (Aufrecht, p. 427) with *itī* also. Cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 312; II, 3, 8, n. 9.

<sup>3</sup> 'They say' can hardly refer to the following words, as Max Müller takes it, though this is partly supported by the last words of the section.

<sup>4</sup> *Tasmin hasmin* is certainly curious. The Śāṅkhāyana parallel, VII, 3, is a correction and throws no light. The MS. evidence is strong and Ānandatīrtha renders it as *tasmin ha asmin*. Perhaps *smin* stands for *asmin* (cf. Müller, *Pāli Grammar*, p. 24) and *ha* is the particle. No root or base *ha* exists from which *hasmin* could naturally be formed. Sāyaṇa ignores the point, and may possibly have read *tasminn asmin* as does Rājendralāla, but this is unlikely. The correction *hasmin* leaves the error unexplained. It is to be noted that in the Śunaṣṣepa legend, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 13, the MSS. read: *itī ha smā ākhyāya*, which Aufrecht keeps in the text and gives (p. 431) as one of the grammatical errors of the Brāhmaṇa. The parallel Śāṅkhāyana text has merely *itī*. Böhtlingk in his *Chrestomathie*<sup>2</sup>, p. 351, and *Sächs. Ber.*, 1900, p. 418, amends to *hāsmā* and claims that Sāyaṇa bears this out. But Sāyaṇa's note while showing that he took *smā* as equivalent to *asmai* is not conclusive, though it tends to show that he had *āsmā(i)* before him, just as he seems to have read *tasminn asmin* here, but arguments from his silence are dangerous. He ignores *imasmai* in II, 3, 7. I do not think it impossible that this *smin* and the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa's *smā* are parallel phenomena of an attempted simplification of

<sup>5</sup> It is true Sthavira does not occur in III, 1, 2, but I do not think it is reasonable to take the Śākalya of that passage as different from him of III, 2, 1; 6, as does e.g. Weber, *Indian Literature*, p. 50.

<sup>6</sup> On him see Max Müller, *Rgveda Prātiśākhya*, pp. 7 sq.



Just as there are those three lights in heaven, so there are these three lights in man. As there is in heaven the sun, so there is the eye in the head. As there is in the sky the lightning, so there is the heart in the body. As there is the fire in earth, so there is the seed in the member. Having thus represented the whole world as the self, he said, 'This is the symbol of the earth, this of the heaven.' He who knows thus this union, obtains children, cattle, fame, glory, and the world of heaven. He lives all his days.<sup>5</sup>

3. Then come the reciters<sup>1</sup> of the Nirbhujā. The Nirbhujā dwells on earth, the Pratṛṇṇa in heaven, the Ubhayamantareṇa in the sky. Then if one should rebuke him who recites the Nirbhujā, he should reply, 'Thou hast fallen from the two lower places.'<sup>2</sup> If one should rebuke him who recites the Pratṛṇṇa, he should reply, 'Thou hast fallen from the two upper places.' But there is no rebuking him who repeats the Ubhayamantareṇa.<sup>3</sup> For when he unites the words, that is the Nirbhujā form;<sup>4</sup> when he pronounces the two syllables pure, that is the Pratṛṇṇa form. This is the first. By the Ubhayamantareṇa both are fulfilled.

the forms of the base *a*. Possibly the production of such forms may be due to the analogy of *sāsmīn* (RV.), and cf. *sasmāt* (Chāndogya Upaniṣad); Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 495 fin. See, however, also Böhtlingk's remarks in his *Grammat. Absonderlichkeiten im Aitareya-brāhmaṇa*, Leipzig, 1900, where he regards the irregularities noted by Aufrecht, I. c., as due to misreadings of the text, and I fully recognize that undue reverence to such texts is absurd. On the other hand old forms do disappear, and cf. perhaps the use of *tmā* and *tmānam*, Maitrāyaṇī Upaniṣad, VI, 7; II, 6, and the Vedic *tmānā* (Pāṇini, VI, 4, 141; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 61). There is also the elision of *a* in *nasi*, Mantrapāṭha, I, 13, 9 (=Hiranyakeśi Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 16, 3), see Winternitz's edition, I, xxvii; Wackernagel, I, 318.

<sup>5</sup> These sections 1 and 2 may be compared with Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I, 3, which treats the *saṃhitā* with reference to the spaces (earth, heaven, ether, wind), lights (fire, sun, water, lightning), knowledge (teacher, pupil, knowledge, training), generation (mother, father, child, begetting), and the self (lower jawbone, upper jawbone, speech, tongue). This elaborate system must be later than the Āraṇyaka. Cf. Max Müller, *Ṛgveda Prātiśākhya*, pp. iii sq.

<sup>1</sup> Or recitations of. The Nirbhujā is the Saṃhitā, the Pratṛṇṇa the Pada, and Ubhayamantareṇa the Krama Pāṭha. Max Müller (see his *Ṛgveda Prātiśākhya*, p. iii, and *Nachträge*, p. ii) first pointed out the importance of this passage. Cf. also Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XXX, 146 sq.; *Prolegomena*, p. 380; Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, p. 51. It is summarized in Prātiśākhya, I, 4; see my *Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 45, n. 3; III, 1, 2, n. 8.

<sup>2</sup> *Acyoṣṭhāntarābhyām* is clearly a case of irregular Sandhi, cf. Atharvaveda, IX, 1, 1: *prthivyaṇḍriṣāt*; III, 2, 4, n. 11; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 316, 317; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, pp. 64, 65; *J. A. O. S.*, XXV, 99-102.

<sup>3</sup> It is the perfect form; e.g., Sāyaṇa says, in the Saṃhitā in *agnim iṣe* the *iṣe* is *svarita + pracita*, in the Pada they are both *anudatta* (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 90; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 78, n. 7).

<sup>4</sup> Sāyaṇa explains *nirdiṣṭau bhujasadyau pūrvottaraśabdu yasmīn*. Max Müller thinks it may refer to the arms of the words being cut off, as it were, or with two arms stretched out, the two words forming, as it were, two arms to one body. In the following *acyoṣṭhā* is clearly the reading, though S and R in the commentary vary, reading *acyoṣṭhā* and *acyoṣṭha*. The Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 8, has the correct form.

He who desires proper food should recite the Nirbhujā, he who desires heaven should recite the Pratiṛṇṇa, and he who desires both should recite the Ubhaya-mantareṇa. Then if another should rebuke him who recites the Nirbhujā, he should reply, 'Thou hast offended the earth, the deity. The earth, the deity, will strike thee.' If another should rebuke him who recites the Pratiṛṇṇa, he should reply, 'Thou hast offended heaven, the deity. The heaven, the deity, will strike thee.' If another should rebuke him who recites the Ubhaya-mantareṇa, he should reply, 'Thou hast offended the sky, the deity. The sky, the deity, will strike thee.' Whatever he says to him<sup>2</sup> or says in reply to him, that shall assuredly be fulfilled. But to a Brahmin one must not say anything save what is auspicious. Only in exceeding<sup>3</sup> prosperity may one say ill to a Brahmin. 'Not even in exceeding prosperity may one say ill to a Brahmin, let Brahmins be honoured,' so says Śūravira Māṇḍūkeya.

4. Then come the imprecations.<sup>1</sup> Let him know that breath<sup>2</sup> is the beam. If any one rebuke him who has become breath as the beam, then if he thinks himself strong,<sup>3</sup> he says, 'I have grasped the beam, breath; thou canst not overcome me who grasp the beam, breath.' Let him then say, 'The beam, breath,

<sup>1</sup> *bruvan vā bruvantaṃ vā*. This may perhaps be taken as I have taken it as equivalent to, 'whether he speak to him or speak in reply.' This is quite a simple construction. But it is not so taken by the commentators. Sāyaṇa renders *bruvan* as equivalent to *bruvantaṃ*, and takes the second part as *vā abruvantaṃ*. This is followed by Max Müller. Ānandatīrtha interprets it as *bruvan vā abruvan vā bruvantaṃ vā abruvantaṃ vā*. For similar curses, cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 10, and Chāndogya Upaniṣad, II, 22, 3.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa takes this as permitting a curse on a Brahmin in the case of great wealth (such wealth being sinful). Ānandatīrtha denies this, and carries on the negative. Thus Śūravira's dictum confirms this. This is less probable. Max Müller accepts Sāyaṇa's view that the man is to say, 'Let them be known to Brahmins.' It is simpler to take it as in the text. For *na-cana*, cf. V, 3, 3; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 544 sq.; Channing, *J. A. O. S.*, XIII, xviii; Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa, II, 77 (*J. A. O. S.*, XV, 240): *na te śarīrāṇi cana gṛhaṃ prāpsyanti*, and Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, IV, 14, 5. The rule that *na* precedes seems true for the Brāhmaṇa prose.

The two accus. with *brū* (for *brū*, cf. Bloomfield, *A. J. P.*, V, 180; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 182; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 36) are said by Delbrück (*Altindische Syntax*, p. 174; cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, p. 8; Gaedicke, *Der Accusativ im Veda*, p. 265) not to be found in the Brāhmaṇa language, which this passage disproves. *Brū* is expressly mentioned as governing two accusatives in the Kārikā cited by the Kāśikā Vṛtti on Pāṇini, I, 4, 51, where a much more marked case than that here (where the second acc. is merely a pronoun) is adduced, viz. *mānavakaṃ dharmam brūte*.

<sup>3</sup> Sāyaṇa takes this as a noun of agency, like *nirbhujapṛavādāḥ* in III, 1, 3. Ānandatīrtha says, *ātmano jñānasāmarthyānusāreṇaṅkiṭiprakārā ucyanta iti śeṣaḥ*.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Śākalya's view, III, 1, 2. The metaphor is from house building. The opt. below is clearly indefinite (like the subj. in Latin and opt. in Greek); see III, 2, 1, n. 1; and see my note on the Kāthaka, *J. R. A. S.*, 1909. For *vamśa*, see Zimmer, *Alt. Leb.*, p. 150.

<sup>3</sup> The construction is curiously changed below to the accusative, unless, as is possible, the other person is meant. But see *St. Petersburg Dict.* s. v. *man* 3. The nominative is,



will forsake thee.' But if he thinks himself weak, he should say to him, 'Thou hast not been able to overcome he who have been fain<sup>4</sup> to grasp the beam, breath. Breath, the beam, will forsake thee.' Whatever he says to him or says in reply to him, that shall assuredly be fulfilled. But to a Brahmin one must not say anything except what is auspicious. Only in exceeding prosperity may one say ill to a Brahmin. 'Not even in exceeding prosperity may one say ill to a Brahmin, let Brahmins be honoured,' so says Śūravira Māṇḍūkeya.<sup>5</sup>

5. Now the reciters of the Nirbhujā say, 'The former syllable is the former half, the latter the latter half. The space between the former half and the latter half is the union.' He, who knows thus this union, obtains children, cattle, fame, glory, and the world of heaven. He lives all his days. Now Hrasva Māṇḍūkeya says, 'We that recite the Nirbhujā say that the former syllable is the former half and the latter syllable the latter half, but that the union<sup>1</sup> is the space between the former and latter halves in so far as thereby one produces the union and distinguishes accented and unaccented and separates the mora and what is not.' He, who knows thus this union, obtains children, cattle, fame, glory, and the world of heaven. He lives all his days. Now his son,

however, quite regular, see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 268; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, §§ 208 and 99. Cf. also the idiom *kr̥ṣṇo* (&c.) *rūpaṃ kṛ* (Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 2, 6, 5; VI, 1, 3, 1; 6, 5; 2, 4, 1; 4; 7, 1; VII, 1, 6, 2; 3; 4; Brāhmaṇa, I, 1, 3, 3; Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VI, 35, see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 111). The construction with the nom. (cf. Delbrück, *Vedische Syntax*, pp. 104 sq.; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 33) is no doubt rare in later Sanskrit, but I have found it in an independent passage in Ānandatīrtha, and the analogous use of the gerund is found in the Rāmāyaṇa, &c. Cf. the curious phrase, Manu, VIII, 91: *eko 'ham asmīty ātmānam-manyase*. *Chaknuvaṃ* in Rājendralāla is merely an assimilated *n* altered into *anuvāra*. The error of B in reading *chaknuvantam* shows how little dependence can be put on this MS. As to *āha*, cf. III, 2, 4, n. 10. *Enam* is here in apposition to *prāṇam*, but I agree with Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 136, that the strict rule (Böhtlingk, *Z. D. M. G.*, XLI, 182) cannot be proved for Vedic or Sanskrit.

<sup>4</sup> *Samadhitiṣam* is of course the aorist indic. of the desiderative of the root *dhā*. Max Müller translates *samadhitiṣantam* as a participle, but this is impossible. Cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1035 a, *Roots, &c.*, p. 249, *J. A. O. S.*, XIII, lxx.

<sup>5</sup> These curses are just intelligible, but the curses in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 8 and 9 offer serious difficulties. As the text stands the first case is that of rebuking another, when if strong the rebuker (this must be the subject) says to the other, 'Thou hast grasped the breath or beam but canst not overcome me who am fain;' if weak, he says, 'Thou hast sought to grasp, but couldst not.' In the second case the sense must be (reading *paraṇ* or making *param* mean the subject of the main clause) the man who holds that *prāṇa* is *vaṃśa* says to his rebuker, 'I have been fain to grasp the beam, breath, thou canst not overcome one who is fain,' if the rebuker is strong. If not, he says, 'Thou hast sought to grasp, but couldst not.' Other renderings are quite possible and the text can be altered (e.g. read *samadhām* in VII, 8), but it is not possible to be certain of the sense; see my trans., pp. 44-46.

<sup>1</sup> i.e. this view is differentiated in one or two points from the view above. Cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 11-13.

Madhyama, his son by his wife Prātibodhī,<sup>2</sup> says, 'One pronounces these syllables by their letters, neither separating entirely nor uniting absolutely,' and the mora which is between the former and latter halves and indicates the union is the sliding. I consider therefore the sliding to be the union.' A Ṛṣi says this also (RV., II, 23, 16), 'O Brhaspati, they know nought higher than the sliding.' He, who knows thus this union, obtains children, cattle, fame, glory, and the world of heaven. He lives all his days.

6. Tārūṣya<sup>1</sup> says, 'The union is formed by the Br̥hat and Rathantara Sāmāns. The Rathantara is speech, the Br̥hat breath.' By these two, speech and breath, the

<sup>2</sup> Metronymics like this were inevitable where polygamy was possible. They do not prove matriarchy or anything similar. A similar instance is the famous Kṛṣṇa Devakīputra of Chāndogya Upaniṣad, III, 17 (not 7 as in Max Müller), 6, who is the subject of an interesting discussion in Garbe's translation of the *Bhagavadgītā*, and cf. *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 976 sq.; 1908, p. 173, n. See also Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 169. A child sometimes, if illegitimate, was named after its mother, e. g. Satyakāma Jābāla, Chāndogya Upaniṣad, IV, 4. For a long list of metronymics of a curious character see Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, VI, 4, 30-32. The reading of B is a mere error in an inaccurate MS. Max Müller suggests Prātibodhī as the correct form, and this seems the form in the Śāṅkhāyana. For the *i*, cf. however Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 75. Pratibodha is a recognized name in the Gaṇa *vidādī*. For other metronymics, cf. Fleet, *J. R. A. S.*, 1905, pp. 637, 638; Hopkins, *J. A. O. S.*, XIII, 105, 370, n.; for a discussion of matriarchy as affecting the Aryan Hellenes, see Farnell, *Archiv f. Religionswissenschaft*, 1904, pp. 70 sq., and reff.

<sup>3</sup> The reading is clearly *anekikurvan*. *Ekikurvan* is an easy but bad blunder. Sāyaṇa explains that you must not (1) pronounce *tava it* as *tava + it*, nor (2) as *tavat*, but (3) as *tavet*. This cannot be meant. It is really intended that you should pronounce so as to give a sound of *ai* together. Compare the fact that in the so-called elision of Latin both elements were distinctly preserved in pronunciation (cf. Lindsay, *Latin Language*, p. 144), as in modern Spanish. Cf. also Deussen, *Sechzig Upanishads*, p. 215. This passage is of particular interest as confirming the notice in the Ṛgveda Prātiśākhya, III, 8 (200) (Max Müller's edit., p. lxx) that Māṇḍūkya laid down the use of the circumflex in the Praśiṣṭa Sandhi (e. g. *a + i*, &c.) as well as in the Abhinīhita Sandhi (*e* or *o + a*), and the exceptional cases of *i + i*, in which the circumflex is regularly laid down, and the fact that the *a* is not merely elided generally recognized by the Prātiśākhya (Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 324; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 104). So Pāṇini, VIII, 2, 6, has *svarito vānūdāte padādau*, and see Wackernagel, I, 292, 293; Macdonell, p. 104. The requirement of the circumflex is only intelligible on the *anekikurvan* theory.

The form *anekikurvan* is interesting. *Ekī + √kṛ* is found in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1093, and contrast III, 2, 3: *aikyā bhāvayan*; *ekibhū* occurs in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 4, 2 in the sense of dying, and cf. Maitreya Upaniṣad (Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, xlv) *tama ekibhāvati parasmaṇ*; cf. also Jacob, *Concordance*, p. 268. For RV., II, 23, 16, cf. Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, III, 68.

<sup>1</sup> Tārūṣya is more probable than Tārṣya because the alteration to Tārṣya is natural, the word occurring above on I, 5, 2. Possibly Tārūṣya is merely a case of Svarabhakti, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 56 sq. It is clear that Sāyaṇa read Tārūṣya as he derives it from Tarukṣa. The Ānandāśrama corrects it into Tṛkṣa without warrant. The Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 19, has Tārṣya; cf. Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXX, 9.

<sup>2</sup> These Sāmāns are used in the Pṛṣṭha Stotra of the Agniṣṭoma.



union is made.' Tāruṣya guards<sup>3</sup> (his teacher's) cows for a year for the sake of this Upaniṣad. For it alone does Tāruṣya guard the cows for a year. A Rṣi says (RV., X, 181, 1; 2), 'Vasiṣṭha bore hither the Rathantara, Bharadvāja carried hither the Bṛhat of Agni.'<sup>4</sup> He, who thus knows this union, obtains children, cattle, fame, glory, and the world of heaven. He lives out all his days. Kauṇṭharavya says, 'Speech is united with breath, breath with the blowing air, the air with the All-gods, the All-gods with the world of heaven, the world of heaven with *brahman*. This is the gradual union.' He, who knows this gradual union, obtains children, cattle, fame, glory, and the world of heaven, just as does this union. If he for the sake of another or for his own sake recites (the union) let him know as he is about to recite,<sup>5</sup> that this union has gone up to heaven,

<sup>3</sup> This is a quaint piece of human nature. There are plenty of parallels, cf. Chāndogya Upaniṣad, IV, 4. The omission of the second sentence in B is clearly a slip, showing how untrustworthy is the MS. when uncorroborated. For the *nimittasaptamī*, cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 3, 2; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 77, 4; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 92; Geldner (*Vedische Studien*, III, 33, n.) finds such a loc. in RV., I, 6, 9: *sām asminn ṛñjate girāḥ. Rakṣayate* is a hist. pres. The middle here gives clearly the idea of personal interest (cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 166 b; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 236 sq.). For the hist. pres. cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 502; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 172; *Sanskrit Syntax*, § 327; Brugmann, *Griech. Gramm.*, § 156, and especially his paper, *Berichte der Königl. sächs. Gesellschaft der Wissenschaften*, 1883, pp. 169 sq.; Giles, *Comp. Phil.*, § 547. The present tense essentially denotes what is continuous or progressive (cf. Monro, *Homeric Grammar*, pp. 62, 63) as opposed to the momentary, and that whether the verb has the sense of an action or a state. The historic use with a particle of time is Homeric, but not the simple historic present, though it is found in the earliest Latin (e.g. the epitaph of Lucius Cornelius Scipio (B.C. 298), *cepit, subigit omne(m) Loucanam opsidesque abducit*) and must be Indo-European.

The acc. of time is common, see *Introd.*, p. 56; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 170, 171; Gaedicke, *Der Accusativ im Veda*, pp. 175 sq.; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 28; Hopkins, *A.J.P.*, XXIV, 7.

<sup>4</sup> These Sāmāns are required to accompany the important Pravargya. Cf. my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 48, n. 6.

<sup>5</sup> *abhiyāhārjan* is an extraordinary form. Whitney, *J.A.O.S.*, XIII, lxx, takes it as an aor. ind., but I cannot make sense of this. To take it as at first seems most natural as a mistake for a future participle (*harjyan*) is faced with the difficulty that *√hr* gives only *harisy-* as the future in accordance with the established rule (Pāṇini, VII, 2, 70), that roots in *r* take 'intermediate *i*' (Max Müller, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 332), and that even if *harj* were assumed, *hārj* would need explanation, though *r* and *gy* are constantly confused in MSS. (e.g. *arāṣyam* and *arāṣam*, Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā, IV, p. 138<sup>4</sup>; Whitney, *P.A.O.S.*, Oct., 1887, p. xxv; *aiṣṣyam* and *aiṣṣam*, Chāndogya Upaniṣad, I, 11, 2; Whitney, *P.A.O.S.*, Oct., 1890, p. lli; *niṣṣāṇa* and *niṣṣyāṇa*, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 16; Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 431, above I, 1, 5), *aprākṣyaḥ* and *aprākṣaḥ*, Chāndogya Upaniṣad, Max Müller, *S.B.E.*, XV, xiv, n. 1; Knauer, *Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra*, p. xxxv, and occasional longs are formed, e.g. in *sākye*, Atharvaveda, II, 27, 5, for *sakiye*, &c., *asākṣi* (Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 887). There remains only to take *abhiyāhārjan* as an aorist participle (without of course any past sense), 'while reciting'; cf. e.g. RV., II, 4, 7: *dhāṁśad urvīm*. But such forms are also very

and that so it will be with those who know it (and become) gods. So will it come to pass. He, who thus knows this union, obtains children, cattle, fame, glory, and the world of heaven. He lives out all his days. Pañcālacaṇḍa<sup>6</sup> says, 'The union is speech.' 'By speech are the Vedas composed, by speech the metres. By speech friends are united, by speech all beings, therefore is speech all this.' Now<sup>7</sup> when one repeats or speaks, breath is in speech, speech then swallows breath. When one is silent or in sleep, speech is in breath, breath then swallows speech. They swallow each other. Speech indeed is the mother, breath the son. A Ṛṣi says (RV., X, 119, 4), 'There is one bird,<sup>8</sup> he enters the sky; he sees this whole world; with ripe mind I beheld him nigh at hand; the mother absorbs him, and he the mother.' He, who thus knows this union, obtains children, cattle, fame, glory, and the world of heaven. He lives out all his days.

rare. The form *abhihāryate* in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (= *abhiharyati*) may be explained perhaps by the cases of irregular lengthening above, and by the (Epic) use of middle terminations for active (*J. A. O. S.*, XXV, 132), rather than as a causative passive as in the Dictt. In Atharvaveda, XVIII, 2, 58 the editions both read *vidhakṣān* and the pseudo-Sāyaṇa apparently so read, though he renders by *ichan*, but the parallel passages, RV., X, 16, 7 and Taittiriya Āraṇyaka, VI, 1, 4, have both the correct *vidhakṣyān* (Whitney, *Translation of Atharvaveda*, p. 846), and the accent proves clearly that *vidhakṣān* is incorrect. Macdonell (*Vedic Grammar*, p. 57, n. 1) suggests that in the case of *yokṣe*, *vidhakṣān*, *sākṣe*, *mekṣāmi*, the *y* has dropped phonetically; cf. *J. A. O. S.*, XXV, 142.

*śaśvat tathā syāt* might of course mean, 'may it ever endure' (as taken by Max Müller), but the usual use of the phrase in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa supports the rendering above adopted, e.g. II, 21, 2: *ya enaṃ tatra brūyād vācā vajreṇa yajamānasya prāṇān vyagāt prāṇa enaṃ hūryatīti śaśvat tathā syāt*; 22, 3; 28, 3; 5; 29, 7; IV, 7, 7; VI, 23, 13; 26, 6; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 343, n. 1 (for the construction with *īvara* there mentioned, cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 8). Eggeling on Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, V, 4, 3, 2 (*S. B. E.*, XLI, 98, n. 2), now adopts 'wohl' as the regular equivalent of *śaśvat* at any rate in the Brāhmaṇas, and see also Oertel's note on Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 54, 3. Sāyaṇa takes *vidyāt* as a part of the protasis. In any case the sense is very much the same.

*sa* or *sa yadi* is of course not a particle but the demonstrative. The cases in which Max Müller (*S. B. E.*, XV, 110, n. 7, on Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, II, 4, 7) and Delbrück (*Altindische Syntax*, pp. 215, 216), following the *St. Petersburg Dict.*, find *sa* as a particle are merely instances of an ordinary anacoluthon, and do not prove that *sa* was ever felt as a particle. Precisely the same idiom is common in early English, and no one there thinks of 'he' as a particle, see Kellner, *English Syntax*, pp. 68 sq. Correct Caland, *Ueber des Rit. Sūtra des Baudhāyana*, p. 46.

<sup>6</sup> Pañcālacaṇḍa must mean Caṇḍa (no doubt Prākṛit for Candra, cf. Atharvaveda, II, 14, 1 (Cāṇḍa)) of the Pañcālas, as Sāyaṇa takes it. The Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 23, knows a king, Durmukha Pāñcāla.

<sup>7</sup> This is the proof of the nature of speech as other than and distinct from breath. Their activities are different. *Anyo 'nyam* is very interesting, as already it tends to become a separate word, though it still is here two words, see Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 321 sq.

<sup>8</sup> This verse is more misconstrued even than usual. He enters the sky, it is said, as wind; the world he sees as *prāṇa*; he is seen close in the heart (Sāyaṇa). On the *√rih* of the RV. verse, cf. Hopkins, *J. A. O. S.*, XXVIII, 125 sq.



Then comes the Prajāpati union.<sup>9</sup> The first half is the wife, the latter half is the husband. The union is the son. The act of union is the begetting. This union is Aditi. For Aditi is all whatever there is, father, mother, child, and begetting. A Ṛṣi<sup>10</sup> says this also (RV., I, 89, 10), 'Aditi is mother, is father, is son.' He, who knows thus this union, obtains children, cattle, fame, glory, and the world of heaven.<sup>11</sup> He lives out all his days.

## ADHYĀYA 2.

Sthavira Śākalya says that breath is a beam,<sup>1</sup> and that as the other beams rest on the main beam of the house, the eye, the ear, the mind, the speech, the senses,

<sup>9</sup> Proclaimed by Prajāpati (Sāyana), but see Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 16. Cf. Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I, 3, 5, and on III, 1, 2. *Prajanana* occurs in the concrete sense in RV., III, 29, 1 (Oldenberg, *S.B.E.*, XLVI, 305).

<sup>10</sup> This verse is cited and explained in full in Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 41, which is in fact parallel. For Aditi, cf. especially Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 203 sq.; Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, pp. 120 sq.

<sup>11</sup> Taittirīya Upaniṣad, I. c., 7, continues after *brahmavarcasena, annādyena suvargeṇa lokena*, where S. Sītārāma renders 'all kinds of food'. Cf. for this section Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 14-16; 18; 19.

<sup>1</sup> This Adhyāya (cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VIII, 1) deals with meditations on the several classes of letters. The construction *yathā-syuh—samāhitāḥ* is noteworthy. For the verb understood cannot be considered as other than an indicative, so that the optative in the first clause must be indefinite. The same force seems to be found in V, 1, 4: *pratiṣṭhāpayati—yadā—brūmyet*; Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 16: *tad yathā vraje paśūn avasrjyārgaleṣike parivuyet evam evaitaiḥ padānuṣaṅgaiḥ sarvān kāmān ubhayataḥ parigrhyātman dhatte*, VII, 1, &c.; Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 34, 4: *taṁ yady eteṣāṁ trayāṇāṁ ekamcid akāmam abhyābhavet tasyāsti Vāmadavasya stote prāyascittiḥ*, Manu, VIII, 3, 1; 78 (other examples in Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 349). So with *yāthā*, Delbrück, p. 350; with *yātra*, &c., *ibid.*, p. 351. So in *kṛtakṛtyāḥ syuh* in Sāyana's introductions to the RV., curiously misunderstood by Peterson (*Ṛgveda Handbook*, p. 126). The use differs distinctly from but is easily derived from the use of the opt. with either an opt. (potential) (cf. the use in Avestan, Jackson, *P.A.O.S.*, April, 1896, p. 187; Delbrück, *Vergl. Synt.*, II, 372) or an opt. (imperative) in the apodosis, since in either of these cases the future sense is primarily present, whereas when an indic. forms the apodosis the sense is clearly merely indefinite. The use, especially as here in sentence, is common in Homer, where the subj. with primary and the opt. with secondary tenses have both this sense (cf. Monro, *Homeric Grammar*<sup>2</sup>, pp. 258 sq., 269 sq.), is found in the subj. in early Latin prose as well as verse in which Greek imitation is always possible (e.g. Cato Maior, *de Mor.*, *ingenium prope uti ferrum est: si exerceas conteritur, nisi exerceas rubiginem contrahit*), in early English (Kellner, *English Syntax*, p. 239), &c.

The use of the pass. part. with or without copula (Introd., pp. 64, 65) is significant. Delbrück (*Altindische Syntax*, pp. 394, 395), followed by Speijer (*Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 176), regards the use as corresponding both to imperf. and aor., but while of course it is dangerous to dogmatize on matters which ultimately depend on a delicate analysis of a language so remote as Vedic Sanskrit, it seems to me that there is a very clear distinction between (1) the aor., the tense of which has just happened; (2) the imperf., the tense of narration;

the body, the whole self, rests on this breath. 'Of this self the truth is like the sibilants, the bones the mutes, the marrow the vowels, and flesh and blood, the fourth part,<sup>2</sup> the semi-vowels,' so says Hrasva Māṇḍūkeya. We have,<sup>3</sup> however, learned that the number was three. Of those three, bones, marrow, and joints, there are three hundred and sixty (parts) on this side and on that side. These make up seven hundred and twenty. Seven hundred and twenty are the days and nights of the year. This self<sup>4</sup> then, which consists of sight, hearing, metre, mind, and speech, is like the days in number.<sup>5</sup> He, who knows thus this self, which consists of sight, hearing, metre, mind, and speech, as like the days, obtains union, likeness, and nearness to the days,<sup>6</sup> becomes rich in sons and cattle, and lives out all his days.

2. Then comes Kauṇṭharavya. There are three hundred and sixty syllables,<sup>1</sup> three hundred and sixty sibilants, three hundred and sixty unions. What we have called syllables are the days; what we have called sibilants are the nights; what we have called unions are the junctions of the nights and days. So far as regards

and (3) these forms with participles which express a completed action whose results persist into the present. Of course many actions can be regarded from either point of view and be differently described, but that is not to say that the effect is not different when different forms are used. To take some of Delbrück's instances, RV., I, 81, 5: *nā tvādvāṅ Indra kās candā jāto nā janīyate*, the sense is not either 'was born' (imperf.) or 'has just been born' (aor.), but 'exists, having been born', in Taittirīya Samhitā, II, 6, 9, 3: *tē devā aviduḥ prācyuto vai pārastāt sōmā 'tha nā gachati gandharvā vai pāry amōṣṣur īti*, which Delbrück gives as a case of the part. corresponding to an aor., the sense is clearly different between the continuing absence of the Soma and the one definite past act of the Gandharvas in stealing it. The real tendency of the Mantra and Brāhmaṇa is to assimilate the part. to a present, though, as is the case with all the expressions of past time in the Mantras, occasionally it may have a narrative sense (e.g. RV., III, 48, 22: *Pṛīnyā dugdhām sakṛt pāyaḥ*). The present sense—yet with the past action—is very clearly seen in cases like Bṛhaddevatā, VIII, 47: *prathamāyām ṛci stutāḥ vārāharce dyauḥ ca bhūmī ca Atvinau cottare tataḥ* || It is not *stūyante*, for the actual praising is over (*astaut* is regularly used of the Ṛṣi), and yet it does not mean 'were praised'.

<sup>2</sup> Max Müller takes *anyat* as 'the rest', but it rather means, the other, the fourth.

<sup>3</sup> This view is apparently Śākalya's (Sāyana), the first three being his, to which Māṇḍūkeya adds a fourth. The threefold view, with *ghoṣa* for *svara*, *vyañjana* for *spāṣa*, is found in II, 2, 4, where the difference of terms denotes a difference in dates.

<sup>4</sup> Ānandatīrtha explains all this of Viṣṇu, as usual.

<sup>5</sup> The symbolism of the year is common in all religions, cf., e.g., Farnell, *Cults of the Greek States*, IV, 284, 285.

<sup>6</sup> Cf. the Khila MS. (B) at end (fol. 191<sup>a</sup> = Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, p. 168): *etāsām evā devātānāṃ sārīṣṭlāṃ sāyujyaṃ salokātām ānute yā evāṇi vidvān svādhyāyām adhitē*. For the compound, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 149, 150.

<sup>1</sup> Syllables are vowels, sibilants consonants, and their unions the Sandhi (Sāyana). Sāyana takes *ṣaṣṭi* as separate, to explain how it comes to be = 360. But though the construction is illogical it is regular in the Brāhmaṇas (Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 480 b; cf. for Prākṛit, Pischel, *Prākṛit Grammar*, p. 409), and *ṣaṣṭi* should not be printed apart as in S.



the gods. Now as regards the self. The syllables which we have explained with reference to the gods are with reference to the self bones; the sibilants which we have explained with reference to the gods are with reference to the self marrow; the marrow is indeed the real breath, for it is seed, and without breath seed is not effused. Or if it is effused without breath, it will decay and will not produce. The unions which we have explained with reference to the gods are with reference to the self joints. Of these three,<sup>2</sup> bones, marrow, and joints, there are five hundred and forty parts on this side and on that. They make one thousand and eighty, and one thousand and eighty<sup>3</sup> are the rays of the sun. They make the *br̥hātī* verses and this day. Thus the self<sup>4</sup> which consists of sight, hearing, metre, mind, and speech is like the syllables in number. He, who knows thus this self, which consists of sight, hearing, metre, mind, and speech, as like the syllables, obtains union, likeness, and nearness to the syllables, becomes rich in sons and cattle, and lives out all his days.

3. Bādhva<sup>1</sup> says, 'There are four persons, the person of the body, the person of the metres, the person of the Veda, and the great person. That which we have called the person of the body is the corporeal self. Its essence is the incorporeal conscious self. That which we have called the person of the metres is the collection of letters. Its essence is the letter 'a'.<sup>2</sup> That which we have called the person of the Veda is that by which one knows the Vedas, R̥gveda, Yajurveda, and Sāmaveda. Its essence is the Brahman priest. Therefore should one choose a Brahman<sup>3</sup> priest who is full of *brahman* and can discern flaws

It is curious, as S points out, that no comment is made on the similar passage in III, 2, 1. For *Kaṇṭha*<sup>2</sup>, cf. the Dhātupāṭha root *kuṇṭh* which Franke (*Vienna Orient. Journ.*, VIII, 323) compares with Greek *κυνός*, Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 170. The name seems not to occur elsewhere, except in the parallel passage in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VIII, 2.

<sup>2</sup> The words inserted by B are quite out of place here, and show how little that MS. can be relied upon. For *majjhām*, cf. Atharvaveda, II, 12, 7; Roth, *Z. D. M. G.*, XLVIII, 102. For the construction, cf. Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra, II, 17, 11, 37; *J. R. A. S.*, 1909: contra Böhtlingk, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1892, p. 197.

<sup>3</sup> This extraordinary doctrine Sāyaṇa can only support by the Ātharvaṇa passage (Prašna Upaniṣad, I, 8 = Maitrī Upaniṣad, VI, 8; Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 1002 a) *śahasra-raśmīḥ śatadhā vartamānaḥ prāṇaḥ prajānām udayaty eṣa sūryaḥ*, which he explains includes by denotation the eighty. There are 1080 syllables in thirty *br̥hātīs*.

<sup>4</sup> Viṣṇu according to Ānandatīrtha, who has considerable difficulty in working out the details of his interpretation here.

<sup>1</sup> Bādhva is undoubtedly correct; *Bādhyah* is merely a slip of Rājendralāla's, and did not deserve record in Monier-Williams' *Dict.* *Vāts(y)ah* is read in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VIII, 3.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. II, 3, 6. The precision in the use of the aorist is to be noted, cf. *Introd.*, p. 60.

<sup>3</sup> The Brahman priest is required to guard the sacrifice and sits in the South (the place of the dead), Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI, 5, 8, 7; Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 141, n. 2. He is not here in any way connected with the Atharvaveda (the later connection is probably due to his employment (Winternitz, p. 139, n. 2) in the household ritual which is found mainly in

in the sacrifice. That which we have called the great person is the year which causes some things to fall together<sup>4</sup> and others to grow up. Its essence is the sun. Let one know<sup>5</sup> that the incorporeal conscious self and the sun are the same. Therefore the sun appears to each and every man. A Ṛṣi says (RV., I, 115, 1), 'The bright face of the gods hath arisen, the eye of Mitra, Varuṇa, and Agni.

the Atharvaveda) as the Atharvan texts always try to make out (see Bloomfield, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, lviii sq.; *Atharvaveda*, pp. 32 sq.; Macdonell, *Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 193 sq.). *Kurvīta yo-polyet* is quite a clear instance of a clause of characteristic, 'such a priest as can see.' In these cases the force is slightly different from two other senses of the same origin, purpose, and result. Delbrück (*Altindische Syntax*, p. 339) states that clauses of purpose cannot be found in prose, but quotes Atharvaveda, VIII, 10, 9: *iyām evā tād veda yād ubhāya upajīvema*; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI, 5, 1, 13: *nā vāi sā manusyeḥ Agnē yajñīyā tanūr asti yajeyivā-smākam ekah syād iti*, which resemble in essentials this passage. The usage is perhaps more clearly developed in Latin<sup>6</sup>, but it is wrong to say (as do Allen and Greenough, *Latin Grammar*, p. 343) that the clause of characteristic is a development peculiar to Latin, and it is doubtful whether the use is to be traced to a definitely conditional origin and not rather derived directly from the opt. meaning as a weak future (Goodwin, *Greek Moods and Tenses*, pp. 376 sq.) or as expressing supposition (cf. Monro, *Homeric Grammar*, pp. 290 sq., and p. 276, 'The opt. with *κε* is especially common after a principal Clause of negative meaning (in which case the consequence is necessarily matter of mere supposition): as—II, 5, 192 *ἔπειτα δ' οὐ παρὰσι καὶ ἄρματα τῶν κ' ἐπιβαίην*, &c. The pure opt. occurs in II, 22, 348: *οὐκ ἔσθ' ὅς . . . ἀπαλλάκω*.' To derive such a sense from an opt. of wish (Delbrück's old theory, *Synt. Forsch.*, I, 13, modified in *Synt. Forsch.*, IV, 115, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 302) seems quite impossible. The use as a mild imperative is easily derived from a weak future or supposition, and the use as an interrogative follows naturally (cf. Intro., pp. 62, 63). For the indefinite use, cf. III, 2, 1, n. 1, and Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 4, 17; IV, 3, 32, &c.

For *brahmīṣṭham* (which as *brāhmīṣṭha* occurs already in the Taittirīya Saṃhitā), cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 468 e. The formation is of course obviously secondary.

<sup>4</sup> *Aikyā bhūvayan* is a strange phrase, for if *aikyā* is what it seems to be, an instrumental in -ā, then this comparatively late word is found in a remarkable form, though not at all impossible, cf. *madhyā* (Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 327 c), or it may be a dative in -ā (for this cf. Latin *ā*, Lindsay, *Latin Language*, p. 386, and see Aufrecht, *Festgruss an Böhtlingk*, pp. 1 sq.; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 59; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 280; Pischel and Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, I, 61; Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 28). Whitney (*Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1091) takes the word as parallel to formations like *akṣhalikṣṭya* (or *akṣṣṭh*, RV.), *masmasā kuru* (Vājasaneyi and Taittirīya Saṃhitās), &c., and compares Aitareya Brāhmaṇa (I, 14, see Aufrecht, p. 430) *anṛṇākartoḥ*; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, *śalā kuryāt* (roast on a spit). Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 194, takes the same view with some doubt.

<sup>5</sup> This is of course the most common doctrine in the Upaniṣads. Sāyana quotes for the last part the Taittirīya passage (which I have not so far traced): *asāv ādityaḥ sarvāḥ prajāḥ pratyudahn udeti tasmāt sarva eva manyante māṇi pratyudagād iti*! On this passage of the RV., cf. Whitney, *Translation of Atharvaveda*, p. 725 (on XIII, 2, 38); Deussen, *Geschichte*, I, i, 213. Sāyana's commentary on it in Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, I, 7, 6, and II, 13, 1 differs completely from his comm. here and can hardly be by the same hand.

<sup>6</sup> Compare, e.g., Caesar, *Bell. Civ.*, ii, 15 *unde agger comportari posset, nihil erat reliquum*; Cicero, *ad Fam.*, v, 12 *neque enim tu is es, qui nescias*. Cf. Śaṅkara Brāhmaṇa, II, 10; Maitrāyaṇi Saṃhitā, II, 1, 3.



It hath filled heaven and earth and the sky. The sun is the self of all that stands and moves.' This I regard as the regular<sup>6</sup> Samhitā as composed, thus says Bādhva. For the Bahvṛcas consider him in the great hymn, the Adhvaryus in the fire, the Chandogas in the Mahāvratā rite. They see him in this earth, in heaven, in the air, in the ether, in the waters, in plants, in trees, in the moon, in the constellations, in all beings. Him they call *brahman*. The self which consists of sight, hearing, metre, mind, and speech, is like the year in number. He,<sup>7</sup> who recites to another the self, which consists of sight, hearing, metre, mind, and speech, and is like the year,

4. To him the Vedas yield no milk; he has no part in what his teacher has taught him. He knows not the path of virtue. A Ṛṣi says this also (RV., X, 71, 6), 'He who forsakes the friend who knows his friends,<sup>1</sup> in speech he has no part. What he hears, he hears in vain, he knows not the path of virtue.' This means that he has no part in what he has studied and that he does not know the path of virtue. So a man who knows this should not<sup>2</sup> lay the fire for another, nor sing the Sāmāns of the Mahāvratā for another, nor recite the Śāstras of that day for another. Only<sup>3</sup> may he recite for a father or a teacher, for that is done for oneself. We have said<sup>4</sup> that this incorporeal conscious self and that sun are one and the same. Where these two are separated,<sup>5</sup> the sun is seen like the moon,<sup>6</sup> its rays do not manifest themselves,

<sup>6</sup> All the above must be Bādhva's view, just as III, 2, 2 gave Kaunṭharavya's views. The following alludes to the fact that the Adhvaryu's mystic speculations centre in the Agnicayana, cf. Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, xxiv.

<sup>7</sup> The section runs on in a way that cannot be early. V, 1, 1 and 2 is precisely similar, and the present section division must remain of doubtful (though early) date. The divisions of the Śāṅkhāyana are similarly illogical. For the loc., cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 205.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyaṇa points out that Taittirīya Aranyaka, I, 3; II, 15, reads in this verse *sakhividam*, a point overlooked in Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 700<sup>b</sup>. Sāyaṇa's reference does tend to show that he also wrote a Taittirīya Aranyaka commentary, which on other grounds might be deemed very doubtful (cf. III, 2, 3, n. 5).

<sup>2</sup> i.e. act as Adhvaryu, Udgātṛ or Hotṛ priest. It is impossible to square the total prohibition here with V, 1, 5, which (see n. 5) contemplates a breach of the rule, but it agrees with the opinion of 'some' (*eke*) in V, 3, 3, see n. 1 on that passage.

<sup>3</sup> A frequent exception. Cf. V, 3, 3, n. 1.

<sup>4</sup> III, 2, 3. The relevance of this passage is not obvious. Sāyaṇa takes it as a reflexion induced by the idea of the attainment of *brahman* in the brief space of life, whence omens as to the duration of life are inserted. The connexion of sun and self is elsewhere used to give omens of death. In Bṛhadāranyaka Upaniṣad, V, 5, 2, the sun appears as white only to the man about to die. The parallel passages in the Śāṅkhāyana are VIII, 7, 1 and XI, 3; 4.

<sup>5</sup> This is not very logical, as there is no reason why the separation of the two should be a sign of death. The rest of the signs are clearly old folklore ideas pressed into service. For the extensive literature on Vedic superstitions, see Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, pp. 167 sq., 183-185; Hatfield, *Auśanasādbhūtāni*, *J. A. O. S.*, XV, 208, &c.; Bloomfield,

the sky is red like madder, the wind is not retained, his head smells like a raven's nest, and a man should know that his self<sup>7</sup> is gone and that he will not have long to live. Let him do then whatever he considers must be done, and recite seven verses beginning, 'What is near, what is far' (RV., IX, 67, 21-27), the single verse, 'Of the ancient seed' (RV., VIII, 6, 30), six verses beginning, 'Where purifying Brahman' (RV., IX, 113, 6-11), and the single verse, 'We from the darkness' (RV., I, 50, 10). Next when the sun is seen pierced, and looks like the nave of a cart-wheel, or he sees his shadow pierced, let him know that this is so. Next when he sees himself in a mirror or in the water with a crooked head<sup>8</sup> or without a head, or when his pupils are seen inverted<sup>9</sup> or crooked, let him know that this is so. Next let him cover his eyes and look; then threads<sup>10</sup> are seen as if falling together. If he sees them not, let him

*Atharvaveda*, pp. 82 sq.; Kauśika Sūtra, XIII, and Adbhuta Brāhmaṇa; Aufrecht's idea (*Z. D. M. G.*, XXXIII, 573) that the passage is not in place is disproved by the parallel in the Śāṅkhāyana, VIII, 6 and 7; XI, 3 and 4.

<sup>7</sup> i. e. its rays are pale and cold. *Kākakulāyagandhikam* is probably an adj. as a quasi-pred. For examples, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 78, 79. *Kulāya* is a curious word: in Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra, II, 14, 23, Knauer takes it (wrongly, I think) as = stall (cf. p. 55 of his edit.).

<sup>8</sup> Ānandatīrtha renders *saṃpareto* as *saṃnikṛṣṭanigamaḥ*, Sāyaṇa as *mytaḥ*. In *yatmanyeta* the opt. is probably indef. It may also be 'attracted', cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 281. The form in *anīya* is rare in the Brāhmaṇas, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 400, 401; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 965. The use of *man* with participles of all sorts is curious, cf. the use with the gerund, Whitney, § 994 e; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 223; with the pres. part., III, 1, 4. With the past part., even in Bṛhaddevatā, e. g. VII, 125.

<sup>9</sup> The reading of the text is supported by Sāyaṇa and also by Ānandatīrtha and is certain. For water divination, cf. Farnell, *Cults of the Greek States*, IV, 230. For *ādarśa* (also in the Bṛhadāraṇyaka and Kaṭha Upaniṣads), cf. Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, xxiv.

<sup>10</sup> Sāyaṇa explains a white pupil in a black eyeball. It probably means only, upside down, although the contrast of white and black in the eye is frequent, II, 1, 5. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VIII, 7, suggests reading here *jihme na vā*, 'or are not seen at all,' and this may be right.

<sup>11</sup> Sāyaṇa explains the operation thus, *caḥṣuṣi nimīlya netrayāpāṅgam avaṣṭabhya netra-samīpaṃ paśyet*; Ānandatīrtha has, *angulyā akṣimūlam avaṣṭabhya*. The *baṭarakāni* (*barātakān* or *varātakan* in Śāṅkhāyana) are, Sāyaṇa says, *vartulāni sūkṣmāṇi śuklavarnāṇi keṣaṇḍra-kaśābādābhidheyāni*, and he takes *sampatantīva* as *saṃyath netrān nirgachantīva*. This is hardly possible. For *varātakān*, cf. Śrīharṣa, *Khaṇḍanakhāṇḍakhāḍya*, p. 239, cited by Jacob, *Laukikanyāyāñjali*, p. 1. The construction is difficult, as the *yathā* is not properly in place. It may be that *yathā* goes with *baṭarakāni* and *iva* qualifies only *sampatantī*, and the sense is, things are seen like, &c., but it is also possible that *tad yathā* is practically = then it is that. This use is of course common in later Sanskrit, e. g. Bāṇa, *Kādambarī* (p. 337, 12, ed. Peterson; p. 600, ed. Nirṇaya Sāgara): *āgameṣu sarveṣu eva purāṇarāmāyāṇabhārataḍḍiṣu saṃyag anekaprakārāḥ śāpavṛttāḥ tad yathā*, &c. Cf. the Pāli use of *seyyathā*. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, IV, 3, 42 sq. has a series of *tad yathā*; so *ibid.*, IV, 4, 4, 5, &c.

Cases of conditional sentences without particles are of course very frequent in Vedic as



know that this is so. Next let him cover his ears and listen, then there is a sound as of a burning fire or of a chariot. If he does not hear that sound, let him know that this is so. Next when the fire appears blue like the neck of a peacock,<sup>11</sup> or when he sees lightning in a cloudless sky, or no lightning in a cloudy sky, or in a great cloud sees bright rays as it were, let him know that it is so. Next when he sees the ground as though burning, let him know that this is so. So far as regards the visible signs. Then come the dreams.<sup>12</sup> He sees a black man with black teeth, he kills him; a boar kills him; a monkey jumps on him; the wind carries him swiftly along; having swallowed gold he spits it out; he eats honey; he chews stalks; he carries a single<sup>13</sup> lotus;

in other languages. Cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 284; *Sanskrit Syntax*, § 487; Aufrecht, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 431; my note, *J. R. A. S.*, 1909.

The Maitreya Upaniṣad (Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, xlv) has a passage which may be reminiscent of this text: *agnir vaiśvānaro . . . tasyaiṣa ghoṣo bhavati yam* (wrong reading ? *yad*) *etat karnāv apidhāya śṛṇoti sa yadotkramiṣyan bhavati nainam ghoṣam śṛṇoti*.

For *upādī*, infra, which denotes literally the noise of going and is particularly in place here, cf. *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, IV, 9, 3; *Jaiminīya Brāhmaṇa*, I, 253; *Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa*, I, 37, 3, with Oertel's note; *RV.*, I, 74, 7, with Oldenberg's note (*S. B. E.*, XLVI, 94); Schmidt, *K. Z.*, XXV, 55. Scheftelowitz (*Zur Stammbildung in den indo-germanischen Sprachen*, § 9) compares *RV.*, IX, 77, 4: *urubjā*, which he considers as going back to IG. *pagō*, cf. Greek *πηγή*. The construction above *drīsyate* and *abhikhyāyeta* in parallel uses, and below *drīsyate-pātyen-na pātyen-pātyeta*, are decidedly curious (cf. *Introd.*, p. 63). The temptation to amend to *drīsyeta* is very strong, and on the whole I incline to think that it would be dangerous to insist on these examples. The case of *upekṣeta-drīsyante* differs, for the two verbs are not parallel. The first is an instruction, the second expresses categorically the result (and *drīsyante* may have helped to bring about the incorrect *drīsyate*). In III, 1, 4, where *upavadet āha* occur, the *āha* is very strange, and one would like to take *śaknoṣīti āha—hāsyatīti* as two sentences both dependent on *brūyāt*. There is, however, the real difficulty that *ā—hā* would be a strange combination, and the division of the sentences is also curious, though no more curious than the *āha*. I suspect some corruption of the text. *Sāyaṇa* renders differently. He takes the whole as one Mantra and supplies *bhavān* as a subject for *āha*, and so in the next sentence he interpolates *bhavān āha* in sense. In the numerous passages in the *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa* which are more or less parallel (see the *refl.* cited in III, 1, 6, n. 5), no such *āha* occurs, and *hāsyatī* has no prefix. But probably *ā—hāsyatī* must go together. *Āha* might, of course, be taken as a first person and made part of the quotation (cf. Speijer, § 178), but this is not likely, and for the *indef. opt.*, cf. III, 2, 1, n. 1.

<sup>11</sup> *Mayūragrīvāḥ* is perhaps intended by the reading of B, *mayūragrīvā ameghe* (but *Śāṅkhāyana* has *mayūragrīvā* when it can be *evāḥ*); and undoubtedly *grīvāḥ* is the form alone recognized by Pāṇini and usual in the earlier literature, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, pp. 916-919. Probably the reading was originally *mayūragrīvāmeghe* by an incorrect Sandhi for *mayūragrīvāḥ*. For similar irregular Sandhi, cf. Bühler, *S. B. E.*, II, xli (from *Āpastamba*); Macdonell, *Bṛhaddevatā*, I, xxvii; and V, 3, 2, n. 9; III, 1, 3, n. 2. For the next portent, cf. Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 112.

<sup>12</sup> The plural must be right. Cf. *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa*, XLIII, 1 sq.; Hillebrandt, *op. cit.*, p. 184.

<sup>13</sup> 'Red' in colour (*Sāyaṇa*); for red as unlucky, cf. *Z. D. M. G.*, XL, 117.

he drives with a team of asses and<sup>14</sup> boars; wearing a wreath of red flowers, he drives a black cow with a black calf towards the south.<sup>15</sup> If he sees any of these, he should fast and cook a pot of milk, and offer it, reciting a verse of the Rātrī hymn (RV., X, 127, 16) to each oblation, and having fed the Brahmins with other food,<sup>16</sup> himself eat the oblation. Let him know that the person within all beings who is not heard,<sup>17</sup> not reached, not thought, not subdued, not seen, not understood, not classified, but who hears, thinks, sees, classifies, sounds, understands, and knows is his own self.<sup>18</sup>

5. Now comes this Upaniṣad of the whole speech. All these indeed are Upaniṣads of the whole speech, but this they so call. The mutes are the earth, the sibilants the sky, the vowels heaven. The mutes are fire, the sibilants air, the vowels the sun. The mutes are the Ṛgveda, the sibilants the Yajurveda, the vowels the Sāmaveda. The mutes are the eye, the sibilants the ear, the vowels the mind. The mutes are the up-breathing, the sibilants the down-breathing, the vowels the back-breathing. Then comes this divine lute.<sup>1</sup> The

<sup>14</sup> 'Or' (Sāyaṇa), which may be more correct.

<sup>15</sup> The ten dreams are so taken by the commentator and by Max Müller whose note (p. 262) is apparently wrong. *Eteṣāṃ kiṃcid* is noteworthy. The neut. of the pronoun is practically nominal and is to be compared with the neut. in predication, III, 1, 2, n. 4. So in Latin, e.g. Horace, *Sat.*, i, 7: *Lydorum quicquid*. The parallel passage in the Sāṅkhāyana has corrected the original *kiṃcid* of the MS., but the correspondence is conclusive.

<sup>16</sup> Cooked in the house (Sāyaṇa). See Sāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, V, 5, 9, and my article, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 929; for *sthālīpāka*, see Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, VI, 4, 19; Gṛhyasamgraha, I, 114; Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XXX, xvi, n. 4. For the causative with instr. and acc., cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 224 sq.; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 277 a, 282 b; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 21; *Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 49. According to Pāṇini, I, 4, 52, and the examples cited in the Kāśikā Vṛtti, ad loc., here we should have two accusatives.

<sup>17</sup> *Ataḥ* is rendered by Sāyaṇa, *asmād dehendriyādisaṅghātād vilakṣaṇa iti leṣaḥ*, while Ānandatīrtha suggests *adhikaḥ*.

<sup>18</sup> This is the most advanced point in the definition of the Ātman arrived at in the Āraṇyaka. The Ātman is not object, but subject only—as Sāyaṇa says, *ātmā viśayo na bhavati viśayī tu bhavaty eva*. This occurs frequently later and with it the doctrine that the self cannot be known. Sāyaṇa cites the *antaryāmi brāhmaṇa*, Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III, 7, 13, the *akṣarabrāhmaṇa*, ibid., III, 8, 11; the Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, I, 8; the Praśna Upaniṣad, IV, 6; and the Nṛsiṃhottaratāpanīya Upaniṣad, II. See also Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, pp. 133 sq.; E. T., pp. 147 sq. Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, IV, 18, is devoted to this topic (= Kena Upaniṣad).

<sup>1</sup> i. e. the human body. This metaphor explains Praśna Upaniṣad, II, 2, where *vāṇa* (V, 1, 4) is equated to *śarīra*, which Max Müller (*S. B. E.*, XV, 274, n. 3) finds unintelligible. Connected with Viṣṇu is Ānandatīrtha's explanation of the word *daivī*. *Amḃhaṇa* is a curious word. I think it is from *anu + √bhaṇ* (as in Class. Sansk. for *√bhan*, Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 194). Compare *ambara* for *anu + vara* and *jāmbila* for *jānu + būla* (ibid., 59). The omission before *v* (common) led to omission before *b* and sporadically before *bh*. The meaning would be 'sounding-board' (?). Cf. v. Schroeder, *Ind. Lit.*, p. 755.



human lute is an imitation of it. As there is a head of this, so there is a head of that; as there is a stomach of this, so there is a cavity of that; as this has a tongue, so that has a tongue; as this has fingers,<sup>2</sup> so that has strings; as this has vowels, so that has tones; as this has consonants, so that has touches; as this is endowed with sounds and firmly strung, so that is endowed with sounds and firmly strung; as this is covered with a hairy skin, so that is covered with a hairy skin. For in former times they covered lutes with a hairy skin. He, who knows this divine lute, is heard when he speaks, his fame fills the earth, and wherever they<sup>3</sup> speak Aryan tongues, there is he known. Then comes the essence of speech. When a man reciting<sup>4</sup> or speaking at an assembly gives not pleasure, let him recite this verse, 'May the she-ichneumon, that rules all speech, who is covered as it were<sup>5</sup> by the lips, surrounded by teeth, the thunderbolt, cause me to speak well here.' This is the essence of speech.

<sup>2</sup> The words *anḡulayāḥ* and *tantrayāḥ* seem to have been transposed in the original; they are in correct order in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VIII, 7. Somewhat analogous is the transposition of *jaṇā jarāyu* in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VI, 6, 2, 15, on which see Eggeling's note (*S. B. E.*, XLVI, 255). Cf. also Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III, 1, 4 with Max Müller's note (*S. B. E.*, XV, 122), and my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 55, n. 3.

<sup>3</sup> The expression *āryā vācaḥ* was not understood by the commentators (and in the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VIII, 9, we find that it has become *āryā vāg vadatī*), who take *āryāḥ* as nominative and render it *vedaśāstrapāram gatāḥ*. This is a clear sign of considerable antiquity, and the expression may also be cited as an early piece of evidence for the existence of several dialects of the early Indian language, which we know must have existed; see I, 5, 2, n. 19; Oertel, *A. J. P.*, XX, 447 on *daivī*, and Kāthaka Saṃhitā, XIV, 5. For the word *ārya*, cf. Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, p. 214; Pischel, *Z. D. M. G.*, XL, 125; Geldner (*Vedische Studien*, III, 96, 97) insists that *ārya* cannot mean 'the Aryan' which is represented by *ārya*. Oldenberg (see index to *S. B. E.*, XLVI) still adopts the equation *Ārya* = Aryan.

<sup>4</sup> Śāyana distinguishes between reciting at a conclave of priests, and speaking in a prince's hall. *Virurucuṣeta* is quite impossible as a form, and it is an easy error in view of the preceding syllables, each having *u*. The middle of the opt. of the desiderative is not common. Cf. Holtzmann, *Grammatisches aus dem Mahābhārata*, p. 42.

<sup>5</sup> Śāyana gives an alternative rendering, *na* = not, and *paviḥ* = clear, the subject being the speaker's defective speech. Ānandatīrtha gives only the explanation as *na = iva*. The verse in B occurs among the Śānti verses of the so-called third Adhyāya. For the metaphor, cf. Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 19. In the version in the Ānandāśrama ed., p. 2, *nakulī* is printed as a separate word. But *nakulī* can only mean a female ichneumon, and *nakulidantaiḥ* is a phrase for which no parallel seems readily forthcoming. Śāyana gives *vajravaddhanī-bhūtair antārālachidrarahitair* which does not help. In any case to join *kulidantaiḥ* makes a curious though not unparalleled metre in an early verse such as this must be, and if a nom. could be found in *kulī* the run of the verse would be much improved. The rendering of the text by Max Müller 'surrounded by birth, as if by spears' is purely conjectural, and I suspect the tradition. The parallel passages are of little use. The Sāma Mantra Brāhmaṇa, I, 7, 15, has *oṣṭhāpidhānā nakulī dantaparimitaiḥ paviḥ*, while the Gṛhila Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 4, 29, gives *oṣṭhāpidhānā nakulī* only. Oldenberg (*S. B. E.*, XXX, 84) renders 'the she-ichneumon, covered by the lips', as does Knauer in his translation. If this is to be made into sense, it

6. Now Kṛṣṇahārīta<sup>1</sup> proclaims this Brāhmaṇa<sup>2</sup> as it were regarding speech to him.<sup>3</sup> Prajāpati, the year,<sup>4</sup> after creating creatures, burst. He put himself together by the metres. Because he put himself together by means of the metres, therefore is it the Saṃhitā. Of that Saṃhitā the letter *ṛ* is the strength, the letter *ṣ* the breath, the self. He who knows the verses in the Saṃhitā and<sup>5</sup> the letters *ṛ* and *ṣ*, he knows the Saṃhitā with its breath and its strength. Let him know that this is lifegiving.<sup>6</sup> If he is in doubt<sup>7</sup> whether to say it with an *ṛ* or without an *ṛ*, let him say it with an *ṛ*. If he is in doubt whether to say it with an *ṣ* or without an *ṣ*, let him say it with an *ṣ*. Hrasva Māṇḍūkeya says, 'If we repeat the verses according to the Saṃhitā, and if we say the teaching<sup>8</sup> of

must be taken that the she-ichneumon is a synonym for what is very piercing: the nearest approximation to this idea is the passage in Atharvaveda, VI, 139, 5 (cited in Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, p. 86), which refers to the ichneumon's (m.) skill in chopping up and then restoring his work.

<sup>1</sup> A son of Hārīta, who was dark in colour (Sāyana), cf. Hiranyadant Vaidā, II, 1, 5. A Kumāra Hārīta (so, not Hārīta) appears in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, II, 6, 3; IV, 6, 3; VI, 4, 4. Weber (*Indian Literature*, p. 50) reads Hārīta, and the lawyer is always so called (ibid., p. 269), even in Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra, I, 10, 29, 12; 16. On the other hand Vārttika 8 on Pāṇini, I, 1, 73, recognizes Hārītakāta, and Pāṇini, IV, 1, 100, Hārītayana as names, where Hārīta appears. Weber's Hārīta here is therefore probably wrong, and Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VIII, 11, has *kṛṣṇahārīta*.

<sup>2</sup> Brāhmaṇa here means secret doctrine like Upaniṣad. *Iva* seems to be used to indicate the somewhat unusual sense; the Sāṅkhāyana version has *eva*; cf. I, 1, 2, n. 3; *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, p. 1193, n. 1. Sāyana in his commentary repeatedly has phrases like *antaryāmībrāhmaṇa*, the secret doctrine of the *antaryāmin*, see III, 2, 4, n. 18, and cf. the name of Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 4 (*puruṣavidhābrāhmaṇa*), Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, 25, and the common *tasyoktaṃ brāhmaṇam*.

<sup>3</sup> To his pupil or son (Ānandatīrtha and Sāyana).

<sup>4</sup> The reading of B, *saṃvatsaram* (see Introd., p. 3), must be a correction to improve the sense. But it could never have been corrupted into *saṃvatsaraḥ*. Prajāpati as the year is a Brāhmaṇic commonplace (for its deeper significance, see Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, xx sq.), e.g. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, II, 17, 2; VI, 19, 7; Maitrāyaṇī Saṃhitā, I, 10, 8; Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, VI, 15; Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 1, &c. The phrase *Prajāpatiḥ prajāḥ sṛjtvā vyasraṃsata* is frequent in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VI-X, not in I-V; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 268; and for a similar case cf. II, 4, 3, n. 14. One might translate, 'he is the year.' Cf., however, Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 1, 1, 1 and 2. The confusion of *vyasraṃsata* and *sata* is another example of the confusion of surd and sonant so common in Śāradā MSS. Cf. Lanman in Whitney's *Translation of the Atharvaveda*, pp. 57, 1045; J. Hertel, *Tantrākhyaṇikā*, p. xvi; Roth, *Z. D. M. G.*, XLVIII, 106-111.

<sup>5</sup> This is the literal rendering. Sāyana takes it, 'Who recites the verses thinking of the *ṛ* and *ṣ* which accompany the Saṃhitā.'

<sup>6</sup> To the Saṃhitā (Sāyana), or perhaps to the reciter, if not to both.

<sup>7</sup> Sāyana takes it, 'If a pupil ask his teacher,' but this is unnecessary. The question is, he says, whether the reflection on the Saṃhitā is to take the differences of *ṛ* and *ṣ* into account or not.

<sup>8</sup> Sāyana refers this to Śūravīra's doctrine, III, 1, 1. For *upāptau*, cf. Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XIV, 5; Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 6, where Dr. Friedländer renders 'hinreichend, genügend'.



Māṇḍūkeya, then the letters *ṇ* and *ṣ* are obtained for us.' Stāvira Śākalya<sup>9</sup> says, 'If we repeat the verses according to the Saṃhitā, and if we say the teaching of Māṇḍūkeya, then the letters *ṇ* and *ṣ* are obtained for us.' Then the seers, the Kāvaṣeṣas, knowing this,<sup>10</sup> say, 'To what end shall we repeat the Veda, to what end shall we sacrifice? For we sacrifice breath in speech,<sup>11</sup> or in breath speech. For what is the beginning, that is the end.' These Saṃhitās let no one<sup>12</sup> tell to one who is not a resident pupil, who has not been with the teacher for one year, and who is not himself to become a teacher. Thus say the teachers.<sup>13</sup>

<sup>9</sup> The sayings are identical, and apparently this is intended to denote that the doctrine received universal acceptance. The passage may indicate (cf. also Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, IV, 10, 3, where Śākalya is younger apparently than Māṇḍūkeya) that the Māṇḍūkeya Śākhā had its Saṃhitā text before Śākalya produced the Pada Pāṭha, which is quite likely.

<sup>10</sup> This is a clear proof that the holders of the Āraṇyaka doctrine rejected sacrifices or recitations as means of knowledge, cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 5, 23; Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, II, 5; Chāndogya Upaniṣad, V, 11-24; Taittirīya Upaniṣad, II, 5; Deussen, *Phil. d. Upanishads*, p. 63. A Tura Kāvaṣeya *purohita* of Janamejaya occurs in Khila, I, 9, 6, and in—as already noted by Colebrooke, *Essays*, I, 72; see Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, XLII, 239 sq.—the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 27; VII, 39; VIII, 21. For the spelling cf. Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des R̥gveda*, Addenda, p. 190; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 239. Winternitz (*Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 199) uses the story of Kavaṣa as the son of a non-Brahmin (Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, II, 19) as a piece of evidence in favour of the theory of the attribution to the Kṣatriyas of philosophic speculation over the origin of the doctrine of transmigration (cf. *Introd.*, pp. 50, 51; Garbe, *Beiträge zur indischen Kulturgeschichte*, pp. 1 sq.). He argues that the Brahmins merely accepted and made these doctrines their own by adopting them along with the doctrine of the four Āśramas. This all seems very doubtful. That among the priests none should rise superior to the sacrificial cultus is contrary to all religious history. That hermits, &c., were originally not of the priestly caste is a mere theory and not a probable one. Winternitz' view leads him (p. 202, n. 1) to adopt the improbable theory of Āraṇyaka as a text to be studied by Vānaprasthas, for which he quotes the (late) Āruṇeya Upaniṣad (Deussen, *Sechzig Upanishads*, p. 693) and Rāmānuja (Thibaut, *S. B. E.*, XLVIII, 645). Cf. *Introd.*, p. 16. It must always be remembered that the Brāhmaṇas contain already in germ all the ideas which make up the fundamental doctrine of the Upaniṣads; even the doctrine of transmigration is presaged in the doctrine of repeated deaths in the other world. It is impossible to explain why the Brahmins became so completely the bearers of the *ātman* doctrine if it was not theirs *ex initio*. Professor Macdonell has told me that he concurs in this view, which thus gains great weight, and see my notes, *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, pp. 838, 868, 1142. The Kāvaṣeṣas are cited by Śaṅkara on Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad (ed. Röer, p. 257) as opposed to works, Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, II, 418.

<sup>11</sup> Cf. Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 2, 6.

<sup>12</sup> Cf. V, 3, 3; Weber, *Indian Literature*, p. 49, n. 35.

<sup>13</sup> Mahidāsa, &c. (Ānandatīrtha). Cf. I, 1, 1, n. 5; II, 3, 5, n. 4. Probably the plural is only *maiestatis*.

## ĀRANYAKA IV

ĀŚVALĀYANA (Śrauta Sūtra, VII, 12, 10) gives the following account of the purpose of the Mahānāmni verses. On the fifth day of the *pr̥sthya* six day ceremony, at the midday pressing of the Soma, corresponding to the Niṣkevalya Śastra, the Udgātr̥s sing sometimes the Śākvara Sāman as one of the Pr̥stha Stotras,<sup>1</sup> and then<sup>2</sup> use the Mahānāmni verses as the basis of the Sāman. These number nine, but for the purposes of the Sāman they are made into three, each consisting of three verses. These verses are recited *adhyardhakāram*, that is, first one and a half verses are recited, then comes a pause, then the remaining one and a half, followed by the syllable *om*. Then are recited the nine *purīṣa-padāni*, additional verses. These may either be recited simply straight on as they stand in the text, or the first five may be made into two sets of five syllables each, thus:

*Evā hi eva | evā hi Agnā 3u |* the *hi* being taken without Sandhi, the last four *purīṣapadāni* being repeated without a pause in the middle. See also Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, X, 6, 10, and comm.

The Mahānāmni verses occur in the Āraṇya Saṃhitā, and in the Naigeya Śākhā at the end of the Pūrvārcika of the Sāmaveda, and as one of the Khilas of the R̥gveda, see Peterson, *Second Report*, p. 97, Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des R̥gveda*, pp. 134-136. They are referred to in the Bṛhaddevatā, VIII, 100, Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, X, 6, 10, R̥gvidhāna, IV, 25, and Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, II, 11, 12, &c. From these sources, and from Baudhāyana, cited in Oldenberg, *Prolegomena*, p. 509, n., it appears that they followed directly upon the verse *tac chaṃ yor*, which, according to the Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 5, 9, is the end of the R̥gveda Saṃhitā (in the Bāṣkala recension), and, according to Nārāyaṇa on Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 5, 9, is the end of the Bāṣkala recension.<sup>3</sup> It is not, however, quite clear what this means, since *tac chaṃ yor* occurs as the last verse of two Khilas, V, 1 and 3, in Scheftelowitz's edition, viz. the *saṃjñānam* and *prādhvarāṇām* Khilas, and the three Khilas, V, 1-3, the second being the *nairhastyam*, have 5+3+7=15 verses. The view of

<sup>1</sup> For these, see especially Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLI, xx sq.

<sup>2</sup> The Śākvara is normally based on Sāmaveda, II, 1151-1153 (Sāyaṇa and Mahīdhara cited by Eggeling, p. xx, n. 2).

<sup>3</sup> Cf. also Oldenberg's note on Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 5, 9, and *Ind. Stud.*, XV, 150.



Oldenberg, who had not<sup>4</sup> the evidence of the MS. of the Khilas before him, was (*Prolegomena*, p. 502) that the Saṃhitā ended with the first *lac chaṃ yor*, i.e. with Khila, V, 1, and Scheftelowitz (pp. 11, 132) holds that this is correct. Oldenberg, however, held (p. 509) that the Mahānāmni verses followed directly after *lac chaṃ yor*, and (p. 501) expressed the view that the following ten verses were some of them modern. But of the direct evidence for the immediate sequence of the Mahānāmni verses, cited by Oldenberg, the Ṛgvidhāna alone fully bears him out, for the Khila MS. has the Mahānāmni verses after the *prādhvarāṇām* Khila, and this is probably the meaning of Bṛhaddevatā, VIII, 94, as interpreted by Prof. Macdonell. It is an easy conjecture that the Ṛgvidhāna, which has other coincidences with the Bṛhaddevatā<sup>5</sup>, followed that work, but misunderstood the word *caturtham*, which most probably must mean 'the fourth of the hymns after X, 190'. This fact weakens greatly the force of Oldenberg's argument from the modern character of the last ten verses, and in point of fact it is difficult to deny that the verse *lac chaṃ yor* is modern in appearance, and that it need not be separated in time from the last seven verses. For the second *lac chaṃ yor* being the end of the Saṃhitā in the Bāṣkala recension, we have the clear evidence of the commentator on the Caranavyūha,<sup>6</sup> who actually cites the verses. Dr. Scheftelowitz considers that the commentator is untrustworthy, and later than Sāyaṇa, but this appears very doubtful. We know, he argues, that the commentator explains the eight extra hymns attributed to the Bāṣkala Śākhā by the Anuvākānukramaṇī as being seven of the Vālakhilyas and the *saṃjñānam* hymn of fifteen verses, but the number should be ten, as the *saṃjñānam* hymn is really composed of three hymns. But it is difficult to maintain that it is impossible that the fifteen verses, despite their difference of contents, were not regarded in early days as one hymn, for several of the Ṛgvedic hymns are notoriously patchwork, and this applies more strongly still to later Saṃhitās.

Much more important is the question of their antiquity. Oldenberg makes the Mahānāmni verses an exception to his general view, that the Khilas are on the whole of later origin, and holds that they are coeval with the Ṛgveda, and were merely omitted because of some reason of ritual teaching from the ten Maṇḍalas. Dr. Scheftelowitz, who disputes Oldenberg's general position, and accepts Hillebrandt's theory of the purer ritual tradition, assigns the verses (p. 3) to the end of the Ṛgvedic period. Further, Oldenberg<sup>7</sup> has suggested

<sup>4</sup> He takes no notice of the new evidence in his review of Scheftelowitz, *Gött. gel. Anz.*, 1907, p. 227, for which and for other valuable papers I am indebted to his kindness.

<sup>5</sup> Macdonell, *Bṛhaddevatā*, I, 147.

<sup>6</sup> Oldenberg, *Prolegomena*, pp. 495, 501, 502.

<sup>7</sup> *S.B.E.*, XXIX, 156.

that the verses are alluded to as the Śakvari verses in Ṛgveda, VII, 33, 4; X, 71, 11, and this suggestion is at least plausible. They are apparently referred to as Mahānāmni in the Atharvaveda and Yajurveda (see below). It is borne out to some extent at least by the character of the language, which shows the rare forms *ānuśamṣiṣaḥ*, *stuṣe*, *vide*, *iṣe*, *rñjāse*, and *saṁnyase*. The metre is also of an archaic type in so far as resolutions are frequently necessary to restore it. The Khila Anukramaṇī gives the following note: *vidā daśa pādāś ca pañca Viśvāmitra Indro vā Prajāpatir Aindram pāvanam ānuṣṭubham puriṣapadāny Āgneyavaiṣṇavaindrapauṣṇadaivāni vairājāni dvīṣṭyāpañcamyāv uṣṇihau caturthī nyānkusāriṇī saptaṁ purastādbrhātī navāmyantye pañkṣī*. As a matter of fact, as both Weber\* and Oldenberg recognize, the verses are not preserved in their primitive form, but only as modified to suit their supposed sacred character. In verses 2, 5, and 8, which were apparently originally *anuṣṭubh*s, the fourth *pāda* has been omitted for the insertion of a sort of refrain. Verses 1, 3, and 6 are in *anuṣṭubh*. Verse 4 appears to be 8 + 12 + 8 + 8; verse 7, 12 + 8 + 8 + 8; verse 9, 8 + 8 + 8 + 8 + 8. The rest is in no regular metre. Oldenberg (p. 33) considers that originally the metre consisted of seven and five sets of eight syllables respectively, but this seems hardly borne out by the facts. It should be noted that the Khila text manufactures the last four of the nine *puriṣapadāni* into one verse (!), and in this respect is certainly not old, for the *puriṣapadāni* cannot reasonably be held to have ever made up a verse. They are referred to, however, as five in the Kauṣṭiki Brāhmaṇa, XXIII, 2, and connected with Prajāpati, Agni, Indra, Pūṣan, and Devāḥ, and in the Bṛhaddevatā, VIII, 102, they are connected with the same deities, save that Viṣṇu is substituted for the Devāḥ (so the A version; the B version omits Prajāpati, while Mitra's text includes both Prajāpati and the Devāḥ, see Macdonell's note). They are also mentioned in the Pañcaviṁśa Brāhmaṇa, XIII, 4, 12, where elaborate directions are given as to their selection to make up the *śakvara sāman*, Lāṭyāyana Sūtra, IV, 10, 18, Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, X, 6, 13, &c., and in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 4; V, 7; VI, 24; Atharvaveda, XI, 7, 6; Vājasaneyi Saṁhitā, XXIII, 35; Kāṭhaka Saṁhitā, X, 10; Taittirīya Saṁhitā, V, 2, 11, 1.<sup>9</sup>

The verses contain several phrases reminiscent of the Ṛgveda, perhaps borrowed from earlier hymns; at least they tend to convey an impression of second-hand use: *jētāram āparājitam* = RV., I, 11, 2; *sā naḥ parśad āti* = RV., X, 187, 1; *Indram dhānasya sātāye* is the last *pāda* of RV., VIII, 3, 5<sup>d</sup> (this I owe to Bloom-

\* *Ind. Stud.*, VIII, 68.

<sup>9</sup> For the last four reff. I am indebted to Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 696<sup>a</sup>, who gives other passages; cf. also Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XVII, 358; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLI, xx; XLIV, 380, n. 2.



field, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 210<sup>b</sup>); *sām anyēṣu bravāvahai*=RV., I, 30, 6; *sākhā susēvo ādvayāḥ*=RV., I, 187, 3<sup>d</sup>; *śaviṣṭha vajrinn ṛñjase*=RV., I, 80, 10 (with *ojāsā*). These last two cases seem to me strongly in favour of the later date of these verses, for *bravāvahai* is not unnatural in RV., I, 30, 6, where it seems to refer to Indra and the speaker who are to agree in other battles, the previous half verse referring to a conflict, but it is distinctly awkward here where the first half verse has no reference to a fight or other occasion of association. This only, however, proves that the Mahānāmni verses are not among the earliest parts of the R̥gveda.

The last four *purīṣapādāni* are made out of the preceding verses, *evā hī śakrō*, from v. 2; *vaśī hī śakrō*, from v. 5; *vāśāṇ ānu*, from v. 4. The Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 2, 9, shows that other *pādas* of the verses were used independently in the ritual: *praelana praelayāyāhi piba matsva | kratuś chanda ṛtaṃ bṛhat sumna ā dhehi no vasav ity anuṣṭup* | Ibid., 12, has: *ud yad bradhnyasya viṣṭapam iti paridhāniyā | evā hy evaiṣā hindra 3 | evā hī śakro vaśī hī śakra iti japiṭvā | apāḥ pūrveṣāṃ harivaḥ sulānām iti yajati* | and again the *purīṣapādāni* in VI, 3, 26.

For the question of the 'authorship' of this Āraṇyaka by Āśvalāyana, cf. Introd., pp. 18 sq. For the view that this forms a sort of Āśvalāyana Saṃhitā may be compared the fact that there is an Āpastambīya Mantrapāṭha, a collection of Gṛhya verses and formulae, to accompany the Āpastamba Gṛhya Sūtra. So too, as Oldenberg (*S. B. E.*, XXX, 3-11) has conclusively<sup>10</sup> shown, the Mantra Brāhmaṇa was prepared to accompany Gobhila's Gṛhya Sūtra, though it is not apparently ascribed to Gobhila, just as IV is not attributed to Āśvalāyana in the Āraṇyaka itself. Winternitz (*Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 232) merely repeats Max Müller (*Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, pp. 314 sq., 339).

O generous one, show<sup>1</sup> us a path, proclaim the regions, guide us, lord of many might, wealthy one || 1 ||

With these aids of thine, wise one, make us wise, for glory and for strength, Indra. For thine is strength || 2 ||

For wealth, for might, thunderer, most powerful, bearer of the bolt, thou

<sup>10</sup> I do not consider Winternitz (*Mantrapāṭha*, I, xxxi sq.) to have refuted Oldenberg.

<sup>1</sup> *vidā* is rendered *vetṣi* by Sāyaṇa, and S takes it as a Vedic form of *vida*, i.e. imper. of the aor. of *√vid* (Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 851). Possibly this is correct (cf. *vide* in ver. 5), and it is from *√vid* in the sense 'find', for which see the examples in Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, pp. 866<sup>b</sup>, 867<sup>a</sup>. But it may perhaps be really *vidāḥ* the subj. of the aor. of *√vid* (Whitney, § 849) or an injunctive from *vi + √dā*. The accent would then, however, probably have been *vidāḥ*, but exceptions are not unknown. The same question arises in RV., IX, 40, 3: *vidāḥ sahasrīṇīr iṣaḥ*. For the accent, *pūrvīṇām*, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 319. For *īcī*, cf. Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, pp. 58, 122; Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, II, 1, n.; Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, p. 239, n. 6.

movest.<sup>2</sup> Thou movest, most generous, bearer of the bolt. Come hither, drink, and be glad || 3 ||

Grant us wealth with good heroes. Thou art<sup>3</sup> the lord of might according to thy will. Thou movest, most generous, bearer of the bolt, who art the most powerful of heroes || 4 ||

Most generous of givers, wise one, guide us aright. Indra finds<sup>4</sup> all. Him I praise. For he has will and strength || 5 ||

Him we summon to our aid, the conqueror, unconquered. May he convoy us<sup>5</sup> beyond our foes. He is strength, resolve, and mighty order || 6 ||

Indra we summon for the winning of wealth, the conqueror, unconquered. May he convoy us beyond our foes. May he convoy us beyond our enemies<sup>6</sup> || 7 ||

<sup>2</sup> *rājase* may be regarded as the second singular pres. indic. of a sixth class root *rāj*, as Whitney (*Sanskrit Grammar*, § 758 a) takes it here. The exact sense is doubtful. It may conceivably = 'thou art praised', but the sense 'move' is possible, if the root is akin to the Greek *ῥάγω*. Cf. Delbrück, *Altindisches Verbum*, p. 181; Bartholomae, *Indog. Forsch.*, II, 281; Neisser, *Bezz. Beitr.*, XX, 59; Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 396, 436 ('press on, strive forward'); Fischel (*Vedische Studien*, I, 109), however, compares *saraj* with *ῥάγω*, and Geldner (*ibid.*, III, 29 sq.) postulates a  $\sqrt{rj} = \text{subh}$ ; *diptau*, either transitive or intransitive. He does not, unhappily, quote or explain this passage. In RV., VIII, 9, 17 he renders *vēmi tvā Pāṇan rājase* as 'I desire to adorn thee', and possibly the form *rājase* might be an infin. = an imperative (cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 412; Neisser, *Bezz. Beitr.*, XX, 59; Hopkins, *A. J. P.*, XIII, 21 sq.; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 216 d). The accentuation *pība mātṛva* seems most probable, cf. *tardnir ij jayati kṣēti puyāti* in RV., VII, 32, 9, and other examples given in Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 36 sq.; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 594 b; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, p. 80; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 105. *mātṛva* is irregularly accented, but there are many parallels, Whitney, § 628; Macdonell, p. 99 (foot).

<sup>3</sup> *bhūvaḥ* is according to Whitney (*Sanskrit Grammar*, § 83 b, c; cf. Delbrück, l. c., p. 144) either an injunctive of an unaugmented *a* aorist, or a subjunctive of the root aorist. But in sense it may be an indicative. *vāsāṁ dnu* may perhaps be 'according to our will'. *rāyāḥ suvīryam* is curious, but the variant *rāyē* is merely an easy correction. Cf. *rāyāḥ poṣam*, RV., IV, 40, 4. The Taittirīya Saṃhitā, III, 1, 9, 4 has: *vidar gaupatyam rāyas poṣam suvīryam saṃvatsarigāṇam svastim*, where the conjunction of *rāyas* and *suvīryam* is different, but where *vidar* supports the derivation of *vidā* from  $\sqrt{vid}$ . Cf. V, 1, 6, n. 3.

<sup>4</sup> *vid* must be 3rd sing. like *ite*, and may mean 'knows', cf. Hopkins, *J. A. O. S.*, XV, 276, n. Sāyaṇa renders it as a 2nd sing. For *stuḥ* see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 894 d; Delbrück, l. c., p. 181. If *stuḥ* is read, the accent is somewhat irregular. But irregular accents in quasi-subordinate clauses are numerous, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 595-598; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 43; RV., I, 189, 3; III, 1, 1, with Oldenberg's notes (*S. B. E.*, XLVI, 182, 223); *Z. D. M. G.*, LX, 735 sq.

<sup>5</sup> Sāyaṇa takes *ati parjad* as 'let him destroy', and the last *pāda* as meaning, 'the sacrifice, the metre used, the fruits of the offering, and all great.' The words are clearly not in place here, and make little sense.

<sup>6</sup> *śrīdhaḥ* Sāyaṇa explains as those whom we should hate, although they do not hate us. The meaning is perhaps 'beyond all failures'; cf. *atī śrīdhaḥ* in this sense in RV., I, 36, 7; III, 9, 4; 10, 7.



Place us in thy favour, ancient one, lord of the thunder, bright one. Most powerful, thy rewards are extolled. For the strong god bears rule || 8 ||

Lord of man, slayer of Vṛtra, this new hymn<sup>7</sup> I offer now to thee. Among others let us two converse together. The hero who fares for the cows is a kind and guileless friend || 9 ||

Thus,<sup>8</sup> thus, O Agni. Thus, thus, O Indra. Thus, thus, O Viṣṇu. Thus, thus, O Pūṣan. Thus, thus, O Gods. For he is strong. For he has strength and will, according to his will. On all sides<sup>9</sup> come hither. Show, generous one, show.

<sup>7</sup> This is doubtful. *mānyase*, the variant of the other texts save SV., is remarkable as being accented, and does not help. It looks like an obvious error or correction for *sānyase*, which becomes *sānnyase*, SV., Naigeya Śākhā, and then by haplography *sānyase*, SV., Āraṇya Saṃhitā, and then *mānyase* through the frequent mistake of *s* for *m* in Śāradā MSS. *mānyase* makes no good sense, but *saṃnyase* also is very difficult (even if taken as Oldenberg (S. B. E., XLVI, 404) would take it in RV., V, 17, 2, as a first person). It comes apparently from *√as*. Dr. Scheftelowitz now agrees with this view (cf. my remark in J. R. A. S., 1907, p. 224). For *taṃ tan* (i. e. *taḍ*) can be read (supply *sūktam* or, with *taṃ*, *mantram*) but *navyam* may be from *√nu*, meaning praiseworthy. The dual *bravāvahai* in the original context refers to the singer and Indra who are in other (contests) to be united. Here it must (cf. n. 7 on I, 1, 2) mean something of the same sort, but *anyeṣu* has no longer any direct antecedent. SV. *aryeṣu* is merely a facile correction like so many SV. readings. For the loc., *gōṣu*, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 122; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 81 b; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 301, 304; A. J. P., XIII, 284. *Sānyase* as a dat. hardly makes sense.

<sup>8</sup> Sāyana takes *evā* as from *√i* and *ā*. The sentence is practically a mere exclamation and cannot be translated. The words *ā yō*, &c., yield no sense as they stand. Sāyana renders, 'He who comes to think what is to be thought of for our weal, let him come to think what is to be thought of.' The variant *āyo* is no help, though it might mean 'Come to the man who deserves favour', cf. Taittirīya Saṃhitā, II, 1, 3, 2. For the *pluti*, *ā 3 i*, see Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 298.

<sup>9</sup> Cf. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 12, where the sentence runs: *chy evā hīndropēhi vītvathā vidā maghavan vidā iti*, from which it may be legitimate to assume that *chi* should be supplied in the *purīṣapādāni*. The last *vidā* may point to *vidāḥ* being the form. *vītvadhā* in RV. means either (1) everywhere, I, 141, 6; (2) always, V, 8, 4.

The Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, I, 20, has: *evā hy eva | evā hy Agne | evā hi Vāyo | evā hīndra | evā hi Pūṣan | evā hi devāḥ* | when Sāyana renders *eva* as *nyanaśilāditya* and *evā* as *etavyāḥ prāptavyāḥ kāmāḥ*, and supplies *asi*, 'Thou art desires': *hīlādenādityasya sarvakāmaheturva-prasiddhir ucyate*. Ibid., 23, has: *evā hy evēti | ... evā hy Agne | evā hi Vāyo | evā hīndra | evā hi Pūṣan | ... evā hi devāḥ |* The accents are those of the Ānandāśrama text (I, 88, 89), and may be wrong. In the Maitrāyaṇī Saṃhitā, II, 3, 18 (a reference which I owe to Bloomfield's *Vedic Concordance*, p. 305<sup>a</sup>) all the MSS. have *evā* (or *evā*) *hy Agne*. The Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXIII, 2, gives two accounts of the Mahānāmni or Śakvarī, and gives as the five *purīṣapādāni*: *evā hy eva | evā hy Agne | evā hīndra | evā hi Pūṣan | evā hi devāḥ* |

It is by no means obvious how these verses came to be considered as an especially fruitful rain-spell. As such they are clearly recognized in the Gobhila Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 2, and the Khādīra Gṛhya Sūtra, II, 5, 22 sq., where the Śakvarīvrata is clearly a rite of sympathetic magic to produce plentiful rain (see Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 420-422, with whose remarks I fully concur).

## ĀRANYAKA V

## ADHYĀYA 1.

In the Mahāvratā ceremony there are twenty-five verses to accompany the kindling of the fire.<sup>1</sup> In the twenty-one<sup>2</sup> verses (used in the Viśuvant) four are inserted before the second last, beginning, 'With fuel Agni' (RV., VIII, 44, 1). A bull is to be offered to Viśvakarman<sup>3</sup> accompanied by muttering the verses. The Ājya and Praṭiga Śāstras are taken from the Viśvajit.<sup>4</sup> The Śāstras of

<sup>1</sup> Sāyana explains that although the Sāmidhenī verses are not part of the Soma sacrifice itself, yet they are used in the animal sacrifice which forms a part of it and so are in place here. He quotes Mīmāṃsā Sūtra, III, 1, 18, 9: *ānarthakyāt tad aṅgeṣu*. They are to be said after the anointing of the animal by the Adhvaryu, according to Āpastamba. Cf. also his Vajñāparibhāṣā, 2 and 3 (S. B. E., XXX, 319, 345). For the gen., cf. Caland, *Altindisches Zauberritual*, p. 18, n. 2; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 1, 5, 4; III, 1, 1, n. 3.

<sup>2</sup> There are in the Darśapūrṇamāseṣṭi, see Hillebrandt, *Neu- und Vollmondsopfer*, pp. 74 sq., fifteen verses beginning with RV., III, 27, 1 (cf. Oldenberg, S. B. E., XLVI, 299; Bergaigne, *Recherches sur l'histoire de la liturgie védique*, p. 19); see Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, III, 5, 2, 1. There are only eleven separate verses, but the first and last are each thrice repeated. In the Viśuvant the fifteen are extended into twenty-one by the interpolation of six verses beginning with RV., III, 27, 5. These are inserted before the second last verse, RV., V, 28, 5. Then four more verses, beginning with RV., VIII, 44, 1, are added before this verse to make up the twenty-five. The Śāṅkhāyana here ignores these verses. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, I, 1, 14, gives the number as 17. See a list in Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, I, 2, 7. The construction acc. for nom. is remarkable and is not a mark of late or careless style, for these irregularities and the use of numerals are found in the Mantras (e.g. *saptā r̥ṣīnām, śatām pūrbbh̥*, cited by Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 486 c) and in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 48, 9: *catuḥṣaṣṭīm kavacina āsuḥ*, while in VII, 2, 7, *parṇasaraḥ ṣaṣṭis trīṇi ca śatāny āhṛtya* occurs (see Aufrecht, p. 428). Above, II, 2, 4; 3, 8, occurs *ṣaṭtriṃśataṃ sahasrāṇi*, while Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 1 has *ṣaṭtriṃśatam ekapadāḥ*, which examples all appear to be transfers of accusative for nominative, though the possibility of their being new stems in a cannot be denied (especially as the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa actually has *trayastrīṃśatyā*, a transfer to the *i* declension). Cf. Introd., p. 56. The idiom has hardly been adequately noticed in Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 82.

<sup>3</sup> The Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 1, prescribes a bull for Indra and a goat for Prajāpati. The Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 7, 7, mentions also a *savaniya paśu*, see Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, pp. 125, 136. Cf. also Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XIII, 2, 17. *Upāṃtu* means not in silence but so as not to be overheard, see Sāyana's quotation, *karāṇavad alabdāṃ manah prayogam*, and Āpastamba Vajñāparibhāṣā, 9, 11 and 113 (S. B. E., XXX, 319 and 345), where the Sāmidhenis are not *upāṃtu* but *antarā* (see note on 11).

<sup>4</sup> For the Ājya see I, 1, 1. The Praṭiga consists of seven *tr̥cas*, I, 1, 3-4, preceded by the *puroruci*, *Vāyur agreṣā yajñapr̥r̥*, &c., Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VII, 10, 9. The *puroruci* are also given in Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des R̥gveda*, as Khila, V, 6.



the Hotrakas are taken from the Caturviṃśa rite.<sup>5</sup> In the morning pressing the Brāhmaṇacchaṃsin should add the verses, beginning, 'The busy moving ones' (RV., X, 153, 1), and at the midday pressing the verses, 'Of this strong youthful one drink' (RV., X, 160, 1).<sup>6</sup> The tristich which forms the strophe begins, 'The buffalo in the bowls, the barley-mixed' (RV., II, 22, 1), the tristich forming the antistrophe consists of the three verses, 'Indra, come hither to us from far away' (RV., I, 130, 1), 'For to Indra heaven, the wise one, bowed' (RV., X, 127, 1), and, 'To him a song excelling' (RV., X, 133, 1).<sup>7</sup> The Marutvatīya Śāstra is taken over from the Caturviṃśa and extended by the hymns, 'Fair has been my effort, singer' (RV., X, 27, 1), 'Drink the Soma for which in anger thou breakest' (RV., VI, 17, 1), 'With what splendour' (RV., I, 165, 1), and, 'Indra, with the Maruts' (RV., III, 45, 1).<sup>8</sup> The Marutvatīya Śāstra ends with the hymn, 'Thou art born, terrible, for strength, for energy' (RV., X, 53, 1). At the end of the Marutvatīya Śāstra, the Hotṛ, leaving his place by the incomplete route,<sup>9</sup> offers three oblations in the Agnidh's fire with a ladle of *udumbara* wood (accompanying them with the verses):—

<sup>5</sup> The Hotrakas are the Maitrāvaruṇa, Brāhmaṇacchaṃsin, and Achāvāka. In the Agniṣṭoma their Śāstras begin with RV., III, 62, 16; VIII, 17, 1; III, 12, 1, respectively. In the Caturviṃśa they begin with RV., V, 68, 3; I, 4, 1; VIII, 72, 13, respectively.

<sup>6</sup> The Mahāvratā differs in these points even from the Caturviṃśa. Sāyaṇa leaves it undecided whether the passages extend to five verses, or only to one verse by the *paribhāṣā*, *raṇi pādagrahaṇe*, for which see Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, I, 1, 17.

<sup>7</sup> These verses are apparently to precede the Śāstra of the Brāhmaṇacchaṃsin at the midday pressing. The word *stotriya* is used because the verses correspond to those used in the Sāman corresponding to the Śāstra, cf. Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 103. The Śāṅkhāyana Śākhā ignores the Śāstras of the Hotrakas. The reference to the midday pressing is out of order.

<sup>8</sup> For the Marutvatīya Śāstra of the Hotṛ at the midday pressing, see I, 2, 1 and 2. In the Agniṣṭoma it begins with RV., VIII, 68, 1-3, and VIII, 2, 1-3. The Caturviṃśa contains alterations, and the Mahāvratā adds the hymns enumerated. *Ātānah* (found in VS., TS., &c.) must mean *vistārah* as Sāyaṇa has it here. Cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 4, 12, where Sāyaṇa renders *sastrakṛptih*. Friedländer, on Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 3, suggests the sense 'scheme' for it. In RV., II, 1, 10, *ātāniḥ* = 'expander'; cf. my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 3, n. 6.

<sup>9</sup> Sāyaṇa here (cf. Ānartīya on Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 13, 7; VII, 7, 4; Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, V, 19, 8; VI, 5, 1, and comm.) explains that the *saṃsthānāṃcarah* is when, after the completion of the pressing, the Hotṛ departs from the *sadas* by the west, the *viśaṃsthā* is when, before the pressing is finished, he leaves by the eastern side. The Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 12, gives eight oblations on the *agnidhriya*, instead of three there and ten in the *mārjālīya*. The Mantras are quite different. See XVII, 12, 1-4. The first is a long prose Mantra; the second to the seventh *svāhā* Mantras, and the eighth consists of a couple of verses, the first an *anuṣṭubh*, the second a *gāyatrī* in strongly marked iambic metre of an archaic type, neither of which verses has, according to Bloomfield's *Vedic Concordance*, any parallel. After reciting the verses, he puts down the ladle *yathāyatanam*, departs by the way he came, and in front of the *sadas* to the north of the *sruti*, facing the

'Indra, Bṛhaspati, Soma, and the goddess, Vāc, have aided me.<sup>10</sup> May Mitra and Varuṇa, Heaven and Earth, aid me when first I call || 1 ||

'May the Ādityas, the all-gods, and the seven anointed Kings,<sup>11</sup> Vāyu, Pūṣan, Varuṇa, Soma, Agni, Sūrya, with the constellations, may they help me || 2 ||

'May the fathers protect me, and all this universe, and the children of Pr̥sni, the Maruts, with their splendour, ye who have Agni as your tongue and are worthy of sacrifice, may ye gods, hearing our cry, protect us || 3 ||'

He offers ten oblations on the *mārjāliya* altar<sup>12</sup> to the south, the last of which he first divides into four and deposits to the north of the fire. In the middle of the day, after the carrying forth of the fire, the *mārjāliya* fire is made

east, he mutters the *parimādāḥ japāḥ*, *vāg āyur viśvāyur viśvam āyur ehy evā hīndroṣehi viśvatha vidā maghavan vidā iti* (cf. above, p. 263), after which he adores the several members of the fire altar conceived in human form (XVII, 12, 6-13, 6). For the *Parimāds* themselves, cf. my *Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 4; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLI, 288, n. 2, and for the meaning of *mad*, Lanman in Whitney's *Translation of Atharvaveda*, p. 158. The Hotṛ goes north to the Agnidh's fire. (For Agnidh, cf. Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 189, and Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 18, n. 6.)

<sup>10</sup> Or 'may they aid me', as Sāyaṇa takes it. He thinks *pūrvahūtau* is an epithet of *Dyāvapṛthivī* or *Mitravaruṇau*.

<sup>11</sup> Sāyaṇa explains this by the list in Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, I, 7, *ārogo bhrājāḥ paśarāḥ pataṅgāḥ | svarṇaro jyotiṣmān vibhāsaḥ | te asmai sarve divam ātapanti |* This may be right, otherwise one might expect it to mean the seven Ādityas. No doubt the seven Ādityas set the model to the later theory of seven suns, whose names are variously given (cf. seven R̥sis, seven Hotṛs, seven sounds, &c., Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 225); see Viṣṇu Purāṇa, VI, 2; Hopkins, *Great Epic of India*, p. 475. Rājendralāla reads in the text *mā nu*, which is certainly wrongly accented and seems not quite as likely as *mānu* in view of the *anu* elsewhere used. The Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, II, 5, 8, 2 has: *ānu tvendro madatu ānu Bṛhaspatīḥ | ānu Somo ānu Agnir āvīt | ānu tvā vīṣve devā avantu | ānu sapta rājāno yā utābhīṣiktāḥ | ānu tvā Mitravarunāv ihāvatām | ānu dyāvapṛthivī viśvāsamhū | sūryo dhobhir ānu tvāvatu | candramā nākṣatrain ānu tvāvatu |* Note the different reading *utā abhīṣiktāḥ*. The text appears from Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 973<sup>a</sup>, to occur in Kāṭhaka Samhitā, XXXVII, 9 d, which has (9 c) *sūryo 'hobhir ānu tvāvatu*, confirming *mānu* against Mitra's *mā nu* (which is followed in the *Concordance*, p. 1028<sup>b</sup>), and (9 b) *ānu Somo ānu Agnir āvīt*, and (9 a) *ānu tvendro madatu ānu Bṛhaspatīḥ*, thus presenting only one line as against the two lines of the Āraṇyaka and the Brāhmaṇa. In the next verse *yé agnījīhvā utā vā yājatrāḥ* is a tag found in RV., VI, 52, 13 c, and in the other Samhitās (Bloomfield, p. 795<sup>b</sup>); the other three *pādas* seem as yet unparalleled. The series of prose Mantras below is also (see Index II) unique.

<sup>12</sup> In the middle of the *sādas* and the *haviṛdhānas* there is a space from north to south. The *agnidhriya* altar is at the north, the *mārjāliya* at the south. With *caturgrhītam*, *ājyam* must be understood, see Āpastamba, *Yajñaparibhāṣā*, 195 (*S. B. E.*, XXX, 341); cf. *caturgrhītena juhōti*, Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, V, 2; *caturgrhītās tisra ājyāhutiḥ*, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 10, 9, *grhītam*, VII, 21, but the construction is very awkward. Throughout the terms *dakṣiṇa* and *uttara* are ambiguous. For the *sādas* the priests' tent, cf. Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, III, 5, 3, 5, and Eggeling's note.



to kindle.<sup>13</sup> (The offering is made in it) when it is covered up, and either to the east, the north, or the north-east side. (The verses used are as follows):—

‘May I become unassailable like fire; may I become firmly rooted like the earth || 1 ||

‘May I become unapproachable<sup>14</sup> like the sky; may I become unassailable like the heaven || 2 ||

‘May I become without a superior like the sun; may I become renewed like the moon || 3 ||

‘May I become renewed like mind; may I be multiplied like the wind<sup>15</sup> || 4 ||

‘May I become one’s own like the day<sup>16</sup>; and dear like night || 5 ||

‘May I become born again like kine; may I become glorious<sup>17</sup> like a pair || 6 ||

‘Mine be the flavour of water and the form of plants || 7 ||

‘May I become widespreading<sup>18</sup> like food, and lordly like the sacrifice || 8 ||

‘May I become like the Brahmin in the world, and like the Kṣatriya for prosperity || 9 ||

‘When, O Agni, this assembly is gathered (RV., X, 11, 8)<sup>19</sup> || 10 ||’

<sup>13</sup> The idea seems to be that the fire is kept in from the time it is lighted on the *mārjālīya* altar but is now ‘wakened’. *prabhṛti* in this use is first found in the Śrauta Sūtras, Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 112.

<sup>14</sup> The attraction of *anāpyam* is curious, but is paralleled in RV., I, 65, 5: *puṣṭīr nā raṇvā kṣīr nā pṛthvī girī nā bhūjmā* (Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 56), and below, *mana ivāpūrvam, annam iva vibhu, gāva iva punarbhuvah*, and in the case of the verb, RV., V, 25, 8: *dyumanto arcayo grāvevocyate brhat*, Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 417. Cf. also Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, VIII, 6; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, II, 221, n. For a series of words with *bhūyāsam*, cf. Jaiminīya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, III, 20 and 21.

<sup>15</sup> *yathā mana uttarottaram abhivṛddhikāṅkṣayā prayatamānaṃ sat tattatphalaprapṛṣṭyā nūtanam rūpaṃ pratipadyate . . . yathā vāyur āśādhādīmāse samudratīrādideṣe vā svayam uttarottarābhivṛddhyā saṅgharāpo bhavati* (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>16</sup> Sāyaṇa renders *svam* as wealth. The day gives wealth by permitting mercantile operations. Emendation to *svar* is easy but improbable. Cf. the curious *svāh* in RV., I, 77, 5 (Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 88), *yakṣam iva*, Gobhila Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 4, 28; Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, III, 140. Night gives rest to the weary (Sāyaṇa); note *priyo* not *priyā*.

<sup>17</sup> This must be the sense though the expression *maricayaḥ*, ‘glories,’ is curious. Kine have offspring yearly, and pairs (e.g. Umā and Mahesvara, Lakṣmī and Nārāyaṇa) are glorious (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>18</sup> The reading *vibhu* is certain, but both Rājendralāla and the Ānandāśrama edition read in the commentary *vibhuḥ*, and Sāyaṇa may have so read, but this is not necessary. For a converse case, cf. V, 2, 1, when Rājendralāla reads *vasu* for *vasuḥ*. The next Mantra offers considerable difficulty. Sāyaṇa renders as the Brahmin in the world and *kṣatram rājyaṃ gajāśvādīriyām adhipatiḥ*, apparently taking *iriyām* as a genitive (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 349, 351). But the parallelism of the sentence calls urgently for a locative which gives fair sense, ‘in point of wealth.’ The speaker desires (a) renown, (b) wealth. Only the exact force of the locative varies in the two cases.

<sup>19</sup> The last oblation is accompanied by a RV. verse.

(In this stanza) the three words *atra*, *vibhajātha*, and *vītha* are not in accordance with the Ṛgveda text.<sup>20</sup>

Standing there he worships the sun,<sup>21</sup> turning so as to keep his right side towards it as it turns, with these verses, omitting the cries of *svāhā*,<sup>22</sup> and with the verse, 'Come hither, this is sweet, this is sweet. Drink this bitter draught. This is sweet, this is sweet.' He then instructs the maidservants,<sup>23</sup> who carry full pitchers, six in front, three behind, (saying), 'Walk three times from left to right round this altar and this pitcher of water, smiting your right thighs with your right hands, and saying, "Come hither, this is sweet, this is sweet."'

<sup>20</sup> This must mean that in the rite the RV. verse is to be altered by reading in *pāda* 3, *ratnā cātra vibhajātha svadhōvaḥ* for *ratnā ca yod vibhajāsi*, and in *pāda* 4, *bhāgaṃ no atra vasumantaṃ vītha* for *vītāt*. Sāyaṇa adds that these alterations are improper, just as the alteration *vidheḥ* for *vydhatu* in *Bṛhaspatir no haviṣā vydhātu*, Taittirīya Saṃhitā, I, 2, 2, 1; VI, 1, 2, 3; Maitrāyaṇi Saṃhitā, I, 2, 2; III, 6, 4. The v.l. is not in Bloomfield. But this is not implied in the Āranyaka. The verse occurs in Atharvaveda, XVIII, 1, 26, and Maitrāyaṇi Saṃhitā, IV, 14, 15, but in neither place so altered. Bloomfield (*Vedic Concordance*, pp. 43<sup>b</sup>, 749<sup>b</sup>) also can merely quote Sāyaṇa's view. Perhaps the Bāskala Śākhā is meant. A different case occurs in IV: *Indraṃ dhānasya sātāye havāmahe* when *havāmahe* is added (as in Mahā.ārāyaṇa Upaniṣad, 7, cited by Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 210<sup>d</sup>) to the first three words which are found in RV., VIII, 3, 5 d. But the Mahānāmni verses are not part of the RV. and their occurrence is not parallel to this remarkable case.

<sup>21</sup> This is done later in the Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 5, where the words are almost identical, *atraiva tiṣṭhann ādityam upatiṣṭhate*. The Mantra is quite different, see Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 13, 9, 10. For the following, see my *Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka*, pp. 76 sq.

<sup>22</sup> The offerings are accompanied as usual by the cry *svāhā*. These are omitted. For the rule, cf. Āpastamba, Yajñaparibhāṣā, 87 (*S. B. E.*, XXX, 339).

<sup>23</sup> Cf. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 14, where apparently deliberately the direction is from right to left (*apradakṣiṇam*), though the words said are alike, *hai mahā 3 idaṃ madhu idaṃ madhu*. The dance is clearly a rain and vegetation spell, cf. Farnell, *Cults of the Greek States*, III, 103. These and the other ceremonies are all mentioned in the other parallel passages, Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 10-12; IV, 1-3; Tāṇḍya Brāhmaṇa, V, 5, 6; Kāthaka, XXXIV, 5; Kāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XIII, 3; Taittirīya Saṃhitā, VII, 5, 9 and 10; Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 6, 7. These versions differ in many details; the most important rite which is mentioned in neither of the Ṛgvedic works is the struggle of an Ārya and a Śūdra for a round skin, which represents the sun (cf. Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 444, 506; Usener, *Archiv f. Religionswissenschaft*, 1904, pp. 297 sq.). It is noteworthy that in Lāṭyāyana, IV, 3, 18, where the words repeated are like those in Śāṅkhāyana the form *vadatyah* also occurs. So Drāhyāyana; Taittirīya Saṃhitā, VII, 5, 10, has *gāyantyah*. The direction there is also *pradakṣiṇam*. After the eight *ājya* libations in the *agnidhriya* fire, according to the Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 4, come the *parimādi*. They are twenty-five in number and are followed by seven *stotriyas* named *āṅgīrasa sāmān*, *bhūtechadāṇi sāmān*, *krośa*, *anukrośa*, *payas*, *arka*, and *arkapūṣpa*. The Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 1, 2, 8; 9, contains a somewhat parallel version, see Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, 288, n. 2, and thus again (cf. *Introd.*, p. 36) agrees with the Śāṅkhāyana against the Aitareya. These *sāmān*s are called *devachandāmsi*, Śāṅkhāyana, I, 5, and are followed by *japas*. Then comes an adoration of the members of the fire (see here V, 1, 2), and of the sun, and the Hotṛ declares that the 'great one has united with the great



2. 'When the singing of the *stotra* has been requested, then do ye cast down the water in three places, on the northern altar, on the *mārjālīya* altar, and the rest within the enclosure.'<sup>1</sup> Having gone away so as to keep the *mārjālīya* fire on his right,<sup>2</sup> he stands before the sacrificial post in front of the fire, with face to the west, and worships the head of the fire with the words, 'Honour to the *Gāyatra* which is thy head:' then, returning by the way he came,<sup>3</sup> with face to the north, he worships the right side of the fire with the words, 'Honour to the *Rathantara* which is thy right side.' Then passing to the west of the tail of the fire,<sup>4</sup> with face to the east, he worships the left side of the fire with the words, 'Honour to the *Bṛhat* which is thy left side.' Then on the west<sup>5</sup>

one', i.e. Agni with *Prthivī*, 'the god with the goddess,' i.e. *Vāyu* with *Antarikṣa*, 'Brahman (neut.) with *Brāhmaṇī*' (see *Introd.*, p. 68, n. 1), i.e. *Āditya* with *Dyaus*. On this follows (I, 6) a *Viśvāmītra* legend (cf. *Aitareya*, II, 2, 3) to explain these identifications. For the use of *upa* + *√sthā*, cf. the famous passage in the *Mahābhāṣya*, I, 3, 25 (Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 480, 481), where an ape *upatiṣṭhati* to warm himself, but a man *upatiṣṭhate* in reverence.

<sup>1</sup> For *antarvedī*, cf. *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, VII, 33, 1; *antaḥparidhī*, *Bṛhaddevatā*, VII, 98; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 312. This belongs of course to the end of the preceding *Khaṇḍa*, and it is difficult to see why it has been separated in *Sāyaṇa*'s text. *uttare mārjālīya* means the *āgnidhriya* fire, which was used for the same purpose.

<sup>2</sup> This describes the worship of the fire altar in its simplest bird shape, head, two wings, tail, and body. In *Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra*, XVII, 13, the *sāmans* and the order differ, being (1) *pūrvārtha* with *Gāyatra*, (2) right side with *Rathantara*, (3) left side with *Bṛhat*, (4) *madhya* with *Vāmadevya*, (5) tail with *Yajñāyajñīya*. Cf. *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa*, IX, 1, 2, 35 and 39; X, 1, 2, 8, and Eggeling's summary (based on this passage and *Śāṅkhāyana*), *S.B.E.*, XLIII, 283, n.; *Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra*, III, 11, 3, where as here the body is placed last, but which agrees as to the *sāmans* with *Śāṅkhāyana* and also with *Drāhyāyana*, and in which the sprinkling of water in three parts also occurs. The *Sāmans* referred to will be found as follows, *gāyatrām* in *trivṛt stoma*, *Sāmaveda*, II, 146-148; 263-265; 800-802 (or II, 8, 4, see *S.B.E.*, XLIII, 178); *rathantaram* in *pañcadaśa stoma*, *ibid.*, II, 30, 31; *bṛhat* in *saptadaśa stoma*, *ibid.*, II, 159, 160; *rūjanam* in *pañcaviṃśa stoma*, *ibid.*, II, 833-835; *bhadra* in *ekaviṃśa stoma*, *ibid.*, II, 460-462. For the *Sāmans* cf. II, 3, 4. For a drawing of the *agnikṣetra* see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 235.

<sup>3</sup> He had gone from the *mārjālīya* in the south to the east side of the *cityāgni* and he now returns to the south. *Rāthantara* is unusual, but it is supported by all the MSS. *Lāṭyāyana* and *Śāṅkhāyana* have *rathantarāya*.

<sup>4</sup> It is not clear why he should not go round to the north, but all that is done is to go to the end of the west or tail side, when looking east, along the left side, he utters the Mantra.

<sup>5</sup> *paścāt* may simply mean 'next', or, as *Sāyaṇa* takes it, refer to the place where the Hotṛ stands. Apparently the difference between this and his former position is that he stands directly behind the tail, instead of going past it. This account of his movements corresponds on the whole with that of the ceremony of the *Śatarudriya*, which has analogies to the *Mahāvṛata* (*Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa*, IX, 1, 1, 44). In it, according to the *Śatapatha*, IX, 1, 2, 35 sq., the *Sāmans*, (1) *gāyatrām*, (2) *rathantaram*, (3) *bṛhat*, (4) *Vāmadevya*, (5) *yajñāyajñīyam*, and (6) *Prajāpatiḥṛdaya*, correspond to (1) head, (2) right wing, (3) left wing, (4) body, (5) tail, (6) heart; according to *Lāṭyāyana*, I, 5, 11, which very closely follows the order of

of the fire, with face to the east, he worships the tail with the words, 'Honour to the Bhadrā which is thy tail and thy support.' Then on the south of the tail he worships the body with the words, 'Honour to the Rājāna which is thy body.'

3. He returns to the seat as he went.<sup>1</sup> The swing has already been made ready.<sup>2</sup> Having cleansed the two posts, the ropes, and the cross-beam, and having taken them by the road called *fīrtha*,<sup>3</sup> having gone round to the left the Agnidh's altar,<sup>4</sup> (having brought them within) the seat by the east door (he places the implements<sup>5</sup>) to the left of all the altars. The planks of the swing are made of *udumbara* or of *palāśa*, or of both. There should be three planks worked on both sides, or two, and a like number of sharp-pointed sticks. The

movements in this Aitareya passage, the (1) *gāyatram*, (2) *rathantaram*, (3) *brhat*, (4) *yajñā-yajñīyam*, (5) *Vāmadevya*, and (6) *Prajāpatihṛdaya*, correspond to (1) head, (2) right side, (3) left side, (4) tail, (5) right arm-pit, and (6) left arm-pit. Cf. also the elaborate ceremonial of the *parimādaḥ* at the Mahāvratā as described in Śatapatha, X, 1, 2, 9; Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, II, 4 (with Friedländer's note, p. 37); and the similar use after the beginning of the *pr̥thā stotra* of the *parimādaḥ* (*prāṇa*, *apāna*, *vratapakṣaṇ*, *Prajāpater hṛdaya*, *Vasiṣṭhaya nihava*, *satrasyardhi*, *śloka* and *anuloka*, *yāma*, *āyus*, *navastobha*, *ṛiyasya sāman*) in the worship of the parts of the altar in Tāṇḍya Brāhmaṇa, V, 4, 1-13; Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 9, 1 sq.; Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, I, 2, 6, 5. In the Mahāvratā Sāman the parts of the bird are head, right wing, left wing, tail, and trunk only (Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, xxvii). The whole conception is clearly borrowed (cf. *Intro.*, p. 50) from the altar in the Agnicayana which gave origin to the mystic doctrines of the Adhvaryus (see especially Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VI-X), and of which the Mahāvratā is an adaptation by the Hotṛs. In Vājasaneyi Samhitā, XII, 4, the *trivṛt* is the head, the *gāyatram* the eyes, *brhat* and *rathantaram* the wings, the hymn the soul, the *yajñāṃsi* the name, the metres the limbs, the *Vāmadevya* the body, the *yajñāyajñīyam* the tail. For the relation of *sāman* and words, cf. Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, XXXVIII, 439 sqq., 464 sq.; Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 143 sq., and see Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, 180, n. 2; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 276 sq. The *Vāmadevya* is based on Sāmaveda, II, 32, 33; the *Yajñāyajñīya* on Sāmaveda, II, 53, 54.

<sup>1</sup> He comes back to the seat near the *mārjālīya* fire, which he left to worship the *cītya* altar. The expression occurs several times in the Śrauta Sūtra. For the eight altars see Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 148, n. 4 and the plan on p. 475, followed by Caland and Henry, *L'Agnistoma*; Hillebrandt, *Neu- und Vollmondsopfer*, p. 191.

<sup>2</sup> By the Adhvaryus. Cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VII, 32.

<sup>3</sup> This is the name of the passage between the *utkara* and *cātvalā*, Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, V, 15, 2, &c.; Maitrāyaṇi Samhitā, III, 8, 10. The action is rendered intelligible by a glance at the plan in Eggeling.

<sup>4</sup> The *pari* of *parivrajya* must refer to circumambulation. The meaning of the phrase is probably given by Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 11, 4, *pūrvayā dvārāgnidhram prapadyottareṇāgnidhriyaṃ dhīṇyaṃ paryetya*, though the *pūrvayā dvārā* here is otherwise applied. The idea is, he goes round the altar from right to left, probably. Cf. also *ibid.*, V, 14. The sentence is so elliptical as to be unintelligible without Sāyana's *pravelya*. Śāṅkhāyana, XVII, 7, 11, is much more simple.

<sup>5</sup> The verb must be gathered from *atyādadhātī* below; strictly speaking the next sentences are parenthetical and this sentence is continuous with *dakṣiṇottare sthūṇe nikhāya*.



swing should be a yard in size from east to west, its cross breadth should be a yard less a hand; the points of its (planks) should be to the north, and they should be fastened together by sticks with their points east. Having inserted the posts in the earth to the north and south, around the seat of the Hotṛ, he spreads the cross-beam over them so that it is on a level with the worker's face.<sup>6</sup> Holes are (bored) in the corners of the planks of the swing. He fastens the planks above by means of the ropes, the right one on the south, the left on the north.<sup>7</sup> The ropes should be of *darbha* grass, and with three strands,<sup>8</sup> one rope to

<sup>6</sup> In the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 10, 7 and 8, the height is measured by the head of the Hotṛ, or if he is small his outstretched arms. Ibid., 4, 6, shows that both the planks and the cross-beam have the points north. For the construction with *kartuḥ* dependent on *āśya*<sup>o</sup>, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1316. Speijer (*Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 113) gives many classical examples. For *abhitāḥ* with accus., cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 183. It is found in Mantra, but more often in Brāhmaṇa, Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 88. For *uttareṇa* with accus., cf. Gaedicke, *Der Accusativ in Veda*, pp. 207 sq.; see Liebhich, *Bezz. Beitr.*, XI, 284. Delbrück and Gaedicke seem right in explaining the use as derived from the accus. with *antar* and *antarā*. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 273, offers no explanation. In V, 1, 1, we find *uttarato 'gneḥ*; in V, 1, 2, *dakṣiṇataḥ puchasya* with the more natural adnominal genitive. But in V, 1, 2, *apareṇa* has the accus. In Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VII, 3, *antareṇa* has the gen.; in the Sūtra, the acc. The measures are dubious, see Hopkins, *J. A. O. S.*, XXIII, 141.

<sup>7</sup> The Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 10, 14, 15, explains that the right rope is tied to the north of the south post, the left to the south of the north post, i.e. inside the posts, just as in a modern swing. The point of view is of course facing east, with the south on the right and north on the left.


<sup>8</sup> The use of *triguṇe* and *dviguṇe* with different senses of *guṇa* is awkward, but appears clearly so meant. Sāyaṇa points out that the rope as doubled would be  $2\frac{1}{2}$  fathoms in length, of which only a yard would be used by the rope passing under the plank (above *iṣumātraḥ prāṇ preṅkhaḥ*). There would thus be plenty of rope available for the tying, as the top was only a man's height or less. Sāyaṇa takes *savyadākṣiṇe* as 'inclining to the left and right', i.e. the ropes should not go straight up. The only obscure point in this description of the tying on of the seat of the swing to the cross-beam is *pradākṣiṇam*, since it is not at first sight obvious how this applies to the act of fastening ropes. It apparently must mean that after the rope has been passed under the seat of the swing the one end is rolled round the cross-beam slanting to the right, the other (on the opposite side, of course\*) also slanting to the right and the ends then are tied across. Provided there was sufficient friction to keep the ropes from slipping this would seem to give a substantial knot (cf. *niṣṭarkya*). If this is so, we cannot accept Sāyaṇa's theory of *savyadākṣiṇe* and must fall back either on the view that the word means merely left (hand) rope and right (hand) rope, or take the epithet

\* It is very unlikely that both ends of the rope should have been brought to the same side of the cross-beam. In that case *pradākṣiṇam* would be rather less than more in point. Speijer (*Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 106, n.) points out that adjective *dvandvas* are not unknown even in Sanskrit (cf. his *Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 208), and (p. 32, n. 1) argues from Pāṇini, VI, 2, 38, when *ekādāśa* is given as a *dvandva* that the grammarians recognized such types. He (§ 107) gives classical examples of distributive *dvandvas*.

the left, one to the right, and five fathoms long, and should be folded double. Then folding (each end) thrice (to the right) round the cross-beam he makes a knot on the top, which can only be untied by twisting. They support the posts so as to be steady by means of branches and brushwood.<sup>9</sup> The swing should be four fingers or a hand distant from the ground.<sup>10</sup> On the right it may be somewhat higher or level. It should be a foot from the altar.

4. When<sup>1</sup> the swing has been put in position, the Hotṛ taking a lute of *udumbara* wood, with a hundred strings, in both hands, strikes it,<sup>2</sup> beginning from the lower side, as one does an ordinary lute.<sup>3</sup> The different notes of the lute he should produce in turn by the seven metres,<sup>4</sup> each with four (syllables)

as applying to each rope and as meaning, 'with strands coiled from left to right.' Cf. perhaps the equally obscure passage, Āpastamba Yajñaparibhāṣā, 60, 61 (*S. B. E.*, XXX, 331, where Max Müller says, 'The exact process here intended is not quite clear. The ropes seem to have been made of vegetable fibres. See Kāty., I, 3, 15-17'). If *savyadakṣiṇe* = left and right, cf. for the use of the *dvandva*, Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 160, who cites Atharvaveda, XII, 1, 28: *padbhyāṃ dakṣiṇasavyābhyām*; Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa, I, 5, 10, 1: *suvarṇarajatatābhyām kuśībhyām*. The different order of words, *savyadakṣiṇa*, is in accordance with the usual rule as to number of syllables determining the order of the numbers of their compounds, Wackernagel, II, i, 166.

<sup>9</sup> Sāyaṇa explains that they fill up the holes in which are placed the feet of the posts with dust, which is not thrown in by hand but by branches and *bṛsīs*. This, however, is quite unnecessary. Brushwood would be a much better material for strengthening the hold of a post. He defines *bṛsī* as *trṇavallitālapatraveṇudalādibhir nirmitā alpakaṭavileṣāḥ*. The swing was obviously shaped like this .

<sup>10</sup> The distance according to Śāṅkhāyana should be a *prādeśa*, XVII, 10, 13. Ibid., XVII, 1, discusses the planks; 2, the ropes and *āsandī*; 3, the lute; 4, the drums; 5, 6, 7, the other accessories and the preliminary steps, in great order and detail. Cf. Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 12.

<sup>1</sup> There are similar passages in the Tāṇḍya Brāhmaṇa, V, 5, 4 sq., and Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 12, 8; IV, 1, besides in the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 3; 15, 10 sq. Sāyaṇa points out that the Hotṛ is now seated to the west of the swing. The exact words as to the lute do not occur in Śāṅkhāyana, but it is elaborately described, XVII, 3.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa renders merely, 'he should hold it on his left side like a lute.' But the idea is perhaps rather that he strikes one string after another, ascending in the scale, beginning from below and ascending, *uttarataḥ*, cf. *ūrdhvam* below and Agnisvāmin on Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, IV, 1, 4.

<sup>3</sup> So Sāyaṇa on RV., I, 85, 10, where he similarly explains the phrase *vāṇaṃ dhamantaḥ* used of the Maruts, cf. III, 2, 5, n. 1; Benfey (*Sāmaveda, Glossar*, p. 169) takes *vāṇa* there as flute, and Zimmer (*Altindisches Leben*, p. 289) follows him. Max Müller (*Marut Hymns*, pp. 120, 121) preferred to see in it merely 'voice'. For *udūhami*, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 92, who considers *ū* here an ablaut of *u*. Pāṇini restricts its use to Ātmanepada, but Kāṭyāyana allows Parasmaipada with a prefix as here (Liebich, *Pāṇini*, p. 84).

<sup>4</sup> i.e. he plays notes corresponding to verses composed in these metres. The four more are, Sāyaṇa says, *virāj*, *dvīpadā*, *atichandas*, and *chando 'ntaram*. If this last be omitted ten are got. But despite its use elsewhere, e.g., Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, X, 1, 2, 8, it must surely



over, or with ten. (He should say), 'I produce thee with the *gāyatrī* metre. I produce thee with the *anuṣṭubh* metre. I produce thee with the *uṣṇih* metre. I produce thee with the *br̥haṭī* metre. I produce thee with the *pañkti* metre. I produce thee with the *triṣṭubh* metre. I produce thee with the *jagati* metre. I produce thee with the *virāj* metre. I produce thee with the *dvīpadā* metre. I produce thee with the *atichandas* metre.' Having gone through the metres according to the series of notes, he strikes the lute thrice, beginning from the foot with a branch of *udumbara* wood, fresh and still leafy, using the foot of it, (to the words), 'For up-breathing I strike thee, for down-breathing I strike thee, for cross-breathing I strike thee.' But he should not say, 'I strike thee,' for other desires.<sup>5</sup> Then he hands over to the Sāman singers the lute with the branch.<sup>6</sup> He places his two hands on the back plank (with the words), 'For creatures thee (I touch),' and pushes the swing to the east (with the words), 'Swing forward like the breath,' crosswise<sup>7</sup> (with the words), 'Swing crosswise for cross-breathing,' and back to himself (with the words), 'Swing like back-breathing.' He repeats the words *bhūh*, *bhuvaḥ*, and *sva*.<sup>8</sup> He then pushes the swing to the east<sup>9</sup> (with the words), 'For breath I push thee,' crosswise (with the words), 'For cross-breathing I push thee,' and back to himself (with the words), 'For down-breathing I push thee.' (With the words), 'May the Vasus mount thee with the *gāyatrī* metre, I mount after them,' he places his elbows on the back plank.<sup>10</sup> Then he should touch the front plank with his

mean, each metre has four more syllables than its predecessor, viz. 24, 28, 32, &c., and so Sāyaṇa takes it on Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 6, 6.

<sup>5</sup> No doubt, as Sāyaṇa says, a reference to a practice of other Śākhās, but not to the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka or Śrauta Sūtra. For the words *audumbaryā*, &c., cf. *audumbaryādrayā śākhayā sapalāśayā* in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 13. For the construction, cf. the acc. of whole and part, e.g. AV., V, 8, 9 (cited by Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 20; Delbrück, *Vergl. Synt.*, I, 385): *enam-marmāṇi vidhya*, when, however, according to Whitney, *Translation of Atharvaveda*, the reading should be *marmāṇi*, loc., though *marmāṇi* appears also in the Ajmir edition, *saṃvat* 1957. Somewhat analogous cases appear in Speijer, § 83; Gaedicke, *Der Accusativ*, p. 268. Or *mūladetena* may refer to the lute.

<sup>6</sup> In Śāṅkhāyana it is the Udgātṛ who has throughout to deal with the lute.

<sup>7</sup> Clearly the *vyāna* is a breath at right angles to *prāṇa* and *apāṇa*. This is an unusual conception of it, and is not mentioned in Deussen, *Philosophie der Upanishads*, p. 252; E. T., p. 279.

<sup>8</sup> Sāyaṇa says that the repetition of these three words denotes a desire that the three worlds be established by the threefold moving of the swing. They are used in Lāṭyāyana, IV, 1, 4, in connexion with the playing of the lute. Cf. also Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 339; Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, p. 432, n.; Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 162.

<sup>9</sup> The *eva* denotes that the action is as before, only the verses being different (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>10</sup> In Śāṅkhāyana, XVII, 16, he touches the swing with his breast and then alternately he puts his right and left side over with Mantras almost identical with those here, save that *arko 'si* is prefixed, and each ends with a dative *rājyāya*, &c. He then plants his two feet to the east.

hands separately,<sup>11</sup> like a serpent about to creep. He should touch the middle plank with his chin, or if there are two<sup>12</sup> the point of joining of the two. (With the words), 'May the Rudras mount thee with the *tristubh* metre, I mount after them,' he lays his right thigh<sup>13</sup> (over the seat). (With the words), 'May the Ādityas mount thee with the *jagatī* metre, I mount after them,' (he lays) his left thigh. (With the words), 'May the All-gods mount thee with the *anustubh* metre, I mount after them,' he mounts (the swing).<sup>14</sup> To the west of his own altar he places his right foot pointing to the east, and then his left.<sup>15</sup> If the former is tired, then the latter; if the latter, then the former. But the two together must never be off the ground. The Hotrakas sit down on bundles of grass, and so does the Brahman priest. The Udgātṛ sits on a stool of *udumbara* wood. If he has to leave for any absolutely necessary action, then having set one to guard, he descends towards the east, and having carried out the exact business he

Then he sits crosswise on the swing and touches the back of it with the Mantra, *Prajāpatiḥ tvārohatu vāyuh preṅkhatu*. This act is preceded and followed by three expirations and three inspirations. The Mantras of the Udgātṛ in mounting his seat in Lātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 12, 8, are like those in Śāṅkhāyana, omitting *arko 'si*, but Lātyāyana, III, 12, 9, permits them to be reduced to simply *gīyatṛeṇa tvā chandasārohāmi*, &c. In Lātyāyana the verses are said by the Udgātṛ. Ibid., 10-12. Gautama adds a fifth stoma with *vairājena*, Dhānam-jaya has four, and Śāṅḍilya only three.

<sup>11</sup> The Ānandāśrama edition reads *yathā hi*, which is nonsense. The reading of Rājendralāla is that clearly of Sāyaṇa, who takes the point of comparison to lie in the fact that he raises his hands as a snake about to creep raises its head. *Nānā* must be an adverb meaning 'separately'. It might possibly be suggested that it meant here 'without', a sense ascribed by Pāṇini, II, 3, 32, but even then the comparison with the snake would have little point. For the use of *nānā*, cf. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVI, 7, 8; 10; XVII, 3, 8; Lātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 3, 9 (= Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XII, 2, 8): *nānā pāpakṛtya*; Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 3, 10: *nānāpi sati daivate*; Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra, II, 18, and other passages in Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 545<sup>b</sup>. For a similar metaphor, cf. Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 6, 5: *yathā lakunir utpatīzyan*.

<sup>12</sup> There may be two or three, V, 1, 3. They are fastened by the *sūcis*.

<sup>13</sup> In Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 16, 1, occurs, *dakṣiṇaṃ bhāgam ātmano 'tiharan*, where Govinda explains by *hrdayāt pṛthak kurvan*, but Sāyaṇa here talks of *preṅkhārohaṇam*, and the sense requires the meaning 'lays over', which is probably meant also in the Śāṅkhāyana passage, as pointed out by Friedländer on Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 7. Cf. *Intro.*, p. 67.

<sup>14</sup> The same series of gods and metres occurs in the Vājasaneyi Samhitā, XI, 60, 65; Taittirīya Samhitā, IV, 1, 5; Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā, II, 7, 6; Tāṇḍya Mahābrāhmaṇa, VII, 6; Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, XI, 8. Cf. Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VI, 5, 3 (*agnicayana*), X, 4, 17, and see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 268, and cf. the Rājasūya verses, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 6, 1-4.

<sup>15</sup> The exact sense of this is taken by Sāyaṇa to be that the feet are to be used alternately, and this seems correct, though it is not said exactly that the two cannot ever be both on the ground at once. They must not be both off the ground, cf. I, 2, 4. For the gen. with *paścāt*, cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 10, 9: *etya gṛhān paścād gṛhasyāgner upaviṣṭāyānvārābhāya tvaig antataḥ kaṃsena caturgrhītās tīra ājyāhufir aindriḥ prapadaṃ juhōti*. This corrects Speijer's remark (*Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 83), followed by Delbrück, *Vergl. Synt.*, I, 743, that *paścāt* is not so found before the Śrauta Sūtras.



should mount again in the manner above set forth, omitting the utterance (of *bhūh*, *bhuvah*, and *sva*).<sup>16</sup>

5. He instructs the Prastotr, 'In the *pañcaviṃśa stoma* proclaim the first *pratihāra* when either three verses remain to be said, or two and a half<sup>1</sup> or twelve and a half.' Jātūkarnya holds that this should be done when there remain twelve and a half verses. When the Prastotr has spoken, he repeats<sup>2</sup> (the verse), 'Thou art a bird with fair wings. I shall speak forth this word, which will declare much,<sup>3</sup> fare far, produce much, gain much, effect more than much,

<sup>16</sup> Sāyaṇa takes *ajapayā vṛtā* as the form. It may equally be *ajapayā āvṛtā*, *āvṛt* being more usual in this sense, as in Mānava Grhya Sūtra, II, 4, 2; 9, 8; Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, V, 11, 4; 5, &c.; cf. Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, V, 410. If *avalayakarmiṇe* is read the sense must be, 'If he should go for (to serve) some one who has something he must do on hand.' At first sight this seems easier, but if *°karmiṇe* had been original it would hardly have been changed to *karmiṇe*, a less obvious construction, while the reverse of this process would be not unnatural. If *°karmiṇe* is read, see for the formation which is rare in early texts, Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 121, 122. For the dat., cf. Gaedicke, *Der Accusativ im Veda*, p. 135; Delbrück, *Vergl. Synt.*, I, 177, 301.

<sup>1</sup> So Sāyaṇa explains *ardhatṛtīyāsu*. The *pratihāra* is repeated five times usually before the last *pāda* of the verse, cf. Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 100 and *reffi*. For the imperative in *°tāt*, signifying an action to be carried out after something else, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 363; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 570, 571. The dictum of Whitney that the benedictive sense of the imperative in *tāt* was not exemplified, can only be supported on a very narrow interpretation of the word 'benedictive', not merely for classical Sanskrit (where it occurs often in Jaina Kāvya texts) but also for Vedic. E. g. in RV., III, 22, 2: *agne vī paśya brhatābhi rāyīśām no netā bhavatād anu dyām*, it is surely absurd to take *bhavatāt* as imperative, as does Oldenberg (*S.B.E.*, XLVI, 288); similarly in Whitney's own example from RV.: *yad ārdhvās tīṣṭhā drāvīṇśā dhātāt*, 'mayst' is clearly the sense, and 'may' he himself uses in translating the example from the MBh., *bhāvān prasādam kurūtāt*. Probably, therefore, in denying the 'benedictive' sense, Whitney refers to that word in the narrowest sense of a blessing pronounced by some person who in the ordinary view is entitled to bless. This is so far borne out by the fact that Pāṇini, III, 1, 50 (*āśīṣi ca*) is explained by the Siddhāntakaumudī (following the Kāśikā Vṛtti) as *āśīṣi prayoktva dharmāḥ | āśīṣituh pitrāder iyam uktiḥ*. In these cases the benedictive is regularly used in Sanskrit, e. g. *tat kim anyad āśāmahe kevalam vīraprasūyā bhūyāḥ* (Vikramorvaśī), or the king's formal *āśīḥ*, e. g. *ākālpāntam ca bhūyāt samupacitasukhaḥ saṃgamo sajjanānām* (Ratnāvalī), or the imperative (e. g. in the verse from the Ratnāvalī just cited in fact three imperatives occur), but in the early language at any rate I can find no certain example of *-tāt* so used. But the distinction between a wish and a blessing is evanescent.

<sup>2</sup> The Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 8, and Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 17, give the Mantras in reverse order, and omit the *ukthavīryāṇi*. For *suparṇo 'si garutmān* see Vājasaneyi Samhitā, XII, 4; Śāṅkhāyana identifies this with *prāṇa*, but see my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 77, n. 6.

<sup>3</sup> Sāyaṇa interprets these epithets very inadequately, but it is most probable that they are all genuine including *sva vadīṣyantīm*, which has least MS. authority. The Ānandāśrama edition considers Sāyaṇa's text defective, but most probably he regarded some of the epithets as obvious, though perhaps he had not *sva vadīṣyantīm*. Lāṭyāyana has only after *vadīṣyāmi*: *bahu karīṣyantīm bahu karīṣyan svar gamayīṣyantīm svar gamayīṣyan mām imān yajamānān*, see IV, 2, 10. So also Drāhyāyana. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka recognizes *bahu karīṣyantīm bahu bhūyāḥ karīṣyantīm svar gamīṣyantīm svar imān yajamānān vakīṣyantīm* only, which resembles

which goes to heaven, which will declare heaven, fare to heaven, produce heaven, gain heaven, carry this sacrifice to heaven, and carry the sacrificer, me, to heaven.' The word 'sacrificer' applies only to one who has been consecrated, not to one not consecrated.<sup>4</sup> In the case of a friend of his,<sup>5</sup> he should say 'carries N. N. to heaven', not 'will carry'. He then repeats the *ukthavīryas*,<sup>6</sup> and, 'Breath (is united) with speech, may I be united with speech. Eye is united with mind, may I be united with mind. Hearing is united with the self, may I be united with the self. May I have greatness, glory, good fortune, enjoyment, the *stobha*<sup>7</sup> and the *stoma* verse, sound, renown, prosperity, fame, and fruition.'<sup>8</sup>

Lāṭyāyana's version given above. The Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 17, 1, has: *preṇāmī vācam vadīṣyāmi bahu kariṣyantiṃ bahu kariṣyan bahor bhūyaḥ svar gamiṣyantiṃ svar gamiṣyan*. Bloomfield (*Vedic Concordance*, p. 642<sup>b</sup>) gives Lāṭyāyana and Śāṅkhāyana as having *svargam*, &c., instead of *svargam*, &c., but that this is quite wrong may be proved, not only by its inherent improbability but also by Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 8 (the Āranyaka unluckily did not come to Bloomfield's notice), where occurs *svarg hy eṣā vāg gamiṣyanti bhavati*; see my note, *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, p. 204.

<sup>4</sup> i. e. not to the Hotṛ in an *ekāha* or *ahina*, but in a *sattra*. Cf. V, 3, 3, n. 1, and III, 2, 4, n. 2.

<sup>5</sup> This seems to be the same. If so, this passage recognizes the performance for a friend against Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 1; the case of an enemy is specially dealt with in that Āranyaka, I, 8; *nāmum* being said. The future is not to be used, for the present is to be used to signify the immediate attainment of heaven (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>6</sup> The six Mantras, *ghoṣāya tvā, hlokāya tvā, śṛṇvate tvā, upaśṛṇvate tvā, āśrutyai tvā, āśrutāya tvā*, says Sāyaṇa. Though Śāṅkhāyana does not mention the *ukthavīryāni* here, they are frequently alluded to in the Śrauta Sūtra, VII, 9, 6; 10, 15; 19, 25; 20, 11, &c. See Sāyaṇa's list, Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, V, 9, 21; 10, 10; 14, 16; 15, 23; 18, 13; 20, 8, and cf. Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 327. There is one for each of the Hotṛ's Sastras.

<sup>7</sup> Sāyaṇa explains as the fruits of these parts of the Sāman. The omission of the verb may be compared with V, 2, 2, n. 13. In Taittirīya Āranyaka, IV, 21, is *mayi dhāyī svīryam* after a series of loc. Compare for the list, Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, V, 1, 10: *bhargam me voco bhadram me voco bhūtam me vocaḥ śriyam me voco yaso me voco mayi bhargo mayi bhadram mayi bhūtir mayi śrīr mayi yasaḥ*. Scheftelowitz, *Zur Stammbildung in den indo-germanischen Sprachen*, takes *bhargas* as equal to 'beauty', quoting RV., I, 141, 1: *bāl itthā tād vāpuḥ dhāyī dāriatām devāsya bhārgaḥ sākaso yāto jāni*; III, 62, 10; AV., XIX, 37, 1; VI, 69, 2; Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, V, 4, 5, 1, and comparing Old Slavonic *bliskati*, &c. These sentences it will be noted contain older forms of words and expressions than the ordinary Sūtra form or the mere liturgical direction; cf. Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. viii, and V, 3, 2, n. 17. So *vāg devī somasya tṛpyatu* and *duhām mahat* in V, 3, 2. A precise parallel is found in Taittirīya Āranyaka, IV, 11: *sām ahām āyuṣā | sām prāṇena | sām vārcasā | sām pāyasā | sām gaupatyēna | sām rāyās pōṣeṇa | vy āsau*, &c. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 17, 1, has: *sam vāh prāṇena sam aham prāṇena*, and *sam cakṣur*, &c., as in the Aitareya, but *sam irotram*, &c., it omits.

After *stoma*, *śloka* may well be 'verse', or possibly 'hymn of praise'. Elsewhere it means, however, merely 'fame', e. g. Bhṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 4, 7 (Kāṇva), 18 (Madhyandina): *evam kīrtiṇ ślokaṃ vindate*, which appears to be the only Upaniṣadic passage with that sense (Jacob, *Concordance*, p. 940).

<sup>8</sup> *Bhujabhuktyor bhedo bhogyabhedena draṣṭavyaḥ* (Sāyaṇa).



Having called<sup>9</sup> (to the Adhvaryu), he mutters the word 'speech'. There are three calls<sup>10</sup> (for the Hotṛ), at the beginning of the Śāstra, of the *nivīd*, and of the concluding verse. The Adhvaryus<sup>11</sup> make sounds. On this day one<sup>12</sup> should give much food. They cause a warrior<sup>13</sup> to pierce a skin. They smite the earth drum, and women play lutes<sup>14</sup>. There is intercourse of creatures,<sup>15</sup> and a conversation between a student and a courtesan. The Udgātṛs sing various Sāmans for the Niṣkevalya Śāstra,<sup>16</sup> the Hotṛ begins with the strophe of the Rājana Sāman.<sup>17</sup>

<sup>9</sup> In Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 12, 5, the *anujapa* is: *vāg āyur viśvāyur viśvam āyur ehy eva hīndropehi viśvatha vidā maghavan vidā iti*. The call is *adhvaryo śomsāvom*, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 12, &c.; Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 17, 14. Garbe, *Ritual-Litteratur*, pp. 100-102; Caland and Henry, *L'Agniṣṭoma*, p. 232.

<sup>10</sup> Not, as in the *prakṛti*, also with the *anurūpas* and *dhāyās* (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>11</sup> *Kārayanti* is little, if any, more than a simple verb. Cf. epic examples in Holtzmann, on Whitney's *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 1041, 1068; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 156; *Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 304. So in Pāli and Prākṛit, Müller, *Pāli Grammar*, p. 107. This is a preliminary to the beginning of the Śāstra. Presumably the words, like those mentioned below, are intended to frighten away demons, &c. Cf. Cook, *Journal of Hellenic Studies*, 1902, p. 15; Farnell, *Cults of the Greek States*, III, 31; Crooke, *Northern India*, p. 196; my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, p. 78.

<sup>12</sup> i. e. the *yajamāna*.

<sup>13</sup> The ceremony is described at greater length in Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 15. The king or his representative pierces the skin with three arrows, which are not allowed to penetrate through. The idea is clearly a rain spell. The arrows pierce the sky and bring down the waters the sky imprisons. This idea may explain the archer in the myth of the descent of Soma, though the idea appears distorted there (Bloomfield, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, 22 sq.). For the acc. and instr., cf. Gaedicke, *Der Accusativ im Veda*, pp. 275 sq.; Liebich, *Benz. Beitr.*, XI, 272 sq.; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 225, 226; *Vergl. Synt.*, II, 117, 118; III, 2, 4, n. 16.

<sup>14</sup> The drumming is performed on a raw hide, stretched over a hole dug in the ground outside the *vedi*, by means of the tail of the sacrificial animal, Śāṅkhāyana, XVII, 5. There are also four or six ordinary drums used. The wives used various instruments, *ghṛtākarkarīr avagha-ṭarikāḥ kāṇḍavāṇḍāḥ pichorā iti*, *ibid.*, XVII, 3, 12. Another list, partly the same, in Lāṭyāyana, IV, 2, 1-8. Cf. Hillebrandt, *Ved. Myth.*, II, 190; *J. A. O. S.*, XXIII, 309.

For similar ceremonies to promote fertility, cf. Farnell, *Cults of the Greek States*, III, 80, 103; Frazer, *Adonis, Attis, Osiris*, pp. 21 sq.; my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, pp. 82 sq.

<sup>15</sup> Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 6, 1; 2: *atha śūdrāryau śrīpumāṃsau baṇḍakhalatī ity upakalpayanti | tad etat purāṇam utsannaṃ na kāryam |* Āpastamba, cited by Sāyaṇa, says: *uttarasyāṃ vedīśronyāṃ puṃścalyāi mūgadhāya ca pariśrayanti* (al. *parisarpanti*); see XXI, 19. Cf. Taittirīya Saṃhitā, VII, 5, 9, 4. The conversation of the student and courtesan is given in Lāṭyāyana, IV, 3, 9-11; the *mīthuna* in 17; cf. Kāthaka Saṃhitā, XXXIV, 5; Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XIII, 3; v. Schroeder, *Mysterium und Mimic*, pp. 161 sq., who overlooks the force of the plural (*caranti*) in the Kāthaka; Oldenberg, *Gött. gel. Anz.*, 1909, p. 77, n. 1; my note, *J. R. A. S.*, 1909, p. 205, n. 2.

<sup>16</sup> Sāyaṇa explains that the Udgātṛs sing their Sāmans first of all ending with the *rājanam sāman*, the first tristich of which serves as the commencement of the Niṣkevalya Śāstra of the Hotṛ. On the priests, cf. Oldenberg, *Religion des Veda*, pp. 383 sq.; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, X, 141 sq., 376 sq.

<sup>17</sup> The Lāṭyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, which goes into further detail, mentions also as part of the

6. 'That was the oldest in the worlds' (RV., X, 120),<sup>1</sup> 'That fame of thine, O Maghavan, through thy greatness' (RV., X, 54), 'He groweth more for strength' (RV., VI, 30), and the three verses beginning, 'Thee, manliest of men, with songs, with hymns' (RV., III, 51, 4), (are the commencement of the Śāstra). Here some say<sup>2</sup> that one should take from the body-verses the two quarter-verses, 'Join with the sweet what is sweeter than sweet' (RV., X, 120, 3<sup>e</sup>), and 'The sweet with the sweet hast thou conquered' (ibid., 3<sup>d</sup>), and replace them with the wing quarter-verses, 'O Maghavan, O Indra, the strong steeds' (RV., VII, 33, 22<sup>e</sup>), and 'O Indra, grant a cow, a chariot horse' (RV., VI, 46, 2<sup>e</sup>), and put in place of the latter those other two. He thus wins the profit of a cow<sup>3</sup> and

ceremonies a fight between an Ārya (Vaiśya) and a Śūdra for a skin which is compared with the sun, and the appointment of persons to praise and criticize the acts of the priests, IV, 3, perhaps in order to avert the evil eye (Farnell, *Cults of the Greek States*, III, 172); cf. the abuse of the Roman triumph. The first ceremony clearly shows the nature of the rite as a sun spell, which has many parallels in different parts of the world (Usener, *Archiv f. Religionswissenschaft*, 1904, pp. 297-313), as Agnisvāmin on IV, 3, 7, points out. It is discussed in Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, V, 2, 6, 7. For ritual αλχηρολογία as stimulating vegetation or serving a placular purpose, cf. Farnell, *Cults of the Greek States*, III, 104; IV, 267; Frazer, *Golden Bough*, I<sup>2</sup>, 97; Crooke, *Northern India*, p. 193; v. Schroeder, *Mysterium und Mimus*, pp. 309 sq.

<sup>1</sup> See I, 3, 3-8. This Khaṇḍa deals with the body and the sūdadōhas verse following it. It corresponds to Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, II, 1, and Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 1.

<sup>2</sup> Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 14, 7; Āranyaka, II, 1; 11, omits the last two *pādas* and does not replace them, but puts them before the *dvipadās*. The stanza RV., VII, 33, 22<sup>e</sup>, occurs in the right, the stanza RV., VI, 46, 2<sup>e</sup>, in the left wing. The Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 6, 2, 3, seems to agree with Śāṅkhāyana, though not precisely; Eggeling, *S.B. E.*, XLIII, 113, n. Eggeling's explanation of the *ardharcau* in the Śatapatha as referring to RV., X, 120, 3<sup>e</sup> d, and VIII, 20, 1<sup>a</sup> b, seems to overlook the fact that in the Śāṅkhāyana the *ardharca*, X, 120, 3<sup>e</sup> d, carries with it the *ardharca*, VIII, 69, 2<sup>e</sup> d, making up in all *ardharcau*; they are called *tau* in Āranyaka, II, 1.

<sup>3</sup> This is practically a defining genitive. Cf. IV: *rāyaḥ suvīryam*, and contrast Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 295; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 65. Delbrück (*Altindische Syntax*, pp. 153, 154) gives examples of the genitive of material and origin, and see *Vergl. Synt.*, I, 340, 346 sq. The construction *saṃ pakṣayoḥ patanāya* is curious. The *saṃ* is joined with *patanāya* by Sāyana, and we might compare for this infra, *upa-apīte*, V, 3, 3; or *saṃ* might be taken with *dhatte* (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1081). The use of the genitive<sup>a</sup> with *patanāya* (as with *āptyai*, Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, II, 5; 6, &c.) disentitles it to be ranked as a real infinitive: cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 48; Whitney, *l.c.*, §§ 287, 982. The easy conjecture *śam*, though rather tempting, is unnecessary. The conjunction of cow and horse is truly Vedic, cf. Indra's hymn, RV., X, 119, 1: *īti vā īti me māno gām dīvaṃ sanuṣām īti*; Atharvaveda, XII, 1, 5: *gavām aśvānām*, &c.; Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 57; Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 346<sup>b</sup>. For *ātman dhatte*, cf. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XIV, 28, 9; XV, 6, 7.

<sup>a</sup> It is possible to think of *pakṣayoḥ* as a dative (cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 12, for the confusion of *ōbhyām* and *ōḥ* forms), but this is not essential.



a horse, and the wings are made strong to fly. He intertwines these hymns with the verse *nadaṃ va odaṣṇām* (RV., VIII, 69, 2), joining quarter-verse with quarter-verse, making them into *brhāṣī* verses, so that the quarter-verses of the *nada* hymn are second. He also inserts in the first stanza the syllables of the word *puruṣa*, one in each quarter-verse, at the end, save in the case of the third quarter-verse. Thus does he intertwine them. We will also set (a verse forth) as an example, thus:—

*tad id āsa bhuvaṇeṣu jyeṣṭham pu*  
*nadaṃ va odaṣṇām 1*  
*yato jajña ugras tveṣaṇṛmṇo ru*  
*nadaṃ yoyuvafino 3m ॥*  
*sadyo jajñāno ni riṇāti śatrūn*  
*patiṃ vo aghnyānām 1*  
*anu yaṃ viṣve madanty ūmāḥ 50*  
*dhenūnām iṣudhyaso 3m ॥*

The verse should be thrice repeated.<sup>5</sup> Should (the Udgāṭṛs) sing as the Rājana Sāman other verses which occur (in the hymns enumerated), then (the Hotṛ) recites them in their own<sup>6</sup> place, but here (at the beginning of the Śāstra) he recites these verses (i. e. RV., X, 120, 1-3). If the other verses do not occur in these hymns, he should take as many out of the hymns mentioned and recite the (other verses) in their place, but still recite these verses (RV., X, 120, 1-3) here. (The verses removed) in this case are to be those before the *sūdadohas* verse. The Śāstra always begins with the verses commencing, 'That was the

<sup>4</sup> The *pluti* and the *om* after the fourth *pāda* are probably meant. Cf. Śāṅkhāyana, II. cc., and I, 5, 1. Rājendralāla and the Ānandāśrama edition are both inconsistent. For the *pluti*, see Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 297-300. Both *iṣudhyaso 3m* and *yuvafino 3m* present curious forms, which may be compared with the rule recognized in Pāṇini, VI, 1, 95, that *om* with a preceding *a* vowel gives *om*, and this Sandhi in its turn has early parallels (Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 64). So in Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 4, 4, *vāṇom* stands, in my opinion, for *vāṇī + om* (cf. II, 7, n. 1). See also Caland and Henry, *L'Agnistoma*, pp. 112, 166, 178, 232, 237, 238, &c., for examples of this Sandhi.

<sup>5</sup> To make up twenty-five verses, I, 3, 5, n. 6; Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 1: *evam viḥṛtām prathamām triḥ śaṃsati parācīr uttarāḥ*.

<sup>6</sup> Literally, 'in their place.' The Udgāṭṛs may either adopt *tad id āsa* as the beginning or *stotriya*, or use other verses of the enumerated hymns, or use quite new verses, but in all cases the Hotṛ must stick to *tad id āsa* as a commencement, and must not follow the strophe of the Rājana Sāman. The new verses are to be inserted before the *sūdadohas* verse, omitting a corresponding number of those in the ordinary version. If the verses occur in the hymns enumerated, then they are simply recited in their own original place, since the whole of the first three hymns is included in the Śāstra, and the three verses, I, 51, 4-6, count presumably as a hymn for this purpose. Cf. n. 3 on V, 2, 1. For the construction, cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 7, 1: *śāhānāmniṣṭv atra stuvate śākvareṇa sāmā*.

oldest in the worlds' (RV., X, 120, 1). The reply of the Adhvaryu is not altered.<sup>7</sup> (Then comes) the *sūdadohas* verse, beginning, 'Of that milk yielder' (RV., VIII, 69, 3).<sup>8</sup>

<sup>7</sup> The form used in the *prakṛti* is not altered as it is in the Śoḍaśin rite (Sāyana). On the *pratigara*, see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, X, 36, n. 3; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 326; Sabbathier, *Agniṣṭoma*, pp. 55, 56; Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 104, n. 45.

<sup>8</sup> The verses laid down in Śāṅkhāyana are, after a *tūṣṇīṣṭama* of three verses, RV., X, 120, 1-3; 4-9; X, 29, 1-8; X, 55, 6-8; X, 54, 6; X, 55, 2; X, 56, 1; making 23, the first being twice repeated, and the whole interspersed with the *pādas* of the *nada* hymn. In X, 120, 3, however, the third and fourth *pādas* together with the corresponding *pādas* of the *nada* hymn are omitted, and placed before the *dvipadās* (II, 11).

After the body-verses the order in Śāṅkhāyana and the Aitareya differs as shown below:—

	Sūtra,	Āraṇyaka,
	Śāṅkhāyana, XVIII, 2	II, 2
Head-verses		
Neck-verses (with <i>skandha</i> , cervical column, <i>J. R. A. S.</i> , 1907, pp. 1, 2)	" " 3	" 3
Right side ( <i>akṣa</i> , <i>bāhu</i> , <i>prahastaka</i> )	" " 4	" 4; 5
Left side (ditto) *	" " 5	" 4; 5
Back ( <i>anūka</i> , backbone, perhaps lumbar por- tion in special, <i>J. R. A. S.</i> , 1907, pp. 7, 8)	" " 6	" 6
<i>Alītis</i>	" " 7-13	" 7-10
<i>Vaśa</i> hymn	" " 14	" 11
<i>Dvipadās</i> (with <i>ardharcau</i> )	" " 15	" 12
<i>Aindrāgna</i> hymn	" " 16	" 13
<i>Āvopana</i>	" " 17	" 14
<i>Ānuṣṭubha samāmnāya</i>	" " 18	" 15
<i>Triṣṭupchata</i>	" " 19; 20	" 16
Neck-verses	Aitareya, V, 2, 1	I, 4, 1
Head-verses	" "	"
Vertebrae-verses	" "	"
Right wing	" V, 2, 2	I, 4, 2
Left wing	" "	"
<i>Dvipadās</i>	" "	"
<i>Alītis</i>	" V, 2, 3-5	I, 4, 3
<i>Vaśa</i> hymn	" V, 2, 5	I, 5, 1
<i>Ūrā</i> , &c.	" V, 3, 1; 2	I, 5, 1; 2

\* It should be noted, however, that this division, which is that adopted by Dr. Friedländer, is doubtful as regards the two sides, which (Introd., p. 10) he divides into shoulder, arm, and hand. For the word *skandha* (really 'cervical column', Hoernle, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, p. 918) occurs in the section dealing with the *grāiva* verses, and the word *akṣā* (*rc*) or *akṣa*, both of which are used in Āraṇyaka, II, 3, as regards the part rendered as 'shoulder', seems rather to denote 'collar-bone'. At least, so I infer from the fact that *akṣaka* has this sense in Caraka and Suśruta (Hoernle, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 13), and *akṣa* this sense in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa. Possibly the reading should be *akṣam* in Āraṇyaka, *l.c.*: cf. *akṣa sthaviṣṭha* (sic) just after, and cf. I, 2, 2, n. 11, but *akṣā rc* is good sense. The exact divisions are probably (a) collar-bone, (b) arm, (c) hand.



## ADHYĀYA 2.

(Then come) the neck-verses. 'Of Indra,<sup>1</sup> the smiter, the powerful, the earnest, who has the world, are might and strength, great and delightful. The mighty<sup>2</sup> overcomes

<sup>1</sup> These verses occur with many variants in the Atharvaveda, VI, 33, and also in the Paippalāda recension, the Naigeya text of the Sāmaveda, I, 588, which has *ārdjo yūjas tuje jāne vānaṃ svāḥ*, and has not the second two verses, and Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 3, where they run: *yasyedam oja ārujas tujo yujo balaṃ sahaḥ | Indrasya rantyaṃ bṛhat || anādhr̥ṣṭaṃ vipanyayā nādhr̥ṣa ādadhar̥ṣayā | dhr̥ṣāṇaṃ dhr̥ṣitaṃ śavaḥ || sa no dadātu taṃ rayim puru piṅgasam̐dṛṣaṃ | Indrah̐ patis tavastamo janeṣu ||* It should, however, be noted that *balaṃ* is merely a conjecture of Hillebrandt's for *vanam* of all his MSS. It is a probable one. The AV. version is unintelligible, see Whitney's *Translation*, p. 305. In the version given, which is purely conjectural, I have taken *ārujaḥ* as a genitive from Śāṅkhāyana (the change of *u* and *a* is easy, the accent is dubious), like *tūjo* and *yūjo*, presumably also genitives. Sāyaṇa as usual gives no help; he takes *ārujaḥ* as either (1) *niṣkevalyaṃ sarvato rañjakam*, or (2) *jugatpālanaṃ sarvato rañjakam*. *Yujo tujo* is *yogo vairiṇāṃ himsakah*. *Vanam* is *bhaktair vana-nīyaṃ*. The AV. has *ā rdjo yūjas tuje jānā vānaṃ svāḥ |* and *nādhr̥ṣa ā dadhr̥ṣate dhr̥ṣāṇō dhr̥ṣitāḥ śavaḥ | purā yāthā vyāthl̥h śrāva Indrasya nādhr̥ṣe śavaḥ*. The Paippalāda differs greatly.

<sup>2</sup> The translation again is purely conjectural. Whitney, by reading *ādhr̥ṣe* (infin.), *dhr̥ṣāṇaṃ dhr̥ṣitāṃ*, and *vyāthl̥h*, makes it, '(He is) not to be dared against; (his) might, dared, dares daring against (others); as, of old, his fame (was) unwavering, Indra's might (is) not to be dared against.' Taking the Aitareya text as it stands, I think we must resolve *nādhar̥ṣa* as *nā ādhar̥ṣa* (h) and take the word as an adjective meaning 'impetuous'. I think *nādhr̥ṣa*, however, almost certainly right (cf. RV., V, 8, 5), 'He is not to be dared against.' The editions and Whitney with Sāyaṇa read the two words following as *ā dadhar̥ṣa dādhr̥ṣāṇam*. This is quite possible, though the change in quantity is remarkable, but it seems to have escaped notice that *ā dadhar̥ṣad ādhr̥ṣāṇam* is quite possible, and could have the same sense while keeping the prefix *ā* in both cases and restoring the metre (*ā dadhar̥ṣad ā | dhr̥ṣāṇam*) and explaining the Śāṅkhāyana text. If *nādhr̥ṣa* is read, I would not take the participle as a neuter nom., but translate, 'He dares against the daring; his might is dread.' This avoids the inconvenience of the idea of might daring, and the rare use of the present participle as a finite verb. The second half of the line is very obscure. *Ati vyāthl̥h* occurs also in RV., X, 86, 2, and here as there Sāyaṇa explains it as a verbal form, which is quite impossible, 'When Indra caused his foe to fall.' It might however mean, 'When trembling (cf. Naigh., II, 13) passed from Indra,' referring to the terrors which so often fell on Indra before he showed his might. For a different theory as to *vyāthl̥h* (= track), see RV., IV, 4, 3 (Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 331); AV., IV, 21, 3, with Whitney's note; and see Geldner, *Vedische Studien*, II, 29. Geldner holds that *vyāthl̥h* originally means 'Falschheit' and thence 'Malice, Zorn, Ungnade, Ärger, Hass, Feindschaft', and so has the gen. of the subject or object. So he renders RV., IV, 4, 3, as, 'no one approaches thee when angry,' and in AV., VI, 33, 2, takes *purā yāthā vyāthl̥h* (this is the AV. accentuation as in AV., IV, 21, 3) *śrāva Indrasya nādhr̥ṣe śavaḥ*, as 'Like a citadel (cf. *ūrjā* and *ūrj*, Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 185) unapproachable, is the anger, the fame, the

not him who is exceeding strong. His vigour is dreadful. When aforetime trembling passed from him, Indra's might was dreadful. May he give us that wealth, wealth of tawny hue. Indra is the lord, the most mighty among men.' (Then comes) the *sūdadohas* verse. The head-verses are in *gāyatrī* metre, beginning, 'The singers call aloud to Indra' (RV., I, 7, 1). If (the Udgāṭṛs) sing the Sāman with other verses which occur (in the service), then the two sets are to be interchanged in place.<sup>3</sup> If the other verses are ones not occurring, or some occur and some not, (then they should be inserted in the place of verses occurring which should be taken out.) The last verse of the hymn (should be recited, the insertion being made before it), and then the *sūdadohas* verse. Then come

strength of Indra.' Unhappily he does not cite or discuss this passage, where of course *purā* cannot be made by any effort of the imagination to be a noun. But accepting the sense 'wrath', then AV., VI, 33, 2, would give the sense 'As aforetime, the anger', &c., and this passage might be rendered, 'As of old (*purā yāt*) his anger is excessive' (*atī*), and on the whole this is perhaps the least unlikely version of a very difficult and probably corrupt text. Cf. v. Schroeder, *Mysterium und Mimus*, p. 316, n. 2, whose version of RV., X, 86, 2, suggests 'because of anger'.

For the form of the verse, cf. e.g. Vājasaneyi Samhitā, I, 8: *dhūr asi dhūrva dhūrvantam | dhūrva taṃ yo 'smān dūrvati taṃ dhūrva yaṃ dhūrvāmah*, and Winternitz, *Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 159. In the next verse the AV. reads *tām* (Ppp. *no*) *urām* and *tuviṣṭamas* (APr., III, 96; IV, 59), while the Ppp., the comm., and one MS. have *dadhātu*, and the commentary on the AV. and two MSS. (out of three) in Śāṅkhāyana have *°sadṛiam*. One MS. of Śāṅkhāyana has *puram*, the others *puram*. *Tavistama* occurs in RV., I, 190, 5; II, 33, 3. For the dat. inf. in *e*, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 970.

<sup>3</sup> This is Sāyaṇa's version. The Ānandāśrama reads *ubhayāsaṃsthā na viparyayo* with the opposite meaning, but this is less probable. The apodosis to the last clause is borrowed from the indication in V, 1, 6. As the next clause shows, the insertion of the new verses is to be made before the last verse preceding the *sūdadohas* verse and not directly before that verse. The word *samāmnātāsu* refers here to verses occurring in the hymn itself. The form *ubhayāsaṃsthānaviparyayaḥ*, however, presents great difficulty, for the use of *ubhayā* in compounds is confined to cases like *°cakra*, *°pāṇi*, *°hasta*, &c., and it is hardly likely that the second member of the compound is *asaṃsthāna*, or that the fem. is kept because *yc* is fem. (Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, 1, 49-52). But, further, there is no special meaning in *saṃsthāna*, and the conjecture *ubhayāsaṃsthānaviparyayaḥ* is possible. *Ubhayāsaṃ* (*rcām*) is precisely correct for two sets of three verses (cf. RV., I, 26, 9; 189, 7, and regularly later, cf. Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 272), and Sāyaṇa's version in no way confirms either the reading of Rājendralāla or the Ānandāśrama. The form would be very rare, the ordinary feminine being *ubhayī* (common in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa), and possibly *ubhayā* is the Vedic adverb. It may be noted that R's version of the comm., *tāsām arthe* (R<sup>4</sup> against R<sup>1</sup> and R<sup>2</sup>), alone makes sense. S's *tāsām madhye* being nonsense. Cf. *Introd.*, p. 9.

The Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 2, gives the head-verses thus, RV., I, 7, 1-3; I, 6, 7-9; I, 84, 13-15; VIII, 76, 10-12; VIII, 93, 1-3, any of those used by the Sāman singers. Some use I, 50, 1-9, to correspond with the Sāman singers. If the latter use only I, 50, 1-3, then the reciter can take any two of the other *trcaṣ* to make up the nine verses. As in the Aitareya, the recitation is by half-verses, and the *sūdadohas* verse occurs at the end.



the vertebrae-verses. 'The Soma is pressed for thee, come to the sacrifice, rejoice in the carouse, rich in gifts, for wealth. O Indra, thou art generous and young for us to sing.<sup>4</sup> He can overcome his foes in slaying Vṛtras; he is skilful and a plunger. We magnify our leader, Indra.<sup>5</sup> Impetuous, bright, the leader, the dweller on the mountains, hastening towards you, Indra, shouting aloud, with his eternal steeds.'<sup>6</sup> (Then comes) the *sūdadohas* verse. The three sets of verses, neck, head, and vertebrae, are all to be repeated with a pause at the half-verse.<sup>7</sup>

2. The (verses of the) right wing are connected with the Rathantara Sāman.<sup>1</sup> The Rathantara has for its strophe, 'We praise thee, O hero' (RV., VII, 32, 22), and for its antistrophe, 'Thee for the first drink' (RV., VIII, 3, 7), both being

<sup>4</sup> These verses contain an unusual number of rare expressions, and the uncertainty as to their accent adds to the difficulty. The reading of *vi-jārah* is very doubtful. R in the commentary, which is followed by Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, S, and the MSS. have *vi-jarah*, while Sāyaṇa perhaps read *vidurah* \* (*vi-ṣṭalokadvārāṇi grṇadhyā asmadagre kathayitum atra kṛṣṭo bhava*). I have translated the *vi-jārah* (? *vi-jarāh*) of R's text, and taken *grṇadhyai* as an infinitive practically equivalent to an imperative, 'Let us sing of,' cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 411 sq.; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 982 d; Hopkins, *A. J. P.*, XIII, 21 sq.; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 216.

<sup>5</sup> *Vigādhā*, Sāyaṇa renders as *sevitum śakyah*. Cf. RV., III, 3, 5, where it is an epithet of Agni. The *śa no netūraṇi* looks like an imitation of older verses, such as RV., II, 6, 5, without much regard to their construction. Possibly the reading should be (cf. on IV) *sām* (which would become *san* before *no*). So Maitrāyaṇī Saṃhitā, IV, 12, 6, has *sa dāṣuḥ kiratu bhūri vāmam*, but in Taittiriya Saṃhitā, III, 3, 11: *sam*, &c. *Eṣāh* may be from the root *iṣ* (cf. Max Müller's conjecture on RV., IV, 2, 4, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 320) and meaning 'swift'. S takes *sasūhatur* as one word, but this makes nonsense of Sāyaṇa. The form is unusual, see Whitney, *Grammar*, § 1161 d.

<sup>6</sup> *Sāmajah* (for the form, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 73, 74) apparently means the 'bringer-together'. *Ṛjīṣ* cannot have the sense which it normally has (see Hillebrandt, *Ved. Myth.*, I, 235 sq.; Bloomfield, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, 39) and which is here ascribed to it by Sāyaṇa, *ṛjīṣopalakṣitasomasarasavān*. In RV., III, 32, 1, it seems to mean impetuous, and cf. *ṛjīṣā*, *ibid.*, I, 32, 6. *Vām* he explains as the husband and wife engaged in the sacrifice. Rājendralāla reads *vāsu* which is quite wrong, though followed in Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 205\*. It would of course be acc. with *sāmajah*. *Śāsvadbhir evaiḥ* possibly merely means 'as usual', or 'in his eternal courses'. Cf. *evaiḥ*, 'in due way,' RV., I, 68, 4; 95, 6; *aryāḥ evaiḥ*, IV, 2, 12; *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 437. These verses are unparalleled in other texts.

<sup>7</sup> This means, as Sāyaṇa and Śāṅkhāyana show, that there is a pause at the end of the half-verse (and *om* at the end of the verse). The other possibilities are (1) pause at each *pāda*, with *om* at half-verse, (2) no pause, *om* at end. The Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra contains examples of all kinds, see I, 2 sq.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. I, 4, 2.

\* If so, it might be taken as two words and translate it 'the giver is to be praised'. Cf. *vī durō grṇīṣe* in RV., VI, 35, 5, and cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, XII, 10.

*pragātha* verses. These four *br̥hatis* he turns into six.<sup>2</sup> (Then come the hymns), 'I shall proclaim the deeds of Indra' (RV., I, 32); 'In thee since our father, Indra' (RV., VII, 18), fifteen verses only; 'Who is sharp-horned, terrible like a bull' (RV., VII, 19); 'Dread is he born for strength, the mighty' (RV., VII, 20); 'Ye have uttered glorious prayers' (RV., VII, 23); 'For greatness, O dread Indra, with thine aid' (RV., VII, 25), five hymns; 'From far or near may Indra be with us' (RV., IV, 20) is the *sampāla* hymn. 'Thus in the Soma, in the carouse' (RV., I, 80, 1), is a *pañkti* verse. (Then comes) the *sūdadohas* verse. (The verses of the) left wing are connected with the *Bṛhat Sāman*. The *Bṛhat* has for its strophe, 'For thee we hail' (RV., VI, 46, 1), and for its antistrophe, 'Come hither to the worship' (RV., VIII, 61, 7), both being *pragātha* verses. These four *br̥hatis* he turns into six. (Then come the hymns), 'Praise him who surpasses in strength' (RV., VI, 18); 'Thou art attached to the pressed Soma, Indra' (RV., VI, 23), three hymns; 'Thou art the only lord of riches, O lord of riches' (RV., VI, 31), eight hymns; 'What! whose sacrifice has he increased?' (RV., IV, 23), is the *sampāla* hymn. 'Indra is born for the carouse' (RV., I, 81, 1) is a *pañkti* verse. (Then comes) the *sūdadohas* verse. The right wing is connected with the *Rathantara Sāman*, and so is the *pañcadaśa stoma*.<sup>3</sup> There are one hundred and one (verses) in it, and it is called the *Vasiṣṭhaprāsāha*. The left wing is connected with the *Bṛhat Sāman*, and so is the *saptadaśa stoma*. There are one hundred and two verses, and it is called the *Bharadvājaprāsāha*. The (verses of the) tail, as being *dvīpadās*, are connected with the *Bhadra Sāman*. There are nine verses from the *Samhitā*, 'These worlds let us conquer' (RV., X, 157), and 'Come hither with thy splendour' (RV., X, 172), and there are also other verses not from the *Samhitā*.<sup>4</sup> (These are), 'Ye priests, sing forth a song to Indra, who beyond all others slays the foe, that he may rejoice.'<sup>5</sup>

<sup>2</sup> The two *pragāthas* give only four *br̥hatis*. The six are made up by repeating twice the fourth *pāda* of RV., VII, 32, 22, and reading with it the first half of RV., VII, 32, 23. Then the fourth *pāda* of this second *br̥hatī* is twice repeated, and with the second half of RV., VII, 32, 23, makes the third *br̥hatī*. By V, 1, 6, for the *pāda*, RV., VII, 32, 23<sup>c</sup>, is to be substituted RV., X, 120, 3<sup>c</sup>.

<sup>3</sup> The *Rathantara Sāman* is the basis of the *pañcadaśa stoma*, or hymn-form. The term *Vasiṣṭhaprāsāhaḥ* is clearly the technical name of what is called elsewhere (see *St. Petersburg Diet.*) *Vasiṣṭhaprāsāham*. Similarly in the case of the *saptadaśa stoma*, and cf. II, 2, 2, n. 12, for the attributions. The syntax of RV., VI, 31, 1, is curious, see Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 106; *Vergl. Synt.*, I, 398, and cf. in Latin, Persius, III, 29: *censorem trabeate salutas*. For *prāsāha*, cf. *Z. D. M. G.*, XLVIII, 548.

<sup>4</sup> These are given also in *Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra*, XVIII, 15, where they follow *ṣa brahmā*, &c. Some are also in the *Sāmaveda*. The two RV. hymns have five and four verses.

<sup>5</sup> *Śāṅkhāyana* has *jujōṣatī*. See *Sāmaveda*, I, 446; II, 463, where are *vīprāya* and *yām jujōṣate*. For the form, see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 810. B's MS. of *Sāmaveda* has *jujōṣat*.



'Among the gods the singers sing the song; the youthful Indra, famous, takes up the strain.'<sup>6</sup> 'Resting beneath the *plakṣa*,<sup>7</sup> rich in honey, rejoicing in wealth, may we meditate on thee, Indra.' 'O thou to whom, most strong, we have recourse, giver on all sides,<sup>8</sup> from all sides bring us (gifts).' 'Thou art the manliest, the lord, most generous to win us booty, when the (rite) is duly paid.'<sup>9</sup> 'For thou alone<sup>10</sup> dost rule from of old, unsurpassed in might.' 'Do thou sing

<sup>6</sup> Śāṅkhāyana has *marutaḥ svarkāḥ*, a much better reading, which obviates the difficulties of *devātāṃ ṛkāḥ* with the unusual accent and use of *ṛkāḥ*. Here I would read *devātāḥ svarkāḥ*, the omission of *h* before *sv* being quite common in all Sanskrit MSS. The Sāmaveda, I, 445; II, 464, has *Marútaḥ*, and the phrase *Marútaḥ svarkāḥ* occurs also in V, 1, 1. The translation of the last words given by Benfey is: 'gepriesen wird der hehre Jüngling, Indra,' but though *śrutāḥ*, κλυτός, inclitus, perhaps means 'famous' here, *ś stobhati* must mean something like 'sings in return'. Cf. n. 11, below. A noun, *prástobha*, is unlikely. Passive particles like *prastubhānāḥ*, RV., IV, 3, 12, 'incited by shouting,' afford no support for a passive use here.

<sup>7</sup> The reading in Śāṅkhāyana and in Sāmaveda, I, 444; II, 465, is *paṣyema* and *ta*, which explain the accent on *dhīmāhe* (for which, cf. Benfey, *Sāmaveda, Glossar*, p. 100; Whitney, *Roots*, p. 82, and in Colebrooke's *Essays*, I, 111, 112), although the accent might be otherwise explained. There is a parallel difference of reading between Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, XII, 16, and the parallel passages *paṣyema* — *paṣyantaḥ*. The words *śpa prakṣ* are explained by Sāyana as one word, *plakṣavṛkṣasampādītāni pātrāṇy atra plakṣasabdēna vivakṣitāni teṣāṃ samīpavaritī yāga-pradeśa upaprakṣaḥ*, but they must mean 'beneath the *plakṣa* tree rich in honey', as rendered by Aufrecht, *Rgveda*, II, xlv, n., or 'in a dwelling rich in honey', as translated by Benfey, who derives the word from *pra* + *√kṣi*, but who also (p. 130) suggests a derivation from *pra* + *√ghas* and a meaning 'food'. To take it from *upa* + *√pṛc* as an infinitive (as in RV., V, 47, 6) is possible but not probable. In favour of Benfey's derivation from *√kṣi* is the form *vanaprakṣam*, Sāmaveda, I, 580, but there is a v.l. *vanakrakṣam*. The last words mean, according to Benfey, 'lass deine Schätze' uns mehren, bergen, Indra!' according to Aufrecht, 'mögen wir unseren Wohlstand mehren, und den von dir verliehenen bewahren, Indra.' The translation given above is that of Sāyana, and may well represent the view of the passage taken by the author. The *plakṣa* (*Ficus infectoria*) is used as an upper *barhis*, Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, III, 8, 3, 10. Cf. Zimmer, *Altindisches Leben*, p. 59.

<sup>8</sup> In any case *vīsvátodāvan* must be considered as practically one word. Probably *vīsvato-dāvan* should be read as in the Sāmaveda, I, 437; cf. Sāmavidhāna Brāhmaṇa, II, 1, 5. Bloomfield (*Vedic Concordance*, p. 879<sup>a</sup>) treats the phrase as one word.

<sup>9</sup> *Supraṇīte* is so rendered by Sāyana. Hillebrandt in his text of Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 15, 5, apparently by conjecture, reads *supraṇīti*, followed by Bloomfield (*l.c.*, p. 998<sup>b</sup>), but both his MSS., B and K, read *supraṇīte*, which is presumably the older reading. I think the reading should be *supraṇīte* unaccented, and would translate, 'Thou, O good leader, &c.,' the word being found frequently in this use, and the voc. e.g. at RV., III, 1, 16; 15, 4. Neither this nor the next verse is in the Sāmaveda; *tvam hy eka ītiṣe* is = RV., IV, 32, 7<sup>a</sup>; *manhīṣṭho vājasātaye* = RV., VIII, 4, 18<sup>a</sup>; 88, 6<sup>a</sup>.

<sup>10</sup> Śāṅkhāyana reads: *tvam hi rādhasyate eka*, &c., corrected by Bloomfield (*l.c.*, p. 456<sup>a</sup>) to *rādhasyate*. Sāyana takes *sanāt* as *sanitum*, 'thou canst give.' The next three verses are not in Śāṅkhāyana. For the accent *sanāt*, see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1114 d. For *amṛtaḥ*, cf. RV., III, 6, 4; 11, 6; IV, 3, 12; X, 104, 8.

forth, that dost know indeed all that has been aforetime or that is now.' <sup>11</sup> 'O Mitra and Varuṇa, grant us strength and food. O Indra, make us strength abounding.' <sup>12</sup> '(Grant) prosperity, strength, wealth, to him who seeks gain.' <sup>13</sup> Soma impels not him who keeps not vows, gain will not come near him.' Then come three *dvīpādās*, <sup>14</sup> beginning, 'This Brahman.' Then comes one *dvīpādā*,

<sup>11</sup> This occurs in Sāmaveda, I, 450, as: *vīśvasya prā stobha purā vā sām yādi vohā nūnām*, which Benfey renders, 'Vor allem sei gepriesen nun, seist du uns ferne oder nah,' but this passive use of *√stobh* is not probable. My rendering is of course very conjectural, and it supposes that *āsa* is read.

<sup>12</sup> This verse, as far as the latter part is concerned, agrees with Sāmaveda, I, 455, which runs: *ūrjā mitrō vāruṇaḥ pinvātēdāḥ pīvarim īṣaṇi kṛṇuhi na Indra*. Here *pinvata* has the three deities as its subject, and its use is therefore regular. But in the Āranyaka text the plural is quite irregular, cf. I, 1, 2, n. 7. The text could be amended, but it is clearly original. Cf. the strange *atvībhīḥ* in Jaiminiya Brāhmaṇa, III, 77; on the other hand, *uttarābhyām = uttarābhīḥ* in Āpastamba Gṛhya Sūtra, VI, 14, 15 (Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XXX, 281, n.). For the form *kṛṇuhi*, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 704; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 62; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 310. See also Oldenberg, *Prolegomena*, pp. 393 sq.; Zubaty's articles in *Vienna Oriental Journal*, II and III; and Arnold's *Vedic Metre*, Chap. VI, with whose results I regret I cannot on the whole agree (cf. *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, p. 718, and *Vedic Metre*, pp. xiii, xiv).

<sup>13</sup> In Sāmaveda, I, 441, this verse runs: *īdāṃ padāṃ maghāṇi rayīṣṇe nā kāmam avratō hinoti nā sprīdd rayīm* (for the form, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1197b), meaning 'Health, a dwelling, prosperity to him who seeks wealth. The man who pays no vows obtains not his desire, he wins not wealth'. Sāyaṇa renders *rayīṣṇi* as *havirlakṣaṇasya dhanasya dhātari*, but this cannot be right. If the Āranyaka form is correct, it is presumably from *√san*, as in *goṣan*, RV., IX, 2, 10, &c. It may of course also be the acc. or nom. neut. of *rayīṣṇi*, compare *goṣāṇi dhīyam*, RV., VI, 53, 10. The only probable construction of the text here is 'there is (or "may there be") in the seeker of wealth, prosperity', &c. R has *rayīḥ*, which is clearly wrong, as probably is *sprīdd*. For the omission of the verb in the Sāmaveda version, cf. RV., II, 6, 5; Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 19; Geldner, *ibid.*, 166; n. 7 on V, 1, 5.

<sup>14</sup> These verses (the accents are from the Sāmaveda) are given in Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 2, 6: *etā brahmā yā rtoṣya īndro nāma śrutō gr̥ṇe || vī srutāyo yāthā patha īndra tvad yantu rātāyaḥ || tvām te chavasas pate yānti giro na samyātāḥ ||* They occur also (with *vī srutāyo* for *vī srutāyo*, and *naḥ* for *na* in v. 3) in Śāṅkhyāna Śrauta Sūtra, IX, 6, 6, and (with *pathā* for *patha*) in Sāmaveda, II, 1116 (= I, 438), 1118 (= I, 453), 1117. The first verse also occurs in Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, II, 4, 3, 10 (*pratīka* only); III, 7, 9, 5; and the *pratīka* in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, IV, 3. See Benfey and Griffiths' translations, and for *gr̥ṇe*, Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 719. Perhaps it may be taken as a passive, cf. RV., I, 79, 12: *kōtā gr̥ṇīta ukthyāḥ*, rendered as 'is praised' by Oldenberg (*S. B. E.*, XLVI, 106), and see Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 264.\* On the other hand, cf. nn. 6 and 11 above, where

\* So also *jarate* means 'he sings' and 'he is praised' according to Oldenberg, *l.c.*, p. 136, and Neisser, *Beiz. Beitr.*, XIII, 298. I am not sure that in any case the passive sense is quite essential. The uncertainty is of course a sign of early date; cf. the Middle and Passive in Latin, Lindsay, *Latin Language*, pp. 519-521; Delbrück, *Vergl. Synt.*, IV, 433.



'To the yokes for him' (RV., VII, 34, 4);<sup>13</sup> the *sūdadohas* verse; the *dhāyā* verse, 'What he won' (RV., X, 74, 6); and the *sūdadohas* verse.

*ś stobhati* and *prā stobha* must be active, and so here and in RV., I, 79, 12, the activity may be that of the god, not of the poet. In the RV. passage it has just been said: *agnī rāksāmsi sedhati*, and I see no reason to give a passive sense to *grñite*. The verses may then be rendered, 'The holy season's lord, Indra by name, famous, utters praise. Let gifts approach thee, Indra, as paths the way. Like songs, to thee, lord of might, do men fare eagerly.' It should be noted that in I, 438, the Sāmaveda has *grñe*, but in II, 1116, *grñe*. The accent on *grñe* is quite unintelligible,<sup>a</sup> and can only be explained by the fact that the Taittiriya Brāhmaṇa,<sup>b</sup> II. cc., has *gañe*. In the Aitareya only *ēa brahmā* (not as Aufrecht's text *ēā*) is cited, a striking instance of the danger of arguments from the use of *pratīkas* only as a sign of later redaction (cf. Bloomfield's proof of the posteriority of the Gopatha Brāhmaṇa to the Vaitāna Sūtra, Introd., p. 26), since the argument would show that the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa was later than the Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra; cf. also Oldenberg's remarks in *Gött. gel. Anz.*, 1907, p. 234, n. 2.

<sup>13</sup> Śāṅkhāyana adds the verses, RV., VIII, 29, 4, and VI, 17, 15, but as there are only six instead of nine new verses, the total number of *dvīpadā* verses made up is still only twenty-one. The Aitareya adds a twenty-second verse, see I, 4, 2.

The passages corresponding to the *pakṣas* are given in Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 4; 5, thus: the sides are divided into the *akṣas*, *bāhus* (arms), and *prahastakas* (hand). The *akṣas* are VI, 47, 8, and a verse not from the RV., *sa sūrye janayan*, &c. Then for the right *bāhu*, the strophe of the *rathantara sāman*, repeated as a *kakubh*, then the *sūdadohas* verse. Then similarly the antistrophe, and a *dhāyā* verse. Then the *rathantara pragātha*. Then the hymn, RV., VI, 22, exchanging for VI, 22, 2, the verse X, 28, 2. For the left *bāhu* precisely the same treatment of the *bṛhat sāman*, but no *dhāyā*, and the hymn X, 28, with VI, 22, 2, as its second verse. The *prahastakas* are respectively VIII, 97, 13-15, and VIII, 97, 10-12.

Then comes XVIII, 6, the *caturuttarāṇi*, viz. RV., VIII, 92, 19-21; VIII, 12, 22-24; I, 10, 1-3; VIII, 88, 3, 4 (a *pragātha*, or 3-5), by half verses; I, 80, 1-3 (*pañkṭiśaṃsam*); VI, 34, 1-3; and I, 83, 4-6, *pacchas*, then the *sūdadohas*.

It is worthy of note that, just as the Aitareya refers only to the *ēa brahmā* verses by the *pratīka* of the first verse, so the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 15, 4, also uses only the *pratīka*. It is almost impossible to avoid the conclusion that this book XVIII (and presumably, also XVII) must be not earlier nor later than the main body of the Sūtra, and this will modify to some extent Hillebrandt's view, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 25. Similarly the Āraṇyaka may be written after the Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra. Cf. my note in *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 410-412.

In the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VI, 18, 1, it is said that Viśvāmitra was the seer of RV., IV, 19, 22 and 23, and that Vāmadeva *asṛjate* them, *tān kṣīpraṃ samapatat*, while in IV, 30, 2, RV., IV, 20 and 21, are also declared to be *sampāta* hymns: *Vāmadevo vā imāḥ lokān apātyat tān sampātāḥ samapatat* (Sieg, *Die Sagenstoffe des Rgveda*, p. 103).

<sup>a</sup> It falls under none of the exceptional cases, Maedonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 106; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 597, 598; Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 70 sq.; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 21-29; Oldenberg, *Z.D.M.G.*, LX, 707-740; see my note, *J.R.A.S.*, 1908, p. 202.

<sup>b</sup> Also the Āpastamba Śrauta Sūtra, XIV, 2, 13, cited by Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 207<sup>b</sup>.

3. (Then come) the eighty *gāyatrī* tristichs.<sup>1</sup> He takes out the last three verses of the hymn, 'Great is Indra who by his might' (RV., VIII, 6). (Then come) three verses of the hymn, 'A cake for us' (RV., VIII, 78). Of the verses following, 'Indra indeed is the drinker of Soma beyond others' (RV., VIII, 2, 4), he omits the last three. Of the others he omits, 'Sweet are the draughts of Soma, come hither' (ibid., 28), and puts in its place the verse, 'No other mighty one' (RV., VIII, 80, 1). (Then comes) one verse, 'Born with a hundred strengths' (RV., VIII, 77, 1). (Then comes) the remainder (of the hymn, RV., VIII, 92), 'Much invoked, much praised' (ibid., 2). He omits the last verse of the hymn, 'To him that hath renowned treasures' (RV., VIII, 93, 1). (Then come the hymns), 'The deeds of the impetuous one' (RV., VIII, 32), 'Those that kindle Agni' (RV., VIII, 45), and 'For us, O Indra, rich in food' (RV., VIII, 81), and the following hymn. (Then comes) the *sūdadōhas* verse.

4. (Then come) the eighty *brhātī* tristichs.<sup>1</sup> There are twenty-nine verses

<sup>1</sup> They are—

RV., VIII, 6, 1-45	=	45	verses.
" 78, 1-3	=	3	"
" 2, 4-39	=	36	"
(For verse 28, RV., VIII, 80, 1, is substituted.)			
" 77, 1	=	1	"
" 92, 2-33	=	32	"
" 93, 1-33	=	33	"
" 32	=	30	"
" 45	=	42	"
" 81	=	9	"
" 82	=	9	"
= 240 verses.			

In Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 7, the verses are: RV., VIII, 6, 1-45; 2, 4-27; 31-39; 45, 1-42; 32, 1-30; 92, 4-18; 22-33; 93, 4-18; 22-33; III, 51, 10-12; VIII, 76, 10-12; 69, 4-6; VI, 45, 1-30, which gives 81 *trcas* and not 80. The number is reduced to 80 by the omission of one of the three *trcas*, III, 51, 10-12; VIII, 76, 10-12; 69, 4-6.

<sup>1</sup> These are—

RV., VIII, 1, 1-29	=	29	verses.
" 3, 1-6; 9-20	=	18	"
" 4, 1-14	=	14	"
" 33, 1-15	=	15	"
VII, 32, 1; 2; 4-21; 24-7	=	24	"
(For VII, 32, 10, is substituted VIII, 99, 1.)			
6 Vāḷakhilya hymns	=	56	"
VI, 46, 3-14	=	12	"
III, 44	=	5	"
III, 45	=	5	"



of the hymn, 'Sing of nought else' (RV., VIII, 1). He omits the seventh and eighth stanzas of the twenty stanzas beginning, 'Drink the fragrant Soma' (RV., VIII, 3, 1). (Then come) fourteen stanzas beginning, 'When, Indra, forward, backward, upward' (RV., VIII, 4, 1). Then fifteen stanzas beginning, 'We with the Soma thee' (RV., VIII, 33, 1). In the hymn, 'May not thee the sacrificers' (RV., VII, 32), he omits the *dvipadā* (ibid., 3), and the *pragātha* connected with the Rathantara Sāman (ibid., 22). Further he omits the *pragātha*, 'No one Sudās' chariot' (ibid., 10), and inserts in its place the *pragātha*, 'Thee men but yesterday' (RV., VIII, 99, 1). (Then) six Vālakhilya hymns beginning, 'Him of good gifts' (RV., VIII, 49, 1). (Then) the rest (of the hymn, RV., VI, 46), beginning, 'Who active ever slays the foe' (ibid., 3). (Then) two hymns beginning, 'May this delightful one for thee' (RV., III, 44, 1). He omits the seventh and eighth stanzas of the hymn, 'Both let him hear' (RV., VIII, 61). He omits the last stanza of the hymn, 'With strength him that finds treasure' (RV., VIII, 66). (Then come) eleven stanzas beginning, 'Who is king of men' (RV., VIII, 70, 1). (Then the hymns), 'Him who works wonders, enduring the onslaught' (RV., VIII, 88), 'To be invoked by us in all' (RV., VIII, 90), and nine verses of the hymn, 'The blessings thou dost bear, Indra' (RV., VIII, 97). (Then comes) the *sūdadohas* verse.

RV., VIII, 61, 1-6, 9-18	= 16 verses.
„ 66, 1-14	= 14 „
„ 70, 1-11	= 11 „
„ 88	= 6 „
„ 90	= 6 „
„ 97, 1-9	= 9 „
	= 240 verses.

Of these, however, not less than 80 are *satobṛhatī* verses. In Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 8-11, the *āṣṭi* is given as follows: VIII, 97, 1-9; VIII, 62, 7-9; I, 36, 7, 8; VIII, 70, 7-12; = 20 *pratyakṣabṛhatī*: then VI, 46, 3-10; VII, 32, 1, 2, 4-9; VII, 32, 12-21; VII, 32, 24-27; VIII, 1, 1-4; *mā u tvā purūvaso*; VIII, 3, 9-12; VIII, 3, 17-20; VIII, 4, 1-14; VIII, 61, 3-6; VIII, 61, 9-18; VIII, 66, 3-14. Hillebrandt in his index gives the references differently, but this is apparently due to a confusion between *pragāthas* and stanzas. There are really 43 *pragāthas*. The one *mā u*, &c., is not apparently from the *Saṃhitā*; Hillebrandt's indices all ignore it, and it does not appear in Bloomfield's *Vedic Concordance*. Of the last six, three only are selected to make up the 40. Then come 20 more *pratyakṣabṛhatī*, VIII, 1, 5-24. Then 20 more: VIII, 1, 25-29; VIII, 33, 1-15. Then 40 *pragāthas*, the three over the first 40, VIII, 70, 1-6; VIII, 88, 1, 2; VIII, 90, 1-6; VIII, 99, 1-8; VIII, 49-55 (the Vālakhilyas), omitting VIII, 53, 5, 6; 54, 3, 4. Then I, 175, 1; VI, 42, 4; III, 53, 18; VI, 47, 19; VIII, 78, 10; VIII, 89, 7; VIII, 101, 13; X, 102, 1; 3; 12; making 10 *bṛhatī*, and III, 44; 45, making up 20 in all. The whole *bārhatī āṣṭi* consists therefore of 80 *bṛhatī* and 80 (not 160 as Friedländer) *pragāthas*, giving (80 + 80 =) 160 *bṛhatī* and 80 *satobṛhatī*, just as in the Aitareya. Cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 8 and 9, for the *gāyatrī* and *bārhatī āṣṭi*.

5. (Then come) the eighty *uṣṇih* tristichs.<sup>1</sup> There are the two hymns beginning, 'Indra who is the greatest drinker of the Soma' (RV., VIII, 12, 1). He omits the last stanza of the hymn, 'Sing forth to him' (RV., VIII, 15). (Then comes) the hymn, 'To Indra sing the *sāman*' (RV., VIII, 98). He omits the last three stanzas of the hymn, 'Let us utter, O comrades' (RV., VIII,

<sup>1</sup> There are—	RV., VIII, 12	= 33 stanzas.
	„ 13	= 33 „
	„ 15, 1-12	= 12 „
	„ 98	= 12 „
	„ 24, 1-27	= 27 „
	I, 84, 7-9	= 3 „
	V, 40, 1-3	= 3 „
	VI, 43, 1-3	= 3 „
		<hr/>
		= 126 <i>uṣṇih</i> stanzas.

Then <i>gāyatrī</i> stanzas—	RV., VIII, 14	= 15 stanzas.
	„ 16	= 12 „
	„ 17, 1-13	= 13 „
	III, 37, 1-10	= 10 „
	I, 4	= 10 „
	„ 5	= 10 „
	„ 6	= 10 „
	„ 8	= 10 „
	„ 9	= 10 „
	VI, 45, 1-30	= 30 „
	I, 30, 13-15	= 3 „
		<hr/>

= 133 *gāyatrī* stanzas, or 114 *uṣṇih* stanzas,  
making in all 240 *uṣṇih*s.

According to Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra the verses are: RV., VIII, 13, 1-33; VIII, 12, 1-21, 25-33; VIII, 15, 1-12; VIII, 24, 1-27; I, 84, 7-9; V, 40, 1-3, = 36 *trcas* or 108 *uṣṇih* stanzas, XVIII, 12. Then, XVIII, 13, come RV., IV, 30, 1-6; IV, 30, 9-22; IV, 32, 1-21; I, 30, 1-15; VIII, 14, 1-15; VIII, 16, 1-12; VIII, 64, 1-12; VIII, 82, 1-9 (Hillebrandt's I, 30, 1-5, and VIII, 82, 1-7 are slips), making 104 *gāyatrī* stanzas. Then VIII, 21, 1-16, *kakubh* *pragūthas*; then VIII, 98, 1-12 in *uṣṇih*s. We thus get 240 stanzas, consisting of 120 (108 + 12) *uṣṇih*s, 104 *gāyatrī*s, 8 *kakubh*s, and 8 *satobṛhatī*s (i.e. VIII, 21, 1-16). The Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, II, 10, points out that to get 240 *uṣṇih*s it is necessary to take away four syllables from each of the 80 *satobṛhatī*s, which with 160 *bṛhatī*s make up (V, 2, 4) the *bārhatī trcāṣīti*. Then the 8 *kakubh*s give 8 *uṣṇih*s, while the 8 *satobṛhatī*s yield each three, or 24 in all, sets of four syllables. Adding the 80 and the 24 we have 104 sets of four syllables, which added to the *gāyatrī*s give 104 *uṣṇih*s, to which again must be added 120 *uṣṇih*s, 8 *kakubh*s, and 8 *uṣṇih*s, left after the deduction of 24 syllables from each *satobṛhatī*, making a grand total of 240 *uṣṇih*s.

This complicated version, as Dr. Friedländer points out, probably arises from an attempt to remedy the apparent inaccuracy of the Aitareya in permitting 80 *satobṛhatī*s in the *bārhatī aṣīti*. Its success is not obvious, and that the attempt should be made may fairly be reckoned a sign of lateness.



24, 1). Then three tristichs, 'Who alone bestowed' (RV., I, 84, 7), 'Come hither to what is pressed with stones' (RV., V, 40, 1), and, 'Under whose sway Śambara' (RV., VI, 43, 1). *Gāyatrī* verses become *uṣṇīh* verses by equalization. Every seven *gāyatrīs* make six *uṣṇīhs*. (Then come) the hymn beginning, 'If, Indra, I, like thee' (RV., VIII, 14, 1), and the two hymns beginning, 'The lord of men' (RV., VIII, 16, 1). He omits the last two stanzas of the second hymn. He omits the last stanza of the hymn, 'For the strength that slays Vṛtra' (RV., III, 37). (Then come) three hymns beginning, 'The doer of fair deeds to our aid' (RV., I, 4, 1). Then two hymns beginning, 'Indra, lasting wealth' (RV., I, 8, 1). He omits the last stanza of the hymn, 'Who has brought from afar' (RV., VI, 45). Then come three stanzas of the hymn beginning, 'Let splendid feasts be ours' (RV., I, 30, 13). (Then comes) the *sūdadohas* verse. In the case of all these three sets of eighty tristichs, there is made a pause after the half-stanza. The eighty tristichs are the food, and the *vaśa* verses are the stomach (of the bird). The *vaśa* hymn begins,<sup>2</sup> 'Worthy of thee, O wealthy one' (RV., VIII, 46, 1), and ends, 'Gainer, gainer of good' (ibid., 20). The verse, 'Giving wealth' (ibid., 15) is a *dvīpadā*, and, 'Now then' (ibid.) an *ekapadā*. It ends with the verse, 'Of that milk yielder' (RV., VIII, 69, 3). (Then comes) the *sūdadohas* verse.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. I, 5, 1. The explanation of the number 21 stanzas given by Sāyaṇa there and here is that the passage ends with verse 20 and the *sūdadohas* verse makes up the 21. This view may be supported by the fact that the *sūdadohas* verse is here set out with its *pratīka*. It is most probable that we should understand that the 21 stanzas are made up by the inclusion of the *sūdadohas* verse, and then that there follows again that verse in its usual capacity of separating the different parts of the whole. Sāyaṇa does not clearly appear thus to have taken it, but it seems most probably so, and the translation is based on this view.

Śāṅkhāyana in Āraṇyaka, II, 11, and Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 14, takes the whole hymn, VIII, 46, as being used. The priority of the Aitareya is evident as vv. 21-24 contain a *dānastuti* of Pṛthuśravas. The same remark applies to the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, see Eggeling, S. B. E., XLII, 112.

It is worthy of note that an annotator in S<sup>3</sup> considers that Sāyaṇa's explanation of the number 21 is inconsistent (this is not the case) and inaccurate. He argues that the 21 stanzas are made up by splitting ver. 15 into an *ekapadā* and a *dvīpadā*. This view is at first sight plausible, but the mention here of these divisions is more probably due to an explanation of *yathopapādām* in I, 5, 1, and so Sāyaṇa there takes it. The other view is, however, accepted by Eggeling, S. B. E., XLIII, 112, n. 2, who points out that the version of the Mahaduktha contained in MS. Ind. Off. 1729 D gives ver. 15 as an *ekapadā* and a *dvīpadā*, which certainly tells against Sāyaṇa.

For *gāyatrīs* and *uṣṇīhs*, cf. Rgveda Prātiśākhya, XVI, 10 sq.; for *samīpadā*, Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XV, 10, 5.

## ADHYĀYA 3.

(Then come) the thigh (verses).<sup>1</sup> In the hymn, 'O Indra and Agni, ye two' (RV., VIII, 40), (he recites) the half-stanzas as *gāyatrīs*,<sup>2</sup> but the second half of the second as an *anuṣṭubh*, up to the last stanza. The hymn, 'To thee, the mighty, the intoxicated one' (RV., X, 50), has *nivids* inserted. Between the two hymns, 'Who in the forest as it were has been set down' (RV., X, 29), and 'Who first is born, the wise one' (RV., II, 12), are<sup>3</sup> inserted the hymn, 'Come hither standing on thy chariot-seat' (RV., III, 43), and the stanza, 'Wandering alone in the midst of many' (RV., X, 55, 5). As many decades<sup>4</sup> of verses in *triṣṭubh* and *jagatī* addressed to Indra as they insert, after transforming them into *brhatīs*, so many years may a man be fain to live beyond the normal life, at the rate of ten verses for a year<sup>5</sup>; or he need not do so. (Then come) the

<sup>1</sup> Cf. I, 5, 1. The verses are RV., VIII, 40, 1-10; X, 50, 1-7; X, 29, 1-18; III, 43, 1-8; X, 55, 5; II, 12, 1-15; X, 178, 1-3; an *ekapadā*; I, 11, 1-8; VII, 23, 1-6; VII, 24, 1-4, 6, 5.

In Śāṅkhāyana the *vāsa* hymn is followed, XVIII, 15, by the *dvīpadās*, I, 2, 2, above; then comes the *Aindrāgna sūkta*, VIII, 40. Then the *āvopana*, RV., X, 167, 1; II, 21, 1-6; I, 84, 10-12; VII, 31, 10-12; VI, 46, 1-3. Then the *anuṣṭubha samāmnāya*, RV., I, 10, 4-12; I, 11, 1-8; I, 84, 1-6; I, 72, 2-5; I, 176, 1-5; V, 35, 1-7; V, 38, 1, 2; V, 39, 1-4; VI, 44, 1-6; VIII, 34, 1-15; VIII, 63, 4-6; VIII, 89, 5, 6; VIII, 95; X, 152. Then the *triṣṭupchata*, RV., I, 32; VI, 25; II, 12; II, 14; III, 43; III, 46; III, 51, 4-6; IV, 16; VII, 24; VII, 23; VIII, 69, 13-15. See Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 16-20; Āranyaka, II, 12-16. These confused masses of verses show distinctly the later character of the Śāṅkhāyana ritual. See also Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 6, 2, 3, where RV., X, 50, is called the spine; IX, 1, 1, 44; 3, 3, 19; in the last passage the *vāsa* is given as 35 in Eggeling (*S. B. E.*, XLIII, 223), which must be an error as there are only 33 verses, cf. *Intro.*, p. 36.

<sup>2</sup> The second verse is a *dvīpadā* in *śakvarī*. The first three feet make up a *gāyatrī*, that is, they are recited with a pause after the second foot and *om* after the third. The second four feet are recited as an *anuṣṭubh*, with a pause after the second and *om* after the fourth. The last is a *triṣṭubh*, and it is recited by *pādas*, that is, a pause after the first foot and *om* after the second. The remaining ten verses are in *mahāpāṇkti*, and therefore are each divided into two *gāyatrīs* for recitation. It is characteristic of the deliberate differences between Aitareya and Śāṅkhāyana that the latter, XVIII, 16, divides ver. 2 into an *anuṣṭubh* and a *gāyatrī*, not *vice versa*.

<sup>3</sup> That is, if one desires life (Sāyaṇa). See n. 5. For X, 55, 5, cf. Ludwig, *Rgveda*, III, 186; Hillebrandt, *Ved. Myth.*, I, 465.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. I, 5, 2, n. 6. Sāyaṇa here renders *daśatī* as verses produced in the Samhitā, which is a collection of ten Maṇḍalas. But the *daśato* below certainly suggests that it means decades as probably in I, 5, 2.

<sup>5</sup> This must be the meaning, and so Sāyaṇa takes it. He, however, takes *na vā* as meaning that each *brhatī* produces a year of life, contradicting the ten-*brhatī* rule. This is not impossible, in which event he points out the insertion of the nine *triṣṭubh* verses gives eleven *brhatīs* or eleven years' longer life. But it is not natural, and it ignores *triṣṭubhajagatīnām*, there being no *jagatīs* in the nine verses, and therefore in accordance with the ordinary use



hymn, 'That steed impelled by the gods' (RV., X, 178), and the *ekapadā*,<sup>6</sup> 'Indra rules all.' (Then comes) the *anuṣṭubh* hymn, 'All songs have caused Indra to grow' (RV., I, 11). Having recited the first half-stanza of the first stanza of this hymn, he combines<sup>7</sup> the first half-stanza of the second stanza with the second half-stanza (of the first stanza), (joining) quarter-stanza with quarter-stanza so as to make *anuṣṭubhs*. Up to the last stanza he combines every succeeding half-stanza with the preceding. The rest are done in the usual way. (There are) six verses beginning, 'Drink, Indra, the Soma, let it gladden thee' (RV., VII, 23, 1). Having recited four verses of the hymn, 'Thy place, O Indra, is made on thy seat' (RV., VII, 24), and then joining<sup>8</sup> the last stanza, he ends with the second last stanza. The Śastra finished,<sup>9</sup> he mutters the *ukthasampad*. In the place of the *ukthavīrya* the *ukthadoha* is used.

2. 'Thou art the head of the world,' the essence of speech, the fire of breath,

of *na vā* in Āśvalāyana (e. g. Śrauta Sūtra, VI, 5, 22), Śaunaka's pupil,<sup>10</sup> I take it to mean that, unless one is *āyuskāma*, one need not insert the verses. Cf. Sāyaṇa's note: *yady āyuskāmaḥ syāt tadānīm . . . prakṣipet*, whence it appears that he did not regard the *āvopana* as essential. He may be combining two differing previous comments. The idea is curiously inverted.

<sup>6</sup> Not in the R̥gveda. See Sāmaveda, I, 456; Vājasaneyi Samhitā, XXXVI, 8; Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VIII, 2, 21; Sāmavidhāna Brāhmaṇa, II, 6, 7, which all have *vīśvasya rājati*.

<sup>7</sup> See I, 5, 2, n. 12. Śāṅkhāyana, XVIII, 20, applies the same combination to the *udubrahmīya* hymn, RV., VII, 23. The first and last half-stanzas in both cases are left unaltered. The other sets of four *pādas* are treated as *anuṣṭubhs*.

<sup>8</sup> For a formal definition of *samṛtata*, see Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, I, 2, 10.

<sup>9</sup> In the Agniṣṭoma, the *prakṛti*, the Niṣkevalya Śastra, Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 339, n., ends with a Mantra, *ukthaṃ vācīndrīyopasṛṇvate tvā*, Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, V, 15, 23, of which *ukthaṃ vācīndrīya* forms the *ukthasampad*, and the rest the *ukthavīrya*. The Hotṛ here recites the *samṛtata*, but in the place of the *ukthavīrya* come the *ukthadoha*, i. e. the verses set out in V, 3, 2. For the *ukthavīrya*, cf. V, 1, 5, n. 6; Haug, *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*, p. 177; Eggeling, *l. c.*, 327, n.; Caland and Henry, *L'Agniṣṭoma*, p. 233. Sāyaṇa ascribes the verses and formulae to a *lākhāntara* as usual.

<sup>10</sup> The rendering of these verses is very doubtful, and I have mainly followed Sāyaṇa. The difficulty is increased by the fact that E has here no accents, and Rājendralāla has apparently followed a most corrupt MS. or has scattered accents at random. They do not occur in Śāṅkhāyana. Both Rājendralāla and the Ānandāśrama edition print the verses with stops only at *sdrvam*, *vydma*, *pinvati*, and *dūhānam* (and in the former case also at *asi*), as if they were prose. They seem clearly, however, to be intended as verses, and I have divided them into *jaḡatis* with mixed *triṣṭubhs*. *Indraḥ* may belong to the first verse, and other divisions are no doubt possible, but the original metrical form of e. g. *rtām satyām vijigyānam vīdānam* is certain. For similar cases of verse treated as prose, cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VIII, 25, 3, and 27, 2 and 3, where *śloka*s appear in prose form. In VIII, 27, 3, *bhavati* is two syllables only

<sup>11</sup> The Bṛhaddevatā, IV, 139, in the 'B' recension mentions Āśvalāyana, and though this may point to the verse being late, it may also be quite correct, since a pupil of Śaunaka appears to have been the author of the Bṛhaddevatā, cf. Macdonell, I, xxiv, and Āśvalāyana was evidently one of his oldest pupils.

the abode of mind, the entrance of the eye, the source of the ear, the resting-place of the heart, thou art all. (Thou art) Indra, the undying sacrifice, the ambrosia, the sky, right, truth, conquest, decision, the end of speech, the pervading, that which is beyond all, the light, the udder, the unanswerable, that which was before. Thou art all,<sup>2</sup> speech, the water with the lightning that goes thither and returns,<sup>3</sup>

as elsewhere. A striking example of verse disguised as prose is the inscription on the Piprahva stūpa, see Fleet, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 111 sq., following, with minor differences, Thomas, *J. R. A. S.*, 1906, pp. 462 sq. In the Aitareya, *ll. cc.*, we have:—

*Kṣatreṇa kṣatram jayati balena balam ānute |*  
*yasyaivaṃ vidvān brāhmaṇo rāṣṭragopaḥ purohitaḥ ||*  
*tasmai viśaḥ saṃjānate sanmukhā ekamanasaḥ |*  
*yasyaivaṃ vidvān brāhmaṇo rāṣṭragopaḥ purohitaḥ || 25 || 12 ||*  
*tasya rājā mitram bhavati (2 syll.) dviṣantam apabādhati |*  
*yasyaivaṃ vidvān brāhmaṇo rāṣṭragopaḥ purohitaḥ |*  
*tasmai viśaḥ, &c., as above,*

and in other places fragments of verse appear, as is only natural, since gnomic sayings like them tend in all languages to become verse. The old character of these Ślokas appears from their metrical form, and they may be compared with the verse cited from Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI, 5, 4, 3, by Oldenberg (*S. B. E.*, XXX, xix). Similar verses composed at later dates are found in the characteristic late metre in the Gṛhya Sūtras, quite freely (Oldenberg, *l. c.*, xxxv-xxxvii), one being attributed (Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 7, 16) to Śaunaka, and Ślokas are recognized in the lists of compositions, e. g. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, II, 4, 10; IV, 1, 2; see Sieg, *Die Sagenstoffe des Rgveda*, pp. 7 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Sāyaṇa has: *yasya yasya vastuno yad yat pūrvaṃ karoṇaṃ rūpaṃ tat sarvaṃ rūpaṃ*; and he explains *pārāḥ arvāḥ* as *uttamādhamarūpā vāc*.

<sup>3</sup> *Sāpru* is so explained by Sāyaṇa, and *pārāḥ* and *arvāḥ* probably go with *salilam*. In the Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, I, 9; 10, this passage from *Indraḥ . . . amṛtaṃ duhānam* appears, but in a different connexion and in an inferior, perhaps secondary, form, which looks as if it were borrowed from the Āraṇyaka. The parallelism has escaped not only Oertel, but also Bloomfield (*Vedic Concordance*). Quite irrelevantly appear the words (the *gāyatrī* as *brahman* is the subject of discourse): *tasyaitāni nāmānindrah karmākṣitir amṛtaṃ vyomānto vācaḥ | bahur bhūyas sarvaṃ sarvasmād uttaraṃ jyotiḥ | ṛtaṃ satyaṃ vijñānaṃ vivācanaṃ apratīvācyam | pūrvaṃ sarvaṃ sarvā tāk | sarvaṃ idam apī dhenuḥ pinvate pārāḥ arvāḥ || 9 || sā prthaksalilāṃ kāmādughākṣīti prāṇasaṃhitāṃ cakṣuṣīrotraṃ vākprabhūtaṃ manasā vyāptam hṛdayāgraṃ brāhmaṇabhaktaṃ annaśubhaṃ varṣapavitram gobhagaṃ pṛthivyuparam tapastanu Varuṇapariyatanaṃ Indroṣṣṭhām sahasrākṣaram ayutadhāram amṛtaṃ duhānā sarvān imāṃś lokān abhivikṣarātīti |* Oertel renders, 'These are its names: Indra, action, imperishableness, the immortal, end of the firmament of speech; the manifold, the numerous, the all, the light higher than the all; righteousness, truth, distinction, decision which is not to be contradicted; the ancient all, all speech. This all also, [like] a cow, fattens hitherward, thitherward. She that milks immortality possessing individual oceans (?), possessing wish granting imperishableness, connected with breath, possessing sight and hearing, superior by speech, permeated by the mind, having the heart as its point, apportioned to the Brāhmanas, pleasant through food, having the rain as means of purification (?), cow-protecting, higher than the earth, having penance as a body, having Varuṇa as an enclosure, having Indra as leader, possessing a thousand syllables, possessing ten thousand streams, flows in all directions unto all these worlds.' It



which yields milk and fattens<sup>4</sup>. (Thou art) the eye, the ear, breath, that which is

should be noted that the MSS. read *vijijñānam*, a clear error for *vijigyānam*, properly a perf. part. middle of *√ji* (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 809), a word elsewhere unknown but of interesting function (for *g*, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 146), which is rendered very probable by the metre, *aprativācyaḥ* (C), *sā, cakṣurotram, hṛdayogam, brāhmaṇabhṛaktram* (a), *°bhṛatram* (B), *°bhṛtram* (C), *Varuṇapariyatanam, duhñāḥ*. These readings confirm the *brāhmaṇabhṛatrkam* of the Āraṇyaka text. *Hṛdayāgram* is no doubt a possible and an easy conjecture, but Sāyaṇa already had *hṛdayogam*, and its appearance here certainly shows that the tradition hardened to *hṛdayogam* at a very early date. *Annaśubham* is tempting, but uncertain as Sāyaṇa read *annaśubhe*. Cf. Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, IX, 5, 1, 12, *satyāṇṛte vācam* for Mantrāyaṇīya Saṃhitā, III, 7, 3, *satyāṇṛtām*. So in Atharvaveda, XIV, 1, 11, *śrotre* replaces RV., X, 85, 11, *śrotram* quite wrongly (cf. Whitney, *Translation*, p. 742). I consider therefore that (especially in view of the accent) it is very likely that *annaśubham* should be replaced. For *hṛdayogam* if it really is = *hṛdayāgram* might be compared Maitrāyaṇī Upaniṣad, VI, 35, *dividharmondham* for *°āndham* (Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, li). But error of text is easy. *Vyomānto vācaḥ* must, I think, be divided into *vyōma* and *ānto vācāḥ*. The sense ascribed to *Indraśreṣṭham* is possible, and *Indrajyeṣṭham* may mean (as in RV., AV., and TS.) 'having Indra as its best'. *Varuṇapariyatanam* may perhaps be right, but it is far from certain, and Sāyaṇa had *varuṇavāyvitamam*, a more recondite form (see n. 12 on II, 4, 3) than that of the Brāhmaṇa. The words *bahur bhūyas* should be *bahor bhūyaḥ*. This example answers the query of Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit Syntax*, § 122, n. 2, as to whether the idiom 'süßer als süß' is Vedic as well as classic (his *Sanskrit Syntax*, § 251, 3). The same phrase is found in V, 1, 5, in a Mantra passage, and in the parallel passage, Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 8. Cf. also such phrases as *bahu ca me bhūyaḥ ca me*, Taittiriya Saṃhitā, IV, 7, 4, 2; *J.R.A.S.*, 1909.

The accents of the R edition are very incorrect. *Vivācanām* is quite impossible. In the case of the compounds R has *hṛdayogam, brāhmaṇabhṛatrkam, vārṣapavitram, vākprabhūtam, pṛthivyuparam, tāpastanu, Indrajyeṣṭham, ayūtākṣaram, brāhmavārcasam. Vārṣapavitram* is supported by *varṣānirñij* (RV.), and *varṣamedas* (AV., *°medhas*, AV. Paipp.); *sahāsradhāram* by the RV.; *ayūtākṣaram* by analogy with *sahāsradhāram*, &c.; *tāpastanu* and *brāhmaṇabhṛatrkam* depend on analogy; *Indrajyeṣṭham* has abundant authority; *gōbhagam* may be compared with *gōmagha* (RV.), but cf. *gōbhāj* (RV.). *Vākprabhūtam* and *satyāsaṃmitam* are supported by usage (Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 96; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 227 sq.), and *hṛdayogam* is probable (Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1287 a, gives several examples of different accents, Wackernagel, pp. 238 sq., decides for accent on the first member as usual in determinatives with adjectives at the end (for examples, cf. p. 233)). On this analogy, *pṛthivyuparam* may be right, or possibly we should read *pṛthivy uparam* as two words, but the gender of *uparam* would be strange if it is a noun (meaning either 'lower Soma stone' (RV., AV.; but cf. *Ved. Stud.*, I, 108 sq.), or 'lower part of sacrificial post' (VS.)), since there it is always masc. (cf. n. 5). The accent on *Vārṣaṇḍ* must remain doubtful, but if it is a case of a past part., the accent should be on the first. None of these words have found their way into Wackernagel's lists.

For similar cases of double accent in MSS., cf. Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, pp. 39, 49 (from B); Wackernagel, p. 40, points out that in cases of compounds the Atharvaveda, XIX and XX, Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, Taittiriya Āraṇyaka and Maitrāyaṇī Upaniṣad (he ignores this work) are very badly accented. His theory of accent (pp. 40 sq.) lays stress on the fact that determinatives (save those with verbal second parts—other than forms in *-ta*, *-ti*) originally had the accent on the first part and only later on the second. The accents here must depend to some extent on (a) the validity of the theory, (b) the view as to the age of the Āraṇyaka.

<sup>4</sup> *Pinvati* as it stands spoils the construction, but may be right. Possibly it was originally

measured by truth, which is produced by speech, and proceeds from the mind, what is truth in the heart, and borne by Brahmins. (Thou art) food and prosperity, purified by the rains, rich in cows, that beyond the earth,<sup>5</sup> to which Varuṇa and Vāyu most resort, that which has for its body penance,<sup>6</sup> has Indra as its mightiest, which milks ambrosia, with a thousand streams and countless letters.<sup>7</sup> These, O hymn, are thy powers; there are the powers of speech.<sup>8</sup> With these for me now milk the great wealth of ambrosia. Prajāpati created this prayer, the essence of the Vedas. With it may I obtain all; let it win all desires greatly. Thou art *bhūh*, *bhuvaḥ*, and *sva*, the three, thou art the Veda.<sup>9</sup> Milk, O prayer,<sup>10</sup> children for me. Life and breath milk for me. Cattle and folk milk for me. Prosperity and glory milk for me. The world (to come), splendour of renown, courage, prosperity in sacrifice, milk for me.' All this he makes the Adhvaryu repeat, if he does not know (the Mantras). Then being urged on to sacrifice (by the Adhvaryu, who says), 'Om,<sup>11</sup> offer the Soma singer of the hymn,'

*pinvāt* (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 716), the nom. of the participle, or *pinvati*, reading *dhenūh*. The Jaiminiya Upaniṣad *pinvate* may arise from a misreading of *i* or *ī*.

<sup>5</sup> *Gōbhagam* may mean 'prospering cows', and *varṣāpavitram*, 'purifying by rains.' *Pythi-vyuparṣm* is *yūpaśya mūlam* (Sāyaṇa). If this is correct (cf. n. 3), the next adjective may belong to it or to *tāpastanu*, but it is much more likely to be merely = 'beyond the earth', as in the Jaiminiya Upaniṣad, which has *Varuṇapariyatanaṁ* and *annasubham*, 'pleasant through food.'

<sup>6</sup> Apparently we must follow Sāyaṇa and supply *muniśarirajātam* or something similar. The verses are late in character, and *tāpastanu* might mean 'lean through penance', but the translation of Oertel 'having penance as a body' is at least as probable (cf. the accent). The *uktha* is blindly praised.

<sup>7</sup> *Dūhānam* is taken as nom. neut. Sāyaṇa renders it as with *gokulam*. *Ayūtākṣaram* is due, he says, to the fact that there are so many syllables in the *dohanaprakaraṇa*, *vasūnām pavitram aśi sahasradhāram* (Taittirīya Saṁhitā, I, 1, 3, 1; Maitrāyaṇī Saṁhitā, I, 1, 3). He takes *ayūtākṣaram* and *sahasradhāram* as accus. agreeing with *amṛtam*. They are perhaps more probably nominative.

<sup>8</sup> Or, as Sāyaṇa, 'these sounds are thy powers.' Bloomfield (*Vedic Concordance*, p. 300\*) reads *ukthabhūtaśya*. The other seems simpler; *uktha* and *vāc* are easily identified, or rather the latter lies at the base of the former. For *āpyāsam*, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 921-925, 573 c; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 352, 353.

<sup>9</sup> The conjecture *védāsi* for *veda* *asi* is easy, but unnecessary; cf. n. 11 on III, 2, 4; RV., II, 6, 7; I, 45, 6; II, 3, 6; III, 14, 3, &c. See also Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 15, 3, for *veda* 'si. To take *trayo*, &c., as a separate Mantra is wrong.

<sup>10</sup> Sāyaṇa takes *brahma* as accusative. I prefer to regard it as vocative, despite the apparent parallelism of the next sentences. For another neuter voc., cf. II, 7, n. 1. Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VII, 4, 13, has *prajāṁ me dhukṣva*, and also *āyur me dhukṣva*, *paśūn me dhukṣva*. On the other hand Atharvaveda, X, 8, 25 has *adhok* — *brahma ca tapas ca*.

<sup>11</sup> Cf. V, 3, 3. The Adhvaryu utters the *praiśa* twice, see Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, I, 5, 3: *ekaikaṁ preṣito yajati*. See Sabbathier, *Agniṣṭoma*, p. 58, for the phrase, and for the gen., Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 297 b; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 160.



uttering the cry, 'We who sacrifice,' he offers sacrifice with the usual<sup>12</sup> (stanza), and holding back as it were his breath, repeats a secondary *vaṣaṭ*.<sup>13</sup> The accompaniment of the *vaṣaṭ* is described elsewhere.<sup>14</sup> The Adhvaryu brings up the vessel containing the libation and the (three) *atigrāhya* bowls.<sup>15</sup> As soon as he perceives the food, the Hotṛ descends from the swing towards the east.<sup>16</sup>

<sup>12</sup> RV., VII, 23, 1, see Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, V, 15, 23: *pibā somam Indra mandatu tveti yājyā*, and VII, 11, 27. For the *āgūh*, see *ibid.*, I, 5, 3; 4: *āgūr yājyādīr anuyājavarjam* || 4 || *ye 3 yajāmaha ity āgūh*. See also Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, pp. 101 sq.; *Neu- und Vollmondsopfer*, p. 95; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIV, 32, n. 1.

<sup>13</sup> *Anuvaṣaṭkṛ* is freely used as a compound verb in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa (I, 22, 4, &c.), Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, and Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, and should be written as one word. *Vyavānya* is rendered *ucchwāsam akṛtvā* by Sāyaṇa, who takes *iva* as *eva*. The reason for the expression *anuvāṣaṭ* is given in Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 102; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 351, n. 1. After the *yājyā* the Hotṛ says: *devā 3 vau 3 ṣaṭ* and *somasyāgne vīhi 3 vau 3 ṣaṭ*, thus making two *vau 3 ṣaṭ* cries. For the *vaṣaṭkāra*, cf. Āpastamba, Yajñaparibhāṣā, 96 (*S. B. E.*, XXX, 341). The words *somasyāgne vīhi* occur in Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 5, 4; 6: Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, V, 5, 19, and the brevity of this passage is only explained by the fact (see the following note) that the writer clearly knew the Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra (cf. *Introd.*, p. 19): cf. the relation of Gṛhya Sūtra and Śrauta Sūtra in the case of Āśvalāyana and Śāṅkhāyana. Oldenberg, who once thought the evidence was in favour of assigning the two Sūtras of Śāṅkhāyana to different epochs, has now abandoned the attempt and leaves the question open (see *S. B. E.*, XXIX, 5, 6; XXX, xxxiii sq.), while I am inclined to think that there is no evidence worth counting against the traditional authorship in either case.

<sup>14</sup> Cf. Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, I, 5, 17: *vāg ojaḥ saha oja mayi prāṇāpānāv iti vaṣaṭ-kāram uktoktvānumantrayate*! This is a direct reference. Cf. also Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 8, 9, where it reads *tān anumantrayeta vāg oja saha oja mayi prāṇāpānāv ity ātman eva tad hotā vācam ca prāṇāpānau ca sthāpayati sarvāyuh sarvāyutvāya*. The reference here might be supposed to be to the Brāhmaṇa passage and not to the Śrauta Sūtra, but the use of *anumantram* and the mode of reference are hopelessly opposed to this view. The style of reference is reminiscent of Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, I, 1, 1: *uktāni vaitānikāni gṛhyāṇi vakṣyāmah*, which is a clear reference to the Śrauta Sūtra, and I think an assertion of the identity of authorship. It may be noted that, although Oldenberg (*S. B. E.*, XXIX, 158) clearly indicates that he has some novel view on the relations of Śaunaka and Āśvalāyana, he does not (in *S. B. E.*, XXX) carry out his promise of discussing the point, save that (*ibid.*, p. xxxv, n. 2) he alludes to the fact that Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 7, 16, quotes a *yajñagūthā* by Śaunaka. This of course in no way contradicts the view of the relation as pupil and teacher reflected on the tradition of the Kathāsaritsāgara and recorded in the most precise terms by Śaṅḍaguruśiṣya. The B version of the Bṛhaddevatā, which probably was composed by a pupil of Śaunaka's, distinctly quotes Āśvalāyana, which suits the tradition admirably (p. 293, note \*).

<sup>15</sup> Cf. Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VII, 3, 22; Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 21, 10, *raivakarmaṇo 'tigrāhyaḥ*. They are drawn 'over and above' (*ati*), Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, IX, 235; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 402, n. 4; XLI, 6, n. 2.

<sup>16</sup> Cf. I, 2, 4; Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, II, 17; Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 21, 6; 7. For *yathā na* with fut., cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 596 sq.; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, §§ 197, 277. This case illustrates admirably the origin of the use in its relation of *iti* and the 2nd person; see also Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā, II, 2, 7; IV, 1, 9; Taittirīya Samhitā, II, 3, 5, 1; *J. R. A. S.*, 1909.

Then they tie up the swing to the west that it may not slay the reciter when about to eat. For the Hotṛ eats seated on the place of the swing. Then the Hotṛ consumes the (libation in the) vessel with the words uttered in response,<sup>17</sup> 'May speech, the deity, rejoice in the Soma,' 'May Soma, the king, shower life on me for my breath,' 'May my breath milk mightily all life.' The third pressing (in this rite) is taken over<sup>18</sup> from the last day of the Abhiplava rite, except as regards the hymn containing *nivids* addressed to the All-gods (RV., I, 89). In its place are inserted forty-one verses of the 'water' hymn of Dīrghatamas, 'Of that noble grey sacrificer' (RV., I, 164), and the hymn *ānobhadriya* (RV., I, 89). The strophe and antistrophe of the Vaiśvadeva Śāstra are taken over from the one day form<sup>19</sup> (the Viśvajit). If the Yajñāyajñīya Sāman is omitted,<sup>20</sup>

<sup>17</sup> *Upasṛṣṭena* is explained by Sāyaṇa as *itarānujñāpūrvakena*; the word occurs often in Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, but not in a parallel passage. Cf., however, XVIII, 1, 12. The verse *vāg devī (juzānā) somasya tṛpyatu* is found in Vājasaneyi Samhitā, VIII, 37, and elsewhere, Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 853<sup>b</sup>. *Sa me, &c.*, is a quasi verse. It is tempting to render *āyuh* as if it were a dative, 'may Soma rain on me for life, for breath,' and it might possibly be so taken as the sentence is a Mantra, and therefore not to be judged by the ordinary rules of prose (cf. Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. viii). In that case *āyuhprāṇāya* would not be a *tatpuruṣa* compound, since 'the breath of life' is not in Sanskrit *āyuhprāṇa*, nor yet a *dvandva*, but rather a case in which the mere base is accepted as sufficient to denote the case relation when followed by a case form in a parallel word, cf. e.g. RV., I, 26, 9, where Max Müller would so render (see Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XLVI, 15) *āmṛta mṛtyānām*, and see Pischel, *Vedische Studien*, I, 60 sq., 225 sq.; Jacobi, *Gött. gel. Anz.*, 1880, p. 855; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, xvii, and II, i, 157, who accepts this view of RV., I, 26, 9. Cf., however, Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, l.c. on n. 14, where *sarvāyuh sarvāyutvāya* occurs. The gen. is one of partitive force, cf. Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 160; Monro, *Homeric Grammar*<sup>2</sup>, p. 146. For loc. with *ās*, cf. Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, VI, 3, 10; for acc. exx. in *Ind. Stud.*, IX, 295.

<sup>18</sup> For the Abhiplava, see Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, VII, 6; Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XXVI, 403. It has six days. The hymn referred to is RV., I, 89; cf. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 22, 8. The hymn, RV., I, 164, 1, is called *salila* also in Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, II, 18, and Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 22, 7. It is of course derived from v. 41, *gaurīr mimāya salilāni takṣatī*; cf. also Bṛhaddevatā, IV, 43.

<sup>19</sup> The Vaiśvadeva Śāstra begins therefore with RV., V, 82, 1-3, 4-6. The contents of it and the Āgnimāruta are given in full in I, 5, 3, which explains the brevity with which they are here treated. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 22 (cf. Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, II, 18), gives the Śāstra as RV., V, 82, 1-3, 4-6; IV, 53; I, 160; I, 161; I, 164 (the whole); and I, 89, with *nivids*; and V, 53, 5, as a *paridhāniyā*. *Ānobhadriya* is used as a name of I, 89, also in Rgvidhāna, I, 20, 5, but Bloomfield (*Vedic Concordance*, p. 169<sup>b</sup>) does not cite this passage, which is earlier.

<sup>20</sup> The Āgnimāruta for the Śāṅkhāyana is given in detail in Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 23; cf. Āranyaka, II, 18. It consists of RV., III, 3; V, 55; the Yajñāyajñīya or a substitute, VI, 48, not noted by Bloomfield (*Vedic Concordance*, p. 735<sup>a</sup>) who omits also any reference to this passage; I, 141. If the Yajñāyajñīya Sāman is employed, the Āgnimāruta Śāstra constitutes itself in the Aitareya thus: RV., III, 2; I, 43, 6; V, 55; VI, 48, 1 and 2; VII, 17, 11 and 12; I, 99, 1; X, 9, 1, &c., the rest being as in the *prakṛti* (Sāyaṇa). If the Iṇḍa Sāman is



then the strophe and antistrophe (in the Āgnimāruta Śāstra) consist of the six stanzas, beginning, 'O Agni, thy fame, thy strength' (RV., X, 140, 1), when the Ilānda Sāman is employed (three stanzas being used). If more (than three) are used in this Sāman, then so many are employed (in the Śāstra) as the antistrophe, beginning, 'Agni, for ourselves as it were' (RV., X, 21, 1). Thus is completed the Mahāvratā and this day and the Agniṣṭoma.<sup>21</sup> At the proper time they should carry the swing to the bath, and burn together the seats.

3. No one<sup>1</sup> who has not been initiated should recite the Mahāvratā, nor

used, then for the two *pragūthas*, VI, 48, 1 and 2, and VII, 17, 11 and 12, are substituted X, 140, 1-3, and 4-6 respectively, being the two parts of the Ilānda Sāman. If, however, all the six stanzas (X, 140, 1-6) are used for the *stotriya*, then X, 21, 1-6, must form the *anurūpa*. So Śāṅkhāyana, who gives further variations. For the Ilānda, cf. Oldenberg, *Gött. gel. Anz.*, 1908, p. 714.

<sup>21</sup> The Mahāvratā is a form of the Agniṣṭoma, and so in a sense the Agniṣṭoma is finished. The utensils and the swing are both cleansed, while the *vedi* and the *br̥sīs* are both consumed by fire. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVIII, 24, develops the final close of the ceremony in some detail. The Āraṇyaka, II, 18, has: *tad Agniṣṭomah saṁtiṣṭhate*. The burning points clearly to an original sun spell. The question, however, has recently been raised whether the use of fire is not merely placular, cf. Frazer, *Adonis, Attis, Osiris*, p. 151, n. 4; Westermarck, *Origin and Development of Moral Ideas*, I, 56, n. 3. The usual view is that both the burning and the waving of torches in such rites are intended to evoke heat by magic. Cf. Warde Fowler, *Roman Festivals*, p. 84.

<sup>1</sup> Sāyana, as usual, ignores the difficulties of this passage. (1) The words *ity eke* most probably refer to the whole passage (cf. III, 2, 4, n. 2), because the very first prohibition contradicts the passage above, V, 1, 5, n. 5, when the case of an *adikṣita* Hotṛ is deliberately discussed. The sense then must be, as Eggeling (*S. B. E.*, XLIII, 367, n. 1) takes it, that (1) no one but a *dīkṣita* can recite, and even he only (2) if there is a *cityāgni*, and (3) a year-long *sattra*, and (4) not even he for another unless he be father or teacher. It may be noted that Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, I, 1, prohibits recitation to another, save in the case of *sattrins* and of a father and a teacher, which corresponds with the rule here, since *sattrins* of course are entitled to recite for one another. But *ibid.*, I, 5, and Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 13, 6, regard a *cityāgni* as optional, perhaps a later idea (cf. Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 217, n.). The rule of those here cited thus excludes the Mahāvratā as anything but a *sattra*. Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVI, 1, 2, insists on an altar at the Mahāvratā (Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, xxv, n. 2). But it should be noted that this is inconsistent with the exception of the father and the teacher, for they could only be concerned—being *ex hypothesi* not *sattrins*, in an *ekāha* or *ahīna* rite. Possibly, however, the view that one can recite for a father or teacher does not contemplate the case of an *ahīna* or *ekāha*, but means that in a *sattra* the sacrificer may carry out the sacrifice for the benefit of his father or teacher though they are not initiated and cannot take part themselves; this view I incline to think the most probable, despite Dr. Friedländer's view (p. 29, n. 2). It cannot mean that, the teacher or father being *dīkṣita*, the Hotṛ recited for them only, for in the Mahāvratā all the *sattrins* equally obtain the benefits of the rite (cf. Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, xxv sq.), and therefore are forbidden to perform for others outside the circle of the initiated,\* cf. Śatapatha

\* It may be noted that the prohibition of performing sacrifices by other than Brahmins is ascribed in the Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, II, 3, 1, 39 (cf. Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, IV, 14, 11; Max

should he recite it when there is no altar, nor should one recite it for another, nor if it does not last a year, so say some. Only one may recite it for a father or a teacher, for that is recited for oneself.<sup>2</sup> (The only<sup>3</sup> utterance (of the

Brāhmaṇa, IX, 5, 2, 12 and 13; X, 5, 2, 5. (2) Presumably for this reason Sāyaṇa renders the passage as equivalent to 'no one who is not *dikṣita* should recite the Mahāvratā at another's sacrifice (i. e. an *ahina* or *ekāha*) unless there is a *cityāgni*; or unless that other is a father or a teacher'. His explanation is that the Mahāvratā is of three forms, *ekāha*, *ahina*, and *sattra*. As in the *sattra*, the *yajamāna* and Hotṛ are identical, then the *dikṣā* is automatic. In the other two rites the Hotṛ is not the *yajamāna*, and may be either *dikṣita* or *adikṣita*. In the Agniṣtoma, &c., if *svārthe* he is *dikṣita*, as these are Soma sacrifices (cf. Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 125). If the sacrifice is not a Soma one, then he is not. Only the *dikṣita* can perform at a *parakīya mahāvratākarman*, and he only if there is a *cityāgni*. But all this is very difficult and inconsistent. The *nāṣaṃvatsara ity eke* he takes as a separate prohibition confined to one school. But this seems less likely. (3) Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, I, 266, 267, takes the passage thus: 'No one who is *adikṣita*, uninitiated, should recite it for another person; nor should he do so, when the Mahāvratā is performed without (or with) an altar, or if it does not last one year.' But this hardly makes sense, since an *adikṣita* can never recite if there is a *sattra*, and the construction of the sentence shows that the series of prohibitions is not directed to an *adikṣita* but to a priest in general. He is not to recite if *adikṣita*, nor if there is no fire, &c. Dr. Friedländer, on Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 1, follows Max Müller, without commenting on the difficulties. (4) The only other possibility is to render, 'No one who is not initiated must recite, nor must one recite if there is no fire, nor for another (i. e. allowing *ahinas* and *ekāhas* if by chance the *yajamāna* is the Hotṛ in fact).' Some say, 'nor if it be not a *sattra*. One may recite for a father, &c.' In this case the passage confirms in part the view that there was probably a *cityāgni* at the *ekāha* and *ahina* rites, Eggeling, *S. B. E.*, XLIII, xxv.

<sup>2</sup> Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, I, 1, has *ātmane haivāsyā tac chastaṃ bhavati*. The one gives the body, the other learning. *Ātmano* here is no doubt correct as less easy than *ātmane*. It is a predicative possessive gen., as in I, 2, 2, n. 8. Cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 298; Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit Syntax*, § 64. For *asya*, cf. Caland, *Ueber das rit. Sūtra des Baudh.*, pp. 44, 45.

<sup>3</sup> Sāyaṇa says: *atra kecid vākyāntaram adhīyate*. This can hardly refer to recitation, and throws grave doubt on Winternitz's interpretation of a similar phrase in Haradatta (*Mantra-pāṭha*, I, xix). The passage is given in all the MSS., but it cannot be original. In addition to being quite out of place, it is almost unintelligible here. It is a general description of the *praiṣa* of the Adhvaryu in the case of Śāstras, whether accompanied by *Nārāyaṇasūktayacamasas* or not. In the case of the Hotṛ's Śāstras the *praiṣa* is *ukthasā yaja somasya*. In the case of the Hotṛakas, what it is is disputed. Sāyaṇa says (1) some supply *ukthasā yaja somānām* (cf. Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, IX, 13, 33 (*somasya*); 14, 12 (*somānām*); Āpastamba Śrauta Sūtra, XII, 27, 19 (*somasya*); 28, 14 (*somānām*)) and make this the *praiṣa*; (2) others, so 'yam arthoḥ prakṛtita eva prāpta iti matvā, reject the passage; (3) others repeat *ukthasā yaja somasya*, and assume the mention here is *hotṛakāṇaṃ śāstreṣu viśeṣavidhānārtham*. The second alternative is the most probable. The words *ukthasā—somānām*, which appear in the text after *hotṛakāṇām*, are certainly spurious and cannot have been read even by Sāyaṇa, whose note would be

Müller, *S. B. E.*, XXX, 321, to the fact that Brahmins only can eat the remains of a sacrifice. The reason is no doubt a reflex of the doctrine of the presence of the divinity in the sacrifice (which in certain cases forbids any eating whatever, e.g. Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 8, 31), for which see my article in the *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 939 sq.; Robertson Smith, *Rel. of Sem.*, I, 276 sq.



Adhvaryu) on the Hotr's Śāstras, whether accompanied or not by libations for Narāśansa, is 'Offer the Soma with the hymn', and it also occurs in the Hotraka's Śāstras): This day one should not teach to one who is not a regular pupil, and has not been so for a year, assuredly not to one who has not been so for a year, nor to one who is not a *brahmacārin* and does not belong to the same school,<sup>4</sup> assuredly not to one who does not belong to the same school, nor to one who has not come to that place.<sup>5</sup> There should not be more than one saying or twice, twice only.<sup>6</sup> 'One man should tell it to one,' says Jātūkarnya. 'Not to a child or a man in the third stage of life.'<sup>7</sup> Nor standing to one standing, nor walking to one walking, nor lying to one lying, nor seated on a couch to one so seated, but seated on the ground to one so seated (should the teacher teach). Nor (should the pupil) lean backwards,<sup>8</sup> nor forwards, nor be over clothed, nor adopt postures, but he should raise his knees, without wearing special apparel, and so learn. He should not learn when he has eaten flesh, or seen blood, or a dead body, or done what is unlawful, or anointed (his eyes) or oiled or rubbed his body, or had himself shaved, or bathed, or has put on colour, or put on a wreath, or had intercourse, or written,<sup>9</sup> or obliterated

unintelligible if he had had them before him. The reason for their insertion is obvious. For the libations, cf. *L'Agniṣṭoma*, p. 220. The gen. is presumably partitive, cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 67; V, 3, 2, n. 17.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. Gautama Sūtra, XIV, 21, and Bühler's note in his translation (*S. B. E.*, II), where he differentiates it from *sahādhyāya*. Here, however, it is perhaps used in that usual sense.

<sup>5</sup> Where the teacher lives. He is not to go to the pupil's house.

<sup>6</sup> Because it is so sacred. According to Sāyaṇa, Jātūkarnya insists on one lecture only to one person at a time, and the same teacher to avoid *saṃpradāyavichēda*.

<sup>7</sup> This sentence must also belong to Jātūkarnya. This seems the proper way to interpret the *iti*, which, however, Sāyaṇa explains as *siyaprayuktanīṣedhasamāptyarthaḥ*, and so Max Müller takes it. For the idea, cf. Manu, VIII, 66, &c.

<sup>8</sup> I. e. lean on a *kuṭī* (or a wall, &c., Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra, I, 2, 6, 17), or rest with his hands on a stick (on the ground, Āpastamba, l. c., 17). The other renderings follow Sāyaṇa, who gives *ucchiṣṭādyaḥkramāṇa* for *nāvratyāṃ ākramya*; cf. Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XII, 8, 19. For *atvītaḥ*, cf. Manu, VIII, 23: *saṃvītaṅgaḥ*. For *nāpitena kārayitvā* he has *nakhanikṛntanādi*; cf. Sāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, VI, 1, 6, and for the syntax, Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 224 sq. He takes *nāktvā* as referring to the eyes. *Varnakenānūlipya* he refers to sandal or saffron being smeared on; for *varṇaka*, cf. Böhtlingk, *Dict.*, VI, 24. For *anapāśrita*, *ibid.*, I, 41. For these rules, cf. Āpastamba, I, 2, 6, 23-27.

<sup>9</sup> These translations follow Sāyaṇa and Max Müller. Though they no longer 'seem to be the earliest mention of actual writing in Sanskrit literature', in view of the discoveries of Bühler, *Indische Palaeographie*, and *Ind. Stud.*, III (1898); Hoernle, *J. A. S. B.*, LXIX, pt. i; Rhys Davids, *Buddhist India*, ch. VII and others, they are interesting. Writing on palm-leaves may be meant rather than on wood. The violent repugnance to writing shown here and elsewhere is certainly in favour of this view, accepted by Macdonell (*Sanskrit Literature*, p. 16) and Winternitz (*Gesch. der indisch. Litt.*, I, 29), that writing first came into use on the South Western Coast through commerce, and that MSS. are later. For a different but very improbable view, cf. R. Shamasastri, *Ind. Ant.*, 1906; *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, pp. 426, 427.

writing. 'He should not finish learning this in one day,' says Jātūkarnya. 'He should do so,' says Gālava. 'He should finish all before the sets of eighty tristichs, and resting<sup>10</sup> in another place learn the rest,' says Āgñiveśyāyana. Where he learns this, he should learn nothing else; but where he learns something else he may at will learn this there also. He who does not study this does<sup>11</sup> not become a *snātaka*; even though he study much else, yet if he study not this, he does not become a *snātaka*. Nor should he forget this; even though he forgets something else, he should not forget this. Assuredly<sup>12</sup> never should he forget this. If he forget not this, let him know that it is enough for himself.<sup>13</sup> Let him know that truly it is enough.<sup>14</sup> He who knows this should not communicate<sup>15</sup> nor dine nor amuse himself with one who knows this not.

Now<sup>16</sup> we shall set forth the rules of study. When the old water about

<sup>10</sup> *Samayamānaḥ* is taken as *samāpāya* by Sāyaṇa, which is possible. I follow Max Müller. On the passage as a whole, cf. Oldenberg, *Prolegomena*, p. 293. On the form Āgñiveśyāyana, cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1219. It occurs as a name of a grammarian in the Taittirīya Prātisākhya, XIV, 32. Āgñiveśya occurs in the Vaṃśas in Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, II, 6, 2, and IV, 6, 2, in both Kāṇva and Mādhyandina Śākhās (Max Müller, *S. B. E.*, XV, 118, n.; 186, n.). Jātūkarnya (the word is found in the *gaṇa*, *gargādī*) occurs in the same passages with Gālava. The spelling seems clearly Jātū°, though in Max Müller's translation the two forms Jātū° and Jātū° occur. Jātūkarnya occurs in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, VIII, 10, and frequently in the Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta and Gṛhya Sūtras (III, 10, 1), Kātyāyana's Śrauta Sūtra, the Vājasaneyi Prātisākhya, and in Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, XXVI, 5. Gālava is known to Nirukta, IV, 3; Bṛhadāraṇyaka, II, 6, 3; IV, 6, 3; Bṛhaddevatā, and Pāṇini as a grammarian; see Max Müller, *Ṛgveda Prātisākhya*, p. 6.

<sup>11</sup> 'Should not become' is Sāyaṇa's version. Literally it must be 'is not a (true) *snātaka*'. Cf. Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra, I, 2, 8, 27. The exact force of the optative is rather doubtful: it may be that it is the indefinite use, of which examples undoubtedly occur in Sanskrit (cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 283; also in III, 2, 1, n. 1, and Introd., p. 61), or it may be an opt. in protasis with the apod. in the indic. to denote the certainty of the result, though the rule of similarity of mood is usually strictly observed in the older language, see Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 581 f, who enforces his rule partly by alterations in the text of the Maitrāyaṇī Samhitā (see his review of v. Schroeder's ed., *P. A. O. S.*, Oct., 1887; *J. R. A. S.*, 1909, p. 153).

<sup>12</sup> Sāyaṇa says that this is read by some only. It is in all the MSS., but is an easy addition. Cf. n. 14. No here and above follows a negative sentence and is practically merely an emphatic negative as usual in classical Sanskrit, Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 240; *Sanskrit Syntax*, § 402, R. 1; cf. Caland, *Ueber das rit. Sūtra des Baudh.*, p. 51.

<sup>13</sup> Sāyaṇa renders *puruṣārthāya*, and Max Müller gives as possible 'for acquiring a knowledge of the self'. For the dat., cf. II, 4, 2. *Ātman*, however, is merely the ordinary reflexive, Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 127; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, pp. 208, 262.

<sup>14</sup> This again, Sāyaṇa says, is read only by some, and as it is one of those easy additions it cannot be accepted as genuine. Naturally a chapter of this kind lies open beyond others to such interpolations as this.

<sup>15</sup> Sāyaṇa renders *samuddiśet* as 'study with' (*tasya purato grantham etaṃ na paṭhet*). The sense is probably 'enter into discussion with'. *evanvid* and *anevanvid* here are clearly compounds; cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, II, i, 68.

<sup>16</sup> Then come general rules for all Vedic study, not for the Mahāvratā alone. These are found both



the roots of the trees has been dried up,<sup>17</sup> he should not study, nor in the forenoon,<sup>18</sup> when the shadows meet, nor in the afternoon, nor when a thick cloud has risen; and when rain<sup>19</sup> falls out of season he should stop his study of the Veda<sup>20</sup> for three nights, nor in this time<sup>21</sup> should he tell tales, nor even

in Gṛhya and Dharma Sūtras (Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XXX, xxxiv, xxxv); Khādīra Gṛhya Sūtra, II, 11; cf. Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 8; VI, 1; Hillebrandt, *Ritual-Litteratur*, p. 56 and ref.; Gobhila Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 3; Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra, I, 3, 9-11; Gautama Dharma Sūtra, XVI, with Bühler's notes.

<sup>17</sup> The time after the full moon of Pauṣa, i.e. January-February is meant, cf. Weber, *Die vedischen Nachrichten von den Naxatra*, II, 322 sq.; Oldenberg, *S. B. E.*, XXX, 77, n.; Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra, I, 3, 9, 2, with Bühler's note; Manu, IV, 95; Yājñavalkya, I, 142; 143. The four months after the full moon of Āśāḍha are forbidden in Śāṅkhāyana, VI, 2, 1. The term is five months, beginning in the middle of Śrāvaṇa, Gautama Dharma Sūtra, XVI, 1 sq.; of Prauṣṭhapada, Gobhila Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 3, 1; Khādīra Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 2, 16. Śrāvaṇa is also given by Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 5, 2; 3; Śāṅkhāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, IV, 5, 2; Pāra-skara Gṛhya Sūtra, II, 10, 2; Hiranyakeśi Gṛhya Sūtra, II, 18, 1. The tmesis *upa-nāpīte* is very unusual, but *upapurāṇe* would be almost equally strange, though not impossible. *Kakṣodake* is a curious expression, as explained by Sāyaṇa. The separation of prefix and verb is (see Caland, *Ueber das rit. Sūtra des Baudh.*, pp. 48, 49) rare in the late Sūtra style and is difficult to assume here, though this may be quoted from an older (? metrical) text. *Upapurāṇa* seems elsewhere unknown in the sense 'somewhat (?) old'. Nothing is indeed more characteristic of the Vedic Sanskrit than the separation of particle and verb. Holtzmann (*Grammatisches aus dem Mahābhārata*, p. 48) says that the only example \* in the Epic occurs in a pseudo-Vedic hymn to the A'vins, I, 3, 62: *devā adhi viṣve viśaktāḥ*. Even the Bṛhaddevatā has no certain case of such separation. On Jacobi's theories of the beginning of the year (*Festgruss an Roth*, pp. 68-74), see Whitney, *J. A. O. S.*, XVI, lxxxii sq.; Bühler, *Ind. Ant.*, XXIII, 238-249 (dates of the commencement of Vedic study at p. 249); Thibaut, *ibid.*, XXIV, 85-100; Oldenberg, *Z. D. M. G.*, I, 451 sq.

<sup>18</sup> When study is permissible (hardly 'at any time' as in Max Müller), he must not so study in the forenoon or afternoon, when shadows are meeting; i.e. he should begin at sunrise when the shadows first appear, and cease before sunset when they again disappear (Sāyaṇa).

<sup>19</sup> For the case of a cloud, cf. Āpastamba, I, 3, 11, 31. Rain out of season (*ibid.*, 27; Manu, III, 104, combines the two into a cloud out of the ordinary in the rains) is explained by Sāyaṇa as rain falling in months other than Śrāvaṇa and Bhādrapada, August and September, or according to the Smṛtikāras, under Nakṣatras other than the 13 from Ārdra to Jyēṣṭhā.

<sup>20</sup> The study of Vedāṅgas, like *vyākaraṇa*, is not prohibited (Sāyaṇa). He adds *ārdrādi-jyēṣṭhāntasya trayodaśanakaṣaṭra-parimitasya kālasya vṛṣṭikālatvam abhyupetya tato 'nyatra vṛṣṭau satyām akālavrṣṭinimittam trirātrādhyayanavarjanam ichanti*.

<sup>21</sup> *Asmin* is vague. Sāyaṇa gives either *adhiyamāne svādhyāye* or *mahāvratādhyayanakāle*. The rendering 'at that time' of Max Müller is perhaps intended to refer to the *trirātram*, since the translation continues 'not even during the night, nor should he glory in his knowledge', since *asya* seems to be taken with *rātrau*. *Trirātram*, of course, includes days, so that the rendering is quite possible, though probably the first of Sāyaṇa's alternatives is correct. For the acc., cf. Speijer, *Vedische und Sanskrit-Syntax*, § 28 and ref. The instr. is one of separation, *ibid.*, § 33; Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 283. The usual case is the abl., Speijer, § 52; Delbrück, *Altindische Syntax*, p. 446, who ignore this passage.

\* But cf. the warning as to Holtzmann's accuracy in Bühler, *Ind. Ant.*, XXIII, 146, and Winternitz's review there cited. In this case the fact seems substantially correct.

at night at this time be fain to set them forth.<sup>22</sup> 'This'<sup>23</sup> is the name of this great being. He who knows thus 'this' as the name of it, becomes *brahman*.

<sup>22</sup> The text reads: *nāsyā rātrau ca na ca kīrtayīṣet*. Sāyaṇa, followed by Max Müller, takes this as consisting of two sentences, (1) *nāsyā rātrau ca*, (2) *na ca kīrtayīṣet*. Sāyaṇa renders, (1) *kimcāsyā mahāvratasya pāṭhaṃ rātrau na kuryāt*, (2) *kimca mahāvratābhijño 'ham ity evaṃ janamadhye kīrtim api nechet*. Max Müller's version, which is much more probable, is cited above. But 'not even at night' would more properly be *na rātrau cana* than *na rātrau ca*, cf. III, 1, 3: *nātidyumne cana*. Further *kīrtayīṣet* is quite impossible. The form required is *cikīrtayīṣet*, and no easier error than *cana cikīrtayīṣet* being changed to *cana ca kīrtayīṣet* can well be conceived. Then the whole must mean, I think, 'nor even at night in this time (probably *adhīyamāne svādhyāye*) should one be fain to proclaim (tales).' The *adhyayana* takes place during the day (see above), and neither then nor even at night, when the *adhyayana* stops, is the telling of tales to be permitted. For the form *cikīrtayīṣet*, an opt. desid. from a denominative (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1056), see Whitney, § 1068. Such forms are very rare; hence the non-recognition of this case by the commentators. Cf. also Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, III, 30: *vāci kalpayiṣan*, where Aufrecht (p. 430) proposes to read *cikalpayiṣan* (presumably by haplography for *vāci cikalpayiṣan*); I, 24, 5: *ātulobhayiṣāt* (cf. Liebhich, *Pāṇini*, p. 32, n.); Āpastamba Śrauta Sūtra, XII, 24, 5: *bibhakṣayīṣet*; Kāṭhaka Saṃhitā, XVII, 3: *pīpāyayīṣet*; *Ind. Stud.*, IX, 264; Holtzmann, *Grammatisches aus dem Mahābhārata*, p. 46.

<sup>23</sup> Sāyaṇa renders, followed by Max Müller, 'This, the *kṛtsnādhyāyavākyaṃ mahāvratavākyaṃ vā*, thus learned (= *itī*), is the name of the *paramātman*.' He explains that the Veda produces *brahman* and so is identified with it, and its sacred character resulting from this power causes the long list of *niyamas* here given. This cannot be right. The word *tad* is the name of the *brahman*; see I, 3, 4, where this is most expressly stated.

The end of the section renders it probable that it may be accepted as coming from Śaunaka. Otherwise the passage would be suspect, since it contains passages whose genuineness was doubted even before Sāyaṇa, and the possibility of it all being an interpolation cannot be entirely excluded. The use of *brahman* is striking, especially in the pred., and confirms the view that *brahmā* is not to be found save on good grounds in any early texts. For Atharvaveda, IV, 35, 2, see Weber, *Ind. Stud.*, XVIII, 140; for Maitrāyaṇī Saṃhitā, II, 9, 1, see v. Schroeder, *Ind. Lit.*, p. 91, n. 1. Muir, *Texts*, V, 323, finds him in Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, XI, 5, 6, 9, &c., but needlessly. Hopkins, *Religion of India*, p. 195, and Oldenberg, *Buddha*, p. 30, n. 1, are vague. The *St. Petersburg Dict.*, V, 138, cites Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, II, 7, 17, 1, as the oldest passage, but Sāyaṇa's view may be wrong, and none of the passages in Macdonell, *Vedic Mythology*, p. 168, are necessarily so taken. He occurs, of course, in the Taittirīya Āranyaka, X, but that is not early, though its lateness has been needlessly exaggerated on insufficient grounds. Eggeling (cf. *S.B.E.*, XLIV, 525) finds him nowhere in the comparatively late Śatapatha, though he appears in the Bhṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad (cf. Deussen, *Phil. of the Upaniṣads*, pp. 172 sq.), and in the later Upaniṣads and in the earliest Buddhist texts, which, however, can only be doubtfully dated.



## APPENDIX

### ŚĀṆKHĀYANA ĀRANYAKA VII-XV.

THIS Appendix contains the text of Śāṅkhāyana Āranyaka, VII-XV, edited from the Berlin MS. Orient., fol. 630 (A)<sup>1</sup> and Bodleian MS. Sansk. e. 2<sup>2</sup> (B). The Bodleian MS., which is at least 200 years old, save for ff. 65 and 87 which were replaced in A.D. 1781, is extremely accurate on the whole, and the text which it presents is in most cases also supported by parallel readings in other Upaniṣads and Āranyakas. In many cases the old method of denoting the *e*, *ai*, *o*, *au* is retained, but not consistently, showing that the MS. belongs to the period of transition to the new style. Frequent errors are (1) the reduction of double consonant to single, e.g. *tare dviṣantam*, XII, 20; (2) the insertion of a needless *h*, e.g. *sapatnaḥkṣayaṇam*, XII, 19: this may be a mere graphical sign as apparently in the Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra<sup>3</sup>; (3) haplography, e.g. *pramiye tare(d)*, XII, 20; hence probably *bhaviṣyati* for *bhaviṣyafiti* in IX, 7; (4) the writing of *ī* for *i*, e.g. *maricir*, VIII, 7. Many, though not all, of these errors have been corrected in a later hand, or sometimes by the first hand in the margin. The most serious source of error is probably omission, see e.g. VIII, 2, n. 7; 4, n. 3. As usual *ch* is written for *cch* in all cases,<sup>4</sup> and *l* replaces *ḷ*; I have restored *cch* and *ḷ*. Further, as the text is attached to the Ṛgveda, I have treated two verbal prefixes as each separate and accented, as usual in the text of the Ṛgveda.<sup>5</sup> Both MSS. agree in several errors, e.g. the omission of *trayaṣya* and the reading *sicyet* (for *sicyeta*) in VIII, 2.

The following list gives the correspondence between the two texts of the Aitareya and the Śāṅkhāyana Āranyakas:—

#### AITAREYA ĀRANYAKA.

Śānti verses (pp. 75, 76).

III, 1, 1.

III, 1, 2.

—

#### ŚĀṆKHĀYANA ĀRANYAKA.

VII, 1.

VII, 2.

VII, 3.

VII, 4-7.

<sup>1</sup> See Weber, *Berlin Catal.*, II, 5; Keith, *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, p. 363, n. 2.

<sup>2</sup> Described in Winternitz and Keith's *Catalogue of the Sanskrit Manuscripts in the Bodleian Library*, pp. 59, 60. Purchased in 1886 for the Library through Dr. Thibaut.

<sup>3</sup> Knauer, *Mānava Gṛhya Sūtra*, pp. xxxii, xxxiii.

<sup>4</sup> See above, p. 10, n. 2; Macdonell, *J. R. A. S.*, 1907, p. 1105.

<sup>5</sup> Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 107.

## ĀITAREYA ĀRAṆYAKA.

- III, 1, 4.  
 III, 1, 3.  
 III, 1, 5.  
 III, 1, 6.  
 —  
 III, 1, 6.  
 —  
 (Cf. II, 6.)  
 —  
 III, 2, 1.  
 III, 2, 2.  
 III, 2, 3.  
 III, 2, 3; 4.  
 III, 2, 4.  
 III, 2, 4; 5.  
 III, 2, 5.  
 III, 2, 6.

## ŚĀṆKHĀYANA ĀRAṆYAKA.

- VII, 8; 9.  
 VII, 10.  
 VII, 11-13.  
 VII, 14-16.  
 VII, 17.  
 VII, 18; 19.  
 VII, 20.  
 VII, 21.  
 VII, 22.  
 VIII, 1.  
 VIII, 2.  
 VIII, 3; 4.  
 VIII, 5.  
 VIII, 6.  
 VIII, 7.  
 VIII, 8; 9.  
 VIII, 10; 11.

The verses in Adhyāya XII sometimes make nonsense, and could be corrected from the parallel texts. But all that can usefully be done is to edit what apparently was the text of the Āraṇyaka, recognizing that it already contained much that in the course of oral tradition had become corrupted. This is the principle on which Winternitz has edited the Mantrapāṭha,<sup>1</sup> and is the only sound method of procedure.

<sup>1</sup> See his Preface, pp. xv sq.

## ADHYĀYA VII.

*Om | ṛtaṃ vadiṣyāmi satyaṃ vadiṣyāmi | tan mām avatu tad vaktāram avatu avatu  
 mām avatu vaktāram | mayi bhargo mayi mahaḥ | vān me manasi pratiṣṭhitā mano  
 me vāci pratiṣṭhitam | āvir āvir mayy<sup>1</sup> ā bhūr vedasāmatsāriniḥ<sup>2</sup> | ṛtaṃ mā mā  
 himṣiḥ | anenādhītenāhorātrān samvasāmi | Agna ilā nama ilā nama ṛṣibhyo mantra-  
 kṛdbyo mantrapatibhyo<sup>3</sup> namo 'stu devebhyah | śivā naḥ śaṁtāmā bhava sumṛṭikā  
 Sarasvatī mā te vyoma<sup>4</sup> samdr̥ṣī | adabdhāṃ mana iṣiraṃ cakṣuḥ | sūryo jyotiṣāṃ  
 śreṣṭho dīkṣe mā mā himṣiḥ || 1 ||<sup>5</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> *mary* B; *maryo* Ānand. ed. of Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad.

<sup>2</sup> *tsāṇīr* A, Ānand.

<sup>3</sup> *mantrapati* B, after which occurs a break in the MS. which has been repaired in new paper on which is supplied *namo-devebhyah*. <sup>4</sup> *vyomā* B as corrected. A has *Sarasvatī*. <sup>5</sup> See

above, pp. 75, 76, and IX, 1, and for *ṛtam*, *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, p. 1124.



*Athātāḥ saṃhīlāyā upaniṣat \ prthivī pūrvarūpaṃ dyaur uttararūpaṃ vāyuh saṃhīleti Śauravīro Māṇḍūkeyaḥ \ ākāśaḥ saṃhīlety asya Māṇḍavyo vedayām cakre \ sa hāvīparihṛto<sup>1</sup> mene na me 'sya putreṇa samagād iti \ parihṛto mena ity Āgastyaḥ samānam hy atra pituḥ ca putrasya ca vāyur ākāśaḥ ca \ ity adhidaivatam \ athādhyātmam \ vāk pūrvarūpaṃ mana uttararūpaṃ prāṇaḥ saṃhīleti Śauravīro Māṇḍūkeyaḥ \ atha ha smāsyā putra āha Dīrghaḥ \ manasā vā agre kīrtayati tad vācā vadati tasmān mana eva pūrvarūpaṃ vāg uttararūpaṃ manovākprāṇas tv eva saṃhīleti \ sa eṣo 'śvarathaḥ praṣṭivāhano manovākprāṇasaṃhītaḥ svargaṃ lokaṃ gamayati \ sa ya evam etāṃ saṃhīlāṃ veda saṃdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokaṇa sarvam āyur eti \ iti nu Māṇḍūkeyānām || 2 ||*

<sup>1</sup> B as corrected has *hāpīparihṛto*, and *parihṛto*. A has *°hṛto* as a correction. Cf. Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 1.

*Atha<sup>1</sup> Śākalyasya \ prthivī pūrvarūpaṃ dyaur uttararūpaṃ vāyuh saṃhīlā vṛṣṭiḥ saṃdhīḥ Parjanyaḥ saṃdhātā \ tad utāpi yatrāṭlad balavad anudgrhṇan mahāmegho<sup>2</sup> vṛṣṭiṃ varṣati<sup>3</sup> dyāvāprthivīyau samadhātām \ ity adhidaivatam \ athādhyātmam \ puruṣo 'yaṃ sarvam āṇḍam dve bidale bhavatas tatredam eva pūrvarūpaṃ idam uttararūpaṃ \ tatrayā<sup>4</sup> antareṇākāśo yathāsau dyāvāprthivīyor antareṇākāśaḥ \ tasmin etasminn ākāśe prāṇa āyatlo bhavati yathāmuṣminn ākāśe vāyur āyatlo bhavati \ yathāmūni trīṇi jyotiṃsy evam imāni puruṣe trīṇi jyotiṃṣi \ yathāsau divy āditya evam idam śirasi cakṣuḥ \ yathāsāu antarikṣe vidyud evam idam ātmani hṛdayam \ yathāyam agniḥ prthivyām evam idam upasthe retāḥ \ evam iva ha sma sarvata ātmānam anuvīdhāyāhedam eva pūrvarūpaṃ idam uttararūpaṃ manovākprāṇas tv eva saṃhīleti \ sa eṣo 'śvarathaḥ praṣṭivāhano manovākprāṇasaṃhītaḥ svargaṃ lokaṃ gamayati \ sa ya evam etāṃ saṃhīlāṃ veda saṃdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokaṇa sarvam āyur eti || 3 ||<sup>5</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> This section is preceded in the MSS. by the following: *Śākalyasya prthivy agniḥ prthivī vāg anuvīdhārāḥ sa yadi nirbhujāḥ khalu vai vyaṇṇ madhyamo vāk prāṇena mātā jāyā prajā vāg bṛhadgatiḥ vāli sarvam uttamam || 3 ||*. These are of course the initial or most important words of the following sections in order. <sup>2</sup> *°meghā* A, B. <sup>3</sup> *varṣanti* A, B. <sup>4</sup> *yatha trāyam* B. <sup>5</sup> 4 A, B. See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 2, and 1 *ad fin.*

*Prthivī pūrvarūpaṃ dyaur uttararūpaṃ vāyuh saṃhīlā diśaḥ saṃdhīr ādityaḥ saṃdhāteti Viśvāmitraḥ \ ity adhidaivatam \ athādhyātmam \ vāk pūrvarūpaṃ mana uttararūpaṃ prāṇaḥ saṃhīlā śrotraṃ saṃdhīḥ cakṣuḥ saṃdhātā \ sa ya evam etāṃ saṃhīlāṃ veda saṃdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokaṇa sarvam āyur eti || 4 ||<sup>1</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> 5 A, B. Not in Aitareya Āraṇyaka.

*Agniḥ pūrvarūpaṃ candramā uttararūpaṃ vidyut saṃhīleti Sūryadattaḥ \ ity adhidaivatam \ athādhyātmam \ vāk pūrvarūpaṃ mana uttararūpaṃ satyaṃ saṃ-*

hitā \ sa ya evam etām saṁhitām veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarca-  
sena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti || 5 ||<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 6 A, B. Not in Aitareya Āranyaka.

Prthivī pūrvarūpaṁ dyaur uttararūpaṁ kālāḥ saṁhiteṭi Rādheyaḥ \ ity adhi-  
daivatam \ athādhyātmam \ vāk pūrvarūpaṁ mana uttararūpaṁ ātmā saṁhitā \  
sa ya evam etām saṁhitām veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarca-  
sena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti || 6 ||<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 7 A, B. Not in Aitareya Āranyaka.

Vāk pūrvarūpaṁ mana uttararūpaṁ vidyā saṁhiteṭi Pauṣkarasādīḥ \ sa ya  
evam etām saṁhitām veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarca-  
sena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti || 7 ||<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 8 A, B. Not in Aitareya Āranyaka.

Athāto 'nuvyāhārāḥ \ prāṇo vaṁśa iti vidyāt \ sa ya enaṁ prāṇam vaṁśam  
bruvan param upavadeḥ caknuvan kaścic cen manyeta prāṇam vaṁśam samadhāḥ  
prāṇam vaṁśam saṁdhitsitam<sup>1</sup> na śaknoṣīty āha<sup>2</sup> prāṇas tvā vaṁśo hāsyaty enaṁ  
brūyāt \ atha ced aśaknuvan<sup>3</sup> manyeta prāṇam vaṁśam samadhitsis tan nāśakaḥ  
saṁdhātum prāṇas tvā vaṁśo hāsyaty evainam brūyāt \ yathā tu<sup>4</sup> kathā ca bruvan  
vābruvan vā brūyād abhyāsam eva yat tat tathā syāt \ na tv evānyat kuśalād brāhma-  
ṇam brūyād \ atidyumna eva brāhmaṇam brūyāt \ nātidyumne cana<sup>5</sup> brāhmaṇam  
brūyān namo 'stu brāhmaṇebhya ita Śauravīro Māṇḍūkeyaḥ || 8 ||<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> dhitsitam B pr. m.; samadhitsitam B sec. m. <sup>2</sup> ātha B. <sup>3</sup> aśaknuvantam B sec. m.  
<sup>4</sup> nu (1) A, B. <sup>5</sup> na ca A, B. <sup>6</sup> 9 A, B. See Aitareya Āranyaka, III, 1, 4. Read perhaps samadhāṁ.

Sa yadi prāṇam vaṁśam bruvantaṁ param upavedeḥ caknuvantaṁ cen manyeta  
prāṇam<sup>1</sup> vaṁśam samadhitsitaṁ prāṇam vaṁśam saṁdhitsitam<sup>2</sup> na śaknoṣīty āha<sup>3</sup>  
prāṇas tvā vaṁśo hāsyaty enaṁ brūyāt \ atha ced aśaknuvantaṁ manyeta prāṇam  
vaṁśam samadhitsis taṁ nāśakaḥ saṁdhātum prāṇas tvā vaṁśo hāsyaty evainam  
brūyāt \ yathā tu kathā ca bruvantaṁ vābruvantaṁ vā brūyād abhyāsam eva yat  
tat tathā syāt \ na tv evānyat kuśalād brāhmaṇam brūyāt \ atidyumna eva brāhmaṇam  
brūyāt \ nātidyumne cana<sup>4</sup> brāhmaṇam brūyān namo 'stu<sup>5</sup> brāhmaṇebhya ita Śaura-  
vīro Māṇḍūkeyaḥ || 9 ||<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> prāṇa B. <sup>2</sup> samadhitsitam B pr. m.; situm B sec. m. <sup>3</sup> ātha B. <sup>4</sup> na ca A, B.  
<sup>5</sup> Add B sec. m. <sup>6</sup> 10 A, B. See Aitareya Āranyaka, III, 1, 4. The reading *para* for *param*  
would improve the sense, though no version of 9 and 10 is satisfactory. Cf. Aitareya Āranyaka,  
III, 1, 4, n. 5.

Athāto nirbhujapravādāḥ<sup>1</sup> \ prthivyāyatanam nirbhujam divāyatanam pratṛṇnam  
anarikṣāyatanam ubhayamanāreṇa \ sa ya enaṁ<sup>2</sup> nirbhujam bruvan param upavadeḥ  
prthivīm devatām āraḥ prthivī tvā devatā riṣyatīty enaṁ brūyāt \ atha yadi  
pratṛṇnam bruvan param upavadeḥ divam<sup>3</sup> devatām āro dyaus tvā devatā riṣyatīty



*enam brūyāt | atha yady ubhayamantareṇa bruvaṇ param upavaded antarikṣam devatām āro 'ntarikṣam tvā devatā riṣyati enam<sup>1</sup> brūyāt | yad hi saṃdhiṃ vivartayati<sup>2</sup> tan nirbhujasya rūpam | atha yac chuddhe akṣare abhivyāharati tat pratṛṇṇasyāgra u evobhayamantarenobhayam vyāptam bhavati<sup>3</sup> | annādyakāmo nirbhujam brūyāt svargakāmaḥ pratṛṇṇam ubhayakāma ubhayamantareṇa | sa ya enaṃ<sup>4</sup> nirbhujam bruvaṇ param upavaded acyoṣṭhā avarābhyām sthānābhyām ity enam brūyāt | atha yadi pratṛṇṇam bruvaṇ param upavaded acyoṣṭhā uttarābhyām sthānābhyām ity evainam brūyāt | yas tv evobhayamantareṇāha tasya nāsty apavādaḥ | yathā tu kathā ca bruvaṇ vābruvaṇ vā brūyād abhyāsam eva yat tat tathā syāt | na tv evānyat kuśalād brāhmaṇam brūyāt | atidyumna eva brāhmaṇam brūyāt | nātidyumne cana<sup>5</sup> brāhmaṇam brūyān namo 'stu brāhmaṇebhya iti Śauravīro Māṇḍūkeyaḥ || 10 ||<sup>6</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> nirbhujāḥ<sup>o</sup> A, B. <sup>2</sup> enaṃ (ṇi for assimilated n) B. <sup>3</sup> Add B sec. m. <sup>4</sup> evainam A, B pr. m.; enam B sec. m. <sup>5</sup> yanti tam B. <sup>6</sup> bhavati B pr. m. <sup>7</sup> na ca A, B. <sup>8</sup> 11 A, B. See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 3. In the latter part *bruvaṇtam* and *para* and *upavādaḥ* for *bruvaṇ*, *param*, and *apavādaḥ* seem essential, giving the reasonable sense: 'if one is rebuking one who says the *nirbhujā*, the one (the latter) should say, "Thou hast fallen from the two lower (*avara*) places." So in the case of the *pratṛṇṇa* the two upper places are referred to, but in the case of the *ubhayamantareṇa* rebuke is impossible, and no reply is suggested. It would really be more natural to put the words of the apodosis in the mouth of the rebuker, but besides the difficulty of *avara* and *uttara*, it is hardly possible that the section should give directions for cursing persons who recite.

*Atha khalv āhur nirbhujavaktrāḥ | pūrvam evākṣaram pūrvarūpam uttaram uttararūpam yakāravakārāv<sup>1</sup> antareṇa sā saṃhiteti | sa ya evam etāṃ saṃhitām veda saṃdhiyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti || 11 ||<sup>2</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> <sup>o</sup>kārām B pr. m. For the opposite case, cf. XIII, 1, n. 5. <sup>2</sup> 12 A, B. See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 5.

*Atha vai vyaṃ brūmo nirbhujavaktrāḥ sma iti ha smāha Hrasvo Māṇḍūkeyaḥ | pūrvam evākṣaram pūrvarūpam uttaram uttararūpam tad yāsau mātṛā pūrarūpottararūpe antareṇa yena saṃdhiṃ vivartayati yena mātṛāmātṛāṃ vibhajati yena svarāt<sup>1</sup> svaram vijñāpayati sā saṃhiteti | sa ya evam etāṃ saṃhitām veda saṃdhiyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti || 12 ||<sup>2</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> So A, B clearly. The Aitareya has *svarāstvaram*. <sup>2</sup> 13 A, B. See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 5.

*Atha ha smāsyā putra āha madhyamaḥ Prātiyodhīputro<sup>1</sup> Magadhavāsī | pūrvam evākṣaram pūrvarūpam uttaram uttararūpam tad yāsau mātṛā saṃdhivijñāpanī sāma tad bhavati sāmaivāham saṃhitām manya<sup>2</sup> iti | tad etad ṛcābhyudīlam | mā na stenebhyo ye abhi druhas pade | nirāmiṇo ripavo 'nneṣu jāgṛdhuḥ | ā devānām oḥate vi vrayo hṛdi | Bṛhaspate<sup>3</sup> na paraḥ sāmno vidur iti ||<sup>4</sup> sa ya evam etāṃ saṃhitām*

veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena sarvām  
āyur eti || 13 ||<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pratiyodhī° B pr. m.; Prātibodhī in Aitareya. <sup>2</sup> manyata B. <sup>3</sup> Bṛhaspade B.  
<sup>4</sup> =RV., II, 23, 16. <sup>5</sup> 14 A, B. See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 5.

Vāk prāṇena saṁdhīyate ita Kauṇḍharavyaḥ prāṇaḥ pavamānena pavamāno  
viśvair devair viśve devāḥ svargeṇa lokena svargo loko brahmaṇā saīśāvaraparā  
saṁhitā | sa ya evam elām avaraparām saṁhitām vedaivam haiva sa prajāyā  
paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena saṁdhīyate yathaiśāvaraparā  
saṁhitā | sa yadi pareṇa vopasyātaḥ svena vārthenābhivyāhared abhivyāharann eva  
vidyād divam saṁhitāgamad viduṣo devān abhivyāhārārtham evam bhaviṣyaty  
elenāvarapareṇa tatā haiva tad bhavati || 14 ||<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 15 A, B. See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 6.

Mātā pūrvarūpaṁ pitottararūpaṁ prajā saṁhileti Bhārgavaḥ | tad etad ekam  
eva<sup>1</sup> sarvam abhyanūktam | mātā ca hy evedaṁ pitā ca prajā ca sarvam | saīśāditi-  
saṁhitā<sup>2</sup> | aditir hy evedaṁ sarvam yad idam kiṁcid viśvabhūtam | tad etad ṛcābhyu-  
dītam | aditir dyaus aditir antarikṣam | aditir mātā sa pitā sa putrah | viśve devā  
aditih pañca janāḥ | aditir jātām aditir janitvam iti ||<sup>3</sup> sa ya evam elām saṁhitām  
veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena sarvām  
āyur eti || 15 ||<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> ?iva B pr. m. <sup>2</sup> °diti° B. <sup>3</sup> =RV., I, 89, 10. <sup>4</sup> 16 A, B. Cf. Aitareya  
Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 6.

Jāyā pūrvarūpaṁ patir ullararūpaṁ putrah saṁhitā relah saṁdhīḥ prajānanam  
saṁdhānam iti Sthavirah Śākalyah | saīśā Prajāpatisaṁhitā | sa ya evam elām  
saṁhitām veda prajāyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena  
sarvam āyur eti || 16 ||<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 17 A, B. See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 6; Vienna Or. Journ., XVIII, 274.

Prajā pūrvarūpaṁ śraddhottararūpaṁ karma saṁhitā satyam saṁdhānam iti  
Kāśyapaḥ | saīśā satyasamhitā<sup>1</sup> | tad āhur yat<sup>2</sup> satyasamdhā devā iti | sa ya evam  
elām saṁhitām veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa  
lokena sarvam āyur eti || 17 ||<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Satyam° B pr. m. The reference is not known to me. The epithet is in Atharvaveda, VI,  
6, 19; 20. <sup>2</sup> yat B. <sup>3</sup> 18 A, B. Not in Aitareya Āraṇyaka.

Vāk saṁhileti Pañcālacaṇḍaḥ | vācā vai vedāḥ<sup>1</sup> saṁdhīyante<sup>2</sup> vācā chandāmsi  
vācā mitrāṇi saṁdadhātī | tad yatraitad adhīte vā bhāṣate vā vāci tadā prāṇo bhavati  
vāk tadā prāṇam relhi<sup>3</sup> | atha yat svapiti vā tūṣṇīm vā bhavati prāṇe tadā vāg bhavati  
prāṇas tadā vācam relhi tāv anyo 'nyam relhaḥ | tad etad ṛcābhyudītam | ekah  
suparṇaḥ sa samudram ā viveṣa | sa idam viśvam bhuvanam vi caṣṭe | tam pākēna



*manasāpaśyam antilas | tam mātā relhi sa u relhi mātaram iti ||<sup>4</sup> vāg vai mātā prāṇo vatsaḥ | sa ya evam etām saṁhitām veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti || 18 ||<sup>5</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> devāḥ B pr. m.; vedāḥ marg. <sup>2</sup> °dhīyate B. <sup>3</sup> relhi throughout MSS., I have restored the *l* as in a R̥gvedic text. <sup>4</sup> RV., X, 114, 4. <sup>5</sup> 19 A, B. See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 6.

*Bṛhadrathantareṇa rūpeṇa saṁhitā saṁdhīyata iti Tārksyaḥ | vāg vai rathanta-rasya rūpaṁ prāṇo bṛhata ubhābhyām u khalu saṁhitā saṁdhīyate vācā ca prāṇena ca | etasyām ha smopaniṣadi saṁvatsaram gā rakṣayata<sup>1</sup> iti Tārksyaḥ | etasyām ha sma mātṛāyām saṁvatsaram gā rakṣayata<sup>2</sup> iti Tārksyaḥ | sa ya evam etām saṁhitām veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti || 19 ||<sup>3</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> rakṣata B pr. m.; rakṣayata B sec. m. <sup>2</sup> rakṣata B pr. m.; text marg. <sup>3</sup> 20 A, B. See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 1, 6.

*Gatiḥ pūrvarūpaṁ nivṛttir uttararūpaṁ sthitiḥ saṁhiteḥ Jāratkāra<sup>1</sup> Āta-bhāgaḥ | tasyām etasyām saṁhitāyām dhvamsayo nimeṣāḥ kṣāṭhāḥ kalāḥ kṣaṇā muhūrtā ahorātrā ardhamāsā māsā ṛlavaḥ saṁvatsarāḥ ca saṁdhīyante | saiṣā saṁhitāitān kālān saṁdadhāti kālō gatinivṛttisthitiḥ<sup>2</sup> saṁdadhāti gatinivṛttisthiti-bhir idam sarvam saṁdhīyate | ity adhidaivatam | athādhyātmam | bhūtam pūrva-rūpaṁ bhaviṣyad uttararūpaṁ bhavat saṁhiteḥ<sup>3</sup> kālasaṁdhīḥ | tad etad ṛcābhyu-ditam | mahat tan<sup>4</sup> nāma guhyam puruṣprk | yena bhūtam janayo yena bhavyam | pratnam jātam jyotir yad asya priyam | priyāḥ sam aviśanta pañceli ||<sup>5</sup> sa ya evam etām saṁhitām veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti || 20 ||<sup>6</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> °kāra B, but see Weber, *Catal.*, II, 6; Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, III, 2, 1. <sup>2</sup> °sthitiḥ B sec. m. <sup>3</sup> saṁhitāitā B pr. m. <sup>4</sup> tan B. <sup>5</sup> = RV., X, 55, 2. <sup>6</sup> 21 A, B. Not in Aitareya Āraṇyaka.

*Athāto Vāliśikhāyaner<sup>1</sup> vacaḥ | pañcemāni mahābhūtāni bhavanti ha smāha Vāliśikhāyaniḥ | pṛthivī vāyur ākāśa<sup>2</sup> āpo jyotiṣi tāni mīthaḥ saṁhitāni bhavanti | alha yāny anyāni kṣudrāni mahābhūtāni saṁdhīyante saiṣā sarvabhūtasamhitā | sa ya evam etām saṁhitām veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti || 21 ||<sup>3</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> Vāla° B, but *i* marg. <sup>2</sup> °tam A. <sup>3</sup> 22 A, B. Not in Aitareya Āraṇyaka, but see II, 6.

*Sarvā vāg brahmeti ha smāha Lauhikyaḥ<sup>1</sup> | ye tu keca<sup>2</sup> śabdā vācam eva tāṁ vidyāt | tad athaitad ṛṣir āha | aham Rudrebhir Vasubhiḥ carāmi<sup>3</sup> | saiṣā vāk sarvaśabdā bhavati<sup>4</sup> | sa ya evam etām saṁhitām veda saṁdhīyate prajāyā paśubhir yaśasā brahmavarcasena svargeṇa lokena sarvam āyur eti | yathā caitad*

brahma kāmārūpi<sup>5</sup> kāmācārī bhavaty evaṃ haiva sa sarveṣu bhūteṣu kāmārūpi  
kāmācārī bhavati ya evaṃ veda ya evaṃ veda || 22 ||<sup>6</sup>

|| Ity Āranyake saptamo 'dhyāyaḥ ||

<sup>1</sup> So A, B sec. m.; laukikyaḥ pr. m., but cf. Weber, *Catal.*, II, 6. <sup>2</sup> kena ca B marg.  
<sup>3</sup> = RV., X, 125, 1. <sup>4</sup> ūti B. <sup>5</sup> rūpi A, corr. in B. But the masc. of B may be a  
constructio ad sensum. <sup>6</sup> 23 A, B. Not in Aitareya Āranyaka.

### ADHYĀYA VIII.

Om | prāṇo vāmśa iti ha smāha Sthaviraḥ Śākalyaḥ | tad yathā śālāvamśe  
sarve 'nye vāmśāḥ samāhitāḥ syur evaṃ evāitasmīn prāṇe sarva ātmā samāhitāḥ |  
tasyaitasyātmanaḥ prāṇa ūśmarūpam asthīni sparśarūpam majjānaḥ<sup>1</sup> svararūpam  
māmsam lohitaṃ ity etac caturtham akṣararūpam iti | trayam tv eva na etat  
proktam iti ha smāha Hrasvo Māṇḍūkeyaḥ | tasyaitasya trayasya triṇīlaḥ<sup>2</sup> śaṣṭi-  
śatāni bhavanti samdhinām triṇīlaḥ<sup>3</sup> tāni saplavimśatiśatāni bhavanti saplavim-  
śatiśatāni samvatsarasyāhorātrāṇām tat samvatsarasyāhorātrāṇy āpnoti | sa eṣa  
samvatsarasammanāś cakṣurmayāḥ śrotramayaś chandomayo manomayo vāṇmaya  
ātmā | sa ya evaṃ etam samvatsarasammanāś cakṣurmayāḥ śrotramayaś chando-  
mayam manomayaṃ vāṇmayam<sup>4</sup> ātmānam veda samvatsarasya sāyujyam salokatām  
sarūpatām sabhākṣatām ānule putrī paśumān bhavati sarvam āyur eṣīty asyā-  
rūṇikeyo vedayām cakre || 1 ||<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> h om. B. <sup>2</sup> triṇīla B. <sup>3</sup> vāṇmaya B, corrected into °mayam. <sup>4</sup> See  
Aitareya Āranyaka, III, 2, 1.

Atha Kauṇṭharavyaḥ | triṇī śaṣṭiśatāny akṣarāṇām triṇī śaṣṭiśatāny ūśmāṇām<sup>1</sup>  
triṇī śaṣṭiśatāni samdhinām | yāny akṣarāṇy avocāmāhāni tāni yān<sup>2</sup> ūśmaṇo rātrīyaḥ<sup>3</sup>  
tā<sup>4</sup> yān samdhin avocāmāhorātrāṇām te samdhayaḥ | ity adhidaivatam | athā-  
dhyātmam | yāny akṣarāṇy adhidaivatam avocāmāsthīni tāny adhyātmam | yān<sup>5</sup>  
ūśmaṇo 'dhidaivatam avocāma majjānas te 'dhyātmam | eṣa u ha vai sampratiprāṇo  
yan majjaitad reto na vā ṛte<sup>6</sup> prāṇād relasāḥ siddhir asti yad vā ṛte<sup>6</sup> prāṇād relasāḥ  
sicyet tat pūyen na sambhavel | yān samdhin adhidaivatam avocāma parvāṇi tāny  
adhyātmam | tasyaitasyāsthinām<sup>7</sup> majjānam parvaṇām iti pañcelas catvāriṃśacchatāni  
bhavanti samdhinām pañcelas tad aṣṭisahasraṃ bhavaty aṣṭisahasraṃ vārkalino<sup>8</sup>  
bṛhatir ahar ahani sampādāyanti | sa eṣo 'haṣṣammanāś cakṣurmayāḥ śrotramayaś  
chandomayo manomayo vāṇmaya ātmā | sa ya evaṃ etad ahaṣṣammanāś cakṣur-  
mayā śrotramayaṃ<sup>9</sup> chandomayaṃ manomayaṃ vāṇmayam ātmānam vedāhnām sāyujyam  
salokatām sarūpatām sabhākṣatām ānule putrī paśumān bhavati sarvam āyur eli || 2 ||<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> ūśmāṇām B pr. m. <sup>2</sup> yāny ūśmaṇo B pr. m. <sup>3</sup> rātrīya B corr. <sup>4</sup> tān B pr. m.  
<sup>5</sup> yāny uṣ B pr. m. <sup>6</sup> ṛteḥ B. <sup>7</sup> Read probably tasyaitasya[trayasya]-āsthinām &c. as in  
Aitareya Āranyaka, III, 2, 2. <sup>8</sup> vārkalino B pr. m. corr. to bārkalino, which is clearly =  
A's vārkalino for vā(i)arkalino, as in Aitareya Āranyaka, III, 2, 2. Weber, *Catal.*, II, 6, takes it  
as a proper name. The form is unique. <sup>9</sup> Om. B pr. m. <sup>10</sup> See Aitareya Āranyaka, III, 2, 2.



*Catvāraḥ puruṣā iti Vātsyah* \ śarīrapuruṣaś chandopuruṣo vedapuruṣo mahā-puruṣa iti \ śarīrapuruṣa iti yam avocāma ya evāyaṁ daihika ātmā \ tasyaitasya yo 'yam aśarīraḥ prajñātmā<sup>1</sup> sa rasaḥ \ chandaḥpuruṣa iti yam avocāma yena vedān veda Rgvedam Yajurvedam Sāmavedam iti \ tasyaitasya brahma rasas tasmād brahmiṣṭhaṁ brahmāṇam ṛtvijam kurvīta yo yajñasyolbaṇam<sup>2</sup> vidyāt \ mahāpuruṣa iti yam avocāma samvatsara eva \ tasyaitasyāsāv<sup>3</sup> ādītyo rasaḥ \ sa yaś cāyam aśarīraḥ prajñātmā yaś cāsāv ādītya ekam etad iti vidyāt \ tad etad ṛcābhyudītam || 3 ||<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> aśarīraprajñātmā B.  
Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 3.

<sup>2</sup> °odbalam (?) B pr. m.

<sup>3</sup> asy om. B.

<sup>4</sup> See Aitareya

*Citraṁ devānām ud agād anīkam* \ cakṣur Mitrasya Varuṇasyāgneḥ \ āprā dyāvāprthivī antarikṣam \ sūrya ātmā jagatas tasthuṣaś ceti ||<sup>1</sup> etām evānuvidhaṁ saṁhitāṁ saṁdhīyamānāṁ manya<sup>2</sup> iti ha smāha Vātsyah \ etam u haiva bahvṛcā mahad<sup>3</sup>ukthe mīmāṁsata etam agnāv adhvaryava etam mahāvrate chandogā etam asyām etam antarikṣa etam divy etam agnāv etam vāyāv etam candramasy etam nakṣatreṣv etam apsv etam oṣadhīṣv etam sarveṣu bhūteṣv etam akṣareṣv eva<sup>4</sup> brahmety upāstate \ tad etad ṛcābhyudītam || 4 ||<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> = RV., I, 115, 1. <sup>2</sup> manyata A, B. <sup>3</sup> maha only B. The *dukthe* are supplied from A, and Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 3, and are added in B in marg. <sup>4</sup> etam B sec. m.  
<sup>5</sup> See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 3.

*Ud vayaṁ tamasas pari* \ jyotiṣ paśyanta uttaram \ devaṁ devatrā sūryam \ aganma jyotir uttamam iti ||<sup>1</sup> sa eṣo 'kṣarasamānāś cakṣurmayah śrotramayaś chandomayo manomayo vāñmāya ātmā \ sa ya evam etam akṣarasamānāṁ cakṣurmayam<sup>2</sup> śrotramayaṁ chandomayaṁ manomayaṁ vāñmāyam ātmānaṁ parasmai śamsati dugdhadohā<sup>3</sup> asya vedā bhavanti abhāgo vāci bhavaty abhāgo 'nūkte<sup>4</sup> \ tad etad ṛcābhyudītam || 5 ||<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> = RV., I, 50, 10. <sup>2</sup> bis B pr. m. <sup>3</sup> dugdhā° B. <sup>4</sup> nūkte B pr. m. ; nāke A, B sec. m. 'nūkte must be right. B has °bhogo. <sup>5</sup> See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 3; 4.

*Yas tityāja sacividaṁ sakhāyam* \ na tasya vācy api bhāgo asti \ yad im śṛṇoty alakaṁ śṛṇoti<sup>1</sup> \ na hi praveda sukṛtasya panthām iti ||<sup>2</sup> nāsyānūkte vāco bhāgo asity eva tad āha \ tan na<sup>3</sup> parasmā etad ahaḥ śaṁsen nāgniṁ cinuyān na mahāvratena stūyān naitad ātmano 'pi hiyā<sup>4</sup> iti \ sa yaś cāyam aśarīraḥ prajñātmā yaś cāsāv ādītya ekam etad ity avocāma tau yatra vipradṛśyete || 6 ||<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> śṛṇomi B.  
Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 4.

<sup>2</sup> = RV., X, 71, 6.

<sup>3</sup> naḥ B.

<sup>4</sup> hiyā B.

<sup>5</sup> See Aitareya

*Candramā ivādītyo drśyate na raśmayah prādurbhavanti lohiniḥ dyaur bhavati yathā mañjiṣṭhā vyastah pāyur bhavati saṁpareto 'syātmā na ciram iva jīviṣyati<sup>1</sup> vidyāt \ sa yat karaṇīyaṁ manyeta tat kuryāt \ athāpy ādarṣe vodake vā jihmaśirasam*

vāsirasam vātmānam paśyen na vā paśyet<sup>2</sup> tad apy evam ēva vidyāt | athāpi chidrā  
chāyā bhavati na vā bhavati tad apy evam eva vidyāt | athāpi chidra ivādityo  
rathanābhīr ivākhyāyeta<sup>3</sup> tad apy evam eva vidyāt | athāpi nila ivāgnir drśyeta<sup>4</sup>  
yathā mayūragrīvā mahāmeghe vā marīcīr iva paśyed anabhre vā vidyutam paśyet  
abhra enām na paśyet tad apy evam eva vidyāt | athāpy apidhāyākṣiṇī upekṣeta  
yatraitad varāṣakārīva na paśyet tad apy evam eva vidyāt | athāpy<sup>6</sup> apidhāya  
karṇā upāsita ya eṣo 'gner iva jvalataḥ śabdo rathasyevopabdis tam na<sup>7</sup> yadā  
śṛṇuyāt tad apy evam eva vidyāt | athāpi viparyaste kaninike drśyete dvijihve<sup>8</sup> vā  
na vā drśyete tad apy evam eva vidyāt | sa yo 'to 'śruto 'mato 'vijñāto 'drṣṭo 'nādiṣṭo  
'ghuṣṭaḥ śrotā mantā vijñātā draṣṭādeṣṭā ghoṣṭā sarveṣāṃ bhūlūnām āntara<sup>9</sup> puruṣaḥ  
sa ma ātmeti vidyāt | sa ukṛāmann evaitam aśarīram prajñātmānam abhisampadyate  
vijahāṣītaram daihikam | saiṣā sarvasyai vāca upaniṣat sarvā haivemāḥ sarvasyai  
vāca upaniṣada imam tv evam<sup>10</sup> ācakṣate || 7 ||<sup>11</sup>

<sup>1</sup> jivisyati B. <sup>2</sup> paśyetad B. <sup>3</sup> khyāyeta B pr. m.; text sec. m., A; iva B. <sup>4</sup> drśyate B.  
<sup>5</sup> iva B clearly; cf. XI, 3, n. 2. <sup>6</sup> Here in the MS. a new page, f. 65, has taken the place  
of the original leaf of the MS. It is, however, in an old hand. <sup>7</sup> tatra B, but na is  
implied in the abbreviated version of XI, 3, below, and inserted in Aitareya Āranyaka, III,  
2, 4. <sup>8</sup> 'jihve A. <sup>9</sup> 'raḥ A. <sup>10</sup> ity add A. <sup>11</sup> Aitareya Āranyaka, III, 2, 4; 5.

Prthivyā rūpaṃ sparśā antarikṣasyoṣmāṇo divaḥ svarāḥ | Agne rūpaṃ sparśā  
Vāyor ūsmāṇa Ādityasya svarāḥ | Rgvedasya rūpaṃ sparśā Yajurvedasyoṣmāṇaḥ  
Sāmavedasya svarāḥ | rathantarasya rūpaṃ sparśā Vāmadevyasya<sup>1</sup> oṣmāṇo brhataḥ  
svarāḥ | prāṇasya rūpaṃ sparśā apānasyoṣmāṇo vyānasya svarāḥ | prāṇasya  
rūpaṃ sparśā apānasyoṣmāṇo manasaḥ svarāḥ | prāṇasya rūpaṃ sparśā apānasyo  
ṣmāṇa udānasya svarāḥ svarā iti Punardattaḥ | eṣa u haiva sarvām vācam  
veda ya evaṃ veda || 8 ||<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'deva° B.

<sup>2</sup> See Aitareya Āranyaka, III, 2, 5.

Attha khalv iyaṃ daivī vīṇā bhavati tada' nuktir asau mānuṣī vīṇā bhavati |  
tad yathēyaṃ śastravasi tardmavasi bhavaty evam evāsau śastravasi tardmavasi  
bhavati | tad yathāsyāḥ śira evam amuṣyāḥ śiraḥ | tad yathāsyai vāmśa evam  
amuṣyā daṇḍaḥ | tad yathāsyā udaram evam amuṣyā ambhaṇam | tad yathāsyai  
mukhanāsike akṣiṇī ity<sup>2</sup> evam amuṣyāś chidrāṇi | tad yathāsyā aṅgulinigrahā  
upastaraṇānity evam amuṣyāḥ parvāṇi<sup>3</sup> | tad yathāsyā aṅgulaḥ evam amuṣyāś  
tantrayaḥ | tad yathāsyai jihvaivam amuṣyā vādanam | tad yathāsyāḥ svarā evam  
amuṣyāḥ svarāḥ | tad yathā haiveyaṃ romaṣena carmaṇāpīhilā bhavaty evam  
evāsau romaṣeṇa carmaṇāpīhilā bhavati | romaṣeṇa ha sma carmaṇā purā vīṇā  
apidadhati | saiṣā daivī vīṇā bhavati | sa ya evam etāṃ daivāṃ vīṇāṃ veda  
śrutavadanātamo<sup>4</sup> bhavati bhūmiprāśya<sup>5</sup> kīrtir bhavati<sup>6</sup> suśrūṣante<sup>7</sup> hāsyā parṣatsu



*bhāṣyamāṇasyedam astu yad ayam ihate yatrāryā vāg vadati<sup>2</sup> vidur enam  
tatra ॥ 9 ॥<sup>2</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> From f. 66 on the old hand resumes.

<sup>2</sup> *akṣiṇīty* B sec. m.

<sup>3</sup> *sarvāṇi* A.

<sup>4</sup> *°vadanantamo* B. <sup>5</sup> *bhūmiṇi*° A, B. <sup>6</sup> *bhati* B pr. m. <sup>7</sup> *śutrujante* B. <sup>8</sup> *vadanti* B. *vācam* may be read, but see Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, III, 2, 3, 15. <sup>9</sup> See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 5.

*Athātas Tāṇḍavindasya<sup>1</sup> vacaḥ | tad yatheyam akuśalena vādayitrā vīṇā-  
rabdhā na kṛtsnam vīṇārthaṃ sādhayaty evam evākuśalena vaktrā vāg ārabdhā  
na kṛtsnam vāgarthaṃ sādhayati | tad yathā haiveyam kuśalena vādayitrā vīṇā-  
rabdhā kṛtsnam vīṇārthaṃ sādhayaty evam eva kuśalena vaktrā vāg ārabdhā kṛtsnam  
vāgarthaṃ sādhayati | tasyai vā etasyai vīṇāyāi yā tviṣiḥ sā saṃhiteti Kātyāyaniputro  
Jātūkarnyaḥ | atha ha smaitat Kṛtsnahārīto<sup>2</sup> brāhmaṇam evodāharati ॥ 10 ॥<sup>3</sup>*

<sup>1</sup> *°viṇḍavasya* B pr. m.

<sup>2</sup> So A, B, and Weber, *Catal.*, II, 6. It is very probably an

error for *Kṛṣṇa*°, Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 6.

<sup>3</sup> See Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 6.

*Prajāpatiḥ prajāḥ sṛṣṭvā vyasraṃsata sa chandobhir ātmānaṃ samadadhat<sup>1</sup> |  
tad yac chandobhir ātmānaṃ samadadhat<sup>1</sup> tasmāt saṃhitā | tasyai vā etasyai  
saṃhitāyāi ṇakāro balaṃ ṣakāraḥ prāṇa ātmā saṃhitā | yaiṣā<sup>2</sup> kṣudramiṣṭrā vikṛtis  
tāni nakhāni romāni vyañjanānīti | sa yo 'tra vicikīṣet saṇakāram eva brūyād ṛte  
ṇakāram iti saṇakāram eva brūyāt | evam eva yo 'tra vicikīṣet saṣakāram eva brūyād ṛte  
ṣakāram<sup>3</sup> iti saṣakāram eva brūyāt | tau vā elau ṇakāraṣakārau vidvān anusam-  
hīlam ṛco 'dhīyātītyuṣyam iti vidyāt | atha vāg itihāsapurāṇam<sup>4</sup>  
yac cānyat kiṃcid brāhmī kṛtyevādhīyāta tad apy evam eva vidyāt | te yad vāyam  
anusaṃhīlam ṛco dhīmahe yac ca Māṇḍukeyīyam adhyāyam prabrūmas tena no  
ṇakāraṣakārā upāptāu iti ha smāha Hrasvo Māṇḍukeyaḥ | atha yad vāyam anu-  
saṃhīlam ṛco 'dhīmahe yac ca svādhyāyam adhīmahe tena no ṇakāraṣakārā upāptāu  
iti ha smāha Sthaviraḥ Śākalyaḥ | etad<sup>5</sup> ha sma vai tad vidvāmsa āhuḥ Kāvaṣeyāḥ<sup>6</sup>  
kimarthā vāyam yakṣyāmahe<sup>7</sup> kimarthā vāyam adhyeṣyāmahe vāci hi prāṇam  
juhumaḥ prāṇe vācam yo hy eva prabhavaḥ sa evāpyaya iti | tā etāḥ saṃhitā  
nānantevāsine brūyān nāsaṃvatsaravāsine<sup>8</sup> nābrahmacāriṇe nāvedavide nāpavaktra  
ity ācāryā ity ācāryāḥ ॥ 11 ॥<sup>9</sup>*

॥ Ity Āraṇyake 'ṣtamo 'dhyāyaḥ ॥

<sup>1</sup> So A, B. <sup>2</sup> *athaiṣā* A. <sup>3</sup> *ṇakāram* A, B. <sup>4</sup> *itihāsa*° B. Both the MSS. have  
*brahmī*. Read perhaps *brahmī kṣatry evādhīyāta*. <sup>5</sup> *ta* add B sec. m. <sup>6</sup> *°kāvaṣeyāḥ* B sec. m.  
<sup>7</sup> *yakṣyāmahe* B pr. m., and for *apyaḥ* below, *avyayaḥ*. <sup>8</sup> *vā* add B pr. m. <sup>9</sup> See Aitareya  
Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 6.

#### ADHYĀYA IX.

*Om | tat Savitur vṛṇīmahe | vāyam devasya bhojanam | śreṣṭhaṃ sarvadhātamaṃ |  
turaṃ bhagasya dhīmahi ॥*

*tat Savitur vareṇyam | bhargo devasya dhīmahi |*

*dhiyo<sup>1</sup> yo naḥ pracodayāt ॥*

adabdhām mana iṣīram cakṣuḥ | sūryo jyotiṣām śreṣṭho dikṣe mā mā him-  
sīh || 1 ||<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> dhīyo B; see RV., V, 82, 1; III, 62, 10.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. VII, 1.

Yo ha vai jyeṣṭhām ca śreṣṭhām ca veda jyeṣṭhaś ca ha vai śreṣṭhaś ca svānām  
bhavati | prāṇo vai jyeṣṭhaś ca śreṣṭhaś ca | yo ha vai vasiṣṭhām veda vasiṣṭho ha svānām  
bhavati vāg vai vasiṣṭhā | yo ha vai pratiṣṭhām veda prati ha tiṣṭhaty asmiṃś ca<sup>1</sup>  
loke 'muṣmimś ca<sup>2</sup> cakṣur ha pratiṣṭhā | yo ha vai sampadam veda sam hāsmāi kāmāḥ  
sampadyante śrotam ha vā u sampat | yo ha vā āyatanam vedāyatano ha svānām  
bhavati mano vā āyatanam | atha hemā devatāḥ Prajāpatiṃ pitarām etyābruvan  
ko vai naḥ<sup>3</sup> śreṣṭha iti | sa hovāca Prajāpatir yasmin va utkrānte śarīram pāpiṣṭham  
iva manyeta sa vai śreṣṭha iti || 2 ||<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> pratiṣṭha and asmiṃ B. <sup>2</sup> ca add B sec. m. <sup>3</sup> na B. <sup>4</sup> I have kept this  
enumeration though 1 (like VII, 1) is merely a Śānti, as it is followed in the MS. See Chāndogya  
Upaniṣad, V, 1, 1-7, which has a parallel version with the better reading *prati ha tiṣṭhati*.

Sā ha vāg uccakrāma | yathā mūkā avadantaḥ prāṇantaḥ prāṇena paśyantaś  
cakṣuṣā śṛṇvantaḥ śrotreṇa dhyāyanto manasaivam iti || 3 ||

Cakṣur hoccakrāma yathāndhā apaśyantaḥ prāṇantaḥ prāṇena vadanto vācā  
śṛṇvantaḥ śrotreṇa dhyāyanto manasaivam iti || 4 ||

Śrotam hoccakrāma | yathā badhirā aśṛṇvantaḥ prāṇantaḥ prāṇena vadanto  
vācā paśyantaḥ cakṣuṣā dhāyanto manasaivam iti || 5 ||

Mano hoccakrāma | yathā bālā amanasāḥ prāṇantaḥ prāṇena vadantaḥ vācā  
paśyantaś cakṣuṣā śṛṇvantaḥ śrotreṇaivam iti || 6 ||

Prāṇo hoccakrāma | tatas tad yatheha saindhavaḥ suhayaḥ paḍbīśaśāṅkūn  
samkhidat evam asau prāṇān samakhidat<sup>1</sup> | te ha sametyocur<sup>2</sup> bhagavan molkramir  
iti | sa hovāca prāṇaḥ kim ma<sup>3</sup> annam bhaviṣyati | yat kimcāśvabhya ivāśaku-  
nibhya iti | kim me vāso bhaviṣyati āpa iti hocuḥ | tasmād vā ayam aśiṣyan<sup>4</sup>  
purastāc copariṣṭāc cādbhiḥ paridadhāti | lambhuko<sup>5</sup> hāsyā vāso bhavaty anagno hi  
bhavati | tad ha smaitat Satyakāmo<sup>6</sup> Jābālo Gośruta<sup>7</sup> vaiyāghrapadyāyoktvavāca |  
apy evam śuśkāsyā sthāṇoḥ prabrūyāj jayerann asya śākhāḥ<sup>8</sup> praroheyuḥ palāśanīti |  
vanaspate śatavalśo viroheti dyām mā leṣīr antarikṣam mā mā himsīr iti ha Yājña-  
valkyah<sup>9</sup> || 7 ||

<sup>1</sup> t om. B sec. m. Above it has sama°. <sup>2</sup> ūcus B. <sup>3</sup> kima and no iti B.  
<sup>4</sup> aśiṣya B, and *pari dadhati*, as in Chāndogya Upaniṣad, V, 2, 2. <sup>5</sup> lambhuko B pr. m.;  
lambhuko B sec. m.; *anagnau* B. For a similar error (*ai* for *e*), cf. IX, 8, n. 4; X, 3, n. 1.  
These are due to the older mode of denoting the diphthongs. <sup>6</sup> va (?) add B. <sup>7</sup> In  
Chāndogya Upaniṣad, V, 2, 1 sq., which is parallel to this passage, there is *Gośrutaye*, which  
may well be read here. <sup>8</sup> śāśichāśāḥ B pr. m.; śākhāḥ B sec. m. <sup>9</sup> See Vājasaneyi  
Samhitā (which is here cited in terms), V, 43: where for *leṣīr* is *lekhīr*. *t* and *kh* interchange  
passim in MS. and I prefer *leṣīr* (√*liṣ* = √*riṣ*). Also *mā* is only once used in *antarikṣam*, &c.  
Probably it is here a dittograph.



*Ata yadi mahaj<sup>1</sup> jigamišet trirūtram dikṣitvā<sup>2</sup> māvāsya yām sarvauśadasya maniham dadhimadhubhyām upamanthyāgnim upasamādhāya parisamuhya paristīrya paryukṣya dakṣiṇam jānu ācyottarato gneḥ kamse maniham kṛtvā hutvā homān manthe sampātām ānayet | jyeṣṭhāya śreṣṭhāya svāhety agnau hutvā manthe<sup>3</sup> sampātām ānayet | pratiṣṭhāyai svāhety agnau hutvā manthe sampātām ānayet | sampade svāhety agnau hutvā manthe sampātām ānayet | tat Savitur varenyam iti pacchah prāśya tat Savitur vṛṇimaha iti paccha ācāmati mahāvyaḥṛtibhiḥ caturtham nirṇijya<sup>4</sup> kāmasyam carmaṇi vā sthaṇḍile vā samviśati | sa yadi striyam paśyēt samṛddham karmeti vidyāt samṛddham karmeti vidyāt || 8 ||*

|| Ity Aranyake navamo 'dhyāyaḥ ||

<sup>1</sup> yadi mahamišet B pr. m., text marg. <sup>2</sup> dikṣitvā B. <sup>3</sup> mantham B. A has jyaishṭhyāya śraishṭhyāya. <sup>4</sup> nirṇaijya B, possibly an error (cf. XI, 3, n. 1) for nirṇejya, an irregular strong gerund (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 992 b). The parallel, Chāndogya, V, 2, 8, has nirṇijya. The words mahāvyaḥṛtibhiḥ caturtham (°im B) no doubt mean 'accompanying the fourth act with the three words bhūr bhuvā svar', as would be needed in the case of the first RV. verse, which has only three Pādas.

#### ADHYĀYA X.

*Om | athāto 'dhyātmikam āntaram agnihotram ity ācakṣate | etā ha vai devatāḥ puruṣa eva pratiṣṭhitā agnir vāci vāyuh prāṇa ādityaś cakṣuḥ<sup>1</sup> candramā manasi diśaḥ śrotā āpo relasi | etāsu hai vai sarvāsu hutam bhavati ya evaṁ vidvān aśnāti ca pibati cāśayati ca pāyayati ca | so 'śnāti sa pibati sa trpyati sa tarpayati || 1 ||*

<sup>1</sup> cakṣuḥ B.

*Sa trpto vācam tarpayati vāk trptāgnim tarpayaty agnis trptaḥ pṛthivīm tarpayati pṛthivī trptā yat kimcid pṛthivyāpihitam | bhavad bhaviṣyad bhūtam tat sarvam tarpayati ya evaṁ vidvān aśnāti ca pibati cāśayati ca pāyayati ca | so 'śnāti sa pibati sa trpyati sa tarpayati || 2 ||*

*Sa trptaḥ prāṇam tarpayati prāṇas trpto vāyuh tarpayati vāyus trpta ākāśam tarpayaty ākāśas trpto yat kimcūkāśenāpihitam | bhavad bhaviṣyad bhūtam tat sarvam tarpayati ya evaṁ vidvān aśnāti ca pibati cāśayati ca pāyayati ca | so 'śnāti sa pibati sa trpyati sa tarpayati || 3 ||*

*Sa trptaś cakṣus tarpayati cakṣus trptam ādityam tarpayaty ādityas trpto divam tarpayati dyaus trptā yat kimcid divyāpihitam | bhavad bhaviṣyad bhūtam tat sarvam tarpayati ya evaṁ vidvān aśnāti ca pibati cāśayati ca pāyayati ca | so 'śnāti sa pibati sa trpyati sa tarpayati || 4 ||*

*Sa trpto manas tarpayati manas trptam candramasam tarpayati candramās trpto nakṣatrāṇi tarpayati nakṣatrāṇi trptāni māsāms tarpayanti māsās trptā ardhmāsāms tarpayanty ardhmāsās trptā ahorātre tarpayanty ahorātre trpte ṛtūms*

*tarpayata*<sup>1</sup> *ṛtvas tṛplāḥ samvatsaram tarpayanti samvatsaras tṛpto yat kimcid samvatsarenāpihilam* | *bhavad bhaviṣyad bhūtam tat sarvaṃ tarpayati ya evaṃ vidvān aśnāti ca pibati cāśayati ca pāyayati ca* | *so 'śnāti sa pibati sa tṛpyati sa tarpayati* || 5 ||

<sup>1</sup> *tarpayati* B.

*Sa tṛplāḥ śrotam tarpayati śrotam tṛplam diśas tarpayati diśas tṛplā avāntara-diśas tarpayanti avāntaradiśas tṛplā yat kimcāvāntaradigbhir apihitam* | *bhavad bhaviṣyad bhūtam tat sarvaṃ tarpayati ya evaṃ vidvān aśnāti ca pibati cāśayati ca pāyayati ca* | *so 'śnāti sa pibati sa tṛpyati sa tarpayati* || 6 ||

*Sa tṛpto retas tarpayati retas tṛptam āpas tarpayaty āpas tṛplā nadims tarpayanti nadyaḥ tṛplāḥ samudram tarpayanti samudro tṛpto yat kimcit samudrenāpihilam* | *bhavad bhaviṣyad bhūtam tat sarvaṃ tarpayati ya evaṃ vidvān aśnāti ca pibati cāśayati ca pāyayati ca* | *so 'śnāti sa pibati sa tṛpyati sa tarpayati* || 7 ||

*Sa tṛptas tad etad vairājam daśavidham agnihotram bhavati* | *tasya prāṇa evāhavanīyo 'pāno gārhapatyō vyāno 'nvāhāryapacano mano dhūmo manyur arcir danṭā aṅgārāḥ śraddhā payo vāk samit satyam āhutiḥ prajñātmā sa rasaḥ*<sup>1</sup> | *tad etad vairājam daśavidham agnihotram hutaṃ bhavati* | *rohobhyāṃ rohobhyāṃ abhyārūlham*<sup>2</sup> | *abhi svargam lokam gamayati ya evaṃ vidvān aśnāti ca pibati cāśayati ca pāyayati ca* | *atha ya idam avidvān agnihotram juhōti yathāṅgārān*<sup>3</sup> | *apohya bhasmani hutaṃ tādrk tatyās tādrk tat syāt*<sup>4</sup> || 8 ||

|| *Ity Āranyake daśamo 'dhyāyaḥ* ||

<sup>1</sup> *prajñātmā* B ; sa om. A.

<sup>2</sup> So A ; °*rūlham* B.

<sup>3</sup> *yathā aṅg*° B.

<sup>4</sup> *tādrk tasyā tādrk tasyāt* B.

<sup>5</sup> For X, 2-8, cf. Chāndogya Upaniṣad, V, 19-24.

## ADHYĀYA XI.

*Prajāpatir vā imam puruṣam udañcat*<sup>1</sup> | *tasminn etā devatā āveśayad vācy agniṃ prāṇe vāyum apāne vidyuta udāne parjanyaṃ cakṣusy ādityaṃ manasi candramasaṃ śrotre diśaḥ śarīre pṛthivīm relasy apo bala indram manyāv īśānaṃ mūrdhany ākāśam ātmani brahma* | *sa yathā mahān amṛtakumbhaḥ*<sup>2</sup> | *pinvamānas tiṣṭhed evaṃ haiva sa tasthau* | *atha hemā devatā ikṣāṃ cakṛire kim ayam asmābhiḥ puruṣaḥ*<sup>3</sup> | *kariṣyati kim vā vayam*<sup>4</sup> | *anena* | *hantāsmāc charirād utkramāmeti* | *tā hoccakramuḥ* | *atha hedaṃ śarīram riktam iva pariśuṣiram*<sup>5</sup> | *sa hekṣāṃ cakre Prajāpatī randhrāya na kṣamaṃ*<sup>6</sup> | *hantūham imā aśanāyāpipāsābhyām upasṛjā ili* | *tā hopasasṛje*<sup>7</sup> | *tā hopāsṛjāḥ*<sup>8</sup> | *sukham alabhamānā imam eva puruṣam punaḥ pratyāviviṣuḥ* || 1 ||

<sup>1</sup> *adañcata* A, B, and cf. Weber, *Catal.*, II, 6 ; text Cowell's MS. B.

a common error, e. g. XI, 4, n. 2. The reference is to the swelling of the Soma.

<sup>2</sup> *amṛtaḥ* B,

ins. B pr. m.

<sup>3</sup> *moyam* B pr. m. ; corr. marg.

<sup>4</sup> So B, from √*śuṣ* and affix *ira* (cf.

Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 1188 c).

<sup>5</sup> *makṣam* A, B. I take *śarīram* as the subject.

na *bhākṣam* (m for bh) is still easier to conjecture, but is less plausible.

<sup>7</sup> *opasṛje* B. For

the perf., cf. Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, I, 5, 21 ; VI, 4, 2.

<sup>8</sup> °*ṣā* B.



Vān mamety agnir āviveṣa \ prāṇo mameti vāyur āviveṣa \ apāno mameti vidyuta<sup>1</sup> āviviṣuḥ \ udāno mameti parjanya āviveṣa \ cakṣur mamety āditya āviveṣa \ mano mameti candramā āviveṣa \ śrotram asmākam iti diśa āviviṣuḥ \ śarīraṃ mameti pṛthivy āviveṣa \ reto 'smākam ity āpa āviviṣuḥ \ balaṃ mameśandra āviveṣa \ manyur mameśāna āviveṣa \ mūrdhā mamety ākāśa āviveṣa \ ātmā mameti brahmāviveṣa \ sa yathā mahān vṛkṣa ārdra upasiktamūlas tiṣṭhed evaṃ haiva sa tathau || 2 ||

<sup>1</sup> vidyuta B, vaid<sup>o</sup> A (as in XI, 1), but āviveṣa. The verb is clearly wrong, cf. XI, 5.

Athāyaṃ puruṣaḥ praiṣṭhyan<sup>1</sup> purā samvatsarāt samvatsarasya dṛṣṭiḥ paśyati \ chidrā chāyā bhavati na vā bhavati \ mahāmeghe vā maricir iva paśyed anabhre vā vidyutam paśyed abhra enām na paśyet \ akṣiṇī vā apidhāya varālakānī<sup>2</sup> va na paśyati \ karṇau vāpidhāyopabdim iva na śṛṇoti \ nāsmil loka ramate nainam manaś chandayati<sup>3</sup> \ iti pratyakṣadarśanāni || 3 ||

<sup>1</sup> praiṣṭhyan B; read perhaps the usual *preṣyan*, cf. Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 320, 321, and IX, 8, n. 4. A has *vidyutaḥ* below. <sup>2</sup> *barāṭkān* B; see VIII, 7, n. 5, which passage is parallel. <sup>3</sup> *chandayīti* B.

Atha svapnāḥ \ puruṣaṃ kṛṣṇaṃ kṛṣṇadantaṃ paśyati sa enaṃ hanti varāha enaṃ hanti markaṣa enaṃ hanti bisāni khādayati suvarṇaṃ bhakṣayitvā<sup>1</sup> vagiraty ekapaundarikam<sup>2</sup> dhārayati gām savatsam dakṣiṇāmukho naladamālī vrājayati \ sa ya eleṣāṃ kiṃci<sup>3</sup> paśyet pāṇḍuradarśanāṃ kālīm<sup>4</sup> striyaṃ muktakeśam muṇḍām tailābhyāṅgaṃ<sup>5</sup> kausumbhaparidhānaṃ gītāny uṣṭrārohaṇaṃ dakṣiṇāśāgamanāḍini<sup>6</sup> vīkṣyopoṣya pāyasam sthālīpākam śrapayitvā sarūpavatsāyā goḥ payasi na tv eva tu kṛṣṇāyā agnim upasamādhāya parisamuhya parisūrya paryukṣya dakṣiṇam jānu ācya sruveṇājyahuvir juhōti || 4 ||<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *bhakṣitvā* B, corr. in marg. to *bhakṣay*<sup>o</sup>. <sup>2</sup> *ekaḥ* A, B. <sup>3</sup> *kiṃci* corr. in B, but see Aitareya Āraṇyaka, III, 2, 4. <sup>4</sup> *kāṇḍīm* B. <sup>5</sup> *abhyāṅgaḥ* A, B. Or *tailābhyāṅgakaus*<sup>o</sup> may be read. <sup>6</sup> Text doubtful: B has *dakṣiṇāgamanāḍini*: the intermediate letters are obscure and have been corrected in a later hand. A has *āśa*<sup>o</sup>. <sup>7</sup> See VIII, 7.

Vāci me 'gniḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ prāṇe me vāyuh pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ apāne me vidyutaḥ<sup>1</sup> pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ udāne me parjanyaḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ cakṣuṣi ma ādityaḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ manasi me candramāḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ śrotre me diśaḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ śarīre me pṛthivī pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ retasi ma āpaḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ bale ma indraḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ manyau ma īśānaḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ mūrdhani ma ākāśaḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā \ ātmani me brahma pratiṣṭhitaṃ svāheti \ athaitad ājyavāseṣaṃ sthālīpāke samavaniniya<sup>2</sup> sthālīpākasyo-paghātaṃ juhōti || 5 ||

<sup>1</sup> *vaidyutaḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ* A.

<sup>2</sup> *nāya* B. The root is *samavani-ni*.

Vāci me 'gniḥ pratiṣṭhito vāg hṛdaye hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṃ devānām

māham<sup>1</sup> akāmo marisyāmy annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \ prāṇe me vāyuh  
 pratiṣṭhilo prāṇo hṛdaye hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṁ devānāṁ māham akāmo  
 marisyāmy annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \ apāne me vidyutah pratiṣṭhita<sup>2</sup>  
 apāno hṛdaye hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṁ devānāṁ māham akāmo marisyāmy  
 annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \ udāne me parjanyaḥ pratiṣṭhita udānaṁ hṛdaye  
 hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṁ devānāṁ māham akāmo marisyāmy annavān annādo  
 bhūyāsam svāhā \ cakṣuṣi ma ādityaḥ pratiṣṭhitaś cakṣur hṛdaye hṛdayam<sup>3</sup> ātmani  
 tat satyaṁ devānāṁ māham akāmo marisyāmy annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \  
 manasi me candraṁ pratiṣṭhilo mano hṛdaye hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṁ devānāṁ  
 māham akāmo marisyāmy annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \ śrotre me diśaḥ  
 pratiṣṭhita diśo hṛdaye hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṁ devānāṁ māham akāmo  
 marisyāmy annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \ śarīre me pṛthivī pratiṣṭhita pṛthivī  
 hṛdaye hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṁ devānāṁ māham akāmo marisyāmy annavān  
 annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \ bale ma indraḥ pratiṣṭhilo balaṁ hṛdaye hṛdayam ātmani  
 tat satyaṁ devānāṁ māham akāmo marisyāmy annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \  
 manyau ma iśānaḥ pratiṣṭhilo manyur hṛdaye hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṁ devānāṁ  
 māham akāmo marisyāmy annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \ mūrdhani ma ākāśaḥ  
 pratiṣṭhilo mūrdhā hṛdaye hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṁ devānāṁ māham akāmo  
 marisyāmy annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \ ātmani me brahma pratiṣṭhitam  
 ātmā hṛdaye<sup>4</sup> hṛdayam ātmani tat satyaṁ devānāṁ māham akāmo marisyāmy  
 annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāheti \ athaitat sthātipākāśaṁ ātmani samavaniniya  
 juhoti || 6 ||

<sup>1</sup> So clearly A, B. <sup>2</sup> var<sup>o</sup> A; pratiṣṭhito A, B. <sup>3</sup> Henceforth the scribe of B abbreviates  
 to hṛdaye-hā. <sup>4</sup> Even here the abbreviation is meant.

Āsmā jāgataṁ ayaṁ traiṣṭubhaṁ loham auṣṇiham sisam kākubhaṁ rajataṁ  
 svārājyaṁ suvarṇam gāyatraṁ annam vairājaṁ<sup>1</sup> tṛptir ānuṣṭubhaṁ nākaṁ  
 sāmṛājyaṁ Bṛhaspatir bārhaṭaṁ Brahma pāṅktaṁ Prajāpatir ātichandasam Sāvitrī  
 sarvavedachandasena chandaseti || 7 ||

<sup>1</sup> °rājyaṁ B.

Āsmeva sthiro vasāni jāgatena chandasā \ puruṣo mañiḥ prāṇaḥ sūtram annam  
 granthiḥ tad granthim udgrathānīty<sup>1</sup> annakāmaḥ<sup>2</sup> \ mṛtyave brāhmaṇam api sarvaṁ  
 āyur aśiyāyushmān māham akāmo marisyāmy annavān annādo bhūyāsam svāhā \  
 aya<sup>3</sup> īva sthiro vasāni traiṣṭubhena chandasā puruṣo mañiḥ prāṇaḥ<sup>4</sup>-svāhā \ loham  
 īva sthiro vasāny auṣṇihena chandasā puruṣo mañiḥ prāṇaḥ-svāhā \ sisam īva sthiro  
 vasāni kākubhena chandasā puruṣo mañiḥ prāṇaḥ-svāhā \ rajataṁ īva sthiro vasāni  
 svārājyena chandasā puruṣo mañiḥ prāṇaḥ-svāhā \ suvarṇam īva sthiro vasāni  
 gāyatreṇa chandasā puruṣo mañiḥ prāṇaḥ-svāhā \ annam īva sthiro vasāni vairā-



jena candamā puruṣo maṇiḥ prāṇaḥ-svāhā | *tr̥ptir* iva sthīro vasāny ānuṣṭubhena  
 chandasā puruṣo maṇiḥ prāṇaḥ-svāhā | nākam iva sthīro vasāni sāmṛāḥyena chandasā  
 puruṣo maṇiḥ prāṇaḥ-svāhā | *Bṛhaspatir* iva sthīro vasāni bārhatena chandasā pu-  
 ruṣo maṇiḥ prāṇaḥ-svāhā | *Brahmeva* sthīro vasāni pāṅktena chandasā puruṣo maṇiḥ  
 prāṇaḥ-svāhā | *Prajāpatir* iva sthīro vasāni ātichandasena chandasā puruṣo maṇiḥ  
 prāṇaḥ-svāhā | *Sāvitrir* iva sthīro vasāni sarvavedachandasena chandasā puruṣo  
 maṇiḥ prāṇaḥ-svāhā | *priyāyai vā jāyāyai* 6 *priyāya vāntevāsine* 7 *nyasmai vāpi*  
*yasmai kāmāyeta tasmā ucchiṣṭam dadyāt* | *sa hāpi śataṃ varṣāṇi jīvati punaḥ*  
*punaḥ prayujāno* 7 *jīvaty eva jīvaty eva* || 8 ||

|| *Ity Āraṇyaka ekādaśo 'dhyāyaḥ* ||

<sup>1</sup> *udgrathānīny* B.    <sup>2</sup> *kā* B pr. m.; *kāno* B sec. m.    <sup>3</sup> *ya* B sec. m.    <sup>4</sup> The  
 scribe abbreviates henceforth to *prā-svāhā*. I have so printed to save space.    <sup>5</sup> *sāvitrir*  
 B pr. m.; *tr̥tr* B sec. m.; *tr̥iva* A. Possibly *savitrī* iva with shortening may be meant (cf.  
 Macdonell, *Sanskrit Grammar*, p. 63; Wackernagel, *Altindische Grammatik*, I, 321, 322).  
<sup>6</sup> *jāyai* B pr. m.; corr. in marg.    <sup>7</sup> *prayujāno* B, is just possible.

## ADHYĀYA XII.

Om | *hastivarcasam prathatām bṛhadvayaḥ* |  
*yad Adityai* 1 *tanvaḥ sambabhūva* |  
*tan mahyam samaduḥ sarvam* 2 *ete* |  
*Ādityāso Adityā* 3 *samvidānāḥ* || 1 ||

*yat te varco jātavedaḥ* |  
*bṛhad bhavaty āhilam* |  
*tena mā varcasā tvam* |  
*Agne varcasvinam kuru* || 2 ||

*yac ca vācā vā puruṣe* |  
*yac ca hastiṣv āhilam* |  
*suvarṇe goṣu yad varcaḥ* |  
*mayi tad hastivarcasam* || 3 ||

*yad akṣeṣu hiranyeṣu* |  
*goṣv akṣeṣu yad yaśaḥ* |  
*surāyām pūyamānāyām* |  
*mayi tad hastivarcasam* || 4 ||

*mayi bhargo mayi mahaḥ* |  
*mayi yajñasya yad yaśaḥ* |

tan mayi Prajāpatiḥ ।

divi divam iva dṛṃhatu ॥ 5 ॥<sup>4</sup> ॥ 1 ॥<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *ta* B pr. m. <sup>2</sup> *sarva* A, B sec. m. as in Atharvaveda, III, 22, 1; cf. Whitney's translation, pp. 126, 127. This verse has on the whole better readings than the Atharvaveda. <sup>3</sup> *Adityāḥ* B. <sup>4</sup> I have, for convenience, numbered the verses throughout. The text in the MS. is only divided into sections. I have also printed the verses in Pādas without Sandhi. <sup>5</sup> For ver. 1, cf. Atharvaveda, III, 22, 1; ver. 2, cf. ibid., III, 22, 4 and 3; vers. 3, 4, cf. ibid., XIV, 1, 35; VI, 69, 1; ver. 5, cf. ibid., VI, 69, 3 (with *divi dyām iva dṛṃhatu*); Sāmaveda, I, 603 (with *paramēṣṭhi* for *tan mayi*). B omits *divi*.

Aśvinā sārageṇa mā ।

sam aṅktām<sup>1</sup> madhunā payaḥ ।

yathā madhumatīm vācam ।

āvadāmi janeṣu ॥ 6 ॥

ghṛtād ullupto<sup>2</sup> madhumān payasvān ।

dhanamjayo dharuṇo dhārayiṣṇuḥ ।

rujan sapatnān<sup>3</sup> adharāṁś ca kṛṇvan ।

ā roha māṃ mahate saubhagāya ॥ 7 ॥

Prajāpate na tvad etāny anyāḥ ।

viśvā jatāni pari tā babhūva ।

yatkāmās te juhūmas tan no astu ।

vayaṃ syāma paṭayo rayiṇām ॥ 8 ॥<sup>4</sup>

ayaṃ sano<sup>5</sup> nudatām me sapatnān ।

Indra iva Vṛtram pṛtanāsu sālḥā ।

Agnir iva kakṣaṃ vibhṛtaḥ purutrā ।

vāteṣu nas tigmajambho 'nu mārṣṭi ॥ 9 ॥

ayaṃ sano yo 'nuvādi kila ।

Indra<sup>6</sup> iva Vṛtram vi puro ruvoja ।

anenendro vi mṛdho vihatyā ।

śatrūyatām ā bhārā bhojanāni ॥ 10 ॥<sup>7</sup> ॥ 2 ॥

<sup>1</sup> *samāhān* A; *saṃmahān* B. Presumably an imperative from *√mah*, trans., *Aśvinā* being voc. The parallel, Atharvaveda, VI, 69, 2 (= IX, 1, 19), has *madhunāṅktam subhaspatī*, and in the last Pāda, *āvadāni janāḥ anu*, which is better metre and syntax. I read *aṅktām*; for synt., cf. *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, p. 1124. <sup>2</sup> *ullupto* A, B. Cf. Atharvaveda, V, 28, 14; XIX, 33, 2; 46, 6. Scheftelowitz, *Die Apokryphen des Rgveda*, p. 118, ver. 9 a; below, ver. 34. <sup>3</sup> *sapatnād* B. <sup>4</sup> = RV., X, 121, 10, and see Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*, p. 612; below, ver. 35. <sup>5</sup> *sa yo* B. <sup>6</sup> *kila* (*kila* A) *iva* only A, B. The parallel with *Indra* above seems conclusive. In both cases *Indreva* (or *Indro va*) must be read *metri causa*. B has *viduro* corrected to *viro*. <sup>7</sup> Last line = RV., V, 4, 5; &c.

jayendra śatrūñ jahi śūra dasyūn ।

Vṛtram hatveva kulīṣenā vi vṛśca<sup>1</sup> ।



augha iva śāpān<sup>2</sup> pra ṇudāt sapatnān |  
jahyāt sapatnān svadhitiṛ vaneva || 11 ||

anu vṛśca madhyāt pra<sup>3</sup> vṛscopariṣṭāt |  
vi vṛśca paścāt prati śūra vṛśca |  
tvayā praṇuttān maghavan amitrān |  
śūra<sup>4</sup> riṣāntaṃ Maruto 'nu yāntu || 12 ||

tvāṃ rudrair hetibhiḥ pinvamānāḥ |  
Indraṃ manvānā Maruto juṣānta |  
suparṇāḥ kaṅkāḥ pra mṛśantu enān |  
mahiyatāṃ daṃṣṭrī vardhaneṣu || 13 ||

brahmaṇuṣṭasya maghavan pṛlanyataḥ |  
viṣvag<sup>5</sup> Indra bhaṅgāḥ patantu |  
mā jñātāram aśata mā<sup>6</sup> pratiṣṭhām |  
mitho vighnānā upa yānti mṛtyum || 14 ||

Agne yaśasvin yaśase sam arpayā |  
Indravatim apacitim ihā vaha |  
ayaṃ mūrdhā parameṣṭhī suvarcāḥ |  
sajātānām uttamaśloko astu || 15 ||<sup>7</sup> || 3 ||

<sup>1</sup> The metre requires °sena vṛśca. <sup>2</sup> śāpāt B, the word being no doubt misunderstood. <sup>3</sup> pra vi A, B, but not only this is bad metre (in no case is the metre good, but an vṛśca may be read), but the vi following renders the double prefix most improbable. <sup>4</sup> amitrāṇ chure A, B, possibly for sa veriṣa(n)tam. <sup>5</sup> viśak A, B. <sup>6</sup> So I read. The verse is a mutilated version of Atharvaveda, VI, 32, 3 (= VIII, 8, 21): mā jñātāraṃ mā pratiṣṭhāṃ vindanta | mitho vighnānā upa yantu mṛtyum. See also Āśvalāyana Gṛhya Sūtra, III, 10, 11; J.A.O.S., XXVI, 227. B has śatamāḥ, pratiṣṭhāmāho vighnānām, yāti. A has iho, vijñātām. The text is merely a conjecture. <sup>7</sup> Cf. Taittiriya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 3<sup>4-5</sup>, ending: samānānām uttamaḥ śloko astu. Either sa jāṭ or sajāt is possible, and uttamaḥ śloko or uttamaśloko.

bhadraṃ paśyanta upa sedur āgan |  
tato dīkṣāṃ ṛṣayaḥ svarvidāḥ |  
tataḥ kṣatraṃ balam ojaś ca jātam |  
tad asmai devā abhi saṃ namantām || 16 ||<sup>1</sup>

dhātā vidhātā paramota saṃdṛk |  
Prajāpatiḥ parameṣṭhī suvarcāḥ |  
stomaṃ chandāṃsi nivido ma āhuḥ |  
etasmai rāṣṭram abhi saṃ namantām || 17 ||<sup>2</sup>

abhy ā vartadhvam upa sevātāgnim |  
ayaṃ śāstādhipatiṛ no astu |

asya vijñānam anu saṃ rabhadhvam |  
imam paścād anu jīvātha sarve || 18 ||<sup>3</sup>

alardo<sup>4</sup> nāma jāto 'si |  
purā sūryāt puroṣasaḥ<sup>5</sup> |  
tam tvā sapatnakṣayanam<sup>6</sup> |  
vedātho<sup>7</sup> viṣṭambhajambhanam || 19 ||

nārdhe pramīyeta<sup>8</sup> tared<sup>9</sup> dviṣantam |  
kalpeta vākyam pṛtanāḥ saheta |  
pramāyukaṃ tasya dviṣantam āhuḥ |  
irāmaṇim bailvam yo bibharti || 20 || || 4 ||

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Taittirīya Samhitā, V, 7, 4, 3; Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, III, 11, 9 (with *pāśyanta*, *āgre*, and *tāpo*); Atharvaveda, XIX, 41, 1; and Whitney's translation, p. 963. Cf. p. 349. A, B have *āgān* and *pāśyema*. <sup>2</sup> Cf. Taittirīya Samhitā, V, 7, 4, 4 (with *virājā stōmāt*, and *abhi saṃnamāma*). A has *stomāṇa*.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. *ibid.*, V, 7, 4, 4; 5, with *ūpa mēta sākām*, and *vo* (B has *mno*). <sup>4</sup> So A, B. The word may be connected with *araḍu* or *araṣu*, Atharvaveda, XX, 131, 8. Cp. p. 349. <sup>5</sup> = Atharvaveda, X, 7, 31<sup>b</sup>. <sup>6</sup> *sapatnakṣayanam* B. But *kṣayanam* is too like *kṣayanam* in MSS. to render the reading doubtful. <sup>7</sup> The metre is wrong and *veda* may belong to the line before, or *atho* be an interpolation. <sup>8</sup> *pramīye* B pr. m. <sup>9</sup> *tare* B.

na sa śaptam<sup>1</sup> aśnāti na kilbiṣam kṛtam |  
nainam divyo Varuṇo hanti bhītam |  
nainam kruddham manyavo 'bhi yānti<sup>2</sup> |  
irāmaṇim bailvam yo bibharti || 21 ||

nāśya tvacam himsati<sup>3</sup> jātavedāḥ |  
na māmsam aśnāti na hanti tāni |  
śalāyur asmiñ jaradaṣṭiḥ praiti |  
irāmaṇim bailvam yo bibharti || 22 ||

nāśya prajā duṣyati jāyamānā |  
na śailago<sup>4</sup> bhavati na pāpakṛtyā |  
nānyan milhas tasya kuleṣu jāyate |  
irāmaṇim bailvam yo bibharti || 23 ||

nāśyāpavādā na pravādakā<sup>5</sup> gr̥he |  
na sampatantyō<sup>6</sup> na vīvēśa tasmai |  
nāsminn alakṣmiḥ kurute niveśanam |  
irāmaṇim bailvam yo bibharti || 24 ||

nainam rakṣo na piśāco hinasti |  
na jambhako nāpy asuro na yakṣaḥ |



na sūtikā tasya gr̥heṣu<sup>7</sup> jāyate ।

irāmaṇiṃ bailvaṃ yo bibharti ॥ 25 ॥ ॥ 5 ॥

<sup>1</sup> sam (?) suptam A, B. <sup>2</sup> abhimāti° A, B. <sup>3</sup> Probably metri causa (- 0 0 after caesura). Cf. ver. 25<sup>a</sup>, 26<sup>b</sup>. <sup>4</sup> sailakā B pr. m.; sailago A, B sec. m. bhavati is disyllabic. Cf. Hopkins's *Ancient Epic of India*, p. 260, and for a similar case in the Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, my note, *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, p. 202. <sup>5</sup> pravātakā B. If pravātakā is right, the ka must add nothing to the word. <sup>6</sup> saṃpataṭyo B pr. m.; tapo sec. m. A has vīleta. <sup>7</sup> kulasya A.

nainam vyāghro na vṛko na dvīpī ।

na śvāpadam hīnsati kiṃcanainam ।

na hastinam kruddham upaiti bhītim<sup>1</sup> ।

irāmaṇiṃ bailvaṃ yo bibharti ॥ 26 ॥

nainam sarpo na prdākur hinasti ।

na vṛściko na tiraścī<sup>2</sup>narājī ।

nainam kṛṣṇo<sup>3</sup> 'hir abhi<sup>4</sup> saṃhate ।

irāmaṇiṃ bailvaṃ yo bibharti ॥ 27 ॥

nainam pramattaṃ<sup>4</sup> Varuṇo hinasti ।

na makaro na grahaḥ śiṣumāraḥ ।

pārāvarāc chivam asmai kṛṇoti ।

irāmaṇiṃ bailvaṃ yo bibharti ॥ 28 ॥

pramāyukam asya dviṣantam āhuḥ ।

puṣpam iva chinnaṃ saha bandhanena ।

augha iva śāpān pra ṇudāt sapatnān ।

irāmaṇiṃ bailvaṃ yo bibharti ॥ 29 ॥

ayaṃ maṇiḥ pratisaro jāmba jīvāya badhyate ।

anenendro Vṛtram ahann ṛṣiṇā<sup>5</sup> ca maṇiṣiṇā ॥ 30 ॥ ॥ 6 ॥

<sup>1</sup> bhītam A, B sec. m. Cf. *J. A. O. S.*, XXVIII, 390. <sup>2</sup> tiraścīnarājā B; °cīna° A. <sup>3</sup> kṛṣṇi only A, B. The animal kṛṣṇa is doubtful (Atharvaveda, XI, 2, 2, is taken otherwise by Whitney in his translation), and the kṛṣṇo 'kṛṣṇ' is regular; hence I add 'kṛṣṇ'. <sup>4</sup> °ṛttam B, see Aitareya Āraṇyaka, II, 1, 1, n. 2. <sup>5</sup> ṛṣiṇā B.

sahendra dviṣataḥ sahasvārātīḥ ।

sahasva pṛtanāyataḥ ।

nāga iva pūrvapādābhyām ।

abhi tiṣṭha<sup>1</sup> pṛtanayataḥ ॥ 31 ॥

āgād ayaṃ bailvo maṇiḥ ।

sapatna<sup>2</sup>kṣayaṇo vṛṣā ।

taṃ paśyanti kavayaḥ sarvavīraḥ ।

yathā sapatnān samare saheyuḥ<sup>3</sup> ॥ 32 ॥

amṛtaṃ me maṇau sūtram Aśvināv api naḥyalām |  
 bailvaḥ sahasravīro 'si mā te bhartā riṣam<sup>4</sup> aham || 33 ||  
 ghṛtād ulluplo<sup>5</sup> madhumān payasvān |  
 dhanamjaya dharuṇo dhārayiṣṇuḥ |  
 rujan sapatnān<sup>6</sup> adharāṃś ca kṛṇvan |  
 ā roha mām mahate saubhagāya || 34 ||  
 Prajāpate na tvad etāny anyāḥ |  
 viśvā jatāni pari tā babhūva |  
 yatkāmas te juhūmas tan no astu |  
 vyaṃ syāma palayo rayiṇām || 35 ||  
 śāsa itthaṃ mahān asīti pañca<sup>7</sup> || 7 ||

<sup>1</sup> ṣṭha add B marg. <sup>2</sup> sapatnaḥkṣapaṇo B. Cf. Atharvaveda, I, 29, 4; 6. <sup>3</sup> tsa-  
 heyuḥ B. <sup>4</sup> riṣam B. B has bilvaḥ. <sup>5</sup> ur A; uluplo B; cf. ver. 7. <sup>6</sup> sapatnād  
 B; cf. ver. 7. <sup>7</sup> i. e. RV., X, 152, 1-5, giving in all forty verses. Their use in the ritual  
 (XII, 8) is by verses 1-8, 9-14, 15-18, 19, 20-35, 36-40.

Athāto maṇikalpāḥ | bhūtikāmaḥ puṣṭeṇa trirātroṣiṭo jīvato hastino dantān  
 mātrām uddhṛtyāgnim upasamādhāya<sup>1</sup> parisamuḥya parisīrya paryukṣya dakṣiṇam  
 jānu ācyottarato 'gneḥ kamse maṇim kṛtvā hutvā homān maṇau sampātām ānayet |  
 hastivarcasam ity etābhiḥ pratyrcam<sup>2</sup> aṣṭābhiḥ saptarātram madhusarpiṣor vāsa-  
 yitvā trirātram ekām vā badhniyād<sup>3</sup> ghṛtād ulluplo ity etayarcā | ata evottaram  
 ṣaḍbhir hṛdayaśūlāgramaniṃ pratodāgramaniṃ vā muśalāgramaniṃ<sup>4</sup> vā khadira-  
 sārāmaniṃ vā māmsaudane vāsayingvā trirātram ekām vā badhniyāt | ata evottaram  
 calaṣṭbhir vṛṣabha<sup>5</sup> śṛṅgāgramaniṃ ghṛtaudane vāsayingvā trirātram ekām vā badhni-  
 yāt | ata evottaram ekayairandamaniṃ tilaudane<sup>6</sup> vāsayingvā trirātram ekām vā  
 badhniyāt | ata evottaram ṣoḍaśbhir<sup>7</sup> bailvaṃ saptarātram madhusarpiṣor vāsayingvā  
 trirātram ekām vā badhniyād ghṛtād ulluplo ity etayarcā | ata evottaram pañcabhir  
 mahāvarohasyodoham<sup>8</sup> mudgaudane vāsayingvā trirātram ekām vā badhniyāc chaklau  
 satī<sup>9</sup> prathamam hastichāyāyām vaiyāghre vāpi carmany āsīno vāpi juhuyād āsīno  
 vāpi juhuyāt || 8 ||

|| Ity Āranyake dvādaśo 'dhyāyaḥ ||

<sup>1</sup> āpa° B. <sup>2</sup> pratyrcam B. <sup>3</sup> badhniyād B. <sup>4</sup> muśala° B; mus° A. <sup>5</sup> vṛṣabhaḥ B.  
<sup>6</sup> audanena B. <sup>7</sup> ṣoḍaśbhir B. <sup>8</sup> mahāvarāhasa° B. o in MSS. is often confused  
 with ā, cf. Hoernle, Osteology, p. 132. The name of a wood of sorts seems essential, and udūham  
 (a 'besom', cf. Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa, III, 8, 4, 3) may be meant. The alternative is to take  
 udoham as a gerund. <sup>9</sup> satī B.

### ADHYĀYA XIII.

Athāto vairāgyasaṃskṛte śarīre brahmayajñāniṣṭho bhavet | apa punarmṛtyuṃ  
 jayati | tad u ha vālmā draṣṭavyaḥ śrotavyo mantravyo nididhyāsitavya iti | tam etam



*vedānuvacanena vividiṣanti brahmacaryeṇa tapasā śraddhayā yajñenānāśakena ceti Māṇḍūkyaḥ* | *tasmād evaṃvic chānto*<sup>1</sup> *dānta uparatas titikṣuḥ śraddhāvillo bhūtvātmany evātmānam paśyed iti Māṇḍavyaḥ* | *yo 'yaṃ vijñānamayaḥ puruṣaḥ prāṇeṣu sa eṣa neti nety ātmāvagryha idam brahmedam kṣatram*<sup>2</sup> *ime devā ime vedā ime lokā imāni sarvāṇi bhūtānīdam sarvaṃ yad ayam ātmā* | *sa eṣa tat tvam aśīty ātmāvagamyo 'haṃ brahmāsmīti* | *tad etad brahmāpūrvam aparam anaparam anantaram abāhyam ayam ātmā brahma sarvānubhū ily anuśāsanam iti Yājñavalkyaḥ*<sup>3</sup> | *tam etam nāputrāya nānālevāsine brūyād iti* | *ya imām adbhīḥ parigrhītām vasumatīm dhanasya pūrṇām dadyād idam eva tato bhūya idam eva tato bhūya ily anuśāsanam*<sup>4</sup> | *tām*<sup>5</sup> *etām upaṇiśadam vedaśiro na yathā katham cana vadet*<sup>6</sup> | *tad etād ṛcābhyudītam* || 1 ||

|| *Ity Aranyake trayodaśo 'dhyāyaḥ* ||<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *vichānto* A, B.    <sup>2</sup> *kṣatra* B.    <sup>3</sup> This is an exact quotation, save for the insertion of *aparam* of Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, II, 5, 19. B pr. m. has *brahmā*. For the earlier part, cf. that Upaniṣad, II, 4, 5; 6; IV, 4, 25; 27; 28, and for the next words, VI, 3, 20 (13 Kāṇva).  
<sup>4</sup> This is clearly an inaccurate reminiscence of Chāndogya Upaniṣad, III, 11, 6.    <sup>5</sup> *tām* B.  
<sup>6</sup> *vede* B.    <sup>7</sup> Simply || 9 || B, but (a) this contradicts the colophon to XII, 8; (b) there is no connexion with XII; (c) A, Weber's MS., *Catal.*, II, 6, has XIII. Cf. *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, pp. 380, 381.

#### ADHYĀYA XIV.

*ṛcām mūrdhānam yajuṣām uttamāṅgam* |  
*sāmnām śiro 'tharvāṇām muṇḍamuṇḍam* |  
*nādhīte 'dhīte vedam āhus tam ajñam* |  
*śiraś*<sup>1</sup> *chitvāsau kurute kabandham* || 1 ||<sup>2</sup>  
*sthānur ayam bhārahāraḥ kilābhūt* |  
*adhītya vedam na vijānāti yo 'rtham* |  
*yo 'rthajña il sakalam bhadram aśnute* |  
*nākam eti jñānavidhūlapāpmā* || 2 ||<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *śira* B.    <sup>2</sup> The numbers are added by me.    <sup>3</sup> B ends with || 10 ||. Really Adhyāya XIV should be combined with Adhyāya XIII into one Adhyāya, but the Berlin MS. (Weber, *Catal.*, II, 6) treats this as a separate Adhyāya. For ver. 2, see Nirukta, I, 18; Burnell, *Samhitopaniṣad Brāhmaṇa*, p. 38.

#### ADHYĀYA XV.

*Atha vaṃśaḥ* | *om* | *namo brahmaṇe nama ācāryebhyaḥ* | *Guṇākhyāc Chāṅkhāyanād asmābhir adhītam* | *Guṇākhyāḥ Śāṅkhāyanāḥ Kaholāt Kauṣīlakeḥ* | *Kaholāḥ Kauṣītakir Uddālakād*<sup>1</sup> *Aruṇēḥ* | *Uddālaka Aruṇiḥ Priyavratāt Saumāpeḥ* | *Priyavratāḥ Saumāpiḥ Somapāt* | *Somapāḥ Saumāt Prātiveśyāt* | *Saumāḥ Prātiveśyaḥ*<sup>2</sup> *Prātiveśyāt* | *Prātiveśyo Bṛhaddivāt* | *Bṛhaddivāḥ Sumnayoḥ* | *Sumnayur Uddālakāt* |

*Uddālako Viśvamanasaḥ | Viśvamanā Vyaśvāt | Vyaśvaḥ Sākamaśvat | Sākamaśvo  
Devarātāt | Devarāto Viśvāmitrāt | Viśvāmitra Indrāt | Indrah Prajāpateḥ |  
Prajāpatir Brahmaṇaḥ | Brahmā Svayambhūḥ | namo brahmaṇe namo brahmaṇe |*

॥ *Ity Aranyake pañcadaśo 'dhyāyaḥ* ॥ <sup>2</sup>

॥ *Iti Śāṅkhāyanāranyakam samāptam* ॥

<sup>1</sup> Uddālukād B. <sup>2</sup> *Somaḥ Pratiśeṣyaḥ*, Winternitz, *Bodl. Catal.*, p. 60. A has *Somāpiḥ* and *Somaḥ*. <sup>3</sup> *ity Aranyake Upaniṣado ekādaśo 'dhyāyaḥ | iti Śāṅkhāyana Upaniṣadaḥ samāp-  
taḥ | saṃpūrṇam | śrīhanu śrīsaṃvat 1837 (= A.D. 1781) varṣe miti jyeṣṭhasudī 15 śukravā  
B. But this is all on f. 87, which is a recent restoration and is of no authority. The number  
XV is given in the Berlin MS. to the Vamśa, which ends: iti Śāṅkhāyanāranyake pañcadaśo  
'dhyāyaḥ || cha || samāptaḥ || śubham bhavatu || svasti saṃvat 1734 varṣe aśāḍhasuddha 13 śanau  
abhyantarānāgarajñātīyarājanagaramadhye | Rājapure vāstavyaṃ liṣakadikṣitamāṃhāmānā-  
ghunātha || pañdyaśīmajñrīṣiṃhaḥputrapautrapaṭhanārtham | The Vamśa clearly begins with  
the 'author' of the Āranyaka, i.e. Guṇākhyā; why Oldenberg (*S. B. E.*, XXIX, 4, 5) should  
think the author of the Sūtras is meant I cannot understand. See also my *Śāṅkhāyana Āra-  
nyaka*, p. 72.*



# INDEX I

## QUOTATIONS FROM ṚGVEDA.

(The first numbers in brackets denote the reference in the Samhitā. The second, the page and column of Bloomfield's *Vedic Concordance*. The *pratikās* are given exactly as in the Samhitā text, except that the original forms *in pausa* are restored. References marked Ś. are to the Śākhāyana Āraṇyaka.)

- Agniṃ naro dīdhitibhir aranyoḥ* (VII, 1, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 2 (11<sup>b</sup>); Ś. I, 2.  
*Agnir netā - sa vytrahā* (III, 20, 4<sup>a-c</sup>), I, 2, 1 (15<sup>b</sup>).  
*Agne tava śravo vayah* (X, 140, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 3, 2 (23<sup>b</sup>).  
*adaḥ su madhu madhunābhi yodhīḥ* (X, 120, 3<sup>d</sup>), I, 3, 4; V, 1, 6 (49<sup>b</sup>).  
*Aditir mātā sa pītā sa putrah* (I, 89, 10<sup>b</sup>), III, 1, 6 (50<sup>b</sup>); Ś. VII, 15.  
*adyā no deva Savitāḥ* (V, 82, 4<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3 (53<sup>b</sup>); Ś. II, 18.  
*anaśvo jāta anabhīlur ukthyaḥ* (IV, 36, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3 (61<sup>b</sup>).  
*anuṣṭubham anu carcūryamāṇam* (X, 124, 9<sup>c</sup>), II, 3, 5 (67<sup>a</sup>).  
*anne samasya yaḍ asan manīṣāḥ* (X, 29, 4<sup>d</sup>), I, 5, 2 (not in Bloomfield, 75<sup>a</sup>).  
*apālyam gopām anipadyamānam* (I, 164, 31<sup>a</sup>), II, 1, 6 (79<sup>b</sup>). Verse cited in full.  
*apāṇ prāṇ eti svadhayā grbhītāḥ* (I, 164, 38<sup>a</sup>), II, 1, 8 (81<sup>a</sup>). Verse cited in full.  
*abodhy agniḥ samidhā janānām* (V, 1, 1), I, 1, 1 (89<sup>b</sup>).  
*abhi tvā pūrvapīlaye* (VIII, 3, 7<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (91<sup>b</sup>).  
*abhi tvā sūra nonumāḥ* (VII, 32, 22<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (91<sup>b</sup>).  
*abhi pra vah surādhasam* (VIII, 49, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 4 (92<sup>b</sup>).  
*abhūr eko rayīpate rayīṇām* (VI, 31, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (97<sup>a</sup>).  
*ayam te astu haryataḥ* (III, 44, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 4 (105<sup>b</sup>); Ś. II, 9.  
*alvayanto maghavann Indra vājīnaḥ* (VII, 32, 23<sup>c</sup>), V, 1, 6 (128<sup>a</sup>).  
*Alvinā yajvarīr iṣaḥ* (I, 3, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (129<sup>a</sup>).  
*asat su me jaritāḥ sābhivegaḥ* (X, 27, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 2; V, 1, 1 (132<sup>a</sup>); Ś. I, 3.  
*asya vāmasya palitasya hotuḥ* (I, 164, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3; V, 3, 2 (145<sup>b</sup>); Ś. II, 18.  
*āganma vytrahantamam* (VIII, 74, 4<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 1 (154<sup>b</sup>).  
*āgniṃ na svavyktibhir* (X, 21, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 3, 2 (155<sup>a</sup>).  
*ā ghā ye agnim* (VIII, 45, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 3 (155<sup>b</sup>).  
*ā tū na Indra kṣumantam* (VIII, 81, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 3 (158<sup>b</sup>).  
*ā tena yātām manaso javīyasā* (X, 39, 12<sup>a</sup>), II, 3, 8 (159<sup>a</sup>).  
*ā te maha Indroty ugra* (VII, 25, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 1, 2 (159<sup>a</sup>).  
*ā tvā ratham yathotaye* (VIII, 68, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1 (161<sup>a</sup>); Ś. I, 3.  
*ād it pratnasya retasaḥ* (VIII, 6, 30<sup>a</sup>), III, 2, 4 (162<sup>b</sup>).  
*ā dhūrjv asmai* (VII, 34, 4<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (167<sup>b</sup>).  
*ā na Indro dūrād ā na āsāt* (IV, 20, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (167<sup>b</sup>).  
*ā no bhadraḥ kratavo yantu viśvataḥ* (I, 89, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3; (V, 3, 2 as ānobhadriyam, not in Bloomfield) (169<sup>b</sup>).  
*ā no viśvāsu hatvyaḥ* (VIII, 90, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 4 (170<sup>b</sup>).

*ā yātaṃ Rudravartanī* (I, 3, 3<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (179<sup>b</sup>).  
*ā yāhi vanasā saha* (X, 172, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 2, 2 (180<sup>a</sup>).  
*ā yāhyadribhīṣ sutam* (V, 40, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (180<sup>a</sup>).  
*ā yāhy arvān upa bandhureṣṭhāḥ* (RV. van<sup>c</sup>) (III, 43, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 3, 1 (180<sup>b</sup>).  
*āvṛtāso 'vatāso na kartṛbhīḥ* (I, 55, 8<sup>c</sup>), II, 1, 6 (189<sup>b</sup>).  
*ā śāsate prati haryanty ukthā* (I, 165, 4<sup>c</sup>), I, 2, 2 (190<sup>b</sup>).

*itthā hi soma in made* (I, 80, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (198<sup>a</sup>).  
*idaṃ vaso sutam andhaḥ* (VIII, 2, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1 (198<sup>b</sup>); Ś. I, 3.  
*Indra it somapā ekaḥ* (VIII, 2, 4<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 3 (206<sup>a</sup>).

*Indraṃ viśvā avivṛdhan* (I, 11, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 2; V, 3, 1 (207<sup>b</sup>).  
*Indra nedīya ed iki* (VIII, 53, 5<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1 (210<sup>b</sup>).  
*Indram id gāthino bṛhat* (I, 7, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 1 (212<sup>a</sup>): RV., I, 7, 1-9 are called *arkavat* in I, 4, 1).  
*Indravāyū ime sūtā* (I, 2, 4<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (213<sup>a</sup>).  
*Pādas a and b are cited.*

*Indraśya nu vīryāṇi pra vocam* (I, 32, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (215<sup>b</sup>).  
*Indrāgni yuvam su naḥ* (VIII, 40, 1), I, 5, 1; V, 3, 1 (220<sup>a</sup>).  
*Indrāya sāmā gīyata* (VIII, 98, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (223<sup>a</sup>); Ś. II, 10.

*Indrāya hi dyaur asuro ananirata* (I, 131, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 1, 1 (223<sup>b</sup>).  
*Indrā yāhi citrabhāno* (I, 3, 5<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (224<sup>a</sup>).  
*Indrā yāhi tūtuḥjāna* (I, 3, 6<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (224<sup>a</sup>).  
*Indrā yāhi dhiyeṣṭitaḥ* (I, 3, 4<sup>a</sup>; 5; 6), I, 1, 4 (224<sup>a</sup>).  
*Indro madāya vāṛdhe* (I, 81, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (227<sup>b</sup>).

*imaṃ stomam arkate jātavedase* (I, 94, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3 (231<sup>a</sup>).  
*imā nu kaṃ bhuvanā sīzadhāma* (I, 157, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (234<sup>a</sup>).

*īṅkhayanīr apasyuvaḥ* (X, 153, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 1, 1 (244<sup>a</sup>).

*ugro jajñe vīryāya svādhāvān* (VII, 20, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (248<sup>b</sup>).  
*ut tiṣṭha Brahmanaspate* (I, 40, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1 (256<sup>b</sup>).

*ud u brahmāny airata śravasyā* (VII, 23, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (261<sup>a</sup>).

*ud gheḍ abhi śrutāmagham* (VIII, 93, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 3 (262<sup>a</sup>).

*ud vayanī tamasaḥ pari* (I, 50, 10<sup>a</sup>), III, 2, 4 (263<sup>b</sup>).

*ubhayaṃ śṛṇavaḥ ca naḥ* (VIII, 61, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 4 (272<sup>b</sup>).

*ekaḥ suparṇaḥ sa samudram ā viveśa* (X, 114, 4<sup>a</sup>), III, 1, 6 (296<sup>a</sup>); Ś. VII, 18. Verse cited in full.

*endra yāhy upa naḥ parāvataḥ* (I, 130, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 1, 1 (302<sup>b</sup>).

*endra sūnasiṃ rayim* (I, 8, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 2, 5 (302<sup>b</sup>).  
*eṣa stomo maha ugrāya vāhe* (VII, 69, 5<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 2 (307<sup>b</sup>).

*omāsaḥ carṣaṇāḍhṛtaḥ* (I, 3, 7<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (312<sup>b</sup>).

*katarā pūrvā kotarā parāyoh* (I, 185, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3 (316<sup>b</sup>).

*kathā mahām avṛdhat kasya hotuḥ* (IV, 23, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (317<sup>a</sup>); Ś. I, 2.

*kayā śubhā savayasaḥ sanīlāḥ* (I, 165, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 2; V, 1, 1 (319<sup>a</sup>).

*garbhe nu sann anv eṣām avedam* (IV, 27, 1<sup>b</sup>), II, 5, 1 (345<sup>a</sup>: the verse is given in full).

*gām a/vaṃ rathyam Indra saṃ kira* (VI, 46, 2<sup>c</sup>), V, 1, 6 (346<sup>b</sup>).

*gaurīr mimāya salilāni takṣatī* (I, 164, 41<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 2 (355<sup>a</sup>).

*citraṃ devānām ud agād anīkam* (I, 115, 1<sup>a</sup>), III, 2, 3 (369<sup>a</sup>); Ś. VIII, 4. Verse cited in full.

*jajñāno nu śatakratuḥ* (VIII, 77, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 3 (372<sup>b</sup>).

*janiṣṭhā ugrāḥ sahaḥ turāya* (X, 73, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 2; V, 1, 1 (373<sup>b</sup>).

*jātavedase sunavāma somam* (I, 99, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3 (376<sup>b</sup>).

*tam v abhi pra gīyata* (VIII, 15, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (408<sup>a</sup>).

*taṃ vodasman ṛṣīṣaham* (VIII, 88, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 4 (387<sup>a</sup>).



*lat Sovitur vr̥ṇīmahe* (V, 82, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3 (392<sup>b</sup>); Ś. II, 18; IX, 1.  
*tad id āsa bhuvaṇeṣu jyeṣṭham* (X, 120, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 3, 4; 7; V, 1, 6 (395<sup>a</sup>); Ś. II, 1.  
*tad devasya Savitur vāryaṃ mahat* (IV, 53, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3 (396<sup>a</sup>); Ś. II, 18.  
*tam u śtuhi yo abhihūtyojah* (VI, 18, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (406<sup>b</sup>).  
*tarobhīr vo vidadvasum* (VIII, 66, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 4 (409<sup>b</sup>).  
*tā asya sūdadohasaḥ* (VIII, 69, 3<sup>a</sup>), V, 1, 6; 2, 5 (second reference omitted in Bloomfield, 419<sup>b</sup>).  
*tāṃ su te kīrtiṇi maghavan mahitvā* (X, 54, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 3, 7; V, 1, 6 (420<sup>b</sup>).  
*tivrasyābhivayaso asya pāhi* (X, 160, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 1, 1 (431<sup>b</sup>).  
*tyam ū zu vājinaṃ devapīlam* (X, 178, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 3, 1 (447<sup>a</sup>).  
*trikadrakeṣu mahiṣo yavālīram* (II, 22, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 1, 1 (448<sup>b</sup>).  
*tvam soma kratubhīḥ sukratur bhūh* (I, 91, 2<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1 (455<sup>a</sup>).  
*tvam hy ehi cerave* (VIII, 61, 7<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (456<sup>b</sup>).  
*tvām idā hyo narah* (VIII, 99, 1<sup>b</sup>), V, 2, 4 (466<sup>a</sup>).  
*tvām idā hi havāmahe* (VI, 46, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (466<sup>a</sup>).  
*tvāvataḥ purūvaso* (VIII, 46, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (466<sup>b</sup>).  
*tve kratum apī vr̥ṇjanti* (X, 120, 3), I, 3, 4 (467<sup>a</sup>).  
*tve ha yat pitaras cin na Indra* (VII, 18, 1), V, 2, 2 (468<sup>a</sup>).  
*dadī rekhas* (VIII, 46, 15<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (470<sup>b</sup>).  
*dāśvāmso dāśuṣaḥ sutam* (I, 3, 7<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (475<sup>b</sup>).  
*nakiḥ Sudāso ratham* (VII, 32, 10<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1; V, 2, 4 (525<sup>b</sup>).  
*nadaṃ va odatinām* (VIII, 69, 2<sup>a</sup>), I, 3, 5; 8; V, 1, 6 (528<sup>b</sup>, where it is not noted that *nada* is used in the Āraṇyaka for this verse), Ś. II, 1.  
*na hy anyam baḥākaram* (VIII, 80, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 3 (544<sup>b</sup>).  
*nimiṣaḥ cij javīyasā* (VIII, 73, 2<sup>a</sup>), II, 3, 8 (550<sup>b</sup>).

*nūnam atha* (VIII, 46, 15<sup>c</sup>), V, 2, 5 (556<sup>b</sup>).  
*nyām u tvā nṛtamaṃ gīrbhīr ukthair* (III, 51, 4<sup>c</sup>), I, 3, 7; V, 1, 6 (557<sup>a</sup>).  
*pāvakaḥ naḥ Sarasvatī* (I, 3, 10<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (581<sup>b</sup>).  
*pinvaty apaḥ* (I, 64, 6<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1 (586<sup>a</sup>).  
*pibā sutasya rasinaḥ* (VIII, 3, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 2, 4 (587<sup>a</sup>).  
*pibā somam abhi yam ugra tardah* (VI, 17, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 2 (587<sup>a</sup>).  
*puruhūtaṃ puruṣūtam* (VIII, 92, 2<sup>b</sup>), V, 2, 3 (595<sup>b</sup>).  
*puroḥāṇaṃ no andhasaḥ* (VIII, 78, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 3 (596<sup>a</sup>).  
*prakṛtāny r̥jīṣiṇaḥ* (VIII, 32, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 3 (607<sup>a</sup>).  
*prajā ha tiso atyāyam īyuh* (VIII, 101, 14<sup>a</sup>), II, 1, 1 (614<sup>b</sup>). Verse cited in full.  
*pra nūnam brahmaṇas patih* (I, 40, 5<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1 (623<sup>b</sup>).  
*prayajyavo Maruto bhrūjadṛṣṭayaḥ* (V, 55, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3 (626<sup>b</sup>); Ś. II, 18.  
*pra va Indrāya bṛhate* (VIII, 89, 3<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1 (628<sup>b</sup>).  
*pra vo devāyāgnaye* (III, 13, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 1 (630<sup>a</sup>).  
*pra vo mahe mandamānāyandhasaḥ* (X, 50, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 2; V, 3, 1 (630<sup>b</sup>).  
*pra samrōjaṃ carṣaṇinām* (VIII, 16, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (631<sup>b</sup>).  
*praitu brahmaṇas patir* (I, 40, 3<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 1 (643<sup>a</sup>).  
*pro tv asmai puroratham* (X, 133, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 1, 1 (644<sup>a</sup>).  
*bṛhad Indrāya gāyata* (VIII, 89, 1), I, 2, 1 (649<sup>b</sup>).  
*Bṛhaspate na paraḥ sāmno viduḥ* (II, 23, 16<sup>a</sup>), III, 1, 5 (654<sup>a</sup>); Ś. VII, 13.  
*Bṛhaspate prathamam vāco agram* (X, 71, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 3, 3 (654<sup>a</sup>).  
*bhūya id vāvṛdhe* (VI, 30, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 3, 7; V, 1, 5 (673<sup>a</sup>).  
*Marutvāṇ Indro vr̥ṣabho raṇāya* (III, 47, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2, 2; V, 1, 1 (692<sup>b</sup>).  
*mahāṇ Indro ya ojasa* (VIII, 6, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 3 (695<sup>b</sup>); Ś. II, 8.  
*mā cid anyad vi śaṃsata* (VIII, 1, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 4 (702<sup>a</sup>).

*Mitram huve pūṭadakṣam* (I, 2, 7<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (713<sup>b</sup>). Pādas <sup>a</sup> and <sup>b</sup> are cited.  
*mo su tvā vāghataś cana* (VII, 32, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 4 (723<sup>b</sup>).

*ya ānayat parāvataḥ* (VI, 45, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (724<sup>a</sup>).  
*ya Indra somapūṭamaḥ* (VIII, 12, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (725<sup>a</sup>).

*ya eka id vidayate* (I, 84, 7<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (726<sup>b</sup>).  
*yaḥ satrāhā vicarjaṇiḥ* (VI, 46, 3), V, 2, 4 (777<sup>b</sup>).

*yatra brahmā pavamānaḥ* (IX, 113, 6<sup>a</sup>), III, 2, 4 (741<sup>b</sup>).

*yad agna eṣā samitir bhavāti* (X, 11, 8), V, 1, 1 (749<sup>b</sup>).

*yad anti yac ca dūrake* (IX, 67, 21), III, 2, 4 (751<sup>a</sup>).

*yad Indra prāḡ apāḡ udak* (VIII, 4, 1), V, 2, 4 (753<sup>b</sup>).

*yad Indrāhaṇi yathā tvam* (VIII, 14, 1), V, 2, 5 (754<sup>a</sup>).

*yad vāvāna* (X, 74, 6<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (760<sup>b</sup>).

*yas tigmaṣṭriṅgo vṛjabho na bhīmaḥ* (VII, 19, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (770<sup>b</sup>).

*yas tityājya sacividaṃ sakhāyam* (X, 71, 6<sup>a</sup>), III, 2, 4 (770<sup>b</sup>, where the variant in TA. is not noted); Ś. VIII, 6. Verse cited in full.

*yasya tyac chambaraṃ made* (VI, 43, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (774<sup>b</sup>).

*yā Indra bhuja ābharah* (VIII, 97, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 4 (778<sup>b</sup>); Ś. II, 9.

*yāvad dyāvāpṛthivī tāvad it tat* (X, 114, 8<sup>b</sup>), I, 3, 8 (786<sup>a</sup>).

*yāvad brahma viṣṭhitam tāvatī vāk* (X, 114, 8<sup>d</sup>), I, 3, 8 (786<sup>a</sup>).

*yo jāta eva prathamā manasvān* (II, 12, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 2; V, 3, 1 (808<sup>b</sup>).

*yonis ṭa Indra sadane akūri* (VII, 24, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 3, 5 (810<sup>b</sup>).

*yo rūjā carjaṇinām* (VIII, 70, 1<sup>c</sup>), V, 2, 4 (812<sup>b</sup>).

*rathantaram ā jabhārā Vasiṣṭhaḥ* (X, 181, 1<sup>d</sup>), III, 1, 6 (817<sup>b</sup>).

*rātrīśūktā* (X, 127, 1<sup>a</sup>), III, 2, 4 (823<sup>b</sup>).

*revatīr naḥ saikhamādaḥ* (I, 30, 13<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (830<sup>b</sup>).

*vane na vā yo adhāyī cākan* (X, 29, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 2; V, 3, 1 (837<sup>a</sup>).

*vayam gha tvā sutāvantah* (VIII, 33, 1), V, 2, 4 (838<sup>a</sup>).

*vāyav ā yāhi darīata* (I, 2, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 4 (860<sup>a</sup>). Pādas <sup>a</sup> and <sup>b</sup> are cited.

*vātrahatyāya śavase* (III, 37, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (863<sup>a</sup>).

*vāvṛdhānaḥ śavasā bhūryojāḥ* (X, 120, 2<sup>a</sup>), I, 3, 4 (863<sup>a</sup>); Ś. II, 1.

*vidhūṃ dadrāṇam samane bahūnām* (X, 55, 5<sup>a</sup>), V, 3, 1 (869<sup>a</sup>).

*viṣo viṣo vo atithim* (VIII, 74, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 1 (877<sup>b</sup>); Ś. II, 2.

*vaiśvānarāya dhiṣaṇām ṛtāvṛdhe* (III, 2, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 5, 3 (906<sup>b</sup>).

*sakhāya ā śiṣāmahi* (VIII, 24, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (951<sup>b</sup>).

*sanitah susanitar* (VIII, 46, 20<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (966<sup>a</sup>).

*samidhāgnim* (VIII, 44, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 1, 1 (980<sup>b</sup>).

*sahasradhā pañcodasāny ukthā* (X, 114, 8<sup>a</sup>), V, 3, 8 (1001<sup>a</sup>).

*suta it tvam nimitla Indra some* (VI, 23, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 2 (1015<sup>a</sup>).

*surūpakṣnum ūtaye* (I, 4, 1<sup>a</sup>), V, 2, 5 (1021<sup>b</sup>).

*sūrya ātmā jagatas* (I, 115, 1<sup>d</sup>), II, 2, 4; III, 2, 3 (1025<sup>b</sup>).

*svādavaḥ somā ā yāhi* (VIII, 2, 28), V, 2, 3 (1054<sup>b</sup>).

*svādoḥ svādīyah svādunā sṛjā sam* (X, 120, 3<sup>a</sup>), I, 3, 4; V, 1, 6 (1055<sup>a</sup>).

*hastacyuti janayanta* (VII, 1, 1<sup>b</sup>), I, 1, 2 (1065<sup>b</sup>).

*hotājaniṣṭa cetanaḥ* (II, 5, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 1, 1 (1072<sup>b</sup>).

In the Śānti verses (see Crit. Note on I, 1) also occur<sup>1</sup> :—

*abhīṣu naḥ* (IV, 31, 3<sup>a</sup>), (not in Bloomfield, 96<sup>b</sup>).  
*āvadaṃ tvam śakune bhādrām ā vada* (II, 43, 3<sup>a</sup>), (not in Bloomfield, 186<sup>b</sup>).

*kayā naḥ citra ā bhuvat* (IV, 31, 1<sup>a</sup>), (319<sup>a</sup>).  
*kas tvā satyo madānām* (IV, 31, 2<sup>a</sup>), (not in Bloomfield, 322<sup>b</sup>).

<sup>1</sup> In view of the variants in the MSS. I have given only the first Pādas. All the verses are assumed to be quoted in full.



*tac cakṣur devahitam* (VII, 66, 16), (not in Bloomfield, 388<sup>a</sup>).

*tvam Agne vṛatāpā asi* (VIII, 11, 1), (not in Bloomfield, 450<sup>b</sup>).

*bhadraṃ karṇebhīḥ śṛṇuyāma devāḥ* (I, 89, 8<sup>a</sup>), (664<sup>a</sup>, where only the *pratika* is given).

*bhadraṃ no api vātaya manaḥ* (X, 20, 1<sup>a</sup>), (not in Bloomfield, 664<sup>a</sup>).

The following occur in the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka I, II, VII-XII.

*Aditiḥ dyaur Aditir antarikṣam* (I, 89, 10<sup>a</sup>), VII, 15 (50<sup>b</sup>). Verse cited in full.

*adhvaryavo bhāratendrāya somam* (II, 14, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 16 (59<sup>a</sup>).

*astāvry Agniḥ śimīvadbhīr arkaiḥ* (I, 141, 13<sup>a</sup>), II, 18 (136<sup>a</sup>).

*ā mandrair Indra haribhīḥ* (III, 45, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 9 (176<sup>b</sup>).

*Indraḥ suteṣu someṣu* (VIII, 13, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 10 (218<sup>a</sup>).

*uta syā naḥ Sarasvatī juṣāṇā* (VII, 95, 4<sup>a</sup>), I, 2 (252<sup>b</sup>).

*ud vayanṃ tamasaḥ pari* (I, 50, 10<sup>a</sup>), VIII, 5 (263<sup>b</sup>). Verse cited in full.

*ud vāṃ cakṣur Varuṇa supṛatikam* (VII, 61, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2 (263<sup>b</sup>).

*uruvyacasā mahinī asaścata* (I, 160, 2<sup>a</sup>), II, 18 (276<sup>a</sup>).

*ṛṣvā ta Indra sthāvirasya bāhū* (VI, 47, 8<sup>c</sup>), II, 4 (294<sup>b</sup>).

*ka u śravat katamo yajñīyānām* (IV, 43, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2 (315<sup>b</sup>).

*kim u śreṣṭhaḥ kim yaviṣṭha na ājagan* (I, 161, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 18 (327<sup>b</sup>).

*kuvid aṅga namaś ye vṛdhāsah* (VII, 91, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2 (329<sup>b</sup>).

*ko vas trūtā vasavaḥ ko varūtā* (IV, 55, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 2 (335<sup>b</sup>).

*te hi dyāvāpṛthivī vilvāsaṃbhuvā* (I, 160, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 18 (445<sup>b</sup>).

*devayor eti sūryas tatanvān* (VII, 61, 1<sup>b</sup>), I, 2 (491<sup>a</sup>).

*dūrāv ṛtasya subhage vy āvar* (VII, 95, 6<sup>b</sup>), I, 2 (513<sup>b</sup>).

*na nindima camasaṃ yo mahākulaḥ* (I, 161, 1<sup>c</sup>), II, 18 (529<sup>a</sup>).

*śaṃ na Indrāgnī bhavatam avobhīḥ* (VII, 35, 1<sup>a</sup>), (917<sup>a</sup>, where only the *pratika* is given).

*śaṃ no Mitro śaṃ Varuṇaḥ* (I, 90, 9<sup>a</sup>), (not in Bloomfield, 918<sup>b</sup>).

*stuṣe janāṃ suvratāṃ natyasiḥhīḥ* (VI, 49, 1<sup>a</sup>), (1041<sup>a</sup>, where only the *pratika* is given, as in the next).

*syonā pṛthivī bhava* (I, 22, 15<sup>a</sup>), (1046<sup>a</sup>).

*Prajāpate na tvad etāny anyah* (X, 121, 10<sup>a</sup>), XII, 2, v. 8 (612<sup>a</sup>). Verses in full.

*baḥ itthā tad vapuṣe dhāyī darītatam* (I, 141, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 18 (644<sup>b</sup>). Insert *tad* in Friedländer's text.

*bṛhan mahānta urviyā vi rājatha* (V, 55, 2<sup>b</sup>), II, 18 (650<sup>b</sup>).

*mahat tan nāma guhyaṃ puruṣpṛk* (X, 55, 2<sup>a</sup>), VII, 20 (694<sup>b</sup>). Verse cited in full.

*mahān Indro nṛvad ā carṣaṇiprāḥ* (VI, 19, 1<sup>a</sup>), I, 3 (695<sup>b</sup>).

*mā na stenebhyo ye abhi druhas pade* (II, 23, 16<sup>a</sup>), VII, 13 (706<sup>a</sup>). Verse cited in full.

*ya eka id havyaḥ carṣaṇīnām* (VI, 22, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 4 (726<sup>b</sup>).

*yaṃ sūryasya duhitāvrṇita* (IV, 43, 2<sup>a</sup>), I, 2 (728<sup>b</sup>).

*yāvat taras tanvo yāvad ojaḥ* (VIII, 91, 4<sup>a</sup>), I, 2 (786<sup>a</sup>).

*yāvan naraḥ cakṣasā dīdhyanāḥ* (VII, 91, 4<sup>b</sup>), I, 2 (786<sup>b</sup>).

*vide vṛdhasya dakṣaso mahān hi śaḥ* (VIII, 13, 1<sup>c</sup>), II, 10 (867<sup>b</sup>).

*vilvā vāmāni dhīmahi* (V, 82, 6<sup>c</sup>), II, 18 (885<sup>b</sup>).

*viśvo hy anyo arir ājagāma* (X, 28, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 4 (891<sup>a</sup>).

*śāsa itthā mahān asi* (X, 152, 1<sup>a</sup>), II, 15; XII, 7 (923<sup>b</sup>).

*sa pratnathā kavivṛdhah* (VIII, 63, 4<sup>a</sup>), II, 15 (974<sup>a</sup>).

*sahiyaso Varuṇa Mitra martāt* (IV, 55, 1<sup>c</sup>), I, 2 (1005<sup>a</sup>).

*stotāram in maghavann aśya vardhaya* (VIII, 97, 1<sup>c</sup>), II, 9 (1041<sup>b</sup>).

*stomair Vatsarya vāvṛdhe* (VIII, 6, 1<sup>c</sup>), II, 8 (1043<sup>a</sup>).

## INDEX II

### QUOTATIONS FROM OTHER SOURCES THAN THE ṚGVEDA, NIVIDS, PRAIṢAS, ETC.

(All the Pādas of metrical passages are given as in Bloomfield's *Vedic Concordance* (Harvard Oriental Series, Vol. X, 1906). Metrical passages are marked (v). The references in brackets are to page and column of the *Concordance*.)

- agnir ivānadhṛṣyaḥ pṛthivīva suṣadā bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1 (14<sup>a</sup>).
- atichandasā tvā (chandasodūhāmi)*, V, 1, 4 (348<sup>a</sup>, under *gūyatrena tvā*, &c. The separate Mantras should rather be given separately).
- atko tanūr eva tanvo astu bheṣajam* (v), I, 3, 4 (47<sup>b</sup>).
- ānu dyāvapṛthivī pūrvadhūtau*, V, 1, 1 (v) (64<sup>b</sup>).
- ānu mām Indro ānu mām Bṛhaspātīh*, V, 1, 1 (v) (66<sup>a</sup>).
- ānu mām Mitrāvaruṇā ihāvātām*, V, 1, 1 (v) (66<sup>b</sup>).
- ānu tamsiṣo dīśaḥ*, IV, 1 (v) (66<sup>b</sup>).
- ānu sómo ānu vāg devy āvit*, V, 1, 1 (v) (67<sup>b</sup>).
- antarikṣam ivānāpyam dyaur ivānadhṛṣyo bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1 (70<sup>b</sup>, with the misreading °dhṛṣṭo, which is in no text or MS. and is contradicted by the context).
- ānto vācō vibhuḥ sārvasmād ūttaram*, V, 3, 2 (v) (not in Bloomfield).
- annam iva vibhu yajña iva prabhur* (v. l. *prabhūr*) *bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1 (74<sup>a</sup>).
- annasubhe varṣāpavitram gōbhagam*, V, 3, 2 (v) (not in Bloomfield).
- apānam anvīkhasva*, V, 1, 4 (81<sup>b</sup>).
- apānāya tvā (ullikhāmi)*, V, 1, 4 (82<sup>a</sup>).
- amṛtasya trīyaṁ mahīm*, V, 3, 2 (v) (102<sup>a</sup>).
- ayūtākṣaram amṛtam dūhānam*, V, 3, 2 (v) (not in Bloomfield).
- ārcanty arkām devātāḥ svarkāḥ*, V, 2, 2 (v) (113<sup>b</sup>).
- avratām kinoti nā spṛad rayīh*, V, 2, 2 (v) (125<sup>a</sup>, under *avratō*).
- aḥar iva svam rātrir iva priyā bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1 (150<sup>a</sup>).
- Ādityās tvā jūgatena*, &c., V, 1, 4 (165<sup>a</sup>, cf. 164<sup>b</sup>); Ś. I, 7.
- ānuṣṭubhena tvā (chandasodūhāmi)*, V, 1, 4 (384<sup>a</sup>).
- āpa iva rasa oṣadhaya iva rūpaṁ bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1 (171<sup>a</sup>).
- ābhīḥ tvām abhīṣṭibhīh* (v), IV, 1 (176<sup>a</sup>).
- ā yāhi pṛba mātṛva* (v), IV, 1 (179<sup>b</sup>).
- āyuh prāṇām me dhukṛva*, V, 3, 1 (180<sup>b</sup>, cf. Kātyāyana Śrauta Sūtra, III, 4, 13, where *prāṇām* is omitted).
- ā yō mānyāya manyāve* (v), IV, 1 (183<sup>a</sup>).
- ā stobhati trūtō yūvā sā Indrah* (v), V, 2, 2 (193<sup>b</sup>).
- idaṁ madhu*, V, 1, 1 (204<sup>a</sup>).
- idaṁ madhū* 3, V, 1, 1 (204<sup>a</sup>, no separate head).
- ino vdsuh sāmajaḥ parvateṣṭhāḥ* (v), V, 2, 1 (205<sup>a</sup>, as *ino vasu* &c.).
- Indrah karmākṣitam amṛtam vyōma* (v), V, 3, 1 (207<sup>c</sup>, see also note for parallel).
- Indrah pātis tavāstamo jāneṣv ā* (v), V, 2, 1 (207<sup>b</sup>).
- Indrah śarvadbhīr johūtra evaiḥ* (v), V, 2, 1 (214<sup>a</sup>).
- Indraṁ dhānasya sātāye* (v), IV, 1 (210<sup>b</sup>, cf. RV., VIII, 3, 5<sup>a</sup>).



*Indrasya dhṛṣṭitām sākhaḥ* (v), V, 2, 1 (215<sup>b</sup>).  
*Indrasya rāntyaṃ brhāt* (v), V, 2, 1 (216<sup>a</sup>).  
*Indro vide tām u stuṣe* (v) IV, 1 (228<sup>b</sup>).  
*Indro viśvaṃ virājati* (v), V, 3, 1 (228<sup>b</sup>).  
*imaṃ tīvrasutaṃ pīḁa*, V, 1, 1 (231<sup>b</sup>).  
*iṣaṃ no Mitrāvárūṇā kártañjāṃ* (v), V, 2, 2 (239<sup>a</sup>).

*īṣe hī Śakráḥ* (v), IV, 1 (246<sup>a</sup>).

*ukthaśā yaja somasya*, V, 3, 2; 3 (om is prefixed), (246<sup>b</sup>, 313<sup>a</sup>).  
*úpa prakṣe mádhumatī kṣiyántaḥ* (v), V, 2, 2 (266<sup>a</sup> as *upaprakṣe*).  
*úpehī vívādha* (quasi-verse), IV, 1 (272<sup>a</sup>).  
*úpo mányāya manyāve* (quasi-verse), IV, 1 (272<sup>b</sup>).

*ṛtām satyāṃ vijigyānām vívācanām* (v), V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).  
*ṛbhūr vigāhā eṣāḥ* (v), V, 2, 1 (916<sup>a</sup> as *īatrūn* &c.; which rather belongs to the end of the preceding Pāda).

*etās ta uktha bhūtayaḥ* (v), V, 3, 2 (300<sup>a</sup> as *ukthabhūtayaḥ*).  
*evā hī devā 3 h*, IV, 1 (305<sup>a</sup>, no *pluti*).  
*evā hī Pūṣā 3 u*, IV, 1 (305<sup>a</sup>, no *pluti*).  
*evā hī Viṣṇā 3 u*, IV, 1 (305<sup>a</sup>, no *pluti*).  
*evā hī Śakráḥ*, IV, 1 (305<sup>a</sup>).  
*evā hīndrá 3*, IV, 1 (305<sup>a</sup> as *hīndram*).  
*evā hy agnā 3 i*, IV, 1 (305<sup>a</sup>, no *pluti*).  
*evā hy evā*, IV, 1 (305<sup>b</sup>).  
*eṣa brahma*, V, 2, 2 (*pratīka* only) (306<sup>b</sup>).  
*ehy evā 3 idaṃ madhu*, V, 1, 1 (309<sup>a</sup>).

*oṣṭhāpīdhānā nakulī* &c. (v), III, 2, 5 (316<sup>a</sup> gives other citations but not this).

*auṣṇihena tvā* (*chandasadūhāmī*), V, 1, 4 (348<sup>a</sup>).

*krātus chandā ṛtām brhāt* (v), IV, 1 (336<sup>b</sup>).

*gōyatrena tvā* (*chandasadūhāmī*), V, 1, 4 (348<sup>a</sup>).  
*gāva iva punarbhūvo mithunam iva marīcayo bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1 (348<sup>b</sup>).

*cāru mām iha vādayet* (v), III, 2, 5 (not in Bloomfield).

*cikīṭvo abhī no naya* (v), IV, 1 (368<sup>a</sup>).

*jāgatena tvā* (*chandasadūhāmī*), V, 1, 4 (348<sup>a</sup>).

*jētāram āparājītam*, IV, 1 (382<sup>b</sup>).

*jyōtir ūdhar āprativādaḥ pūrvam* (v), V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).

*tāpastanv Indrajyesthaṃ sahāsvadhāram*, V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).

*tām ūtāye havāmahe* (v), IV, 1 (406<sup>b</sup>).

*tābhīr ma iḥā dhukṣva*, V, 3, 2 (424<sup>a</sup>).

*tējāḥ prāṇāsyāyātanaṃ mānasāḥ*, V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).

*tēnāhām vīśvam āpyāsam*, V, 3, 2 (440<sup>b</sup>).

*tē no devāḥ suhavāḥ śārma yachata*, V, 1, 1 (441<sup>b</sup>).

*traisṭubhena tvā* (*chandasadūhāmī*), V, 1, 4 (348<sup>a</sup>).

*tvām hy ēka īṣiḥ* (v), V, 2, 2 (456<sup>b</sup>, cf. RV., IV, 32, 7<sup>a</sup>).

*dantaiḥ parivṛtā pavīḥ* (v), III, 2, 5 (not in Bloomfield).

*dādhrjānāṃ dhṛṣṭitām śāvaḥ* (dub. read.) (v), V, 2, 1 (475<sup>a</sup>).

*dvaipadena tvā* (*chandasadūhāmī*), V, 1, 4 (348<sup>a</sup>).

*dhenū pinvati cākṣuḥ śrōtram prāṇāḥ* (v), V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).

*namas te gōyatrāya*, V, 1, 2 (533<sup>a</sup>).

*namas te brhate*, V, 1, 2 (533<sup>b</sup>).

*namas te bhadrāya*, V, 1, 2 (533<sup>b</sup>).

*namas te rāthantarāya*, V, 1, 2 (533<sup>b</sup>).

*nādhrjā ā dudharja* (dub. read.) (v), V, 2, 1 (545<sup>b</sup>).

*nūnāṃ tām nāvyaṃ sām nyase* (v), IV, 1 (556<sup>b</sup>).

*pañcaviṃśasya stomasya*, &c., V, 1, 5 (563<sup>a</sup>).

*paśūn viśaṃ me dhukṣva*, V, 3, 1 (578<sup>a</sup>).

*pāñktena tvā* (*chandasadūhāmī*), V, 1, 4 (348<sup>a</sup>).

*pitāro mā vīśvam idm ca bhūtām*, V, 1, 1 (583<sup>a</sup>).

*pīvarīm iṣaṃ kṛnuhī na Indra* (v), V, 2, 1 (588<sup>a</sup>).

*purā yād im āti vyāthīḥ*, V, 2, 1 (594<sup>a</sup>).

*purā vā yādī vehāsa nūndm* (v), V, 2, 2 (not in Bloomfield as a separate entry).

*pūśyanto rayīm dhīmāke tām Indra* (v), V, 2, 2 (597<sup>b</sup>).

*pūrtīḥ laviṣṭha śasyate* (v), IV, 1 (598<sup>a</sup>).

*pūrvasya yāt te adriṣaḥ* (v), IV, 1 (598<sup>b</sup>).

*pūrvīnām pūrvāso* (v), IV, 1 (598<sup>b</sup>).

*prthivyuparḍm Vāruṇavōyvitamam*, V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).

*prānimātaraḥ Marūtaḥ svarkāḥ* (v), V, 1, 1 (605<sup>b</sup>).

*prācetaṇa prā cetaya* (v), IV, 1 (608<sup>a</sup>).

*Prajāpatiḥ idāṁ brāhma* (v), V, 3, 1 (610<sup>b</sup>).

*pratī vām rjīṣi* (v), V, 2, 1 (618<sup>a</sup>).

*prātiṣṭhā hṛdayasya sārvaṁ* (v), V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).

*prābho jñāsyā Vytrahan* (v), IV, 1 (625<sup>b</sup>).

*prā vo Indrāya* (v), V, 2, 2 (628<sup>b</sup>).

*prāṇam anupreṅkhasva*, V, 1, 4 (635<sup>b</sup>).

*prāṇāya tvā (ullikkāmi)*, V, 1, 4 (637<sup>a</sup>).

*prēmāṇi vācam vadisyāmi*, &c., V, 1, 5 (642<sup>b</sup>); in the parallel passages from Lāṭyāyana and Śāṅkhāyana Bloomfield reads *svargam ayaṣyan* and *svargam iṣyan* respectively, I think wrongly); Ś. I, 8 (with variants).

*bārhatena tvā (chandasoḍūhāmi)*, V, 1, 4 (348<sup>a</sup>).

*brāhma prajāṁ me dhukṣva*, V, 3, 2 (658<sup>b</sup>).

*brahmeva loke kṣatram iva kṛiyāṁ bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1 (661<sup>a</sup>).

*bhūvo vājānāṁ pātir vāsāṇ ānu* (v), IV, 1 (670<sup>b</sup>).

*bhūtebhyas tvā*, V, 1, 4 (671<sup>b</sup>, 672<sup>a</sup>).

*bhūr bhuvāḥ svar*, I, 3, 2; V, 1, 4 (674<sup>b</sup>).

*bhūr bhūvaḥ svar trāyo vādo 'si*, V, 3, 2 (not separated in Bloomfield).

*māmhiṣṭha Indra vijāro (?) grṇādhyai* (v), V, 2, 1 (676<sup>b</sup>).

*māmhiṣṭha vajrinṇ rñjāse* (v), IV, 1 (676<sup>b</sup>).

*māmhiṣṭho vājasātaye* (v), V, 2, 2 (677<sup>a</sup>, cf. RV., VIII, 4, 18<sup>a</sup>; 88, 6<sup>a</sup>).

*mātsva mādaṁ puruvāraṁ maghāya* (v), V, 2, 1 (678<sup>b</sup>).

*mana ivāpūrvam vāyur iva ślokaḥ bhūr bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1 (682<sup>b</sup>).

*mayi kīrtiḥ*, V, 1, 5 (689<sup>a</sup>).

*mayi ghoṣaḥ*, V, 1, 5 (689<sup>a</sup>).

*mayi bhagaḥ*, V, 1, 5 (689<sup>b</sup>).

*mayi bhuktiḥ*, V, 1, 5 (689<sup>b</sup>).

*mayi bhujāḥ*, V, 1, 5 (689<sup>b</sup>).

*mayi mahān*, V, 1, 5 (690<sup>a</sup>).

*mayi yataḥ*, V, 1, 5 (690<sup>a</sup>).

*mayi lṛiḥ*, V, 1, 5 (690<sup>a</sup>).

*mayi ślokaḥ*, V, 1, 5 (690<sup>a</sup>).

*mayi stobhaḥ*, V, 1, 5 (690<sup>a</sup>).

*mayi stomaḥ*, V, 1, 5 (690<sup>a</sup>).

*mūrkhā lokānāṁ asi* (v), V, 3, 2 (719<sup>a</sup>, treated apparently as prose).

*yāḥ śaviṣṭhaḥ śūrāṇām* (v), IV, 1 (769<sup>b</sup>).

*yāṁ tvā śaviṣṭham imdhe* (v), V, 2, 2 (762<sup>a</sup>).

*yāsyedam āvājas tūjo yūjo vānaṁ śdhaḥ* (v), V, 2, 1 (two Pādas, in 777<sup>a</sup> the first Pāda is given, with the remark that the Āraṇyaka omits *yūjaḥ*, but the second Pāda is not given under *yūjaḥ*).

*yūjo vānaṁ śdhaḥ*, see preceding.

*yē Agnijiḥvā ūta vā yūjatrāḥ* (v), V, 1, 1 (795<sup>b</sup>).

*ye 3 yajāmahe*, V, 3, 2 (804<sup>b</sup>, without *pluti*).

*yō māṁhiṣṭho maghānām* (v), IV, 1 (811<sup>b</sup>).

*rayiṁ piśāṅgasamḍṛam* (v), V, 2, 1 (820<sup>a</sup>, cf. RV., II, 41, 9<sup>b</sup>).

*rāyē vājāya vajrivāḥ* (v), IV, 1 (825<sup>b</sup>).

*Rudrās tvā traiṣṭubhena* &c., V, 1, 4 (828<sup>b</sup>); Ś. I, 7.

*lokāṁ brahmavarcaśam abhāyaṁ yajñasamḍṛdhiṁ me dhukṣva*, V, 3, 2 (832<sup>b</sup>).

*vāṣi hī Śakrāḥ*, IV, 1 (847<sup>a</sup>).

*vāṣi hī Śakro vāsāṇ ānu*, IV, 1 (847<sup>a</sup>).

*vasavaḥ tvā gāyatreṇa* &c., V, 1, 4 (848<sup>a</sup>); Ś. I, 7.

*vāk*, V, 1, 5 (852<sup>a</sup>).

*vāg devī somasya tṛpyatu*, V, 5, 2 (853<sup>a</sup>).

*Vāyūḥ Pūṣā Varūṇaḥ Somo Agnīḥ* (v), V, 1, 1 (860<sup>b</sup>).

*vidā maghavan vidā gātūm* (v), IV, 1 (867<sup>a</sup>).

*vidā maghavan vidā 3m*, IV, 1 (867<sup>a</sup>).

*vidā rāyāḥ suvīryam* (v), IV, 1 (867<sup>a</sup>).

*vīprā gāthāṁ gāyata yāj yūjoṣat* (v), V, 2, 2 (871<sup>a</sup>).

*vi vā asmāsu rājasi* (v), I, 4, 3 (not in Bloomfield, perhaps as not being considered a Mantra).

*viśvāto dāvan viśvāto na ā bhara* (v), V, 2, 2 (879<sup>a</sup>).

*viśvāya pra stobha vidvān* (v), V, 2, 2 (881<sup>a</sup>, where the whole line with *puro* is given as if one Pāda).

*viśve tvā devā ānuṣṭubhena* &c., V, 1, 4 (886<sup>b</sup>).

*vyānam anuvīṅkhasva*, V, 1, 4 (909<sup>b</sup>, where the quotation is given as *anu vīṅkhasva*).

*vyānāya tvollikkāmi*, V, 1, 4 (909<sup>b</sup>).



- śāpāṇ padāṇa maghāṇi rayāṇi nā sōmah (v), V, 2, 2 (920<sup>a</sup>).*  
*śāviṣṭha vajrīṇa rājase (v), IV, 1 (922<sup>a</sup>).*  
*śikṣā śācīnāṃ pate (v), IV, 1 (924<sup>a</sup>).*  
*śūro yō gōṣu gachati (v), IV, 1 (933<sup>b</sup>).*  
*śrīyaṃ yaśo me dhukṣva, V, 3, 2 (930<sup>a</sup>).*  
*sāmvelaḥ cākṣuṣaḥ sāmabhavaḥ brōtrasya, V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).*  
*samī brōtram ātmanā sam aham ātmanā, V, 1, 5 (949<sup>b</sup>).*  
*sākhā suśēvo dāvayāḥ (v), (dub. read.) IV, 1 (952<sup>b</sup>, cf. RV., I, 187, 3<sup>d</sup>).*  
*samī cakṣur manasā sam aham manasā, V, 1, 5 (956<sup>b</sup>); Ś. I, 8.*  
*satyāsammitam vākprabhūtam mānaso vibhūtam (v), V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).*  
*sā naḥ parjād āti dvīḥaḥ (v), IV, 1 (965<sup>a</sup>).*  
*sā naḥ parjād āti sriḥkaḥ (v), IV, 1 (965<sup>a</sup>).*  
*sanād āmrkta ējasa (v), V, 2, 2 (966<sup>a</sup>).*  
*sā no dadātu tāṃ rayīm (v), IV, 1, 2, 1 (967<sup>a</sup>).*  
*sā no netārāṃ mahayāma Indram (v), V, 2, 1 (967<sup>a</sup>).*  
*saptā rājāno yā udābhīṣiktāḥ (v), V, 1, 1, 1 (937<sup>a</sup>).*  
*sam anyēṣu brāvōvachai, IV, 1 (975<sup>b</sup>).*  
*sā me prāṇaḥ &c. (quasi-verse), V, 3, 2 (984<sup>a</sup>).*  
*samī prāṇo vācā sam aham vācā, V, 1, 5 (985<sup>a</sup>).*  
*Cf. Ś. I, 8.*  
*sārvam vāk pādrāv arvāk sāpru salilām (v), V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).*  
*sarvayai vācā tīānā, III, 2, 5.*  
*sārvān kāmān duhām mahāt (v), V, 3, 2 (993<sup>a</sup>).*  
*sā sāhātur vṛtrahātyeṣu sātrūn (v), V, 2, 1 (998<sup>b</sup>).*  
*sā supṛāṇīte nṛtamaḥ svarāḥ asi (v), V, 2, 2 (998<sup>b</sup>).*  
*sūtās te sōma ūpa yāhi yajñām (v), V, 2, 1 (1015<sup>b</sup>).*  
*suparṇo 'si garutmān, V, 1, 5 (1017<sup>b</sup>); Ś. I, 8.*  
*sumnā d dhihi no vaso (v), IV, 1 (1020<sup>b</sup>).*  
*sūrya ivāṇpratidhrīyaḥ candramā iva punarbhūr bhūyāsam, V, 1, 1 (1026<sup>a</sup>).*  
*sūryo nāḥsatrair avatō iḥā mānu (v), V, 1, 1 (1026<sup>b</sup>).*  
*somo me rājīyūḥ prāṇāya varjatu, V, 3, 2 (1037<sup>b</sup>).*  
*svāmī yat tanūm tanvām airayata (v), I, 3, 4 (1054<sup>b</sup>, cf. 1049<sup>b</sup>, 1055<sup>b</sup>).*  
*hṛdayagṛaṃ brāhmaṇābhartṛkam (v), V, 3, 2 (not in Bloomfield).*

In the Śānti verses occur the following (see note on I, 1). (The accents are not given.)

- Agna ilā nama ilā nama ṛṣibhyo mantrakṛd-  
bhyo mantrapatibhyo* (5<sup>a</sup>); Ś. VII, 1.  
*adadāham cakṣur iṣiram manas* (v) (not in  
Bloomfield, cf. 40<sup>a</sup>); Ś. VII, 1; IX, 1.  
*anu mām aitu indriyam* (v) (not in Bloom-  
field).  
*anu mā yantu devatāḥ* (v) (not in Bloomfield,  
who, 66<sup>a</sup>, gives MS., I, 13, 7<sup>a</sup>: *anu māyantu*  
(sic) *devatāḥ*).  
*anu mā ṛrṛr uttiṣṭhatu* (x) (not in Bloomfield).  
*anenādhitēnāhorātrān saṃdadhāmi*, II, 7 (not  
in Bloomfield); Ś. VII, 1.  
*avatu mām*, II, 7 (not in Bloomfield, 118<sup>a</sup>).  
*avatu vaktāram*, II, 7 (not in Bloomfield, 118<sup>a</sup>);  
Ś. VII, 1.  
*āvīr āvīr ma edhi*, II, 7 (not in Bloomfield).  
*udītai sukriyaṃ dadhe* (v) (not in Bloomfield,  
250<sup>a</sup>).  
*ṛtaṃ vadisyāmi satyaṃ vadisyāmi*, II, 7 (287<sup>a</sup>);  
Ś. VII, 1.  
*oṣṭhāpidhānā nakulī* (v) (cf. supra).  
*cāru mām iha vādayet* (v) (cf. supra).  
*tad aham ātmani dadhe* (v) (not in Bloomfield).  
*tad vaktāram avatu*, II, 7 (not in Bloomfield,  
396<sup>b</sup>); Ś. VII, 1.  
*tan mām avatu* II, 7 (not in Bloomfield, 402<sup>a</sup>);  
Ś. VII, 1.  
*dikṣe mā mā hṃsīḥ* (not in Bloomfield, 404<sup>a</sup>);  
Ś. VII, 1; IX, 1.  
*nama ṛṣibhyo* &c. (see *agne ilā* &c.) (not in  
Bloomfield, 530<sup>b</sup>, but in 5<sup>a</sup>).  
*namo vo astu devebhyah* (v) (not in Bloomfield,  
but cf. 5<sup>a</sup>).  
*mano me vāci pratiṣṭhitam*, II, 7 (not in Bloom-  
field, 685<sup>b</sup>); Ś. VII, 1.  
*mayi ṛrṛr mayi yasaḥ* (v) (not in Bloomfield,  
690<sup>a</sup>).  
*mā te tvoma samārṣi* (v). (702<sup>b</sup>); Ś. VII, 1.

*vān me manasi* &c., II, 7 (not in Bloomfield, 853<sup>b</sup>); Ś. VII, 1.  
*vedasya ma ānī sthaḥ*, II, 7 (not in Bloomfield, 903<sup>b</sup>). Cf. Ś. VII, 1.  
*śivā naḥ śantamā bhava* (v), (925<sup>a</sup>); Ś. VII, 1.  
*śrutam me mā prahāsīḥ*, II, 7 (not in Bloomfield, 940<sup>a</sup>).

*satyaṃ vadiṣyāmi*, II, 7 (958<sup>b</sup>); Ś. VII, 1.  
*sarvaḥ saprāṇaḥ sabala uttiṣṭhāmi* (v) (not in Bloomfield).  
*sarvasyaivā vācā īlānā* (v). (Cf. supra.)  
*sumyāikā Sarasvatī* (v), (1020<sup>b</sup>); Ś. VII, 1.  
*sūryo jyotiṣāṃ śreṣṭhaḥ* (not in Bloomfield, but cf. 40<sup>a</sup>); Ś. VII, 1; IX, 1.

In II, 3, 8 the following Śloka occur.

*tatra devāḥ sarva ekaṃ bhavanti*, 1<sup>a</sup>, 2<sup>a</sup> (391<sup>b</sup>).  
*tatra devāḥ sarvayujō bhavanti*, 3<sup>a</sup> (391<sup>b</sup>).  
*tad viyūyā kavayo 'nvavindan*, 3<sup>c</sup> (397<sup>a</sup>).  
*tena pāpmānam apahatya brahmaṇā*, 4<sup>c</sup> (438<sup>b</sup>).

*nāmāyattāḥ samatpryaṇ śrute 'dhi*, 3<sup>a</sup> (547<sup>a</sup>).  
*nainam aśrīpumān bruvaṇ*, 5<sup>b</sup> (559<sup>a</sup>).  
*nainam vācā śtrīyaṃ bruvaṇ*, 5<sup>a</sup> (559).

*pumāṇsaṃ na bruvaṇ enam*, 5<sup>c</sup> (952<sup>b</sup>).

*yac casyāḥ krūrām yac colbanīṣṇu*, 3<sup>b</sup> (736<sup>a</sup>).  
*yad akṣaram pañcavidhaṃ sameti*, 1<sup>a</sup> (749<sup>a</sup>).  
*yad akṣarād akṣaram eti yuktam*, 2<sup>a</sup> (749<sup>b</sup>).  
*yad vācā om iti yac ca neti*, 3<sup>a</sup> (759<sup>b</sup>).  
*yasmin nāmā samatpryaṇ śrute 'dhi*, 4<sup>a</sup> (773<sup>b</sup>).  
*yujō yuktā abhi yat samvahanā*, 1<sup>b</sup>, 2<sup>b</sup> (791<sup>a</sup>).  
*vadan vadati kaścana*, 5<sup>a</sup> (835<sup>a</sup>).

*satasya satyam anu yatra yujyate*, 1<sup>c</sup>, 2<sup>c</sup> (960<sup>a</sup>).  
*svargaṃ lokam apyeti vidvān*, 4<sup>a</sup> (1050<sup>b</sup>).

Prose formulae in Śākhāyana Āraṇyaka I, II, VII-XIV. (Most of these are not in Bloomfield, *Vedic Concordance*.)

*annam granthīḥ*, XI, 8.  
*annam iva sthīro vasāni vairājena chandasā*, XI, 8.  
*annavān annādo bhūyāsam*, XI, 6; 8.  
*apāne me vidyutah pratiṣṭhitāḥ svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*apāne me vidyutah pratiṣṭhitā apāno hṛdaye*, XI, 6.  
*aya iva sthīro vasāni traistubhena chandasā*, XI, 8.  
*arke 'si*, Ś. I, 7 (113<sup>b</sup>).  
*aśmeva sthīro vasāni jāgatena chandasā*, XI, 8.  
*ātmani me brahma pratiṣṭhitam svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*ātmani ma brahma pratiṣṭhitam ātmā hṛdaye*, XI, 6.  
*udāne me Parjanyaḥ pratiṣṭhitah svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*udāne me Parjanyaḥ pratiṣṭhita udāno hṛdaye*, XI, 6.  
*granthim udgrathāni*, XI, 8.  
*cakṣuṣi ma Ādityaḥ pratiṣṭhitah svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*cakṣuṣi ma Ādityaḥ pratiṣṭhitah cakṣur hṛdaye*, XI, 6.  
*tat satyaṃ devānām*, XI, 6; 8.  
*trptir iva sthīro vasāny ānuṣṭubhena chandasā*, XI, 8.

*nākam iva sthīro vasāni sāmrājyena chandasā*, XI, 8.  
*puruṣo maṇiḥ*, XI, 8.  
*Prajāpatir iva sthīro vasāny ātichandasena chandasā*, XI, 8.  
*Prajāpatiḥ tvārohatu vāyuh preṅkhoyatu*, I, 7.  
*prāṇaḥ sūtram*, XI, 8.  
*prāṇe me vāyuh pratiṣṭhitah svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*prāṇe me vāyuh pratiṣṭhito vāyur hṛdaye*, XI, 6.  
*bale ma Indrah pratiṣṭhitah svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*bale ma Indrah pratiṣṭhito balaṃ hṛdaye*, XI, 6.  
*Bṛhaspatir iva sthīro vasāni bārhatena chandasā*, XI, 8.  
*Brahmeva sthīro vasāni pāṅktena chandasā*, XI, 8.  
*manasi me candramāḥ pratiṣṭhitah svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*manasi me candramāḥ pratiṣṭhito mano hṛdaye*, XI, 6.  
*manyau ma Īśānah pratiṣṭhitah svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*manyau ma Īśānah pratiṣṭhito manyur hṛdaye*, XI, 6.  
*māham akāmo marīṣyāmi*, XI, 6; 8.  
*mūrdhani ma ākāśaḥ pratiṣṭhitah svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*mūrdhani ma ākāśaḥ pratiṣṭhito mūrdhā hṛdaye*, XI, 6.



*yat satyasanukhā devāh*, VII, 17 (probably *yat* is not quoted).

*rojatani iva sthiro vasāni svārājyeṇa chandasā*, XI, 8.

*retasi mā āpaḥ pratiṣṭhitāḥ svāhā*, XI, 5.

*retasi mā āpaḥ pratiṣṭhitā reto hṛdaye*, XI, 6.

*loham iva sthiro vasāni auspikheṇa chandasā*, XI, 8.

*vāci mā Agnih pratiṣṭhitāḥ svāhā*, XI, 5.

*vāci mā Agnih pratiṣṭhitā Agnir hṛdaye*, XI, 6.

*śarīre me pṛthivī pratiṣṭhitā svāhā*, XI, 5.

*śarīre me pṛthivī pratiṣṭhitā śarīraṇ hṛdaye*, XI, 6.

*śrotre me dīśaḥ pratiṣṭhitāḥ svāhā*, XI, 5.

*śrotre me dīśaḥ pratiṣṭhitāḥ śrotraṇ hṛdaye*, XI, 6.

Verses other than Ṛgvedic in Śākhāyana Āraṇyaka I, II, VII–XIV. The references to XII and XIV are to verses. (Several not in Bloomfield.)

*Agnir iva kakṣaṇ vibhṛtaḥ purutrā*, XII, 9<sup>a</sup>.

*Agne yaśasvin yaśase sam arpayā*, XII, 15<sup>a</sup> (Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 3<sup>a</sup>, with the reading °emam; Bloomfield, 27<sup>b</sup>).

*Agne varcasvinam kuru*, XII, 2<sup>d</sup> (Atharvaveda, III, 22, 3<sup>a</sup>; Bloomfield, 28<sup>b</sup>).

*adhītya vedam na vijānāti yo 'rtham*, XIV, 2<sup>b</sup> (Nirukta, I, 18<sup>b</sup>; Comm. on Saṃhitopaniṣad, p. 38 ed. Barnell).

*anuvṛśca madhyāt pra[vi]vṛśopariṣṭāt*, XII, 12<sup>a</sup>.

*anenendro vi mṛdho vibhṛtā*, XII, 10<sup>c</sup>.

*anenendro Vṛtram ahan*, XII, 30<sup>c</sup>. (Cf. Atharvaveda, VIII, 5, 3<sup>a</sup>; Bloomfield, 68<sup>b</sup>.)

*antarikṣam mā mā himṣā*, IX, 7 (Vājasaneyi Saṃhitā, V, 43; Bloomfield, 70<sup>b</sup>).

*abhi tiṣṭha pṛtanyataḥ*, XII, 31<sup>d</sup> (91<sup>a</sup>).

*abhy ā vartadhvam upa sevātāgnim*, XII, 18<sup>a</sup>. (Cf. Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 4<sup>a</sup>.)

*amṛtam me maṇau sūtram*, XII, 32<sup>a</sup>.

*ayaṁ śastādhipatir no astu*, XII, 18<sup>b</sup> (Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 4<sup>b</sup>, with *no*).

*ayaṁ sano nūdatām me sapatnān*, XII, 9<sup>a</sup>.

*ayaṁ sano yo 'nuvādi kila*, XII, 10<sup>a</sup>.

*ayaṁ maṇiḥ pratīkṣaḥ*, XII, 30<sup>a</sup>. (Cf. Atharvaveda, X, 3, 3<sup>a</sup>; 6<sup>d</sup>; Bloomfield, 107<sup>b</sup>.)

*ayaṁ mūrdha paramēṣṭhi svarcāḥ*, XII, 15<sup>c</sup> (Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 3<sup>c</sup>).

*alardo nāma jāto 'si*, XII, 19<sup>a</sup>.

*Asvinā apī nahyatām*, XII, 33<sup>b</sup>.

*Asvinā sārāgheṇa mā*, XII, 6<sup>a</sup> (Atharvaveda, VI, 69, 2<sup>a</sup>; IX, 1, 19<sup>a</sup>, with *mā*).

*saṁ devo devyādadhāt*, I, 5 (Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, 15, 11 *daivya*) (970<sup>a</sup>).

*saṁ Prajāpatiḥ paṣubhiḥ sam ahaṁ paṣubhiḥ*, I, 8 (985<sup>a</sup>).

*saṁ brahma brāhmanyādadhāt*, I, 5 (985<sup>b</sup>).

*saṁ mahān mahatyādadhāt*, I, 5 (985<sup>b</sup>).

*sarvam āyur aīyāyusmān*, XI, 8. (Cf. Atharvaveda, XIX, 61, 1.)

*Sāvitrir iva sthiro vasāni sarvavedachandasena chandasā*, XI, 8.

*sisam iva sthiro vasāni kākubheṇa chandasā*, XI, 8.

*suvarṇam iva sthiro vasāni gūyatreṇa chandasā*, XI, 8.

*hṛdayaṇ hṛdaye*, XI, 8.

*hṛdayam ātmani*, XI, 6.

*asya vijñānam anu saṁ rabhadhvam*, XII, 18<sup>a</sup> (Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 4<sup>c</sup>).

*Ādityāso Adityā saṁvidānāḥ*, XII, 1<sup>d</sup>.

*ā roha māṇ mahate saubhagāya*, XII, 7<sup>d</sup>; 34<sup>d</sup> (185<sup>a</sup>).

*ā vadāmi janesu*, XII, 6<sup>d</sup> (Atharvaveda, VI, 69, 2<sup>d</sup>; IX, 1, 19<sup>d</sup>, with *vadāmi janāḥ anu*).

*Indra iva Vṛtram pṛtanāsu sālā*, XII, 9<sup>b</sup> (cf. 206<sup>b</sup>).

*Indra (?) iva Vṛtram vi puro ruroja*, XII, 10<sup>b</sup> (cf. 206<sup>b</sup>).

*Indram manvānā Maruto juṣanta*, XII, 13<sup>b</sup>.

*Indrovalīm apacitīm ihā vaha*, XII, 15<sup>b</sup> (Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 3<sup>b</sup>).

*imaṁ paścāt anu jīvātha sarve*, XII, 18<sup>d</sup> (Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 4<sup>d</sup>).

*irāmaṇiṁ bālvaṇ yo bibharti*, XII, 20<sup>d</sup>–29<sup>d</sup>.

*ṛcāṇ mūrdhānaṁ yajusām uttaniṅgam*, XIV, 1<sup>a</sup>.

*ṛṣiṇā ca manīṣiṇā*, XII, 30<sup>d</sup>. (Cf. Atharvaveda, VIII, 5, 8<sup>b</sup>: *ṛṣiṇeva manīṣiṇā*.)

*etasmai rāṣṭram abhi saṁ namantām*, XII, 17<sup>d</sup> (Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 4<sup>d</sup>, with *namāma*).

*augha (v.l. ogha) iva śāpān pra nūdat sapatnān*, XII, 11<sup>c</sup>; 29<sup>a</sup>.

*kalpeta vākyaṁ pṛtanāḥ saheta*, XII, 20<sup>b</sup>.

goṣṭv alveṣu yad yasaḥ, XII, 4<sup>b</sup>. (Cf. goṣṭv alveṣu  
yan madhu in Atharvaveda, IX, 1, 18<sup>b</sup>.)

ghṛtād ulluṭṭo madhumān payasvān, XII, 7<sup>a</sup>;  
34<sup>a</sup> (360<sup>a</sup>).

jayendra satrūn jahi śūra dāsyūn, XII, 11<sup>a</sup>.

jahyāt sapatnān svadhītir vaneva, XII, 11<sup>a</sup>.

jāmo jīvāya badhyate, XII, 30<sup>b</sup>.

tataḥ kṣatram balam ojaś ca jātā, XII, 16<sup>a</sup>  
(389<sup>a</sup>).

tato dīkṣām ṛṣayaḥ svarvidāḥ, XII, 16<sup>b</sup>. (Cf.  
Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 3.)

tad asmai devā abhi saṃ namantām, XII, 16<sup>d</sup>  
(394<sup>b</sup> with namantu).

tan mayi Prajāpatiḥ, XII, 5<sup>c</sup>. (Cf. Atharva-  
veda, VI, 69, 3<sup>a</sup>.)

tan mahyaṃ sam aduḥ sarvaṃ ete, XII, 1<sup>c</sup>.

taṃ tvā sapatnakṣayaṇam, XII, 19<sup>c</sup>.

taṃ paṣyanti kavayaḥ svarvidāḥ, XII, 32<sup>b</sup>.

tena mā varcasā tvam, XII, 2<sup>c</sup>. (Cf. Atharva-  
veda, III, 22, 3.)

tvayā prañutān maghavan amitrān, XII, 12<sup>c</sup>.  
tvāṃ rudrair hetibhiḥ pinvamānāḥ, XII, 13<sup>a</sup>.

divaṃ yaya divaṃ yaya, V, 15. (Cf. RV., VIII,  
34, 1<sup>a</sup>: B reads jaya.)

divam iva dṛṇhatu, XII, 5<sup>d</sup>. (Cf. Atharva-  
veda, VI, 69, 3<sup>a</sup>: divi dyām iva dṛṇhatu.)

dyām mā leṣṭh, IX, 7. (Cf. Vājasaneyi Saṃhitā,  
V, 43, which has lekhiḥ; Bloomfield, 508<sup>a</sup>.)

dhanamjaya dharuṇo dhārayiṣṇuḥ, XII, 7<sup>b</sup>;  
34<sup>b</sup>. (Cf. 516<sup>a</sup>.)

dhātā vidhātā paramota saṃdrk, XII, 17<sup>a</sup>.  
(From Taittirīya Saṃhitā, V, 7, 4, 3<sup>a</sup>: it  
occurs also in RV., X, 82, 2<sup>b</sup>; see Bloom-  
field, 518<sup>b</sup>.)

na jambhako nāpy asuro na yakṣaḥ, XII, 25<sup>b</sup>.  
na makaro na graho na śi(ṇi)ṣumārāḥ, XII, 28<sup>b</sup>.

na māṃsam aśnāti na hanti tāni, XII, 22<sup>b</sup>.

na vṛciko na tirācinarājī, XII, 28<sup>a</sup>.

na tvōpadamī himsati kimcanainam, XII, 26<sup>c</sup>.

na saṃpatantiyo (?) na vīveśa tasmai, XII, 34<sup>b</sup>.  
na sa sapam (?) aśnāti na kilbiṣaṃ kṛtam, XII,  
21<sup>a</sup>.

na sūtikā tasya gr̥heṣu jāyate, XII, 25<sup>c</sup>.

na sailago bhavati na pāpakṛtyā, XII, 23<sup>c</sup>.

na hastinaṃ kruddham upaiti bhītim, XII, 26<sup>c</sup>.

nākam eti jñānavidhūtāpōpmā, XIV, 2<sup>d</sup> (Ni-

rukta, I, 18<sup>d</sup>; Comm. on Saṃhitopaniṣad,  
p. 38 ed. Burnell).

nāga iva pūrvapād[ā]bhīyām, XIV, 31<sup>c</sup>.

nādhīte 'dhīte vedam āhus tam ajñam, XIV, 1<sup>c</sup>.

nānyan mithas tasya kuleṣu jāyate, XIV, 23<sup>c</sup>.

nārdhe pramīyeta tared dviṣantam, XII, 20<sup>c</sup>.

nāsminn alakṣmīḥ kurute niveśanam, XII, 24<sup>c</sup>.

nāsyā tvacam himsati jātavedāḥ, XII, 22<sup>a</sup>.

nāsyā prajā duṣyati jāyamānā, XII, 23<sup>a</sup>.

nāsyāpavādā na pravādakā gr̥he, XII, 24<sup>a</sup>.

nainam rakṣo na pīlāco hinastī, XII, 25<sup>a</sup>. (Cf.

Atharvaveda, I, 35, 2<sup>a</sup>.)

nainam vyūghro na vṛko na dvīpī, XII, 26<sup>a</sup>.

nainam sarpo na pṛdākur hinastī, XII, 27<sup>a</sup>.

nainam kṛṣṇo ('hir) abhi saṃhate, XII, 28<sup>a</sup>.

nainam kruddham manyavo 'bhi yānti (?),

XII, 21<sup>c</sup>.

nainam divyo Varuṇo hanti bhītam, XII, 21<sup>b</sup>.

nainam pramattaṃ Varuṇo hinastī, XIII, 29<sup>a</sup>.

pārāvarāc chivam asmai kṛṇoti, XII, 28<sup>c</sup>.

purā sūryāt puroṣasaḥ, XII, 19<sup>b</sup> (Atharva-  
veda, X, 7, 31<sup>b</sup>).

puṣṭam iva chinnaṃ saha bandhanena, XII, 29<sup>b</sup>.

Prajāpatiḥ parameṣṭhī suvarcāḥ, XII, 17<sup>b</sup>.  
(Cf. 610<sup>a</sup>.)

pramīyukaṃ tasya dviṣantam āhuḥ, XII, 20<sup>c</sup>;  
29<sup>a</sup>.

bilvaḥ (bailvaḥ) sahasravīro 'si, XII, 33<sup>c</sup>.

bṛhad bhavaty āhitam, XII, 2<sup>b</sup> (Atharvaveda,  
III, 22, 4<sup>b</sup>, with āhuteḥ).

brahmaṇuttasya maghavan pṛtanyataḥ, XII,  
15<sup>a</sup>.

bhadram paśyanta upa sedur āgan, XII, 16<sup>a</sup>.  
(Cf. 664<sup>b</sup>.)

mayi tad hastivarcasam, XII, 3<sup>d</sup>; 4<sup>d</sup> (Atharva-  
veda, III, 22, 5<sup>d</sup>).

mayi bhargo mayi mahāḥ, XII, 5<sup>a</sup>. (Cf. Gopatha  
Brāhmaṇa, I, 5, 15, 16; 17; Bloomfield, 689<sup>b</sup>,  
690.)

mayi yajñasya yad yasaḥ, XII, 5<sup>b</sup>.

mahīyatām daṃṣṭrī vardhaneṣu, XII, 13<sup>d</sup>.

maho vigñānā upa yānti (?) mṛtyum, XII, 14<sup>d</sup>.  
(Cf. Atharvaveda, VI, 32, 3<sup>d</sup>; VIII, 8, 21<sup>d</sup>.)

mā jñātāram alata (?) mā pratīṣṭhām, XII, 14<sup>c</sup>.

(Cf. Atharvaveda, VI, 32, 3<sup>c</sup>; VIII, 8, 21<sup>c</sup>.)

mā te bhartā riṣam aham, XII, 33<sup>d</sup>.



- yac ca vācā vā puruṣe*, XII, 3<sup>a</sup>. (Cf. 729<sup>b</sup>.)  
*yac ca hastiv āhitam*, XIII, 3<sup>b</sup>.  
*yat te varco jātavedaḥ*, XII, 2<sup>a</sup>. (Atharvaveda, III, 22, 4<sup>a</sup>.)  
*yathā madhumatīm vācam*, XII, 6<sup>e</sup>.  
*yathā sapatnān samare saheyuḥ*, XII, 32<sup>d</sup>.  
*yad akṣeṣu hiranyeṣu*, XII, 4<sup>a</sup>. (Cf. 729<sup>b</sup>.)  
*yad Adityai tanvaḥ saṁbabhūva*, XII, 1<sup>b</sup>. (Cf. Atharvaveda, III, 22, 1<sup>b</sup>.)  
*yo 'rthajña it sakalan bhadram aśnute*, XIV, 2<sup>c</sup> (Nirukta, I, 18<sup>c</sup>; Comm. on Saṁhitopaniṣad, p. 38 ed. Burnell).  
*rujan sapatnān adharāṁś ca kṛṇvan*, XII, 7<sup>c</sup>, 34<sup>c</sup>.  
*rohobhyāṁ rohobhyām abhyārūḥam (?)*, X, 8.  
*vanaspate śatavallo vi roha*, IX, 7 (Vājasaneyi Saṁhitā, V, 43; also in RV., III, 8, 11<sup>a</sup>, &c.).  
*vāteṣu naṣ ṭigmajambho 'nu māṛṣī*, XII, 9<sup>d</sup>.  
*vi vṛṣca pācāt prati śūra vṛṣca*, XII, 12<sup>b</sup>. (Cf. 899<sup>b</sup>.)  
*viśvag Indra bhaṅgāḥ patantu*, XII, 15<sup>b</sup>. (Cf. 894<sup>b</sup>, 895<sup>a</sup>.)  
*Vṛtram hatveva kulilenā [vi] vṛṣca*, XII, 11<sup>b</sup>.  
*vedātho viṣṭambhajambhanam*, XII, 19<sup>d</sup>.  
*śatāyur asmiṁ jaradaṣṭiḥ praiti*, XII, 22<sup>c</sup>.  
*śatrūyatām ā bharaḥ bhojanāni*, XII, 10<sup>d</sup> (RV., V, 4, 5<sup>d</sup>; Bloomfield, 916<sup>b</sup>).  
*śiraś chiltvāsau kurute kabandham*, XIV, 1<sup>d</sup>.  
*śūra (?) riṣantaṁ Maruto 'nu yāntu*, XII, 12<sup>d</sup>.  
*sajātānām uttamaśloko astu*, XII, 15<sup>d</sup>.  
*sapatnakṣayaṇo vṛṣā*, XII, 32<sup>b</sup> (970<sup>b</sup>).  
*sam aṁktām (?) madhunā payaḥ*, XII, 6<sup>a</sup>.  
*sahasra pṛtanāyataḥ*, XII, 31<sup>b</sup> (1004<sup>a</sup>).  
*sahendra dviṣataḥ sahasvārātīḥ*, XII, 31<sup>a</sup>.  
*sāmnāṁ tiro'tharvānām uttamāṅgam*, XIV, 1<sup>b</sup>.  
*suparṇāḥ kākāḥ pramṛśantu enān*, XII, 14<sup>c</sup>.  
*surāyāṁ pūyamānāyām*, XII, 4<sup>c</sup>. (Cf. Atharvaveda, XIV, 1, 35<sup>b</sup>.)  
*suvarṇe goṣu yad varcaḥ*, XII, 3<sup>c</sup>.  
*stomaṁ chandāṁsi nivido ma āhuḥ*, XII, 17<sup>c</sup> (Taittirīya Saṁhitā, V, 7, 4, 4<sup>c</sup>, with *stōmāś*, which perhaps should be *stomāṁś*, but see J. R. A. S., 1909, p. 430).  
*sthāṇur ayaṁ bhārahārah kilābhūt*, XIV, 2<sup>a</sup> (Nirukta, I, 18<sup>a</sup>; Comm. on Saṁhitopaniṣad, p. 38 ed. Burnell).  
*hastivarcasam prathatām bṛhadvayoḥ*, XII, 1<sup>a</sup> (Atharvaveda, III, 22, 1<sup>a</sup>, with *bṛhad yaśaḥ*).

## INDEX III

PROPER NAMES, EXCLUDING THOSE OF DEITIES, FOR WHICH  
SEE INDICES IV-VI.

- Agastyah*, I, 2, 2.  
*Atrayah*, II, 2, 1.  
*Āgastyah*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2.  
*Āgnivētyāyanah*, V, 3, 3.  
*Āruṇayah*, II, 1, 4.  
*Ṛgvedaḥ*, I, 3, 2; (acc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3;  
 (gen.) III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8.  
*Kūvaṇṇyāḥ*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*Kṛṣṇahārītāḥ*, III, 2, 6 (v.l. °hārītāḥ). (*Kṛtsna-*  
*hārītāḥ*), Ś. VIII, 10.  
*Kauṇṭharavyāḥ*, III, 1, 6; 2, 2; Ś. VII, 14;  
 VIII, 2.  
*Kṣudrasūktāḥ*, II, 2, 2.  
*Gālavah*, V, 3, 3.  
*Gṛtsamadaḥ*, II, 2, 1.  
*Ceraṇḍādāḥ* (?), II, 1, 1.  
*Jātūkarnyaḥ*, V, 1, 5; 3, 3. (*Kātyāyanīputraḥ*),  
 Ś. VIII, 10.  
*Tārūkiyaḥ*, III, 1, 6 (v.l. *Tārkiyaḥ*); *Tārkiyaḥ*,  
*Tārkiyam*, I, 5, 2. (*Tārkiyaḥ*), Ś. VII, 19.  
*Dīrghatamasah* (gen.), V, 3, 2.  
*Pañcālacaṇḍah*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18.  
*Pāvamānyaḥ*, II, 2, 2.  
*Pragāthāḥ*, II, 2, 2.  
*Prātibodhīputraḥ*, III, 1, 5. (*Prātibodhīpu-*  
*traḥ*), Ś. VII, 13.  
*Bādḥvaḥ*, III, 2, 3. (*Vats(y)ah*), Ś. VIII, 3; 4.  
*Bharadvājaḥ*, I, 2, 2; 4, 2; II, 2, 2; *Bhara-*  
*dvājaprasāhaḥ*, V, 2, 2; *Bharadvājāya*, II,  
 2, 4.  
*Bhāradvājam*, I, 2, 2; (acc.) I, 2, 2.  
*Madhuchandāḥ*, I, 1, 3; (gen.) I, 1, 3; *Ma-*  
*dhuchandastvam*, I, 1, 3.  
*Mahāsūktāḥ*, II, 2, 2.  
*Mahidāsa Aitareyaḥ*, II, 1, 8; 3, 7.  
*Māṇḍavyāḥ*, III, 1, 1; (*Māṇḍavyāḥ*), Ś. VII, 2.  
*Māṇḍūkeyaḥ*, III, 1, 1; *Māṇḍūkeyānām*,  
 III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2; *Māṇḍūkeyīyam* (acc.  
 masc.), III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*Mādhuchandasam*, I, 1, 3; (acc.) I, 1, 3.  
*Mādhyanāḥ*, II, 2, 1.  
*Yajurvedaḥ*, I, 3, 2; (acc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII,  
 3; (gen.) III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8.  
*Vaṅgāvagadhāḥ* (?), II, 1, 1.  
*Vayāṇsi* (?), II, 1, 1.  
*Vasiṣṭhaḥ*, I, 4, 2; 5, 2; II, 2, 2; 4; *Vasi-*  
*ṣṭhaprasāhaḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*Vasukraḥ*, I, 2, 2; *Vasukrāt*, I, 2, 2; (nom.)  
 Ś. I, 3.  
*Vāmadevaḥ*, II, 2, 1; 5; Ś. I, 2; °devyaḥ, Ś. I, 2.  
*Vāsiṣṭhena*, I, 5, 2.  
*Vāsukram*, I, 2, 2; Ś. I, 3; (acc.) Ś. I, 3;  
*Vāsukreṇa*, I, 2, 2.  
*Vīśvāmitraḥ*, I, 2, 2; II, 2, 1; Ś. VII, 4; I,  
 2; (voc.) Ś. I, 6; *Vīśvāmitram*, II, 2, 3;  
*Vīśvāmitrāya*, II, 2, 4.  
*Vaiśvāmitram*, I, 2, 2; II, 2, 3.  
*Satarcinaḥ*, II, 2, 1.



*Śākalyaḥ*, see *Sthaviraḥ*; *Śākalyasya*, III, 1, 1;  
*Ś.* VII, 3.  
*Śākarākyaḥ*, II, 1, 4.  
*Śūravīro Māṇḍūkeyaḥ*, III, 1, 1; 3; 4. (*Sau-  
 ravīro*), *Ś.* VII, 2; 8; 9; 10.

*Sāmavedaḥ*, I, 3, 2; (acc.) III, 2, 3; *Ś.* VIII, 3;  
 (gen.) III, 2, 5; *Ś.* VIII, 8.  
*Sthaviraḥ Śākalyaḥ*, III, 2, 1; 6; *Ś.* VII, 16;  
 VIII, 1; 11.  
*Hiranyadan Vaidāḥ*, II, 1, 5.

The following other proper names occur in the Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka.

*Ajātatastruṇ Kālyam*, VI, 1; *Ajātatastruḥ*, VI,  
 1, &c.  
*Atharvāṇām*, XIV, 1.  
*Āruṇim*, III, 1; see also *Uddālaka*.  
*Āruṇikeyaḥ*, VIII, 1.  
*Uddālakaḥ*, *Uddālakāt*, XV.  
*Uddālakaḥ Āruṇiḥ*, *Uddālakād Āruṇeḥ*, XV.  
*Ulinareṣu*, VI, 1.  
*Kahoḥaḥ Kauṣītakiḥ*, *Kahoḥāt Kauṣītakeḥ*, XV.  
*Kāṭivideheṣu*, VI, 1.  
*Kurupañcāleṣu*, VI, 1.  
*Kauṣītakiḥ*, II, 17; IV, 1; 7; (gen.) *Sarvajito*,  
 IV, 7.  
*Gārgyo Bātākiḥ*, VI, 1, &c.  
*Guṇākhyāḥ Śāṅkhāyanaḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Goṣṭulavaiyāghrapadyāya*, IX, 7.  
*Gautama*, VI, 1; (gen.) VI, 1.  
*Citro Gāṅgyāyaniḥ* (v.l. *Gārgyo*), III, 1; (acc.)  
 III, 1.  
*Janakaḥ*, VI, 1.  
*Jārathāra(vā)ḥ Ārtabhāgaḥ*, VII, 20.  
*Tāṇḍavind(ā)siya*, VIII, 10.  
*Dīrghaḥ (Māṇḍūkeyaḥ)*, VII, 2.  
*Dīrghatamā Māmateyaḥ*, II, 17; (dat.) II, 17.  
*Devarātāḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Punardattaḥ*, VIII, 8.  
*Paṅgyaḥ*, IV, 2.

*Paṇḍarasādīḥ*, VII, 7 (cf. Max Müller, *R̥gveda  
 Prātīlākhyā*, p. 6; Pāṇini, VIII, 4, 48).  
*Pratīveśyaḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Priyavratāḥ Saumāpiḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Bṛhaddivāḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Bhārgavaḥ*, VII, 15.  
*Magadhavāsī*, VII, 2.  
*Matsyeṣu*, VI, 1.  
*Madhyamo (Māṇḍūkeyaḥ) Magadhavāsī*, VII, 2.  
*Māṇḍavyaḥ*, VII, 2.  
*Yājñavalkyaḥ*, IX, 7; XIII.  
*Rādheyaḥ*, VII, 7.  
*Lauhikaḥ (?)*, VII, 22.  
*Vāts(y)āḥ*, VIII, 3; 4 (*Bādhaḥ* in Aitareya).  
*Vāṭīkikāyaneḥ*, VII, 21.  
*Vīṣvamaṇaḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Vyaṣvaḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Śuṣkabhrīgūraḥ*, IV, 6 (cf. Śrauta Sūtra,  
 XVII, 7, 13).  
*Śvetaketum*, III, 1.  
*Satyakāmo Jābālaḥ*, IX, 7.  
*Satvanmatsyeṣu* (so Max Müller and Cowell,  
*S.B.E.*, I, lxxvii for *savasanmatsyeṣu*; more  
 probably *savāsa*°, as Oldenberg), VI, 1.  
*Sākamaśvaḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Sumnayaḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Sūryadattaḥ*, VII, 5.  
*Somapaḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.  
*Saumaḥ Prātīveśyaḥ*, XV; (abl.) XV.

## INDEX IV

### WORDS OCCURRING IN VERSES OTHER THAN ṚGVEDIC, NIVIDS, PRAIṢAS, ETC.

(When the case or gender is ambiguous, it is nom. or masc. unless otherwise specified. Words are given in their forms *in pausa*. Prefixes are connected with the verb, unless words intervene.)

#### A. In Aitareya Āraṇyaka and parallel passages in Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka.

- ākṣitam*, V, 3, 2.  
*agnih*, V, 1, 1; *agnā* 3 i, IV, 1.  
*agnijihvāḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*āti* (with acc.), IV, 1; V, 2, 1.  
*atichandasā*, V, 1, 4.  
*adriṇaḥ*, IV, 1.  
*advayāḥ*, IV, 1.  
*ādhyśaḥ*, V, 2, 1 (prob. w. r. for *ādhyśe*).  
*anu* (with acc.), IV, 1; V, 1, 1.  
*antaḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
*antarikṣam*, V, 1, 1.  
*annam*, V, 1, 1.  
*annaṣubhe* (?), V, 3, 2.  
*anyēṣu*, IV, 1.  
*aparājitam* (acc.), IV, 1.  
*apānam*, V, 1, 4; *apānāya*, V, 1, 4.  
*apūrnam*, V, 1, 1.  
*aprativādaḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
*abhāyam* (acc. neut.), V, 3, 2.  
*abhiṣṭibhiḥ*, IV, 1.  
*anum*, V, 1, 5.  
*amṛtaḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*amṛtam*, V, 3, 2; (acc.) ib.; (gen.) ib.  
*ayitākṣaram* (nom. or acc. neut.), V, 3, 2.  
*arkām*, V, 2, 2; *ārkāḥ*, V, 2, 2 (perhaps w. r. for *svarakāḥ*).  
*√arc*: *ārcanti*, V, 2, 2.  
*arvāk*, V, 3, 2.  
*√av*: *avatu*, *avatām*, *avantu*, V, 1, 1; *āvīt*, V, 1, 1.  
*avratām* (acc. masc.), V, 2, 2.  
*√as*: *asī*, V, 1, 5; 2, 2; 3, 2; *āsa*, V, 2, 2; *astu*, I, 3, 4.  
*√as*: *sāṃnyase* (? *sānyase*), IV, 1.  
*ahām*, V, 1, 1; 5; Ś. I, 7; *asmāsu*, I, 4, 3.  
*ahar*, V, 1, 1.  
*ā*, IV, 1; (with loc.) V, 2, 1.  
*ātmā*, V, 1, 2; (instr.) V, 1, 5.  
*ādityāḥ*, V, 1, 1; 4; Ś. I, 7.  
*ānuṣṭubhena*, V, 1, 4; Ś. I, 7.  
*√āp*: *āpyāsam*, V, 3, 2 (the ref. to *√pyai* is corrected in Whitney, *Roots, &c.*, pp. 248, 249); *anāpyam*, V, 1, 1.  
*āpāḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*ābhīḥ*, IV, 1.  
*āyātanam*, V, 3, 2.  
*āyuh* (acc.), V, 3, 2.  
*ārājas* (?), V, 2, 1 (perhaps w. r. for *ārājas* (?)).  
*√i*: *īmake*, V, 2, 2; *ehi*, V, 1, 1; *īpehi*, IV, 1.  
*īlām*, V, 2, 2.  
*idām*, V, 1, 1; 2, 1; (acc.) V, 1, 1; 3, 2.  
*ināḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*Indraḥ*, IV, 1; V, 1, 1; 2, 1; 2; 3, 1; 2; (acc.) IV, 1; V, 2, 1; (dat.) V, 2, 2; (gen.) V, 2, 1; (voc.) V, 2, 2; with *pluti*, IV, 1.  
*Indrajyestham*, V, 3, 2 (accent dubious).  
*imam*, V, 1, 1; 5; *imām*, V, 1, 5.  
*iva*, V, 1, 1.  
*īṣam*, V, 2, 2; *īṣe*, IV, 1.  
*ihā*, III, 2, 5; V, 2, 2; 3, 2.  
*√iṅkh*: *anupreṅkhasva*, *anvīṅkhasva*, *anuvīṅkhasva*, V, 1, 4.  
*īm*, V, 2, 1.  
*√ir*: *airayata*, I, 3, 4.  
*√iṣ*: *iṣe*, IV, 1; *iṣiṣe*, V, 2, 2; *iṣānā*, III, 2, 5.



- u*, IV, 1.  
*uktha* (voc.), V, 3, 2.  
*ukthasāh*, V, 3, 2.  
*utā vā*, V, 1, 1.  
*uttarāh*, V, 1, 2; *uttaram* (nom. neut.), V, 3, 2.  
*udābhīṣikṭāh*, V, 1, 1 (dubious accent).  
*ūpa* (with loc.), V, 2, 2; *ūpo*, IV, 1.  
*ūtāye*, IV, 1.  
*ūdhaḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
*√ūh*: *udūhāmi*, V, 1, 4.  
*√rj*: *rñjase*, IV, 1.  
*rjīṣi*, V, 2, 1.  
*ṛtām*, IV, 1; V, 3, 2.  
*ṛbhūh*, V, 2, 1.  
*ēkaḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*etāh*, V, 3, 2.  
*evā*, IV, 1; V, 1, 1; *eva*, I, 3, 4.  
*ēvāh*, V, 2, 1.  
*ejāh*, V, 2, 1.  
*ōjasā*, V, 2, 2.  
*ōśadhayaḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*ōṣṭhāpīdhānā*, III, 2, 5.  
*ausṇhikena*, V, 1, 4; Ś. I, 7.  
*kārma*, V, 3, 2.  
*kāmān*, V, 3, 2.  
*kīrtiḥ*, V, 1, 5.  
*kulīdantaiḥ* (so comm., but see *nakulī*), III, 2, 5.  
*√kr*: *kṛṇuhī*, *kārtana*, V, 2, 2; *kariṣyantīm*, V, 1, 5; Ś. I, 8.  
*krātuh*, IV, 1.  
*kṣatram*, V, 1, 1.  
*√ksi*: *kṣiyāntaḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*√kṣi*: *ākṣitam*, V, 2, 2.  
*√gam*: *gāchati*, IV, 1; *gachantīm*, V, 1, 5.  
*garutmān*, V, 1, 5; Ś. I, 8.  
*√gā*: *prā-gāyata*, V, 2, 2.  
*gātīm*, IV, 1.  
*gāthām*, V, 2, 1.  
*gāyatrena*, V, 1, 4; Ś. I, 8; (dat.) V, 1, 2.  
*gāvah*, V, 1, 1.  
*√gr*: *grṇādhyai*, V, 2, 1.  
*gōbhagam*, V, 3, 2.  
*gōṇu*, IV, 1.  
*gṛvāh* (acc.), I, 4, 3.  
*ghoṣaḥ*, V, 1, 5.  
*ca*, V, 1, 5.  
*cāksuḥ*, V, 1, 5; 3, 2; (gen.) V, 3, 2.  
*candramāh*, V, 1, 1.  
*√cit*: *cikīṭvaḥ*, IV, 1; *prā cetaya*, IV, 1.  
*chandāh*, IV, 1; (instr.) V, 1, 4; Ś. I, 7; (in SV., *chāndaḥ* is read.)  
*jānasya*, IV, 1; (loc. plur.) V, 2, 1.  
*√juṣ*: *jūṣoṣat*, V, 2, 2.  
*jētāram*, IV, 1.  
*johūtraḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*jyōtiḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
*tanūh*, I, 3, 4; *tanūm*, I, 3, 4; *tanvaḥ* (gen.), I, 3, 4; *tanvām*, I, 3, 4.  
*tām*, IV, 1; V, 2, 1; 2; *tēna* (neut.), V, 3, 2;  
*te*, Ś. I, 7; *tān*, V, 1, 4; Ś. I, 7; *tābhīh*, V, 3, 2.  
*tāpastanu*, V, 3, 2.  
*tavāstamaḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*tīvarasutam* (acc. masc.), V, 1, 1.  
*tūjaḥ* (gen. ?), V, 2, 1.  
*√trp*: *trpyatu*, V, 3, 2.  
*tējah*, V, 3, 2.  
*trāyaḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
*traiṣṭubhena* (n.), V, 1, 4; Ś. I, 7.  
*tvām*, IV, 1; V, 2, 2; *tvā*, V, 1, 4; 2, 2; Ś. I, 7;  
*te* (dat.), V, 2, 1; (gen.) IV, 1; V, 1, 2; 3, 2.  
*dakṣiṇaḥ*, V, 1, 2.  
*dantaiḥ*, III, 2, 5.  
*√dā*: *dādātu*, V, 2, 1; ? *vidāh*, IV, 1.  
*dīśaḥ* (acc.), IV, 1.  
*√duh*: *duhām*, V, 3, 2; *dhukṣva*, V, 3, 2; *dūhānam*, V, 3, 2.  
*devātāsu*, V, 2, 2 (perhaps w.r. for *devātāḥ sv*).  
*devāh*, V, 1, 1; 4; *devā* 3 h, IV, 1.  
*devī*, V, 1, 1; 3, 2.  
*dyāvāprthivī*, V, 1, 1.  
*dyumnāya*, IV, 1.  
*dyauḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*dvīṣaḥ* (acc.), IV, 1.  
*dvaiṣpadena* (n.), V, 1, 4.  
*dhānasya*, IV, 1.  
*√dhā*: *ādhehi*, IV, 1; *dhīmāhe*, V, 2, 2.  
*√dhr*: *dhārayasi*, I, 4, 3.  
*√dhr*: *ādadhārja* (?), V, 2, 1; *dādhṛjāṇām*, V, 2, 1; *dhṛjātām*, V, 2, 1; *anādhṛjyaḥ*, *apratidhṛjyaḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*dhenū*, V, 3, 2.

- na*, V, 2, 1; 2; (of comparison) III, 2, 5 (dub., see *nakulī*).  
*naḥ* (acc.), IV, 1; (dat.) V, 1, 1; 2, 1; 2; (gen.) IV, 1; V, 2, 1.  
*nakulī* (?), III, 2, 5.  
*nākṣatraiḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*namaḥ*, V, 1, 2.  
*nāvyam* (m. or n.), IV, 1.  
*ni*: *abhi-naya*, IV, 1; *supraṇṇite*, V, 2, 2 (dubious use and accent).  
*nūndm*, IV, 1; V, 2, 2.  
*nīlāmaḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*netāram*, V, 2, 1.  
  
*pakṣaḥ*, V, 1, 2.  
*pat*: *patisyantīm*, V, 1, 5.  
*pātiḥ*, V, 2, 1; (voc.) IV, 1.  
*pāśām*, V, 2, 2.  
*pārāk*, V, 3, 2.  
*parvateṣṭhāḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*paviḥ*, III, 2, 5.  
*paśūn*, V, 3, 2.  
*pāṅktina*, V, 1, 4.  
*pīṭāraḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*pinv*: *pinvati*, V, 3, 2 (accent dubious).  
*piḥ*: *pīḥa*, IV, 1; *pīḥā*, V, 1, 1.  
*pīśāṅgasamāśram*, V, 2, 1 (v.l. °*sadyśam*).  
*pīvarīm*, V, 2, 2.  
*pūcham*, V, 1, 2.  
*punarbhūḥ*, V, 1, 1; °*bhuvāḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*purā*, V, 2, 1; 2.  
*puruvāram*, V, 2, 1.  
*purūvaso*, IV, 1.  
*puṣ*: *pūsyantaḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*pūrtiḥ*, IV, 1.  
*pūrvam* (nom. neut.), V, 3, 2; (gen. masc.) IV, 1.  
*pūrvīṇām*, IV, 1.  
*pūrvākhūlau*, V, 1, 1.  
*Pūṣā*, V, 1, 1; *Pūṣā* 3 n, IV, 1.  
*pr*: *parjat*, IV, 1.  
*prthivī*, V, 1, 1.  
*prthivyuparām*, V, 3, 2 (accent and reading dubious).  
*Pṛṇimātaraḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*prakṣē*, V, 2, 2 (v.l. *upaprakṣe*).  
*prācetana*, IV, 1.  
*prajān*, V, 3, 2.  
*Prajāpatiḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
  
*prati* (with acc.), V, 2, 1.  
*prātiṣṭhā*, V, 1, 2; 3, 2.  
*prabhūḥ*, V, 1, 1 (v.l. *prabhūḥ*); (voc.) IV, 1.  
*prabhūḥ* (v.l. *prabhūḥ*), V, 1, 1.  
*prastobha*, V, 2, 2 (more prob. *pra* + *√stubbh*).  
*prāṇḍh*, V, 1, 5; 3, 2; (acc.) V, 1, 4; 3, 2; (dat.) V, 1, 4; 3, 2; (gen.) V, 3, 2.  
*priyaḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
  
*bahu* (acc.), V, 1, 5; (abl.) V, 1, 5; Ś. I, 8.  
*bārhatena*, V, 1, 4.  
*bṛhāt*, IV, 1; V, 2, 1; *bṛhate* (name of Sāman), V, 1, 2.  
*Bṛhaspātīḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*brāhma*, V, 1, 1; (acc.) V, 3, 2; (voc.) V, 3, 2.  
*brahmavarcasām* (acc.), V, 3, 2.  
*brāhmaṇāḥkharīṣkam* (nom. neut.), V, 3, 2 (accent dubious).  
*brū*: *sam-bravāvohai*, IV, 1.  
  
*bhagaḥ*, V, 1, 5.  
*bhadrāya* (name of Sāman), V, 1, 2.  
*bhargah*, V, 1, 5.  
*bhuktiḥ*, V, 1, 5.  
*bhujah*, V, 1, 5.  
*bhūvaḥ* (indecl.), V, 1, 4; 3, 2.  
*bhū*: *bhuvāḥ*, IV, 1; *bhūyāsam*, V, 1, 1; *bhūtām* (acc. neut.), V, 1, 1; *bhūtebhyaḥ* (dat.), V, 1, 4; *vibhūtām* (nom. neut.), V, 3, 2.  
*bhūṭayaḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
*bhūyaḥ* (acc.), V, 1, 5; Ś. I, 8.  
*bhūḥ* (indecl.), V, 1, 4; 3, 2.  
*bhr*: *ābhara*, V, 2, 2.  
*bheṣajam*, I, 3, 4.  
  
*māmhīṣṭhah*, IV, 1; V, 2, 1; 2; (voc.) IV, 1.  
*maghām*, V, 2, 2; (dat.) V, 2, 1.  
*maghavan*, IV, 1; *maghōnām*, IV, 1.  
*māḍ*: *mātsva*, IV, 1; *mātsvā*, V, 2, 1.  
*madam*, V, 2, 1.  
*madhu*, V, 1, 1.  
*mādhumatī*, V, 2, 2.  
*man*: *manyāya*, IV, 1 (accent dubious).  
*mānaḥ*, V, 1, 1; (gen.) 3, 2; (instr.) V, 1, 5; (abl.) 3, 2.  
*manyāve*, IV, 1.  
*marīcayaḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*Marūtaḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*mah*: *mahāyāmaḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*mahān*, V, 1, 5; *mahāt*, V, 3, 2; *mahīm*, V, 3, 2.



- mām*, III, 2, 5; V, 1, 1; 5; *mā*, V, 1, 1; *me* (dat.), V, 3, 2; *mayi*, V, 1, 5.  
*Mitrāvārunau*, V, 1, 1; 2, 2.  
*mithunam*, V, 1, 1.  
*mūrdhā*, V, 3, 2.  
*√mrj*: *āmṛktaḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
  
*yāḥ*, IV, 1; V, 1, 2; *yā*, V, 1, 2; *yād*, IV, 1; V, 1, 2; *ydm*, V, 2, 2; *yāsya* (masc.), V, 2, 1; *yē*, V, 1, 1; 3, 2.  
*√yaj*: *yajāmahe*, V, 3, 2; *yaja*, V, 3, 2; 3; *yajamānam*, V, 1, 5.  
*yājatrāḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*yajñāḥ*, V, 1, 1; (acc.) V, 1, 5; 2, 1.  
*yajñasamṛddhīm*, V, 3, 2 (accent dubious).  
*yāt* (when), I, 3, 4; V, 2, 1; (so that) V, 2, 2.  
*yādi*, V, 2, 2.  
*√yam*: *yachatu*, V, 1, 1.  
*yasāḥ*, V, 1, 5; (acc.) V, 3, 2.  
*√yā*: *āyāhi*, IV, 1; *ūpāyāhi*, V, 2, 1.  
*yūjaḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*yūvā*, V, 2, 2.  
  
*rāntyam*, V, 2, 1.  
*rayīm*, V, 2, 1; 2; (nom.) 2.  
*rayiṣṭhi*, V, 2, 2 (reading dubious).  
*rāsah*, V, 1, 1; 3, 2; (acc.) V, 3, 2.  
*√rāj*: *virājati*, V, 3, 1; *vi-rājasi*, I, 4, 3.  
*rājanāya* (name of Sāman), V, 1, 2.  
*rājū*, V, 3, 2; *rājānaḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*rātriḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*rāthantarāya*, V, 1, 2.  
*rāye*, IV, 1; (gen.) IV, 1.  
*Rudrāḥ*, IV, 1, 4.  
*√ruk*: *anvārohami*, V, 1, 4; Ś. I, 7; *ārohanu*, V, 1, 4; Ś. I, 7.  
*rūpam*, V, 1, 1.  
  
*√likh*: *ullikhāmi*, V, 1, 4.  
*lokām*, V, 3, 2; (loc.) V, 1, 1; (gen. plur.) V, 3, 1.  
  
*vaḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*√vac*: *vakṣyantīm*, V, 1, 5; Ś. I, 8.  
*vajrin*, IV, 1.  
*vajrivah*, IV, 1.  
*√vad*: *pra-vadiṣyāmi*, V, 1, 5; Ś. I, 8; *va-diṣyantīm*, V, 1, 5; *vādayet*, III, 2, 5.  
*vānam* (?), V, 2, 1.  
  
*Vārunaḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*Vārunāvāpitamam*, V, 3, 2 (accent and reading dubious).  
*varjāpavitram*, V, 3, 2.  
*vāśāḥ*, IV, 1.  
*vaiḥ*, IV, 1.  
*vāsuh*, V, 2, 1; *vaso*, IV, 1; *Vasavaḥ*, V, 1, 4.  
*√vah*, cf. *√ūh*: *udūhāmi*, V, 1, 4.  
*vā-vā*, V, 2, 2.  
*vākprabhūtam*, V, 3, 2 (accent dubious).  
*vāc*, V, 1, 1; 5; 3, 2; (acc.) V, 1, 5; (instr.) V, 1, 5; (gen.) III, 2, 5; V, 3, 2.  
*vājāya*, IV, 1; *vājānām*, IV, 1.  
*vājasātaye*, V, 2, 2.  
*vām*, V, 2, 1.  
*vāyāḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*viśāḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*viśdraḥ* (?), V, 2, 1.  
*viśigṛyānam* (accent dubious), V, 3, 2.  
*√vid*: *vidā*, IV, 1 (or *vidāḥ*); *vide*, IV, 1; *vidvān*, V, 2, 2.  
*viśprāḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*viśhuḥ*, V, 3, 2; *viśhu*, V, 1, 1.  
*viśhūtayaḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
*viśvācanam*, V, 3, 2.  
*viśam*, V, 3, 2.  
*viśvam* (acc. neut.), V, 1, 1; 3, 1; 2; *viśvasya*, V, 2, 2; *viśve*, V, 1, 1; 4.  
*viśvāḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*viśvātodāvan*, V, 2, 2 (perhaps w.r. for *viśva-todāvan*).  
*viśvādha*, IV, 1.  
*Viṣṇā 3 u*, IV, 1.  
*√vr*: *parivṛtā*, III, 2, 5.  
*vr̥trahātyeṣu*, V, 2, 1.  
*vr̥trahan*, IV, 1.  
*vr̥trahāntamāya*, V, 2, 2.  
*√vr̥*: *varjatu*, V, 3, 2.  
*vīdāḥ*, V, 3, 2; (gen. plur.) V, 3, 2.  
*vai*, I, 4, 3.  
*vairājena* (n.), V, 1, 4.  
*vyāthiḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*vyānam*, V, 1, 4; (dat.) V, 1, 4.  
*vyōma*, V, 3, 2.  
  
*śakrāḥ*, IV, 1.  
*śācīnām*, IV, 1.  
*śatrūn*, V, 2, 1.  
*śām*, V, 2, 2.

- śārma* (acc.), V, 1, 1.  
*śāvaḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*śāviṣṭhaḥ*, IV, 1; (acc.) V, 2, 2; (voc.) IV, 1.  
*√śaṃs*: *anuśaṃsiṣaḥ*, IV, 1; *śasyāte*, IV, 1 (accent doubtful).  
*śāsvadbhiḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*√śikṣ*: *śikṣā*, IV, 1.  
*śiraḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*śūraḥ*, IV, 1; (gen. plur.) IV, 1.  
*śrīḥ*, V, 1, 5; (acc.) V, 3, 2; *śrīyām*, V, 1, 1.  
*√śru*: *śrutāḥ*, V, 2, 2.  
*śrōtram*, V, 1, 5; 3, 2; (gen.) V, 3, 2.  
*ślokaḥ*, V, 1, 5.  
*ślokaḥkūḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
  
*sā*, IV, 1; V, 2, 1; 2.  
*sāmvetaḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
*sākhā*, IV, 1.  
*satyām*, V, 3, 2; *satyāsammitam*, V, 3, 2 (accent dubious).  
*√san*: *sanisyantīm*, V, 1, 5.  
*sanāt*, V, 2, 2.  
*saptā*, V, 1, 1.  
*sāpru*, V, 3, 2.  
*sam*, V, 1, 5.  
*sāmajaḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*sānubhavaḥ*, V, 3, 2.  
*sārvam* (nom. neut.), V, 3, 2; (acc. neut.) V, 3, 2; *sārvasmāt* (neut.), V, 3, 2; *sārvān*, V, 3, 2; *sarvasyai* (gen.), III, 2, 5.  
*salilām*, V, 3, 2.  
*sāhaḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
  
*sahāsradhāram*, V, 3, 2 (nom. or acc. neut.).  
*sātdye*, IV, 1.  
*sādhātūḥ* (?), V, 2, 1.  
*√sic*: *udābhiṣikṭāḥ*, V, 1, 1 (dubious accent).  
*√su*: *sutāḥ*, V, 2, 1.  
*suparnaḥ*, V, 1, 5.  
*sumnē*, IV, 1.  
*suviṛyam* (acc.), IV, 1.  
*suśevaḥ*, IV, 1.  
*suśadā*, V, 1, 1.  
*suśdāwāḥ* (or voc.?), V, 1, 1.  
*sūryaḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*√sryj*: *sasrye*, V, 3, 2.  
*sāmāḥ*, V, 1, 1; 2, 1; 2; 3, 2; (gen.) V, 3, 2.  
*√stu*: *stuse*, IV, 1 (or *stuṣṭ*).  
*√stubbh*: *āstobhati*, V, 2, 2; *prāstobha*, ib.  
*stobhaḥ*, V, 1, 5.  
*stomaḥ*, V, 1, 5.  
*√sprī*: *sprīṣat*, V, 2, 2.  
*iridhaḥ* (acc.), IV, 1.  
*svam*, V, 1, 1; *svām*, I, 3, 4.  
*svāḥ*, Ś. I, 4; 3, 2; (acc.) V, 1, 5.  
*svardāt*, V, 2, 2.  
*svarkālḥ*, V, 1, 1; and perhaps 2, 2.  
  
*√han*: *āghnānāḥ*, V, 1, 1.  
*hī*, IV, 1; V, 2, 2.  
*√hi*: *hinoti*, V, 2, 2.  
*√hu*: *havāmahe*, IV, 1.  
*hīdayasya*, V, 3, 2.  
*hīdayāgram*, V, 3, 2 (accent dubious).

B. In Sāṅkhāyana Āranyaka and the Śānti verses in the Aitareya Āranyaka (A).

- akāmaḥ*, XI, 8.  
*akṣesu*, XII, 4.  
*Agniḥ*, XI, 6; XII, 9; (acc.) XI, 18; (loc.) XI, 5, 6.  
*ajñam* (acc.), XIV, 1.  
*Atharvāṇām*, XIV, 1.  
*atho*, XII, 19.  
*Adityā*, XII, 1; *Adityai* (abl. or gen.), XII, 1.  
*adhārān*, XII, 7; 34.  
*adhipatiḥ*, XII, 18.  
*anuvādi*, XII, 10.  
*antarikṣam* (acc.), IX, 7.  
*annam*, XI, 8.  
*annavān*, XI, 6; 8.  
*annādaḥ*, XI, 6; 8.  
  
*anyat* (nom.), XII, 23.  
*apacitīm*, XII, 15.  
*apavādāḥ*, XII, 24.  
*apānaḥ*, XI, 6; (loc.) XI, 5.  
*amitrān*, XII, 12.  
*amṛtam*, XII, 32.  
*ayaḥ*, XI, 8.  
*ayam*, XIV, 2; *anena*, VII, 1; XII, 10; 30; A. II, 7; *asmai*, XII, 28<sup>c</sup>; *asya*, XII, 29, &c.; *asmin*, XII, 24.  
*arātīḥ*, XII, 31.  
*arkaḥ*, I, 7.  
*artham*, XIV, 2.  
*arthajñaḥ*, XIV, 2.  
*ardhe*, XII, 20.



- alakṣmīh*, XII, 24.  
*alardah*, XII, 19 (of doubtful form and meaning; cf. perhaps *aratu* (Lex.), *aratu* (AV.): but perhaps it may be from *√r* (cf. *alarti*, RV., VIII, 48, 8), for *alar-ta* (like *vāvā-ta*, Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, p. 442; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 120, n. 5), the tenuis becoming a media (cf. Macdonell, p. 22) and meaning 'active one'. Or *alaja*?).  
 $\sqrt{av}$ : *avatu*, VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
 $\sqrt{as}$ : *alnāti*, XII, 21; XIV, 2.  
 $\sqrt{as}$ : *alīya*, XI, 8; *alata*, XII, 14 (doubtful, the MS. reading is *mā jñātāram lātāmāḥ pratiṣṭhaḥ*, and I amend to *alata* to give sense and metre).  
*almā*, XI, 8.  
*alveṣu*, XII, 4.  
*Aśvinau*, XII, 33.  
 $\sqrt{as}$ : *asī*, XII, 33; *astu*, VII, 1; XII, 15; A. II, 7; *sthaḥ*, A. II, 7.  
*asau*, XIV, 1; *imam*, XII, 18.  
*asuraḥ*, XII, 25.  
*aham*, XII, 33.  
*ahorātrān*, VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
*ākāṣaḥ*, XI, 5; 6; *āṇī*, A. II, 7.  
*ātichandasena*, XI, 8.  
*ātmā*, XI, 6; (loc.) XI, 5; 6.  
*Ādityāsaḥ*, XII, 1.  
*ānuṣṭubhena*, XI, 8.  
*āpaḥ*, XI, 5; 6.  
*āyuh* (acc.), XI, 8.  
*āyusmān*, XI, 8.  
*āroḥhāraḥ*, Ś. I, 7.  
*āvīr āvīr*, VII, 1; A. II, 7 (*āvīr*, in second case).  
*āhuḥ*, XII, 20; 29; XIV, 1.  
 $\sqrt{i}$ : *eti*, XIV, 2; *praiti*, XII, 2; *adhīte*, XIV, 1; *adhītya*, XIV, 2; *adhītena* (neut.), VII, 1; A. II, 7; *samarpaya*, XII, 15.  
*Indraḥ*, XI, 5; 6; XII, 9; 10; 30; (voc.) XII, 31.  
*Indravatīm*, XII, 15.  
*irāmaṇīm*, XII, 20-29.  
*iva*, XI, 8; XII, 9; 10; 29.  
*iṣīram*, VII, 1; IX, 1; A. II, 7.  
*iha*, XII, 15.  
*īṅkh*: *preṅkhayatu*, I, 7.  
*Īśānaḥ*, XI, 5; 6.  
*uttama'lokaḥ*, XII, 15.  
*uttamāṅgam* (acc.), XIV, 1.  
*udānaḥ*, XI, 6; (loc.) XI, 5; 6.  
*upariṣṭāt*, XII, 12.  
*uśasaḥ* (abl.), XII, 19.  
*ṛcām*, XIV, 1.  
*ṛtam* (acc.), VII, 1; A. II, 7; (? nom.) VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
*ṛṣiṇā*, XII, 30; *ṛṣayaḥ*, XII, 16.  
*oghaḥ*, XII, 11; 29. (The older form is *aughah*, and this may best be read here.)  
*ojaḥ*, XII, 16.  
*auṣṇihena*, XI, 8.  
*kaksam*, XII, 9.  
*koṅkāḥ*, XII, 14. Cf. *Ind. Stud.*, XIII, 264, n.  
*kabandham* (acc.), XIV, 1.  
*kavayaḥ*, XII, 32.  
*kākubhena*, XI, 8.  
*kila*, XII, 10; XIV, 2.  
*kilbiṣam*, XII, 21.  
*kulīṣena*, XII, 11.  
*kuleṣu*, XII, 23.  
 $\sqrt{kr}$ : *kurute*, XII, 29; XIV, 1; *kr̥ṇoti*, XII, 28; *kuru*, XII, 2; *kr̥ṇvan*, XII, 7; 34; *kr̥tam*, XII, 26.  
*kr̥ṣṇaḥ* (*ahīḥ*), XII, 28.  
 $\sqrt{klp}$ : *kalpeta*, XII, 20.  
 $\sqrt{krudh}$ : *kruddham*, XII, 21; 26.  
*kṣatram*, XII, 16.  
 $\sqrt{gā}$ : *āgan* (MSS. °ān), presumably a plural form of the imperfect of *gā* as a second class verb (cf. Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, §§ 855, 621, but if so a late form. The other texts have *agre*), XII, 16; *āgāt*, XII, 32 (in both cases probably with true aorist effect).  
*gāyatreṇa*, XI, 8.  
*gr̥he*, XII, 24; *gr̥heṣu*, XII, 25.  
*goṣu*, XII, 3; 4.  
 $\sqrt{grath}$ : *udgrathāni*, XI, 8.  
*granthis*, XI, 8; (acc.) XI, 8.  
*grahaḥ*, XII, 28.  
*ghṛtāt*, XII, 7; 34.  
*cakṣuḥ*, VII, 1; IX, 1; A. II, 7; XI, 6; (loc.) XI, 5, 6.

*candramāḥ*, XII, 5; 6.

*chandāṃsi* (acc.), XII, 17; *chandasā*, XI, 8.

✓*chid*: *chittvā*, XIV, 1; *chinnam*, XII, 29.

✓*jan*: *jāyate*, XII, 23; 25; *jāyamānā*, XII, 23; *jātaḥ*, XII, 19; *jātam*, XII, 16 (neut. nom.).

*janeṣu*, XII, 6.

*jambhakaḥ*, XII, 25 (cf. Vājasaneyi Saṃhita, XXX, 6, &c.).

*jaradaṣṭiḥ*, XII, 2.

*jāgatena*, XI, 8.

*jātaśvedāḥ*, XII, 22; *vedaḥ*, XII, 2.

*jāmbaḥ*, XII, 30 (cf. Uṇādi Sūtra, IV, 95; 96: presumably it denotes some special shrub or tree).

✓*ji*: *jaya*, XII, 11, and II, 17 (I).

*jīvāya*, XII, 30.

✓*jīvo*: *anu-jīvātha*, XII, 18.

✓*jus*: *juṣanta*, XII, 13.

✓*jñā*: *viṣṇānti*, XIV, 2.

*jñānavidhūtapāpmā*, XIV, 2.

*jyotiṣām*, VII, 1; IX, 1; A. II, 7.

*tam*, XII, 19; *tad* (nom.), XII, 3; 4; (acc.) XII, 4; *tasya* (masc.), XII, 20; 29.

*tanvaḥ* (abl.), XII, 1.

*tigmajambhakaḥ*, XII, 9.

*tiraścīnarājī*, XII, 28 (reading doubtful: the MS. B has *tiraścī nā rājā* which would easily give *tiraścī nā rājā* if *tiraścī* could mean 'animal' and if *rājā* were naturally introduced here (cf. p. 161). But *tiraścīnarājī* = snake occurs several times in the Atharvaveda (e.g. III, 27, 2), and the temptation to read *°rājīḥ* or *rājī* (as a parallel form) is very great).

*tr̥ptiḥ*, XI, 8.

✓*tṛ*: *taret*, XII, 20.

*traisṭubhena*, XI, 8.

*tvacam*, XII, 22.

*tvām*, XII, 13; *tvā*, XII, 19; *te*, XII, 33.

*daṃṣṭrī*, XII, 13. (The usual form is *daṃṣṭrā*, Pāṇini, III, 2, 182, and Gāṇ.)

✓*dabh*: *adabdhām*, VII, 1; IX, 1; A. II, 7.

*dasyūn*, XII, 11.

✓*dā*: *samaduh*, XII, 1.

*dīvyah*, XII, 21.

*dīṣaḥ*, XI, 5; 6.

*dīkṣām*, XII, 16; *dīkṣe*, VII, 1; IX, 1; A. II, 7.

*durah*, XII, 10 (v.l. = 'giver'; cf. RV., I, 53, 3; VI, 35, 5, where occurs *vi durā gr̥ṇīṣe*, and Aitareya Āranyaka, V, 2, 1, n. 4).

✓*duṣ*: *duṣyati*, XII, 23.

✓*dṛh*: *dṛṇhatu*, XII, 5.

*devaḥ*, I, 5; (nom. plur.) VII, 17; (gen.) XI, 8; (dat.) VII, 1; A. II, 7.

*devyā*, I, 5.

*dyām*, IX, 7; *divam*, XI, 18; XII, 5; (loc.) ib.

✓*divi*: *divīntam*, XII, 20; 29; *divīzataḥ* (acc.), XII, 31.

*divīpī*, XII, 26.

*dhanamjayah*, XII, 7; 34.

*dharuṇaḥ*, XII, 7; 34.

✓*dhā*: *saṃdadhāmi*, A. II, 7; *saṃ-adadhāt*, I, 5 (here it means 'has united', not a mere past. The use is remarkable: cf. *saṃdadhātām* in VII, 3, where the Aitareya version has the correct aorist); *āhitam*, XII, 2; 3.

*dhātā*, XII, 17.

*dhāraviṣṇuḥ*, XII, 7; 34.

*na*, see *saṃpat*.

*naḥ*, XII, 9.

✓*nam*: *abhisamnamantām*, XII, 16; 17.

*namaḥ*, VII, 1; A. II, 7.

✓*nah*: *apinahyatām*, XII, 33.

*nākam* (acc.), XIV, 2.

*nāguḥ*, XII, 31.

*nividaḥ* (acc.), XII, 17.

*nivēṣanaṃ* (acc.), XII, 24.

✓*nud*: *nudatām*, XII, 9; *praṇudāt*, XII, 11; 29; *praṇuttāt*, XII, 12; see *brahma*°.

✓*pat*: *patantu*, XII, 15.

*payah*, XII, 6.

*payasvān*, XII, 7; 34.

*paramaḥ*, XII, 17.

*parameṣṭhī*, XII, 15; 17<sup>b</sup>.

*Parjanyaḥ*, XI, 5; 6.

✓*paś*: *paśyanti*, XII, 3; *paśyantah*, XII, 16.

*paśubhiḥ*, I, 8.

*paśūt*, XII, 12; 18.

*pāpakṛtyā*, XII, 23.

*pārāvarūt*, XII, 28.

*pinvamānāḥ*, XII, 13.



- piśācaḥ*, XII, 25.  
*purā* (with abl.), XII, 19.  
*purutrā*, XII, 9.  
*purāḥ* (acc.), XII, 10.  
*puṣpam*, XII, 29.  
*√pū* : *pūyamānāyām*, XII, 4.  
*pūrvapādābhyām* (? *pādābhyām*), XII, 31.  
*prtanāḥ*, XII, 20.  
*prtanāyataḥ* (acc.), XII, 31.  
*prtanayataḥ* (gen.), XII, 15; (acc.) XII, 31.  
*prthivī*, XI, 5; 6.  
*prṣṭakūḥ*, XII, 27.  
*prajā*, XII, 23.  
*Prajāpatiḥ*, I, 7; 8; XI, 8; XII, 17.  
*pratiṣṭhām*, XII, 14.  
*pratisaraḥ*, XII, 30.  
*√prath* : *prathatām*, XII, 1.  
*pramāyukam*, XII, 20; 29.  
*pravādakāḥ* (? MS. *pravātakāḥ*), XII, 29.  
*prāṇaḥ*, XII, 6; (loc.) XII, 5; 6.  
*√badh* : *badhyate*, XII, 30.  
*bandhanena*, XII, 29.  
*balam*, XI, 6; XII, 16; (loc.) XI, 5; 6.  
*bārhatena*, XI, 8.  
*bīḍaḥ*, XII, 33 (v.1.).  
*byhad*, XII, 2.  
*byhadvayaḥ*, XII, 1.  
*Bṛhaspatiḥ*, XI, 8.  
*bailvam*, XII, 20-29; *bailvaḥ*, 32; 33 (v.1.).  
*brahma*, I, 5; XI, 6; 8.  
*brahmaṇuttarya* (masc.), XII, 15.  
*brāhmanyā*, I, 5.  
*bhaṅgūḥ*, XII, 14.  
*bhadram* (acc. neut.), XII, 16; XIV, 2.  
*bhargah*, XII, 5; VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
*bhartā*, XII, 33.  
*bhārahārah*, XIV, 2.  
*√bhī* : *bhītam*, XII, 21.  
*bhītim* (?), XII, 26.  
*√bhū* : *bhavati*, XII, 2; *bhava*, VII, 1; A. II, 7; *saṁbabhūva*, XII, 1; *abhūt*, XIV, 2 (without true aorist sense); *ābhūḥ* (injunction), VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
*√bhr* : *bībharti*, XII, 20-29; *ābharā*, XII, 10; *vibhṛtaḥ*, XII, 9.  
*bhojanāni* (acc.), XII, 10.  
*makaraḥ*, XII, 21.  
*maghavan*, XII, 15.  
*maṇiḥ*, XII, 30; 32; (acc.) XII, 20-29; (loc.) XII, 33.  
*√mad* : *pramattam*, XII, 29.  
*madhumā*, XII, 6.  
*madhumatīm*, XII, 6; *madhumān*, XII, 7; 34.  
*madhyāt*, XII, 12.  
*√man* : *manvānāḥ*, XII, 13.  
*manaḥ*, VII, 1; XI, 1; 6; A. II, 7; (loc.) VII, 11; XI, 5; 6; A. II, 7.  
*manīṣiṇā*, XII, 30.  
*mantrakṛdābhyah*, VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
*mantrapatibhyah*, VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
*manyuḥ*, XI, 6; (loc.) XI, 5; 6; *manyavaḥ*, XII, 21.  
*mayi*, XII, 3; 4; 5; VII, 1.  
*Marutaḥ*, XII, 12.  
*√mah* : *saṁ mahāṁ*, XII, 6 (doubtful reading: perhaps imperative (Whitney, *Sanskrit Grammar*, § 618), the sense may be, 'may the *payas* gladden me with honey mead, O Agni,' but I read *ahntām*).  
*mahaḥ*, XII, 5; 14 (if so read, the sense must be 'hindering their greatness', but the other version, *mītho*, is better).  
*mahān*, I, 5; *mahate* (neut.), XII, 7; 34; *mahatyā*, I, 5.  
*mahīyatām*, XII, 13.  
*mā* : *asata* (?), XII, 14; *marisyāmi*, XI, 6; 8; *riṣam*, XII, 33; *leṣiḥ* (?), IX, 7; *vyoma* (?), VII, 1; A. II, 7; *himsiḥ*, VII, 1; IX, 1; A. II, 7; *prahāsiḥ*, A. II, 7.  
*māṁsam*, XII, 22.  
*mīthaḥ*, XII, 23; 14 (?).  
*√mī* : *pramīyeta*, XII, 20.  
*muṇḍamuṇḍam*, XIV, 1.  
*mūrdhā*, XI, 6; XII, 15; (acc.) XIV, 1; (loc.) XI, 5; 6.  
*√mr* : *marisyāmi*, XI, 6; 8.  
*√mrj* : *anu mārṣṭi*, XII, 9.  
*mṛtyum*, XII, 14.  
*mṛdhaḥ*, XII, 10.  
*mṛś* : *pra mṛśantū*, XII, 4.  
*me*, VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
*yakṣaḥ*, XII, 25.  
*yajusām*, XIV, 1.  
*yajñasya*, XII, 5.  
*yathā* : *āvadāmi*, XII, 6; *saheyaḥ*, XII, 32.  
*yad* (pron.), XII, 2; 3.  
*yataḥ*, XII, 4; 5; *yataḥ*, XII, 15.

yaśasvin, XII, 15.

✓yā : anuyantu, XII, 12; abhiyānti (abhi-  
māti B, which can hardly be right), XII, 21;  
upayānti (yāti B), XII, 14.

rakṣaḥ, XII, 25.

rajaṭam, XI, 8.

✓rah : anusamrabhadvaṃ, XII, 18.

rāṣṭram (acc.), XII, 17.

✓riṣ : riṣam, XII, 33; riṣantam, XII, 12.

✓ruj : vi-ruroja, XII, 10; rujan, XII, 7; 34.

rudraṭṭh, XII, 13.

✓ruh : ūroha, XII, 7; 34; viroha, IX, 7;

ārohatu, I, 7. Cf. abhyarūṣham, X, 8.

retaḥ, XI, 6; (loc.) XI, 5; 6.

rokoḥhyām, X, 8. (Cf. Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra,  
VIII, 25, 3.)

✓lup : ulluptaḥ, XII, 7; 34.

loham, XI, 8.

✓vad : āvadāmi, XII, 6; vadisyāmi, VII, 1;  
A. II, 7.

vanā (acc.), XII, 11.

vanaspate, IX, 7.

Varuṇaḥ, XII, 21; 29.

varcas, XII, 2; 3; (instr.) XII, 2.

varcasvinam, XII, 2.

vardhaneṣu, XII, 13.

✓vas : vasāni, XI, 8; samvasāmi, VII, 1; °da-  
dhāmi, A. II, 7.

vasumatim, XIII, 1 (not in Chāndogya Upani-  
ṣad, III, 11, 6, and from Jacob's Concordance  
apparently foreign to the Upaniṣads).

✓vak : āvaha, XII, 15.

vā, XII, 3.

vāk, VII, 1; XI, 6; A. II, 7; (acc.) XII, 6; (in-  
str.) XII, 3; (loc.) XI, 5; 6; VII, 1; A. II, 7.

vāktāram, VII, 1; A. II, 7.

vākyam (acc.), XII, 20.

vāteṣu, XII, 9.

vāyuh, XI, 3; 6.

vijñānam (acc.), XII, 18.

✓vid : veda, XII, 19.

vidyutāḥ, XI, 5; 6.

vidhātā, XII, 17.

viṣṭambhajambhanam, XII, 19 (the reading  
seems certain).

viṣvak (t), XII, 15.

vykuḥ, XII, 26.

✓vrt : abhyāvartadhvam, XII, 18.

Vṛtram, XII, 9-11; 30.

vr̥cikaḥ, XII, 28.

vr̥ṣā, XII, 32.

vedam, XIV, 1; 2; (gen.) A. II, 7; vedasā-  
matsāriniḥ (?), VII, 1.

vairūjena (so rather than jyena), XI, 8.

vyāghraḥ, XII, 26.

vyoma, VII, 1; A. II, 7 (error for yuyoma).

✓vraśc : anu, vi, pra, prati-vraśc, XII, 12  
(exact readings are doubtful).

śatavalśo, IX, 7.

śatāyuh, XII, 22.

śatrūn, XII, 11.

śatryyatām, XII, 10.

śantamā, VII, 1; A. II, 7.

\* ✓śap : śaptam, XII, 21 (śaptam A, B).

śarīram, XI, 6; (loc.) XI, 5; 6.

śastā, XII, 18.

śāpān, XII, 11; 29.

śiraḥ (acc.), XIV, 1.

śivam (acc. neut.), XII, 28.

śi(ṃ)śumārāḥ, X, 28.

śūra, XII, 11; 12.

śrutam, A. II, 7.

śreṣṭhah, VII, 1; IX, 1; A. II, 7.

śrotam, XI, 6; (loc.) XI, 5; 6.

śvāpadam, XII, 26.

sakalam (acc. neut.), XIV, 2.

satyam (nom.), XI, 8; (acc.) VII, 1; A. II, 7.

satyasamdhāḥ, VII, 17.

✓sad : upasaduḥ, XII, 16.

samdr̥k, XII, 17.

samdr̥śi, VII, 1; A. II, 7 (w. r. for °śaḥ).

sapatnakṣayaṇaḥ, XII, 32; (acc.) XII, 19.

sapatnān, XII, 7; 32; 34, &c.

samare, XII, 32.

sampattapaḥ, XII, 24 (na - na must be merely  
a strong negative, since sampad hardly can  
be taken as 'misfortune'; I read °patantyō).

Sarasvatī, VII, 1; A. II, 7.

sarpāḥ, XII, 27.

sarvachandasena, XI, 8.

sarvam (acc.: v. l. sarve), XII, 1; sarve, XII, 18.

sarvavirāḥ, XII, 32.

✓sah : saha, sahasva, XII, 31; saheyuh, XII,  
32; saheta, XII, 20 (saha might be = sa ha,  
but this is unlikely).



- śaḥa* (with instr.), XII, 29.  
*śaḥasravīryaḥ*, XII, 33.  
*śāḥā*, XII, 9.  
*śāmnām*, XIV, 1.  
*śāmrājyena*, XI, 8.  
*śārāghena*, XII, 6.  
*Śāvitriḥ* (I), XI, 8.  
*śīsam*, XI, 8.  
*suparṇāḥ*, XII, 14.  
*sumṛṣikā*, VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
*surāyām*, XII, 4.  
*suvarcāḥ*, XII, 17.  
*suvarṇam*, XI, 8; (loc.) XII, 3.  
*sūtikā*, XII, 25.  
*sūtram*, XI, 8; XII, 33.  
*sūryāt*, XII, 19; *sūryaḥ*, VII, 1; IX, 1; A. II, 7.  
*√sev*: *upasevata*, XII, 18.  
*sailagaḥ* (MSS. *śail*), XII, 23.  
*saubhagīya*, XII, 7; 34.  
*stomam*, XII, 17.  
*√sthā*: *abhitiṣṭha*, XII, 31; *pratiṣṭhitāḥ*, °ā,  
*am*, āḥ, XI, 5 and 6; *pratiṣṭhitā*, VII, 1;  
A. II, 7; °am, VII, 1; A. II, 7.  
*sthānuḥ*, XIV, 2.  
*sthīraḥ*, XI, 8.  
*svadhitiḥ*, XII, 11.  
*svaroidaḥ*, XII, 16; 32.  
*svārājyena*, XI, 8.  
*√han*: *hanti*, XII, 22; *abhisamhate*, XII, 28;  
*ahan*, XII, 30; *jahi*, XII, 11; *hatvā*, XII,  
11; *vihatyā*, XII, 10; *vighnānāḥ*, XII, 14;  
(B *vighnānām*, which with *maho* and *upayāti*  
might conceivably = 'the might of persons at  
variance (a gen. in *ām*) goes to destruction,'  
but the *m* must be wrong.)  
*hastinam*, XII, 26; *hastiṣu*, XII, 3.  
*hastivarcasam*, XII, 1, &c.  
*√hā*: *jahyāt* (I), XII, 11; *prahāsiḥ*, A. II,  
7.  
*√hims*: *hinasti*, XII, 25; 27; *himsati* (*metri*  
*causa*), XII, 22; 26; *himsiḥ*, VII, 1; IX,  
1; 7; A. II, 7.  
*hiranyesu*, XII, 4.  
*hṛdoyam*, XI, 6; (loc.) XI, 6.  
*ketibhiḥ*, XI, 13.

## INDEX V

### WORDS OCCURRING IN ĀRANYAKAS I-III, OTHER THAN WORDS OCCURRING IN QUOTATIONS.

(When the case or gender is ambiguous, it is nom. or masc. unless otherwise specified. See also p. 344. As II, 5 and 6 have no Khaṇḍas, the II is repeated where necessary to avoid ambiguity. Parallel words in the Sāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka I, II, VII-XIII are referred to as Ś.)

- aḥ*, II, 3, 8.  
*amsaphalakam*, I, 2, 2.  
*akārah*, II, 3, 6; III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3.  
*okṛtsiṇaḥ*, II, 3, 5.  
*akṣaram*, II, 2, 2; 3, 8; III, 1, 5; (acc.) II, 3, 8; (acc. du.) III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10; (nom. plur.) I, 3, 4; 7; (acc. plur.) III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; (instr. plur.) I, 3, 8; (gen. plur.) II, 2, 4; 3, 8; III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; (loc.) Ś. VIII, 4.  
*akṣarasammānaḥ*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 5; (acc.) III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 5.  
*akṣiṇī*, II, 4, 1; (acc.) II, 4, 2; III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; (abl. with *ī*) II, 4, 1.  
*akṣaḥ*, I, 2, 2 (collar-bone). Cf. *akṣāṇi* and *akṣaḥ*, Ś. II, 4 (also in the Bodleian MS.).  
*Agniḥ*, I, 4, 1; 2; II, 1, 1; 5; 7; 4, 1; 2; III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3, &c.; (acc.) I, 1, 2; II, 1, 1; III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 6; (gen.) I, 3, 5; II, 3, 7; III, 2, 4; 5; (loc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4; (abl.) Ś. XII, 8.  
*agnihotram*, II, 3, 3; Ś. X, 1; 8; (acc.) Ś. X, 8.  
*agram*, I, 3, 3; 4, 1.  
*agre*, II, 4, 1; III, 1, 1; 3; Ś. VII, 2; (with abl.) II, 5.  
*agṇyūḥ*, I, 3, 5.  
*aṅgam*, II, 5; (nom. plur.) I, 2, 2; (abl. plur.) II, 5; (gen. plur.) I, 4, 1; II, 3, 5; *ya-thāṅgam*, Ś. I, 5.  
*aṅgulayoh*, I, 1, 2; 2, 2; III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9;  
*aṅgulīḥ*, Ś. II, 5.  
✓ *ac*: *pratyacyante*, I, 4, 1.  
✓ *aj*: *vyajyamānā*, II, 3, 6.  
*aṇakāram*, III, 2, 6 (*ṛte ṇakāram*, Ś. VIII, 11).  
*aṇḍam*, II, 4, 1. Cf. *āṇḍa*.  
*aṇḍajāni*, II, 6.  
*ataḥ*, I, 3, 4; 4, 2; II, 1, 2; III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*atī* (with acc.), II, 3, 3; Ś. I, 5.  
*atithiḥ*, I, 1, 1.  
*atidyumne*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 8; 9.  
*attā*, II, 1, 2.  
*attrī*, II, 1, 2.  
*atyāyam*, II, 1, 1.  
*atra*, I, 3, 8; 4, 2; 5, 1; II, 5; III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2, &c.  
*atha*, I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; *atha kasmāt*, I, 2, 2; 5, 2; *atha kaḥ*, II, 4, 3; *athātāḥ*, I, 4, 1; II, 1, 2; 7; III, 1, 1; 3; 6; 2, 5; *atho*, I, 1, 2; 3; 4; 4, 2; 5, 1; II, 1, 6; 3, 6.  
✓ *ad*: *atti*, II, 1, 2; 3, 1; *adanti*, II, 3, 1;  
*adyāt*, *adyuḥ*, II, 1, 2; *adāma*, II, 4, 2;  
*ādyah*, *ādyā*, II, 1, 2.  
*Aditiḥ*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 15; *Aditisamhitā*, Ś. VII, 15.  
*addhātamaḥ*, I, 2, 3.  
*adhastāt*, II, 4, 1.  
*adhi* (with acc. and ✓ *car*), II, 3, 1; (with loc.) H, 3, 8 (a Śloka); (with loc. and *bhavati*) II, 3, 1.



- adhidaivatam*, I, 3, 3; 8; II, 1, 2, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.  
*adhipatiḥ*, II, 3, 7; (acc.) II, 3, 7.  
*adhyātmanam*, I, 3, 3; II, 1, 2, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.  
*adhyāyam*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*adhvayavah*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4.  
*√an* : *samananti*, II, 1, 2; *abhiprāṇitam*, *abhyapāṇitam*, II, 4, 3; *abhiprāṇya*, II, 4, 3.  
*anakāmamāraḥ*, II, 3, 8.  
*anantevāsine*, III, 2, 6.  
*aniruktaḥ*, see *√vac*.  
*anīyaḥ*, I, 5, 1.  
*anīśānāni*, II, 1, 5.  
*anu* (with acc.), I, 4, 1; II, 1, 2; 7; 3, 1; 3; (adv.) II, 1, 7.  
*anukṛtiḥ*, see *taḥ*.  
*anuvīdham*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4.  
*anuvīdhāḥ* (v. l.), II, 3, 1.  
*anuvyāhārāḥ*, III, 1, 4; Ś. VII, 8.  
*anuṣṭup*, I, 1, 1, &c.; (acc.) I, 1, 2, &c.; (nom. plur.) II, 3, 5; Ś. I, 2; (gen. plur.) II, 3, 5; *anuṣṭubhāyatanāni*, I, 1, 2; *anuṣṭuphīrṣāṇaḥ*, I, 1, 1; *anuṣṭupsaṃpannam*, II, 3, 6; *anuṣṭupsahasram*, II, 3, 5.  
*anusamhitam*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*anūcānatamaḥ*, I, 2, 2.  
*anyam*, II, 3, 6; (acc.) II, 3, 6.  
*anekikurvan*, III, 1, 5.  
*antaḥ*, I, 5, 2; 3.  
*antataḥ*, I, 1, 3, &c.; Ś. II, 10, &c.  
*antaḥ* (with loc.), I, 5, 1; Ś. II, 11.  
*antarapuruṣaḥ*, III, 2, 4 (*āntara*°, Ś. VIII, 1).  
*antarikṣaṇi*, II, 1, 2, &c.; (acc.) II, 1, 2, &c.; Ś. VII, 10; (gen.) II, 1, 7; III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8; (loc.) III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3.  
*antarikṣalokaḥ*, I, 2, 3; 4, 3; (acc.) I, 4, 3; II, 3, 3; (loc.) I, 4, 3.  
*antarikṣāyatanaṃ*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*antarikṣyūḥ*, I, 3, 5.  
*antareṇa* (with acc.), I, 2, 3; 5, 2; III, 1, 2; 5; Ś. VII, 11; 12; (with gen.) Ś. VII, 3.  
*antastyaṃ*, I, 5, 1.  
*antasthārūpaṃ*, III, 2, 1 (*akṣararūpaṃ*, Ś. VIII, 1).  
*annam*, I, 1, 3, &c.; Ś. XI, 7; (acc.) I, 2, 4; II, 4, 2; (instr.) II, 1, 2; III, 2, 4; (gen.) II, 1, 2; 4, 3; (loc.) II, 3, 1; (nom. plur.) II, 3, 1; *annatāmāṃ*, I, 4, 1.  
*annavān*, I, 1, 3.  
*annādaḥ*, I, 1, 2; II, 3, 1; (nom. neut.) II, 3, 1; (acc. masc.) II, 1, 2; 3, 1; (nom. plur.) II, 3, 1; *annādatamaḥ*, I, 2, 4.  
*annādyam*, I, 1, 2; 2, 3; Ś. I, 7; (acc.) I, 1, 2; 2, 4; II, 1, 7; (dat.) I, 4, 2; (gen.) I, 1, 4; 2, 3; 3, 8; Ś. I, 7; (gen. plur.) I, 5, 1.  
*annādyakāmaḥ*, I, 1, 2; III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*annāyuh*, II, 4, 3.  
*anyaḥ* (with abl.), I, 2, 2; *anyā*, I, 3, 2; *anyat*, II, 3, 5; III, 2, 1; *anyam*, II, 4, 3; (with abl.) III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 8; 9; *anyena* (neut.), III, 2, 4; *anyasmai*, Ś. XI, 8; *anyasmin* (neut.), I, 3, 2; *anye*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VIII, 1; *anyāni* (acc.), III, 2, 3; *anyesām*, II, 1, 4; *anyat kiṃcana*, II, 4, 1.  
*anyo 'nyam*, II, 3, 7; III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18.  
*anvācam*, I, 2, 4; *anūcīm*, I, 2, 4.  
*apacitīḥ*, I, 2, 4; 4, 3; *apacityai*, I, 4, 2.  
*apalyan*, see *√paś*.  
*apahatapāpmā*, I, 2, 3.  
*apahatyā*, I, 2, 2 (probably *apahatyāḥ*, ablative, or perhaps *apahatyai*, dative).  
*apādakam*, I, 3, 4.  
*apānaḥ*, II, 1, 5; 2, 1; 3, 3; 4, 1; 2; Ś. X, 8; (instr.) II, 1, 8; 4, 3; (gen.) III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8; (loc.) Ś. XI, 1.  
*apāyam*, II, 3, 3.  
*api*, I, 3, 4; II, 1, 4; 3, 3; III, 2, 5; *utāpi*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3; *kūpi*, Ś. XI, 8. In II, 3, 3, *api* most probably goes with *yanti*, and in III, 2, 5 with *dadhati*.  
*apyayaḥ*, III, 2, 6; (*avyayaḥ* B) Ś. VIII, 11.  
*apṛāṇakam*, I, 3, 4.  
*abhi* (with acc.), I, 4, 2; (adv.) II, 3, 5; *abhisam* (with acc.), see *√bhū*.  
*abhijītyai*, I, 1, 2, &c.  
*abhivijñānam*, II, 3, 2.  
*abhūtiḥ*, II, 1, 8.  
*abhyātmanam*, II, 3, 6.  
*abhyāptyai*, I, 4, 2.  
*abhyāśam*, III, 1, 3; 4; Ś. VII, 7; 8.  
*abhyutthānam* (acc.), I, 5, 1.  
*amayaḥ*, II, 2, 4.  
*amutaḥ*, II, 1, 2.  
*amṛtaḥ*, II, 1, 8; 5; 6; *amṛtā*, II, 1, 8; *amṛtam*, II, 1, 8; (acc. masc.) I, 3, 8; (acc. neut.) I, 3, 8; II, 3, 2.  
*amṛtakumbhāḥ*, Ś. XI, 1.  
*ameghe*, III, 2, 4 (*anahkre*, Ś. VIII, 7).

- ambhaḥ*, II, 4, 1; (acc.) II, 4, 1.  
*ambhaṇam*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.  
*ayam* (pron.), I, 2, 3, &c.; Ś. VIII, 9, &c.;  
 (adj.) I, 1, 2, &c.; Ś. VII, 3, &c.; *anena* (neut.  
 pron.), II, 3, 6; (neut. adj.) II, 3, 7; *asmai*  
 (masc. pron.), I, 1, 4; 2, 2, &c.; *asmāt* (masc.  
 adj.), II, 3, 4; II, 5; 6; (neut.) II, 1, 4;  
*asya* (masc. pron.), I, 1, 14, &c.; *asyai* (abl.  
 pron.), I, 2, 4; (gen.) III, 2, 5; Ś. VII, 9; (adj.)  
 I, 3, 4; *asyāḥ* (pron.), II, 3, 8; III, 2, 5;  
 Ś. VIII, 9; *asmin* (masc. pron.), I, 1, 4, &c.;  
 (masc. adj.) I, 4, 3, &c.; *asyām* (pron.), II,  
 1, 7; 4, 2; III, 2, 3; (adj.) I, 3, 4; *ananyāḥ*  
 (loc. fem. adj.), I, 4, 2. See also *imam* and  
*ebhyaḥ*.  
*ayanam*, II, 3, 1.  
*aratnimātre*, I, 2, 4.  
*aram*, I, 1, 4 (dat.).  
*arīpram*, I, 3, 3.  
*arkaḥ*, I, 4, 1; II, 1, 1; 2.  
*arkatīnaḥ*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*arkavatya*, I, 5, 2; *arkavatiṣu*, I, 4, 1; *arka-*  
*vanti*, Ś. II, 2, 6; *arkavati*, Ś. II, 18.  
✓ *arc* : *arcata*, II, 2, 2; *abhyārcat*, II, 2, 1.  
✓ *arj* : *arjayan*, I, 5, 2; *anvavārjat*, II, 4, 2.  
*arjave*, II, 4, 2.  
*arthena*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14; *vāgartham*, Ś.  
 VIII, 10.  
*ardhebhyaḥ* (dat.), 'places', II, 2, 2.  
*ardharcaḥ*, II, 2, 6.  
*alam*, II, 4, 2 (dat. pers.); 3, 6 (dat. thing).  
✓ *av* : *āvayāt*, II, 4, 3 (others refer it to *ā-vī*).  
*avakāśaḥ*, III, 1, 5.  
*avarābhyaṁ* (abl. neut. adj.), III, 1, 3; Ś.  
 VII, 10.  
*avaraparā*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 13; (acc.) III, 1,  
 6; Ś. VII, 13.  
*avaruddhyai*, I, 1, 2; 3; 4; 2, 4; 3, 7.  
*avāñcaḥ*, I, 5, 1.  
✓ *as* : *asnuṭe*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *asnutāḥ*, III, 2, 4;  
*asnuvata*, Ś. II, 4; *asnuvita*, II, 3, 3; *asna-*  
*vai*, I, 4, 3.  
✓ *as* : *asnāti*, III, 2, 4; *asnan*, II, 1, 4; *āsa-*  
*yati* (Pāṇ., I, 3, 87 and Sch.), Ś. X, 1, &c.  
*asānāpīpāse*, II, 3, 2; 4; 2; (instr.) II, 4, 2;  
*asānāyāpīpāsābhyām*, Ś. XI, 1.  
*asarīraḥ*, II, 3, 6; III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3, &c.;  
*asarīram*, II, 3, 6; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*asīrasam* (acc.), III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*asīlayaḥ*, II, 1, 2; Ś. II, 10; *asītibhiḥ*, Ś. II, 10.  
*asītiśahasram*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*atvaḥ*, I, 2, 4; (acc.) II, 4, 2; (nom. plur.)  
 II, 6.  
*atvārathāḥ*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2, &c.  
*Atvinau*, I, 1, 4.  
*azākāram*, III, 2, 6 (*ṛte* *zakāram*, Ś. VIII, 11).  
*aṣṭau*, I, 3, 4, &c.  
*aṣṭamīna*, I, 5, 2.  
*aṣṭādaśa*, I, 3, 7.  
✓ *as* : *asmi*, II, 1, 2; 4; 2, 3; *asi*, II, 1, 4;  
*asad*, I, 4, 3; 5, 1; 2; *āsīt*, II, 2, 1; 4, 1;  
*asāni*, II, 1, 4; 2, 2; *astu*, III, 1, 3; Ś.  
 VIII, 9; *smāḥ*, II, 1, 4; *syāt*, I, 2, 2; II, 3,  
 6; 4, 3; *syātām*, I, 2, 3; *syuḥ*, I, 2, 3; III,  
 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1; *āsa*, I, 2, 2; *asantam*, I,  
 1, 1; *santam*, II, 2, 1; 2; *santau*, I, 3, 4;  
*sati*, I, 5, 2; *satyaḥ*, I, 4, 1; *sad*, I, 4, 2; II,  
 1, 5; *sati* (masc.), Ś. XII, 8.  
✓ *as* : *asymānaḥ*, II, 3, 5; *vyastāḥ*, III, 2, 4;  
 Ś. VIII, 7; *viparyaste* (nom. du. fem.), III,  
 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*asamvatsaravāsine*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*asuh*, II, 1, 8; 6.  
*asurāḥ*, II, 1, 8.  
*asau* (masc. pron.), II, 1, 2, &c.; (masc. adj.)  
 I, 4, 2, &c.; Ś. VII, 3, &c.; (fem. pron.)  
 III, 2, 5; (fem. adj.) III, 2, 5; *adus* (pron.),  
 I, 3, 3, &c.; *amum* (adj.), I, 4, 3, &c.; *amu-*  
*nā* (neut. adj.), II, 3, 7; *amuyai* (masc.  
 adj.), II, 3, 7; *asmusyai* *amusyāḥ* (gen.  
 pron.), III, 2, 5; °*āḥ*, Ś. VIII, 9; *amuymin*  
 (masc. adj.), I, 4, 3, &c.; Ś. VII, 3; *amūni*  
 (adj.), III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3.  
*astripumān*, II, 3, 8.  
*asthi*, II, 1, 6; *asthīni*, III, 2, 1; 2; Ś. VIII,  
 1; 2; *asthnām*, III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*asmākam*, II, 1, 4; Ś. XI, 2; *asmābhiḥ*, Ś.  
 XV.  
*arvādu* (acc.), II, 6.  
✓ *ak* : *āka*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *ākuḥ*, I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś.  
 VIII, 11, &c.; *nirāka*, I, 2, 2.  
*aka*, II, 3, 7 (contrasted with *u*: *anenāka-*  
*amuno*); *akaiva* (dub.), II, 1, 2.  
*akaḥ*, I, 1, 2, &c.; (acc.) I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. II,  
 18; *ahnāḥ* (gen.), I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. II, 2,  
 &c.; *ahani*, I, 1, 3; 2, 4; II, 2, 4; Ś. VIII,  
 2; *ahāni*, III, 2, 2; (acc.) II, 2, 4; *ahnām*,  
 I, 2, 1, &c.



*ahahsaṇmānaḥ*, III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 2; (acc.) III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 2.

*ahorātre* (nom.), Ś. X, 5; (acc.) III, 1, 4; Ś. X, 5; *ahorātrāḥ*, III, 2, 1; Ś. VII, 20; (gen. plur.) III, 2, 2; Ś. II, 10; VIII, 1; *ahorātrāṇi* (acc.), Ś. II, 10; VIII, 1.

*aham*, II, 1, 2; 4; 8; 2, 2; 3; 4; 3, 8; 4, 3; III, 1, 5.

*ā* (with abl.), I, 3, 8; II, 1, 6; 8; (with acc. and *bhavati*) II, 3, 7.

*ākāśaḥ*, I, 2, 3; II, 1, 6; 3, 1; 3, 6; III, 1, 1; 2; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; (instr.) Ś. X, 3; (acc.) Ś. X, 3; I, 5; (loc.) II, 3, 1; III, 1, 2; 2, 3; Ś. VII, 3.

*ākhyānam*, II, 3, 4.

*āgnimārutasya*, I, 5, 3. Cf. *āgnimārutāsūktāni*, Ś. II, 18.

*ācāryāya*, III, 2, 4; Ś. I, 1; (nom. plur.) III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.

*ājānā*, I, 4, 2.

*ājñānam*, II, 6.

*ājye* (acc.), I, 1, 1; *ājyāni*, I, 1, 2; *ājyeṣu*, I, 1, 2; *ājyam*, Ś. I, 2.

*ātithyāya*, I, 1, 1.

*ātmā* (= body), I, 1, 2; 2, 2; 3, 8; II, 3, 4; 5; (acc.) I, 1, 2; 3, 8; Ś. II, 1. (= vital self) I, 3, 7; (gen.) I, 3, 7. (= self in various senses) II, 3, 1; 2; 7; 4, 1; 5; 6; III, 2, 1; 2; 3; 4; 6; Ś. VII, 6; VIII, 1, &c.; (acc.) I, 3, 5; II, 3, 1; 2; 7; 5; III, 1, 2; 2, 1; 2; 3; 4; 6; Ś. VII, 3, &c.; (instr.) II, 1, 8; 6; (dat.) II, 3, 7; III, 2, 4; (gen.) III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1; *ātmani*, II, 5; Ś. XI, 1; *ātman*, I, 5, 2; Ś. I, 8, &c.

*ātmabhūyam*, II, 5.

*ādarte*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.

*ādītaḥ*, II, 5.

*Ādityaḥ*, I, 4, 2; II, 1, 1; 2; 5; 7; 4, 1; 2; III, 1, 2; 2, 3; 4; Ś. VII, 3; VIII, 7, &c.; (gen.) II, 1, 7; 3, 7; III, 2, 5.

*ādṛtyam*, I, 2, 3, &c.

*ādeṣṭā*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.

*ānuṣṭubham* (acc.), I, 1, 3; (nom.) Ś. XI, 7.

*āṇdam*, III, 1, 2 (*āṇḍam*, Ś. VII, 3).

✓ *āp*: *āpnavāni*, I, 4, 3; 5, 2; *avāpnavāma*, I, 2, 4; *āpnoti*, II, 3, 4; 8; *āpnuvanti*, II, 2, 4; Ś. II, 18; *āpyate*, I, 3, 8; 5, 2; *āpyante*, I, 5, 1; *vyāptam*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10; *upāptau*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11; °*āḥ*, Ś. I, 6;

*āptāni*, I, 3, 8; *āptvā*, II, 5, 6; *āptyai*, I, 1, 3; 2, 1; 3; 3, 8; Ś. II, 5, &c.; *abhyāptyai*, I, 4, 2; *upāptyai*, I, 3, 7; *avāptyai*, Ś. II, 5; *īpsati*, II, 3, 2; *īpsantāḥ*, I, 1, 1.

*āpaḥ*, I, 3, 5; II, 1, 7; 8; 3, 1; 3; 4, 1; 2; 6; Ś. I, 4; VII, 2; X, 1, &c.; *āpaḥ* (acc.), II, 4, 1; v. l. of B in Ś. X, 7; XI, 1; *āpaḥ* (acc.), II, 4, 3; *adbhyaḥ* (abl.), II, 4, 1; *apām*, II, 1, 7; *apsu*, III, 2; *adbhīḥ*, Ś. I, 4; II, 1.

*āyatanam*, III, 1, 3; (acc.) II, 4, 2.

*āyukḥ*, I, 1, 3, &c.; (acc.) I, 3, 8, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; (abl.) I, 5, 2; II, 3, 5; (loc.) I, 2, 2.

*āyusmān*, I, 1, 3.

*āyusyam*, I, 2, 2; III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.

*ārbbhavam*, I, 5, 3; Ś. II, 18.

*āryāḥ* (acc. fem.), III, 2, 5; (nom. masc. f) Ś. VIII, 9, prob. *āryā* (nom. fem.).

*āvapanam*, I, 5, 2; II, 3, 1; Ś. II, 14; (acc.) ib.; (instr.) I, 5, 2.

*āvasathāḥ*, II, 4, 3; (nom. plur.) II, 4, 3.

*āvābhyam* (dat.), II, 4, 2.

*āvih*, I, 3, 3; II, 1, 5; 3, 6.

*āvīrbhūyaḥ*, II, 3, 2.

*āvirmūlaḥ*, II, 3, 6; (acc. masc.) II, 3, 6; *upasikṭamūlaḥ*, Ś. XI, 2.

*āvīstarām*, II, 3, 2.

✓ *ās*: *āsate*, I, 1, 1; *upāsate*, II, 1, 4; *upāsmahe*, II, 6; *āsta*, II, 1, 4; *upāsāṇi cakrire*, II, 1, 8.

*āsandū*, I, 2, 4; (acc.) I, 2, 4.

✓ *i*: *eti*, I, 3, 2, &c.; *apyeti*, I, 4, 2; II, 2, 4; 3, 1; 8; *praiti*, II, 1, 2; 3, 7; 5; *saṁeti*, II, 3, 8; *atīyanti*, I, 2, 2; *apiyanti*, II, 3, 3; *upayanti*, II, 3, 4; Ś. II, 18; *āyanti*, II, 1, 7; *atyāyan*, *āyan*, II, 1, 1; *īyāt*, I, 3, 2; *atīyāt*, II, 1, 1; *prayan*, II, 5; *upeyāya*, II, 2, 3; *saṁparetaḥ*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *pretya*, II, 3, 7; *praitoḥ*, II, 3, 5; *adhīte*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18; *adhīmahe*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11; *adhyesyāmahe*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11; *adhīyānaḥ*, III, 2, 5; *presyan*, Ś. XI, 3; *adhītam*, Ś. XV, 1; *āyataḥ* (gen.), Ś. I, 4; *āyanti*, Ś. I, 4.

*itah*, II, 1, 1; 8; 5; *itahpradānāḥ*, II, 1, 8; *itahsaṁbhṛtāḥ*, II, 1, 8.

*itarah*, II, 5; (acc. masc.) Ś. VIII, 7; (nom. plur. masc.) II, 3, 1; (acc. plur. masc.) II, 3, 1; (gen. plur. masc.) II, 3, 2; (loc. plur. masc.) II, 3, 2; (loc. plur. neut.) I, 1, 2.

- iti*, I, 1, 1, &c.; (summary of an enumeration) II, 6; III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; 9.  
*idam* (nom. pron.), I, 3, 3; 4, 1; II, 1, 1; (nom. adj.) II, 1, 1; 4; (acc. pron.) I, 3, 5; II, 1, 1.  
*idaṁdraḥ*, II, 4, 3; (acc.) II, 4, 3.  
*Indraḥ*, I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. I, 1, &c.; (acc.) I, 2, 2; Ś. XI, 1; (gen.) I, 2, 1; II, 2, 3; Ś. I, 2.  
*Indrarūpam*, I, 2, 1.  
*Indravāyū*, I, 1, 4.  
*indriyam*, I, 2, 2; (loc.) I, 2, 2; (nom. plur.) III, 2, 1.  
*imam* (adj.), I, 1, 2; 3, 2; 4, 3, &c.; *imām* (pron.), I, 3, 4; III, 2, 5; *imasmai* (masc. adj.), II, 3, 7; *imau* (nom. adj.), I, 2, 3; *ime* (acc. du. adj.), III, 1, 5; *ime* (nom. plur. adj.), I, 1, 2; 2, 3; 5, 1; *imāḥ* (nom. adj.), I, 3, 3; II, 1, 1; (pron.) III, 2, 5; *imāni* (nom. adj.), I, 2, 2; 3, 4; 4, 2; II, 1, 1; 2; 8; 6; *imān* (adj.), I, 2, 4; *imāḥ* (acc. adj.), II, 1, 6; *imāni* (acc. adj.), II, 1, 8.  
*iyam* (adj.), I, 3, 4; II, 1, 1; III, 2, 5; (pron.) II, 1, 2; III, 2, 8.  
*irāmayaḥ*, II, 1, 3.  
*iva* (almost = *eva*): *cirātaram iva*, I, 1, 2; *adhātāmāva iva*, I, 2, 3; *saṁnadatīva*, I, 3, 5; 8; 5, 1; II, 1, 2; 5; 3, 1; 6; 4, 3; 6; III, 2, 4; 6; Ś. VIII, 7; XI, 3.  
*iṣam*, I, 2, 4; *iṣaḥ*, I, 1, 4.  
*iha*, I, 1, 2; II, 4, 3; III, 2, 5; Ś. VII, 3.  
*√ikṣ*: *upekṣeta*, II, 2, 4; III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *ikṣata*, II, 4, 1; 3; *vikṣya*, Ś. XI, 4; *abhivyaikṣat* (v.l.), II, 4, 3.  
*√inḥk*: *preṅkḥate*, I, 2, 3.  
*√ir*: *prerte*, II, 1, 2.  
*īryatām*, I, 5, 1.  
*√iṣ*: *iṣe* (3rd sing.), II, 1, 2; 5.  
*īṣvaraḥ*: *caritoḥ*, I, 1, 1; *bhavitōḥ*, *praitōḥ*, II, 3, 5. Cf. *īṣvaraḥ-yadi nāpaṇarūjetōḥ*, Ś. I, 8.  
*u*, I, 1, 1, &c.; (= or) I, 3, 1; *u ha eva*, I, 3, 8.  
*uktham*, I, 2, 1; Ś. I, 4; (acc.) II, 3, 1; 2; Ś. I, 5; (loc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. II, 1; (acc. plur.) I, 3, 8; (gen. plur.) I, 2, 1.  
*ukthamukhe*, I, 2, 4; 3, 1.  
*ukthavat*, I, 2, 1, &c.  
*ugraḥ*, I, 3, 4 (from R̥gveda).  
*uccaiḥ*, II, 3, 6.  
*utāpi*, II, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3.  
*uttamayā*, I, 1, 2.  
*uttaraḥ*, I, 4, 2; II, 3, 4; (nom. neut.) III, 1, 5; (abl. du. neut.) II, 1, 3.  
*uttararūpam*, III, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.  
*uttarottarikramoḥ*, II, 3, 3.  
*udake*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*udaram*, I, 5, 1; II, 1, 4; III, 2, 5; Ś. II, 11; VIII, 9; (loc.) I, 5, 1; Ś. II, 11.  
*udānaḥ*, II, 3, 3; (gen.) Ś. VIII, 8; (loc.) Ś. XI, 1.  
*udumbaraḥ*, I, 2, 3; Ś. I, 7.  
*udgātā*, I, 2, 4.  
*uddhīḥ*, II, 3, 8.  
*udbhijjāni* (v.l. *udbhijjāni*), II, 6.  
*√und*: *undanti*, I, 3, 5.  
*upaniṣad*, III, 1, 1; 2, 5; Ś. VII, 2; (acc.) Ś. XIII, 1; (loc.) III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18; (nom. plur.) III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8.  
*upabādh*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; (acc.) Ś. XI, 3.  
*upari* (with abl.), I, 2, 4.  
*upavādaḥ*, III, 1, 3; (*apavādaḥ* B) Ś. VII, 10.  
*upasthe*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3.  
*upāṁṣu*, II, 3, 6; Ś. II, 1.  
*upāptvā*, I, 3, 7; Ś. I, 7.  
*ubhayoḥ* (gen. neut.), I, 3, 7; *ubhābhyām* (instr. masc.), III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 19; *ubhayeṣām*, I, 2, 3.  
*ubhayam antareṇa* (as nom., acc., and instr.), III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*ubhayakāmoḥ*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*ubhayataḥ*, I, 4, 2.  
*ubhayatodantāḥ*, II, 3, 1.  
*ubhayaḥ*, I, 2, 3.  
*urāḥ*, II, 1, 4.  
*uru* (acc.), II, 1, 4; *urvaṣṭhīve* (v.l.), I, 5, 1.  
*ulbanam*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3.  
*ulbanisṇu*, II, 3, 8 (a Śloka).  
*uṣṇam*, II, 3, 3.  
*uṣṇik*, II, 1, 3; 3, 8; II, 1, 6; 3, 4; (nom. plur.) I, 4, 1; Ś. II, 10; (acc.) ib.; (instr.) Ś. II, 10.  
*ūnātiriktau*, I, 4, 2.  
*ūrū*, I, 1, 2; 5, 1; II, 1, 4.  
*ūrvaṣṭhīve* (v.l. *urū*), I, 5, 1.  
*ūrḥ*, I, 2, 3; Ś. I, 7; (acc.) I, 2, 4; (gen.) I, 2, 3; 4; Ś. I, 7.  
*ūrdhvam*, I, 5, 2; II, 1, 4; 3, 3; 4; 5.



*ūsmāṇaḥ*, II, 2, 4; III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8; *ūsmāṇaḥ*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; *ūsmāṇam*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*ūsmārūpam*, III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.

✓*r*: *āraḥ*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.

*rc*, I, 3, 1; II, 2, 2; 3, 6; *rcā*, I, 3, 2; 4, 2; II, 3, 6; *rcam*, III, 2, 4; 5; *rcak* (abl.), I, 3, 2; (nom. plur.) II, 2, 2; (acc. plur.) III, 2, 6.

✓*rj*: see ✓*arj*.

*rtavaḥ*, I, 3, 8; Ś. VII, 20; X, 5; *rtūn*, Ś. X, 5; *rtūnām*, I, 3, 8.

*rte* (with abl.), II, 4, 3; III, 2, 2; (with acc.) Ś. VIII, 2; 11.

✓*rṣ*: *adhyyṣṭāya*, I, 2, 4.

*rṣe*, II, 2, 3; Ś. I, 6; *rṣinā*, I, 3, 2, &c.; *rṣayaḥ*, III, 2, 6; *rṣibhyaḥ* (dat.), I, 1, 3; *rṣīnām*, I, 2, 2.

*ekam* (nom. neut.), I, 1, 1; 2, 3; 5, 2; III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4; *ekā*, II, 2, 2; 3, 3; 4; III, 2, 4; *ekena*, I, 4, 2; *ekayā*, I, 1, 2; 4, 2; *eke*, I, 1, 1; II, 3, 5; *ekesām*, I, 2, 3.

*ekatām*, I, 4, 2.

*ekadhā*, I, 2, 3; 5, 2.

*ekapadām*, I, 5, 2.

*ekapuruṣarīkam*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.

*ekaviṃśatīḥ*, I, 4, 2; 5, 1.

*ekaviṃśaḥ*, I, 4, 2; 5, 1; *ekaviṃśam*, II, 3, 4.

*ekasatam*, I, 2, 2.

*ekasatatamaḥ*, I, 2, 2.

*ekākṣaradvyakṣarāntām*, I, 3, 3.

*ekādaśa* (śatāni), II, 3, 6.

*ekāhaḥśāntiḥ* (or *ekāhaḥ*), I, 1, 3, &c.; *ekāhaḥ*, Ś. II, 16.

*etadantam*, I, 5, 3.

*etanmayāni*, II, 3, 1.

*etāvataḥ*, I, 2, 4; *etāvati*, II, 3, 4; *etāvantah*, II, 3, 2.

*enat* (nom. v. l.), II, 4, 3; *enam*, I, 3, 4; II, 1, 2; 6; 2, 2; 3, 3; 6; 4, 2; III, 1, 3; 2, 4; 5; Ś. VII, 8, &c.; *enām*, I, 4, 2; 5, 1; II, 5; *enat*, I, 5, 2; 3, 3; II, 4, 3; 5; *ene*, I, 2, 3; *enayoḥ*, III, 1, 1; *enāḥ*, II, 1, 7.

*ebhyaḥ* (dat.), II, 2, 2; 4, 3; *eṣām* (masc. pron.), I, 2, 3; (masc. adj.) I, 1, 2; (neut. adj.) I, 3, 8; II, 3, 5; *eṣu* (masc. adj.), I, 2, 3; 3, 4; II, 3, 7.

*eva*, I, 1, 1, &c.

*evam* (with *veda*, *vidvān*), I, 1, 2, &c.; 2, 4; 3, 1; II, 1, 6; 5; III, 2, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.

*eṣa* (pron.), I, 2, 3, &c.; *eṣā* (pron.), I, 2, 4; (adj.) I, 2, 2, &c.; *etat* (pron.), I, 2, 2, &c.; (adj.) I, 1, 2, &c.; *etam* (pron.), II, 3, 4, &c.; (adj.) I, 1, 1, &c.; *etām* (adj.), I, 3, 2; II, 1, 7; III, 2, 5; *etat* (pron.), I, 1, 3, &c.; (adj.) I, 1, 1, &c.; *etena* (masc. adj.), II, 1, 8; *etayā* (pron.), I, 5, 2; (adj.) I, 3, 8; II, 4, 3; *etena* (pron.), I, 2, 2; (adj.) I, 2, 2; 5, 2; II, 2, 3; *etasmāt* (pron.), I, 3, 4; II, 3, 2; (neut. adj.) I, 1, 2; *etasmīn* (neut. pron.), II, 3, 3; (neut. adj.) I, 1, 3; 2, 4; *etasyām* (adj.), III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 19; *etasya* (masc. pron.), I, 2, 4; (neut. adj.) I, 1, 1, &c.; *etau* (pron.), II, 1, 7; *ete* (acc. neut. pron.), I, 5, 2; *etābhyām* (instr. masc. pron.), II, 3, 1; *etayoḥ* (gen. masc. pron.), II, 1, 7; (gen. masc. adj.) I, 4, 1; *ete*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *etāḥ* (adj.), I, 3, 2; 8; II, 3, 3; *etāni* (adj.), I, 3, 4; *etān* (adj.), I, 1, 2; 3, 7; *etāḥ* (adj.), I, 3, 2, 8; *eteṣām* (masc. adj.), I, 1, 2; 3, 7; II, 1, 7; *etāsu* (pron.), II, 4, 2; Ś. X, 1.

*aikāhikam*, I, 1, 3, &c.; Ś. II, 18, &c.; (loc.) Ś. II, 18; *aikāhikau*, I, 2, 1; 5, 2.

*aikyā* (instr. neut.), III, 2, 3.

*aīndram*, I, 2, 1, &c.; Ś. I, 1, &c.; (masc. nom.) ib.; (masc. acc.) II, 3, 5; (masc. abl.) II, 3, 6; (neut. abl.) I, 2, 2; (neut. loc.) I, 5, 3.

*aīndrāgnau*, I, 5, 1.

*aīndrīnām*, I, 5, 2.

*om*, I, 1, 1; II, 3, 6; 8.

*odatyah*, I, 3, 5 (from Rgveda).

*oṣadhayaḥ*, II, 1, 3; 6; *oṣadhīnām*, I, 2; II, 1, 3; *oṣadhīsu*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4.

*oṣadhivanaspatayaḥ*, I, 2, 4; II, 3, 1; 2; 4, 1, 2; (acc.) II, 3, 1; (loc.) II, 3, 2.

*audumbarīm*, I, 2; 4; *audumbarē* (nom. du.), I, 2, 3; *audumbaram* (nom.), Ś. I, 7.

*auṣṇīham* (nom.), Ś. XI, 7; (acc.) I, 1, 3; *auṣṇīhī*, I, 4, 3; Ś. II, 5; *auṣṇīhīm*, I, 4, 3; Ś. II, 10.

*kaḥ*, II, 4, 3; 6; *kā*, I, 3, 2; *kim*, II, 3, 5; 4, 3; *kena* (neut.), II, 3, 7; *kasmāt* (=why?),

- I, 2, 2; the following indefinite pronominal phrases occur: *yad u kiṃca*, II, 1, 2; *yad vai kiṃca*, I, 3, 1; *yad ha kiṃca*, II, 3, 3; *yoc ca kiṃca*, II, 3, 2; *yat kiṃcedam*, II, 6; *yad idam kiṃca*, I, 4, 1, &c.; II, 1, 2, &c.; III, 1, 6, &c.; *yad ha kiṃcedam*, II, 1, 2; *yah kaśca*, II, 3, 6; *yat kiṃca*, II, 3, 6; *ya-tyai kasyai ca*, II, 4, 2; *ya-tyam kasyāmcid*, II, 1, 6; *kaścana*, II, 3, 8; *kiṃca kiṃca*, I, 1, 3, &c.; *kiṃcid* (acc.), III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4; *kaś cid*, Ś. VII, 8; *yad idam kiṃcid*, Ś. VII, 15; *yat kiṃcid*, Ś. X, 2, &c.
- kakṣaṣī*, I, 2, 2.  
*kataraḥ*, II, 6; *kataraṇa*, II, 4, 3.  
*katham*, II, 4, 3; *na kathanicana*, Ś. XIII.  
*kadūcana*, II, 1, 6.  
*kaninaka*, II, 1, 5.  
*kanīyaḥ*, II, 3, 5.  
*kanyāke*, III, 2, 4 (*kanīnike*, Ś. VIII, 7).  
*kayāśubhīyam*, I, 2, 2; (acc.) I, 2, 2.  
*kariṇu*, II, 4, 1; (acc.) III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; (abl.) II, 4, 1.  
*karma*, II, 1, 1; 3; (dat.) II, 1, 7; (abl.) II, 1, 6; (dat. plur.) II, 5.  
*kalyāṇakīrtiḥ*, II, 3, 5.  
*kavayaḥ*, II, 3, 8.  
*kākakulāyagandhikam*, III, 2, 4.  
*kāmāḥ*, II, 6; (acc.) I, 1, 4; 3, 1; (nom. plur.) I, 1, 3; Ś. II, 16; (acc. plur.) I, 1, 2; 3; 2, 4; 3, 7; II, 5, 6; Ś. II, 16; (dat. plur.) II, 3, 6; (gen. plur.) I, 1, 2; 3; 3, 7; *kā-mam* (adv.), I, 1, 1; III, 2, 4.  
*kāmayate*, I, 3, 1; 7; II, 1, 6; *kāmayeta* (with dat.), Ś. XI, 8.  
*kālāḥ*, Ś. VII, 6.  
*kāle*, II, 3, 6.  
*kimarthāḥ*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*kīrtiḥ*, I, 5, 2; II, 3, 6; III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.  
*kīrtikāmāḥ*, I, 1, 1.  
*kumāraḥ*, I, 3, 2; (acc.) II, 5.  
*kumbhā*, II, 3, 6.  
*kuśalāt*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 8; 9.  
*✓kṛ*: *karoti*, I, 2, 4, &c.; *karomi*, II, 4, 2; *vyākaroti*, II, 6; *kurute*, I, 5, 2; *saṃskurute*, I, 1, 2; *kuryāt*, I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VIII, 7; *kurvita*, III, 2, 3; *kuru*, II, 1, 4; *anekī-kurvan*, III, 1, 5; *kṛtani*, II, 1, 3; III, 2, 4; *niṣkṛtam*, I, 1, 4; *saṃskṛtam*, I, 1, 4; *ak-ṛtā*, I, 2, 4; *vaṣaṭkṛtya*, I, 2, 4; *chandaskā-ram*, I, 5, 1; *kriyate*, I, 1, 3; 2, 4; *saṃs-kriyante*, I, 5, 1. Cf. *✓jñā* and *✓vid*.  
*kṛtakṛtyaḥ*, II, 5; for *kṛtya*, cf. *kṛtyāḥ*, Ś. II, 4.  
*kṛtsnaḥ*, II, 3, 5; *kṛtsnam* (masc.), Ś. VIII, 10.  
*kṛtsnataram* (acc.), I, 3, 5.  
*✓kṛ*: *avikarṣan*, III, 1, 5.  
*kṛṣṇam*, II, 1, 5; III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4; *kṛṣṇām*, III, 2, 4.  
*kṛṣṇadantam*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.  
*kṛṣṇavatsam*, III, 2, 4.  
*✓kṛp*: *saṃkalpayati*, II, 1, 1; *trcaktṛtaḥ*, Ś. I, 2.  
*kṛptya*, I, 3, 8.  
*kratuḥ*, II, 6; *kratavaḥ*, I, 3, 4.  
*✓kram*: *udakrāmat*, *utkrāmāma* (Ś. XI, 1), *utkrānte*, II, 1, 4; *utkrāmya*, II, 5, 6; *uc-cakramuḥ*, Ś. XI, 1; *utkrāman*, Ś. VIII, 7.  
*krūrām*, II, 3, 8 (a Śloka).  
*kva*, see *yatra*.  
*ksatram*, I, 1, 3; (gen.) I, 1, 3.  
*✓kṣar*: *kṣarati*, II, 2, 2; *atikṣaranti*, II, 2, 2.  
*kṣudram*, II, 2, 2.  
*kṣudramiṣṭrāṇi*, II, 6 (*kṣudrāṇi*, Ś. VII, 21); *kṣudramiṣṭrā* (*vikṛtiḥ*), Ś. VIII, 11.  
*✓khaḍ*: *khaditvā*, III, 2, 4; *khādayati*, Ś. XI, 4, where is *dhakṣayitvā* for *khaditvā*.  
*kharaṇḥ*, III, 2, 4.  
*khalu*, III, 1, 5; Ś. VII, 18.  
*khādaḥ*, II, 3, 4.  
*khāni*, II, 3, 3.  
*khurūḥ*, II, 1, 4.  
*✓khyā*: *abhikhyāyeta*, III, 2, 4 (*khyāyeta*, Ś. VIII, 7); *abhivyaikhyat* (?), II, 4, 3; *prati-khyāya*, I, 2, 4; *saṃkhyāyamānāyām*, Ś. II, 17.  
*gandham*, II, 1, 7; *gandhān*, II, 6.  
*✓gam*: *gachati*, II, 5; *parigachati* (with acc.), I, 5, 1; *ā-gachati*, I, 1, 4; *āgachanti*, I, 1, 1; 2; *ā-gachanti*, I, 1, 4; *ā-gachataḥ*, I, 1, 4; *agamat*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14; *gatam* (acc. masc.), II, 5; *āgatam* (nom.), II, 3, 8; *agataḥ*, III, 2, 4; *adhigamyante*, II, 3, 3; *gamayati*, Ś. VII, 2; 3; *upajagāma*, Ś. I, 6.  
*garbhāḥ*, II, 5; (acc.) II, 5; (loc.) II, 5.  
*✓gū*: *udagūt*, I, 3, 4; *saṃagūt*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2; *saṃagūt*, II, 1, 5; *upāgūt*, II, 2, 3; *abhiprāgūt*, II, 2, 2.  
*✓gū*: *udgāyati*, II, 3, 4.



- gāthā*, II, 3, 6.  
*gām*, II, 4, 2; Ś. XI, 4; *gāvah*, II, 6; *gāḥ*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 19; *gav* (gen.), Ś. XI, 4.  
*gāyatram*, I, 4, 1; II, 3, 4; Ś. XI, 7; (acc.) I, 1, 3.  
*gāyatrī*, I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. II, 7; (acc.) I, 4, 3; 5, 1; Ś. II, 8; *gāyatrīḥ* (nom. plur.), Ś. II, 10; *gāyatrīyaḥ*, Ś. I, 2; (loc. plur.) I, 4, 1.  
*gīriḥ*, II, 1, 8.  
*guhā*, I, 3, 3.  
*√gr*: *girati*, II, 1, 8; *apagirati*, III, 2, 4 (*avagirati*, Ś. XI, 4); *grīhi*, II, 1, 4.  
*grīzah*, II, 2, 1.  
*√grh*: *grhṇanti*, I, 2, 4; *anudgrhṇan*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3; *agrahaisyat*, II, 4, 3; *grahītum*, II, 4, 3; *grhyate*, II, 4, 2; *ajighrṅkṣat*, II, 4, 3.  
*geṣṇah*, II, 3, 6.  
*gopā*, II, 1, 6.  
*gopoyati*, II, 1, 6.  
*grahah*, II, 4, 3; *graham*, Ś. II, 17. Cf. *sagraham*, Ś. II, 17.  
*grīvāḥ*, I, 4, 1; *grīvāṇām*, Ś. II, 3. Cf. *groivam*, Ś. II, 3, and *mayūra*².  
*√ghrā*: *ājighrati*, II, 6.  
*ghṛtācī*, I, 1, 4.  
*ghoṣah*, II, 2, 4; *ghoṣāḥ*, II, 2, 2.  
*ghoṣṭā*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7, which has *aghuṣṭah*.  
*ca*, I, 1, 4, &c., see *Intro.*, p. 65. Ś. VII and VIII agree with the *Aitareya*.  
*√cakṣ*: *ācakṣate*, I, 4, 1; II, 1, 4; 6; 8; 2, 1; 2; 4, 3; III, 2, 5; Ś. VII, X, 1, &c.  
*cakṣuḥ*, I, 3, 8, &c.; Ś. VII, 3, &c.; (acc.) II, 1, 7; Ś. X, 4; (instr.) II, 1, 7; 4, 3; (abl.) II, 4, 1; (gen.) II, 1, 7; III, 2, 5; (nom. du.) II, 3, 8.  
*cakṣurmayaḥ*, *cakṣurmayaṃ*, III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1; 2.  
*catvārah*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3; *catvāri*, I, 1, 2; *catuṣṣatam* (acc.), *catuṣṣate* (loc.), Ś. II, 10; *catuṣṣatikṛtvah*, Ś. II, 11.  
*catvāriṇīlat* (*śatāni*), III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*caturakṣarāṇi*, II, 3, 6; (acc.) Ś. II, 10.  
*caturtham*, III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.  
*catusparvāḥ*, I, 2, 2.  
*catuspādāḥ*, I, 1, 2; 5, 1; *°pātsu*, I, 1, 2; 5, 1.  
*candramāḥ*, II, 1, 5; 7; 4, 1; 2; III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7, &c.; (acc.) Ś. X, 5; XI, 1; (gen.) II, 1, 7; (loc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4, &c.  
*√car*: *carati*, II, 1, 6; *caranti*, II, 1, 7; *adhīva-caranti* (with acc.), II, 3, 1; *paricaranti*, II, 1, 7; *paricarataḥ*, II, 1, 7; *cariloḥ*, I, 1, 1.  
*carmanā*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.  
*cāturmāsyaṇi*, II, 3, 3.  
*cārum*, III, 2, 4.  
*√ci*: *vicinoti*, II, 1, 7; *nicinvanti*, II, 1, 8; *cinuyāt*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 6; *nyacāyan*, II, 3, 5.  
*√cit*: *vicikīṣet*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*cittam*, II, 3, 2; (gen.) II, 3, 3.  
*ciram*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*ciratarāṃ*, I, 1, 2.  
*cerapādāḥ* (I proper name), II, 1, 1.  
*√cya*: *pracyavate*, I, 2, 2; *acyoṣṭhāḥ*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*√chad*: *channah*, II, 1, 6; *chādayanti*, II, 1, 6.  
*√chand*: *chandati*, I, 1, 3; *avachandayati*, Ś. XI, 3.  
*chandah* (nom.), I, 4, 1; 5, 2; Ś. I, 2; (acc.) I, 1, 2; 3, 8; (loc.) I, 1, 2; (nom. plur.) I, 1, 2; 3, 4; II, 1, 6; 3, 4; Ś. II, 5; (acc. plur.) III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18; (instr. plur.) I, 3, 4; II, 1, 6; 3, 5; III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 1; (gen. plur.) I, 4, 1; II, 1, 1; 3, 5; Ś. II, 5; (loc. plur.) I, 3, 4; (nom. dual) Ś. I, 2.  
*chandahpuruṣah*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3.  
*chandaskāraṃ*, I, 5, 1. For the form, cf. *namaskāraṃ*, Ś. I, 5; Macdonell, *Vedic Grammar*, p. 71.  
*chandaskṛtim*, I, 5, 2.  
*chandastah*, II, 3, 4.  
*chandastvam* (acc.), II, 1, 6.  
*chandogāḥ*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4.  
*chandomayaḥ*, *chandomoyam*, III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1; 2; *chandomayī*, *chandomayīm*, I, 3, 4.  
*chōyām*, III, 2, 4; *chōyā*, Ś. VIII, 7.  
*√chid*: *ucchidyāt*, *ucchidyai*, I, 2, 4.  
*chidrah*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *chidrām*, III,

2, 4; *chidrā*, Ś. VIII, 7; (nominal) *chidrāni*, Ś. VIII, 9.  
*chuvukena*, I, 2, 4.

*jagati*, I, 3, 4; II, 1, 6; *jagatisahasram*, II, 3, 5.

*jaṅgamam*, II, 6.

✓*jan*: *jāyate*, I, 1, 2; II, 1, 2; (*adhīva-jāyate*, ā-jāyate) 3, 1; 5; *prajāyate*, I, 2, 4, &c.; *prajāyete*, I, 3, 4; *jāyante*, I, 3, 5; 8; II, 1, 7; *ajāyata*, II, 4, 3; *jāyeta*, II, 3, 6; *jātaḥ*, I, 3, 4; *janayati*, II, 5.

*janma*, II, 5; (gen.) II, 5.

✓*jap*: *japet*, I, 3, 2; III, 2, 4; 5; Ś. I, 4; *japatī*, Ś. I, 4.

*jāgatam* (acc. neut.), I, 1, 3; (nom.) Ś. XI, 7; *jāgatāḥ*, I, 1, 3.

*jātavat*, I, 1, 2.

*jātavedasyām*, I, 5, 3; *vedasyāḥ*, I, 5, 3.

*jāyā*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 16; (acc.) I, 3, 5; *jāyāyai*, Ś. XI, 8.

*jārujāni*, II, 6.

✓*ji*: cf. *abhiḥjityai*, I, 1, 2, &c.; *apa-jayati*, Ś. XIII.

*jihme*, III, 2, 4 (*dvijihme* or *ve*, Ś. VIII, 7).

*jihma'irasam*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.

*jihvā*, III, 2, 5.

✓*jīva*: *jīvanti*, I, 5, 2; *jīviṣyati*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *jīvati*, Ś. XI, 8; *jīvataḥ* (gen. masc.), Ś. XII, 8.

*jīvākṣaram* (acc.), II, 3, 8; (instr.) II, 3, 8.

*jīvāhaḥ* (acc.), II, 3, 8; (instr.) II, 3, 8.

*jūtiḥ*, II, 6.

✓*jy*: *jīryate*, II, 1, 7.

✓*jñā*: *vijānāti*, II, 6; III, 1, 5 (*vijñāp-yati*, Ś. VII, 12); *pratiñānate*, II, 3, 5; *samajānata*, I, 2, 2; *jānīyam*, II, 2, 3; *abhiprajānīhi*, II, 4, 2; *vijñātām* (acc. neut.), II, 3, 2; *aviññātoḥ*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *vijñāsam eva cakre*, Ś. I, 6.

*jyāyām*, I, 4, 2.

*jyesthaḥ*, III, 1, 1; *jyestham*, I, 3, 4; 7.

*jyotiḥ*, II, 3, 1; (acc.) II, 1, 7; (nom. plur.) II, 3, 1; II, 6; III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3.

✓*jval*: *prajvalataḥ* (gen. masc.), III, 2, 4 (*jvalataḥ*, Ś. VIII, 7); *jvalantīm*, III, 2, 4.

*ṇakāraḥ*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.

*ṇakārasakārau*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11; (acc.) III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.

*tat* (nom.), I, 1, 1, &c.; *tam*, I, 1, 2, &c.; *tām*, I, 1, 2; II, 3, 6; *tot*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *tena* (masc.), II, 2, 4; *tasya* (neut.), II, 1, 2; *tasyai* (gen.), I, 2, 2; 3, 4; II, 3, 6; *tasmin* (masc.), II, 3, 1; *tau* (nom.), I, 4, 1; 2; II, 1, 4; *te* (nom. neut.), I, 1, 2; *te* (acc. fem.), II, 4, 2; *tayoh* (gen. masc.), II, 3, 6; *te*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *tāḥ*, I, 1, 2, &c.; *tāni*, I, 1, 2; II, 1, 1; *tāḥ* (acc.), I, 3, 5; *tābhyah* (dat.), II, 4, 2; (abl.) II, 4, 3; *tat* (=so, then), I, 1, 1, &c.; *tasmāt* (=therefore), I, 1, 1, &c.; *tena* (=therefore), I, 2, 2; 4; II, 2, 3; *tad yad*, I, 2, 3; 4. See also Introd., VI, p. 58.

*tata*, I, 3, 3.

*talamam* (acc. neut.), II, 4, 3.

*tataḥ*, II, 2, 4.

*tatavatyā*, I, 3, 3.

*tatpratiṣṭhāyām*, I, 1, 3, &c.

*tatra*, II, 3, 6; III, 2, 5.

*tadanukṛtiḥ*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.

✓*tan*: *prātāyi*, *prātāyata*, II, 1, 5; *saṃtatāḥ*, II, 5; *saṃtanoti*, I, 4, 3. Cf. *talamam*, II, 4, 3.

*tantīḥ*, II, 1, 6; *tantyā*, II, 1, 6.

*tantisambaddhāḥ*, II, 1, 6.

*tantrayaḥ*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.

*tanvam*, II, 3, 6; *tanūḥ*, Ś. I, 4.

✓*tap*: *tapati*, I, 2, 4; II, 2, 1; 2; *abhyatapat*, II, 4, 1; 3; *tapam*, II, 2, 3; *abhitap-tasya*, II, 4, 1; *taptābhyah* (abl.), II, 4, 3.

*tapasvitamaḥ*, I, 2, 2; *tapasvī*, I, 2, 2.

*tardamavati*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.

*tāta*, I, 3, 3.

*tāvān*, I, 3, 8; II, 1, 7; *tāvanti*, II, 2, 4; 3, 8; (acc.) I, 5, 2.

*tirah*, II, 3, 6.

*tīryāṇcam*, I, 2, 4.

*tu*, I, 1, 1, &c.

*tūlam*, II, 1, 8.

*tūṣṇīm*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18; *tūṣṇīṃśaṇṣaḥ*, *śam*, Ś. II, 1.

*trcam*, I, 1, 1; *trcāḥ*, I, 1, 1; *trcaḥ*, Ś. II, 1; *trcāni*, II, 2.

*trcāṣṭītiḥ*, I, 4, 3; (acc.) I, 4, 3; (nom. plur.) II, 3, 4; (abl. plur.) II, 3, 4.

*trṭīyam*, II, 5; (adv.) II, 2, 3.

✓*trd*: *abhi-trṇati*, I, 3, 1; *abhiṭitṛtsati*, I, 3, 1.



✓*trp*: *samatrpyan*, II, 3, 8; *atrapsyat*, II, 4, 3; *trpyati* *taṣpayati*, Ś. X, 1, &c.; *trptah*, °ā, °am, °āh (m. and f.), X, 2 sq.  
*tejah*, I, 1, 3; 2, 2; (acc.) II, 5; (loc.) I, 2, 2.  
*tejasvī*, I, 1, 3.  
✓*trā*: *atrāyata*, II, 2, 1.  
*trayah*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *tisroḥ*, I, 2, 2; II, 1, 1; 3, 4; *triṇi*, I, 1, 2; 2, 3; II, 3, 3; 4; III, 1, 2; *triṣu* (neut.), I, 3, 4.  
*triṇīśat*, I, 1, 2.  
*triṇīśinyah*, I, 2, 2.  
*trīḥ*, I, 1, 2, &c.  
*triṇivitham* (acc. neut.), I, 5, 2.  
*trīvāt*, I, 5, 3.  
*trivṛt*, I, 4, 1; II, 1, 5; (name) II, 3, 4; *trivṛtah*, I, 1, 2, &c.  
*trīṣṭup*, I, 1, &c.; Ś. I, 2; (acc.) I, 2, 2, &c.; (nom. plur.) Ś. I, 2.  
*trīṣṭubhagayah*, I, 5, 2; (gen. plur.) I, 5, 2; (loc. plur.) I, 5, 2.  
*treḍhā*, II, 3, 4; Ś. II, 2.  
*traiṣṭubhaḥ*, I, 2, 2; Ś. I, 2; *traiṣṭubham* (nom.), Ś. XI, 7; (acc.) I, 1, 3; (instr.) Ś. II, 1.  
*tryakṣaram*, I, 3, 4.  
*tvam*, II, 1, 4; 2, 3; *tvām*, II, 2, 3; *tvā*, III, 1, 3; *tvayī*, I, 3, 4.  
*tvak*, I, 4, 1; II, 1, 6; 4, 1; (acc.) II, 4, 2; (instr.) II, 4, 3; (abl.) II, 4, 1.  
*tvajanrmyah*, I, 3, 4 (from Rgveda).

*dakṣiṇah*, I, 4, 2; II, 3, 4; Ś. II, 5; *dakṣiṇam*, II, 2, 3; *dakṣiṇāḥ* (fem.), I, 2, 3.  
*dakṣiṇāmukhaḥ*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.  
✓*day*: *dayeta*, II, 3, 6 (with instr.).  
*darbhah*, I, 2, 3.  
*darśapūrnamāsau*, II, 3, 3.  
*daśa*, I, 1, 2; 3, 4; 7; with *daśataḥ*, II, 3, 4; *daśatāni*, II, 3, 4.  
*daśataḥ*, I, 3, 8; II, 3, 4.  
*daśatinām*, I, 5, 2.  
*daśamah*, I, 3, 7; *daśamīm*, I, 4, 1.  
*daśākṣare* (nom. neut.), I, 3, 7.  
*daśinī*, I, 3, 4; *daśinībhyām* (instr.), I, 4, 2.  
✓*dā*: *dadāmi*, II, 2, 3; *dadati*, I, 1, 4; *dadyāt*, II, 3, 6; Ś. XI, 8; *dadyuḥ*, II, 1, 5; *dadyuḥ*, I, 1, 4; *āttam* (nom. neut.), II, 3, 4.  
*dāmāni*, *dāmabhiḥ*, II, 1, 6.  
*dārbbhyāḥ* (nom. plur. fem.), I, 2, 3.

*divāyatanam*, Ś. VII, 10 (*divyāyatanam*, A. III, 1, 3).  
*divyāḥ* (fem.), I, 3, 4.  
*dīlī*, II, 1, 6; *dīlāḥ* (nom.), II, 1, 5; 7; 2, 3; 4, 1; 2; Ś. VII, 4; X, 6; (acc.) II, 1, 1; 6; Ś. X, 6; *dīgḥbyah* (abl.), II, 1, 7; *dīlām*, II, 1, 7.  
✓*dīl*: *anādiṣṭah*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*dirghajīvitamah*, I, 2, 2; *dirghajīvī*, I, 2, 2.  
✓*du*: *dutāḥ*, I, 4, 1. Cf. *J.R.A.S.*, 1909, p. 204.  
✓*duh*: *duke* (3rd sing.), I, 3, 2.  
*duḥghadadhāḥ*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 5.  
✓*dr*: *vidārya*, II, 4, 3.  
✓*dr*: *ātriyante*, I, 1, 1; and see *ādrīyam*.  
✓*drī*: *drīyate*, II, 3, 2; III, 2, 4; *drīyete*, I, 2, 3; *drīyante*, III, 2, 4; *drīyeyātām*, III, 2, 4 (*drīyete*, Ś. VIII, 7); *drīṣṭe*, II, 1, 3; 8; *ādarām*, II, 4, 3; *drīṣṭam* (nom. neut.), II, 4, 3; *adrīṣṭah*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *drīṣṭvā*, II, 4, 3.  
*drīṣṭīḥ*, II, 6; *drīṣṭīḥ* (acc.), Ś. XI, 3.  
*devam*, II, 3, 4; *devāḥ*, I, 1, 4; II, 1, 2; 4; 5; 8; 2, 1; 2; 3, 8; 6; *devān*, II, 1, 8; *devēbhyah* (dat.), I, 1, 4; (abl.) II, 1, 8; *devānām*, I, 4, 3; II, 1, 2; III, 1, 6.  
*devatā*, II, 1, 8; III, 1, 3; *devatām*, III, 1, 3; *devatāyai* (dat.), II, 4, 2; *devatāḥ* (nom.), I, 3, 2; 8; II, 1, 5; 3, 3; Ś. X, 1; (acc.) II, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 1; *devatāsu*, II, 4, 2.  
*devatāmayaḥ*, II, 2, 4.  
*devarathah*, II, 3, 8; (abl.) Ś. I, 8.  
*devaretah* or *devaretasam* (?), I, 2, 4.  
*devalokam* (acc.), I, 3, 8.  
*devīm*, I, 3, 1; *devyai* (gen.), I, 3, 1 (w. r. for *daivyai*).  
*daivam*, I, 4, 3; *daivīm*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9; *daivyai* (gen., v. l.), I, 3, 1.  
*daiḥikah*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3; (acc.) Ś. VIII, 7.  
*doḥ*, I, 2, 2.  
*dyaub*, I, 4, 3; II, 1, 2; 7; 4, 1; III, 1, 1; 2; 2, 4; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; *dīvam*, II, 4, 1; III, 1, 3; 6; Ś. VII, 15, &c.; *divā*, Ś. X, 4; *divāḥ* (gen.), II, 1, 7; III, 1, 2; 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8; *divī*, III, 1, 2; 3; 2, 3; Ś. VII, 3, &c.  
*dyāvāpṛthivyaḥ*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3; (acc.) III, 1, 2; *dyāvāpṛthivī*, I, 3, 8 (from Rgveda); *dyāvāpṛthivyoḥ* (gen. ?), Ś. VII, 3.

*dyāvāpṛthivīyam*, I, 5, 3.

*draṣṭā*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.

*draghīyah*, I, 5, 1.

√*drū*: *upadravati*, II, 3, 4.

*dvau*, I, 1, 2, &c.; *dve* (nom. neut.), I, 1, 2, &c.; Ś. I, 2; (acc.) I, 1, 1; *dvābhyām* (sem.), I, 4, 2; *dvayoh* (gen. masc.), I, 4, 2.

*dvādāsa*, I, 3, 4; Ś. I, 2; cf. *dvādaśarcam*, Ś. I, 2.

*dvādaśakṛtvah*, I, 5, 1.

*dvādaśavidhāḥ*, I, 5, 1.

*dvāḥ*, *dvārā*, II, 4, 3.

*dvāvīṣīm*, I, 4, 2; *dvāvīṣyoh* (loc.), I, 4, 2.

*dvītiyā*, I, 5, 1; *dvītiyam* (nom.), II, 5; (acc. adv.) II, 2, 3; Ś. I, 6.

*dvīpadā*, II, 3, 4; *dvīpadāḥ*, I, 4, 2; (acc.) Ś. II, 12; *dvīpadayoh* (loc.), I, 4, 2.

*dvīpratiṣṭhāḥ*, I, 1, 2; 5, 1; (acc.) I, 1, 2; 5, 1.

√*dvīṣ*: *dvīṣan*, II, 1, 4, &c.; *dvīṣantam*, II, 1, 8; *dvīṣyāt*, Ś. I, 8.

*dharmēṇa*, II, 1, 7.

√*dhā*: *dadhāti*, I, 1, 4; 2, 3; 3, 8; 5, 2;

*api dadhati*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9; *saṃda-*

*dhāti*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *saṃdadhati*, III, 1, 6

(*ati*, Ś. VII, 18); *paridadhāti*, I, 5, 2; *sa-*

*madadhāt*, III, 2, 6; *dadhat*, Ś. VIII, 11;

*paridadhyāt*, I, 5, 2; *saṃdadhat*, III, 1, 2;

*saṃdadhatam*, III, 1, 4; *dhatte*, I, 5, 2;

*dadhe*, II, 2, 1; *samadhām*, II, 1, 4; *sama-*

*dhātām*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3; *vihitāḥ*, II,

3, 1; *samāhitāḥ* and *samāhitāḥ*, III, 2; Ś.

VIII, 1; *vihitam* (nom. neut.), II, 3, 4;

*apihitā*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9; *saṃdhātum*,

III, 1, 4; Ś. VII, 8; *anuvadhāya*, III, 1, 2;

Ś. VII, 3; *apīdhāya*, III, 2, 4; *pratidhiyate*,

II, 5; *saṃdhīyate*, III, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII,

2, &c.; *dhīyante*, I, 3, 3; *samadhītsiṣam*,

III, 1, 4; *saṃdhīyamānām*, III, 2, 3; Ś.

VIII, 4; *samadhītsiḥ*, Ś. VII, 8; 9; *saṃ-*

*dhītsitum*, Ś. VII, 8; *samadhāḥ*, Ś. VII, 8.

*dhāma* (acc.), II, 2, 3; Ś. I, 6.

*dhāyyā*, I, 4, 2; (acc.) I, 4, 2.

√*dhāv*: *dhāvayanti*, II, 1, 2.

√*dhī*: *dhinoti*, I, 2, 3; *dhinvanti*, I, 3, 5.

*dhīyāvaruḥ*, I, 1, 4 (from Ṛgveda).

*dhīyāṇā*, I, 5, 3.

*dhīḥ*, I, 1, 4.

*dhūḥ*, I, 5, 2.

*dhūmāt*, I, 3, 5.

√*dhṛ*: *dādadhāra*, I, 5, 2; *dhārayati*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.

*dhṛtiḥ*, II, 6.

*dhenum*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4; *dhenavaḥ*, I, 3, 5.

√*dhṛ*: *dhṛyāt* (nom. neut.), II, 4, 3; *dhṛyā-*

*tvā*, II, 4, 3.

√*dhvans*: *pradhvamsayan*, III, 2, 3.

*na* (=no), II, 3, 6; 8; (negative with indica-

tive) I, 1, 1; 2, 1; 2; 5, 2; II, 1, 1; 5; 6;

7; 8; 2, 2; 3, 2; 5; 8; III, 1, 4; 2, 4;

(no verb) II, 4, 2; (with opt. = imperative)

I, 1, 1; 3, 2; II, 1, 1; 3, 6; 7; III, 1, 3;

(with opt. = potential or indefinite) II, 1, 2;

5; III, 2, 2; 4; 5; (with gerundive) I, 2,

3, &c.; (with subj.) Ś. VIII, 6; *ekayā na*

*trīṣat*, I, 1, 2; *na - cana*, III, 1, 3; Ś.

VII, 8; 9; *na vā*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.

*naḥ* (dat.), II, 4, 2; (gen.) II, 1, 4; 2, 1; 2.

*nakṣatresu*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4.

*nakṣebhyah*, I, 3, 8; *nakṣāni*, Ś. I, 4; VIII,

II.

√*naḍ*: *saṃnadati*, I, 3, 5; 8; *nadan*, I, 3, 8.

*nadaḥ*, I, 3, 5; 8; *nadena*, I, 3, 5; 8; *nada-*

*śya*, Ś. II, 1.

√*nam*: *saṃnamante*, III, 1, 7; *anataḥ*, III,

2, 4; *vinatam* (nom. neut.), II, 1, 2.

*namaḥ*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 8; *°kāram*, I, 5.

*naladamālī*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.

*nava*, I, 3, 7; 8; 4, 1.

*navakṣpālam*, I, 4, 1 (*trīṇi vā asya śiṣṇāḥ ka-*

*pālāni*, Ś. I, 2).

*navatīḥ*, I, 2, 2.

*navarcam*, I, 3, 8.

*navasrakti*, II, 3, 6 (said to be nom.; I read *°tiḥ*).

*nānāchandasām*, II, 3, 5.

*nānārūpā*, II, 3, 6.

*nāndanam*, II, 4, 3.

*nābhīḥ*, II, 4, 1; *nābhim*, II, 4, 2; *nābhya*

or *°āḥ* (abl.), II, 4, 1 (in Sandhi *nābhya*).

*nāma* (by name), II, 4, 3; *nāmā* (adv.), II, 3,

8; *nāmāni*, II, 1, 6; *nāmadbhīḥ*, II, 1, 6.

*nāmadheyam* (acc.), II, 2, 4; *nāmadheyāni*, I,

3, 3; II, 6.

*nāmāyattōḥ*, II, 3, 8.

*nāsikāyai* (gen.), II, 1, 2; *nāsike* (nom.), II,



- 1, 2; 4, 1; (acc.) II, 4, 2; *nāsikābhyām* (abl.), II, 4, 1.  
 ✓ *ni*: *ānayat*, II, 4, 2; *prānayatā*, II, 1, 5; *pranīḥ*, II, 1, 5.  
*nigadaḥ*, II, 3, 6.  
*nīdhanam*, II, 3, 4.  
*nirbhujam*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10; (acc.) III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10; (gen.) III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*nirbhujapṛavādāḥ*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*nirbhujavaktrāḥ*, III, 1, 5; Ś. VII, 12.  
*nīvī*, I, 5, 2; (acc.) I, 5, 2; Ś. I, 3.  
*nīviddhānam*, I, 2, 2; 5, 3.  
*niṣkevalye*, I, 5, 2.  
*nīlāḥ*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*nu*, II, 4, 1; III, 1, 1; 2.  
 ✓ *nu*: *pranūvam*, I, 5, 1; *pranūti*, Ś. II, 1.  
*ned*: *ucchidyat*, I, 2, 4; *asat*, I, 5, 2; *dadhāni*, Ś. I, 1.  
*naṇḥ*, I, 2, 4; *nāvam*, I, 2, 4.  
*nyūnam*, I, 4, 2; *nyūne* (loc. neut.), I, 1, 2, &c.  
*nyūnākṣarā*, I, 1, 2; (acc. du. neut.) I, 3, 4.  
*pakṣaḥ*, I, 4, 2; II, 3, 4; *pakṣau* (acc.), Ś. II, 4; *pakṣābhyām*, Ś. II, 4.  
*pakṣasī*, II, 3, 8.  
*pakṣitīḥ*, I, 1, 3; 3, 8; 4, 2; II, 1, 6.  
*pañca*, I, 2, 2; 3, 8; II, 6, 1; Ś. VII, 21;  
*pañca cātvarīmśacchatani*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*pañcakṛtvāḥ*, II, 3, 4.  
*pañcadalam*, II, 3, 4.  
*pañcapadā*, I, 3, 8.  
*pañcamī*, II, 3, 3; 4.  
*pañcārcam*, I, 3, 8.  
*pañcaviṃśatīḥ*, I, 1, 2, &c.  
*pañcaviṃśaḥ*, I, 1, 2, &c.; Ś. I, 1, &c.; (nom. neut.) I, 1, 2; II, 3, 4; (acc. masc.) I, 1, 2; (nom. plur. neut.) I, 2, 2.  
*pañcaviḍhaḥ*, II, 3, 3; (nom. neut.) II, 3, 1; 4; 6; (acc.) II, 3, 4; 8.  
 ✓ *pat*: *patanti*, II, 1, 2; *utpatanti*, I, 4, 2; *saṃpatanti*, III, 2, 4; *patyati*, II, 1, 4; *prāpatan*, II, 4, 2.  
*patatṛi*, II, 6, 1.  
*patiyasi*, I, 3, 5.  
*pattreṇa*, *pattrāṇi*, I, 4, 2.  
 ✓ *pad*: *prapadyai*, II, 4, 3; *pratipadyate*, I, 1, 2, &c.; *abhipratipadyate*, I, 3, 3; *abhi-*  
*sampadyante*, I, 1, 2; 2, 2; 3, 8; °*padyate*, Ś. VIII, 7; *apadyata*, II, 1, 4; *prapadyata*, II, 1, 4; 4, 3; *pratipadyeta*, I, 3, 2; *sampadyamānā*, II, 3, 6; *sampannāḥ*, II, 3, 2; (nom. neut.) II, 3, 4, &c.; (gen. neut.) II, 3, 4, &c.; *abhipannam*, I, 2, 4; *pratipannam*, I, 3, 4; *prapanne* (loc.), II, 1, 4; *abhisampādayet*, II, 3, 5; *pādi*, II, 2, 2; *abhisampādāyanti*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*padam*, I, 1, 1; II, 2, 2; *padē* (acc.), I, 3, 7; *padāni* (acc.), Ś. II, 1.  
*padānuṣaṅgūḥ* (fem.), I, 5, 2; (acc. masc. plur.) Ś. II, 16; (instr.) ib.  
*padvat*, I, 3, 7.  
*panthāḥ*, II, 1, 1; *panthānam*, III, 2, 4; *panthibhiḥ*, II, 1, 6 (from Rgveda).  
*paraḥ*, III, 1, 3; *pareṇa* (masc.), III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14; *pareṇa* (prep. with acc.), II, 4, 1; *parasmai*, III, 2, 4; Ś. I, 1; *parasmin*, ib.  
*paramaḥ*, II, 3, 6.  
*parastāt* (with gen.), II, 2, 4.  
*parā*, see *bhū*.  
*parāḥ*, II, 1, 8; (1 neut.) 4, 3; *parīk*, II, 3, 6.  
*parīgvacanena*, II, 1, 2, &c.  
*pari* (with acc. and *guchati*), I, 5, 1.  
*parokṣeṇa*, II, 4, 3.  
*parokṣapriyāḥ*, II, 4, 3.  
*Parjanyaḥ*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 3, &c.  
*parystavat*, I, 2, 1.  
*parvāṇi*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; (acc.) I, 4, 1; *parvaṇām*, III, 2, 1; 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*paviḥ*, III, 2, 5.  
 ✓ *paś*: *paśyati*, II, 3, 2; 6; *paśyanti*, II, 3, 2; *paśyet*, III, 2, 3 (*vidyāt*, Ś. VIII, 3); 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *paśyeta*, III, 2, 4; *apāśyat*, II, 4, 3; *apāśyan*, II, 1, 4; *apāśyate*, I, 2, 4; *paśyate*, I, 2, 4.  
*paśuḥ* (= a sacrifice), II, 3, 3; (= cattle) *paśavaḥ*, I, 1, 2, &c.; Ś. II, 1, &c.; *paśūn*, I, 5, 1; II, 3, 1; Ś. II, 16; *paśubhiḥ*, I, 2, 4, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; *paśūnām*, I, 1, 2, &c.; *paśuṇu*, I, 1, 2; 5, 1; Ś. I, 1.  
*paśumān*, I, 1, 3; III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1, &c.  
*pāñktām*, I, 1, 3; Ś. XI, 7.  
*pādāḥ*, I, 3, 8.  
*pādyāḥ*, I, 1, 2.  
*pānam*, II, 3, 4.  
*pāpāt*, II, 1, 6.

*pāpikā*, II, 3, 6.  
*pāpmā*, II, 1, 4; (acc.) I, 1, 2; 2, 2; 3, 4;  
 II, 1, 8; 3, 8; (abl.) II, 2, 1; (gen.) I, 2,  
 3; cf. *apahatopāpmā*.  
*pāyasam* (acc.), III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.  
*pāyuh*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*pīā*, II, 1, 7; III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 15; *pīlaram*,  
 II, 1, 7; *pītre*, III, 2, 6; Ś. I, 1; *pītuḥ*, II,  
 1, 7; III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2.  
*pīpīlikābhyah* (abl.), I, 3, 8; II, 1, 6.  
*√piḥ* : *pīban*, II, 1, 4; *pībati* *pāyayati*, Ś.  
 X, 1, &c.  
*pumāmsam*, II, 3, 8; *pumsaḥ*, I, 4, 2.  
*pucham*, I, 4, 2; II, 3, 4; (instr.) I, 4, 2.  
*punḍarikam*, see *eka*.  
*punyam*, II, 1, 7; (dat. neut.) II, 1, 7; (dat.  
 plur. neut.) II, 5.  
*putraḥ*, III, 1, 1; 5; 6; Ś. VII, 2, &c.;  
 (instr.) III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2; (gen.) II, 1, 7;  
 III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2.  
*putri*, III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1, &c.  
*punaḥ*, II, 1, 4; 5, 1; *punaḥ punaḥ*, Ś. XI,  
 8; *punaḥ*, Ś. XI, 1; *punarmṛtyum*, XIII.  
*purastāt*, I, 2, 4; 3, 2; 5, 3.  
*purā* (adv.), III, 2, 5; (with abl.) II, 3, 5; Ś.  
 XI, 3 (*saṃvatsarāt*).  
*purusaḥ*, I, 1, 2; 3, 5; 4, 1; 2; II, 1, 2; 3;  
 4, 2; III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3; (acc.) I, 3, 8;  
 4, 1; II, 1, 4; 4, 1; 2; III, 2, 3; Ś. XI, 1;  
 (gen.) II, 1, 7; 3, 1; (loc.) II, 3, 2; 7; Ś.  
 X, 1; (nom. plur.) II, 6; III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3.  
*purusaṛūpam*, I, 4, 2; (instr.) II, 2, 1.  
*purusaṛūpam* (gen.), II, 2, 1; 3, 8; °*āni*, Ś. II, 17.  
*puṣṭib*, I, 1, 1.  
*puṣṭikāmaḥ*, I, 1, 1.  
*puṣṭimān*, I, 1, 1.  
*puspam*, II, 3, 6; (acc.) II, 3, 6.  
*√pū* : *pavate*, I, 2, 3; *abhyapavayata*, II, 2, 2;  
*pavamānaḥ*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14; (instr.)  
 III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 19.  
*√pūy* : *pūyet*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*pūrve*, II, 1, 1; *pūrvām* (acc.), Ś. II, 1.  
*pūrvapakṣāparapakṣau*, II, 1, 7.  
*pūrvārūpam*, III, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.  
*pūrvārūpottarārūpe* (acc.), III, 1, 5; Ś. VII, 12.  
*√pr* : *pūṇam*, II, 3, 6.  
*prthivī*, II, 1, 2; 7; 3, 1; II, 6; III, 1, 2;  
 Ś. VII, 2, &c.; (acc.) III, 1, 3; Ś. X, 2, &c.;  
*prthivyā*, Ś. X, 2; *prthivyāḥ* (gen.), II, 1, 7;

III, 1, 2; Ś. VIII, 8; *prthivyām*, III, 1, 2;  
 Ś. VII, 3.  
*prthivyāyatanaṃ*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*prsthānam*, I, 2, 1; *prsthā*, Ś. II, 1.  
*prāgam* (acc.), I, 1, 3; (nom.) Ś. I, 2, &c.;  
 (gen. plur.) I, 2, 1.  
*prakāśam* (acc.), II, 1, 7.  
*pragāthān*, I, 2, 1; *pragāthebhyah* (abl.), Ś.  
 II, 10.  
*prajananam*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 16.  
*prajā*, I, 3, 4; Ś. VII, 15; (acc.) I, 3, 4, &c.;  
 (instr.) I, 2, 4, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; (nom.  
 plur.) II, 1, 1; 2; (acc. plur.) I, 2, 3; III,  
 2, 6; (gen. plur.) II, 1, 2.  
*prajātim*, I, 4, 1; *prajātyai*, I, 2, 4; 3, 1; 4;  
 4, 1.  
*prajinā*, I, 4, 2.  
*Prajāpatih*, I, 1, 4; 2, 2; 3, 3; 5; II, 1, 2;  
 6, 1; III, 2, 6; Ś. I, 1; II, 17; VIII, 11,  
 &c.; XI, 7; (gen.) I, 2, 2; II, 1, 2; (loc.)  
 Ś. I, 2.  
*Prajāpatisaṃhitā*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 16.  
*prajāpāśukāmāḥ*, I, 1, 1.  
*prajñātā*, III, 2, 4.  
*prajñātmā*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3; *prajñātmā-*  
*nam*, Ś. VIII, 7; *prajñānātmanā*, II, 6.  
*prajñānam*, II, 6; (instr.) II, 3, 2; (gen.) II,  
 6; (loc.) II, 6.  
*prajñānetraḥ*, II, 6; (nom. neut.) II, 6.  
*prajñāmayah*, II, 2, 9.  
*prati* (with acc.), III, 2, 3; 4.  
*pratipat*, I, 3, 1; 5, 3; Ś. I, 3; II, 17, fol-  
 lowed in both cases by *anucaraḥ*.  
*pratipadanucarau*, I, 2, 1; 5, 2.  
*pratiṣṭhā*, I, 1, 3, &c.; Ś. II, 18; *pratiṣṭhāyai*  
 (dat.), I, 1, 2; *pratiṣṭhāyai* (abl.), I, 2, 4;  
 (loc.) Ś. I, 1, 7; *pratiṣṭhe* (nom.), I, 5, 1;  
*pratiṣṭhayah* (gen.), I, 4, 2.  
*pratiṣṭhīyai*, I, 4, 2; Ś. II, 18.  
*pratrūṇam*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10; (acc.) III,  
 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10; (gen.) III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*pratyakṣāt*, I, 3, 2; 5, 2.  
*pratyakṣadarśanāni*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 3.  
*pratyai*, I, 2, 4; *pratyahcam*, I, 2, 4; *pra-*  
*tyaḥci*, I, 4, 2.  
*prathamam* (nom. neut.), I, 3, 3; 8; II, 5;  
 (acc. masc.) I, 1, 1; (acc. fem.) I, 3, 3; (instr.  
 fem.) I, 1, 2, &c.; (acc. du. neut.) I, 3, 7.  
*prathamavādī*, I, 3, 3.



- pradānāt*, II, 1, 2.  
*pradeśamātre*, I, 2, 4.  
*prapade*, II, 1, 4; (instr.) II, 1, 4.  
*prabhavaḥ*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*prapaṃsā*, I, 2, 2.  
*praṣṭivāhanaḥ*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2.  
*prahitām*, II, 1, 5.  
*prāk* (with abl.), II, 3, 3; 4.  
*prāh*, *prāk*, I, 2, 4.  
*prājapatyam*, I, 2, 2; Ś. I, 1.  
*prāṇaḥ*, I, 3, 7; 8; II, 1, 4; 3, 6; III, 1, 1; 4; 6; 2, 6; Ś. VII, 8, &c.; (= smell) II, 4, 1; 2; (acc.) II, 1, 7; III, 1, 6; 2, 6; Ś. VII, 8, &c.; (*aindram*) II, 3, 5; (instr.) I, 4, 1, &c.; II, 1, 6, &c.; III, 1, 6; (abl.) II, 4, 1; (*aindrāt*) II, 3, 6; III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; (gen.) II, 1, 7; III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8; (loc.) II, 1, 4; III, 1, 6; 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11; (nom. plur.) I, 1, 2; 2, 4; 3, 7; 8; II, 1, 2; (acc.) I, 5, 2; (instr.) I, 5, 2; (gen.) I, 3, 8.  
*prāṇabhṛt* (nom. neut.), II, 3, 2; *prāṇabhṛtaḥ* (nom. plur.), II, 3, 1; (loc. plur.) II, 3, 2.  
*prāyāpānayoḥ* (loc.), II, 3, 3.  
*prāṇī*, I, 3, 4.  
*prātar*, II, 1, 5.  
*prādurbhavanti*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*priyaḥ* (with gen.), I, 2, 2; (neut.) III, 2, 3; *priyāya*, *priyāyai*, Ś. XI, 8.  
*preṅkhaḥ*, I, 2, 3; (acc.) I, 2, 4; (gen.) I, 2, 3.  
*preṅkhatvam*, I, 2, 3.  
*√ plu*: *poplūyante*, I, 3, 5.  
*phalakam*, *phalake*, *phalakāni*, I, 2, 3.  
*phalam*, II, 3, 6; (acc.) I, 2, 4; II, 3, 6.  
*√ baṇh*: *saṃbōḥatamāḥ* (fem.), I, 4, 1.  
*baṭarakāṇi*, III, 2, 4 (*varūṭakān*, Ś. VIII, 7; XI, 3).  
*bandhunā*, II, 2, 4.  
*balam*, III, 2, 6; Ś. XI, 2; *bale*, Ś. XI, 1.  
*balavat*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3.  
*balim*, II, 1, 5.  
*bahu*, I, 2, 3; *bahvī*, II, 3, 6.  
*bahurūpam*, I, 5, 3.  
*bahvycāḥ*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4.  
*√ bādḥ*: *bīkhatseta*, II, 3, 7.  
*bārhatam* (nom.), Ś. II, 5; XI, 7; (acc.) I, 1, 3; *bārhatī*, *bārhatim*, I, 4, 3; Ś. II, 7; 9; *bārhatyai* (abl.), Ś. II, 10; *bārhatāḥ*, Ś. II, 17.  
*bākū*, I, 1, 2; *bākuḥkhyām*, I, 2, 4.  
*bidale*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3; *vidalaḥ*, Ś. II, 3.  
*bībhṛadvāḥ*, II, 2, 2.  
*bisāni* (acc.), III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.  
*bijāni*, II, 6.  
*brhat* (nom.), I, 2, 1, &c.; II, 3, 4; *brhataḥ* (gen.), III, 1, 6; Ś. VIII, 19; VII, 8.  
*brhatī*, I, 1, 3; II, 1, 6; 3, 5; (acc.) I, 1, 2; 3, 8; II, 3, 5; (instr.) II, 1, 6; *brhatyai* (abl.), II, 3, 6; (acc. plur.) III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; (instr. plur.) Ś. II, 9.  
*brhatīsaṃpannānām* (fem.), I, 5, 2; *°saṃpannam* (nom.), Ś. II, 17.  
*brhatīsahasram*, II, 2, 4, &c.; Ś. II, 17; (acc.) II, 2, 3; (gen.) II, 2, 4, &c.; Ś. II, 17.  
*brhadhrathantarayoh* (gen.), III, 1, 6; *°eṇa*, Ś. VII, 19.  
*bradhnaśya*, II, 1, 2.  
*brahma*, I, 1, 1; 3; 2, 2; 3, 8; II, 1, 1; 3, 8; Ś. I, 5, &c.; (acc.) II, 4, 3; Ś. I, 5; XI, 1; (instr.) I, 1, 1; 3; 2, 1; III, 1, 6; Ś. I, 5; (= spell) II, 3, 8; (gen.) I, 3, 1; II, 1, 3; *brahmety upāsate*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4.  
*brahmā*, III, 2, 3 (probably the masc. here denotes 'a Brahman priest'; Ś. VIII, 3 has *brahma*); *brahmāṇam*, III, 2, 3 (certainly = priest); Ś. VIII, 3. Cf. p. 304.  
*brahmagiriḥ*, II, 1, 8.  
*brahmanyā*, I, 5, 2.  
*brahmanayāḥ*, II, 2, 4.  
*brahmatavarcasam* (acc.), I, 1, 3; (instr.) III, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VIII, 2, &c.  
*brahmatavarcasvī*, I, 1, 3.  
*brahmīṣṭham*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3.  
*brāhmaṇam*, III, 1, 3; 4; Ś. VII, 8; 9; *brāhmaṇān*, III, 2, 4; *brāhmaṇebhyaḥ* (dat.), III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 8, &c.; *brāhmaṇī*, Ś. I, 6.  
*brāhmaṇam* (acc. neut.), Ś. VIII, 10; (nom.) Ś. I, 3; II, 4; XI, 8, &c.; and see *vāgbrāhmaṇa*, VIII, 11.  
*√ brū*: *brūmaḥ*, III, 1, 5; Ś. VII, 12; *pru-brūmaḥ*, III, 2, 6; *abravīt*, II, 1, 4; 2, 2; 4, 2; *abruvan*, II, 1, 4; 2, 1; 2; 4, 2; *abrūtām*, II, 4, 2; *brūyāt*, II, 3, 6; III, 1, 3; 4; 2, 6; Ś. VII, 8; 9; VIII, 11; *prabrūyāt*, III, 2, 6; Ś. IX, 7; *brūyāma*, II, 3, 5; *bravāṇi*, III, 2, 6; *bruvan*, II, 3, 8; III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 8; 9; *bruvantam*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 9.

- ✓ *bhaks*: *bhaksyati*, III, 2, 4 (*khādayati*, Ś. XI, 4).  
*bhaksam* (acc.), I, 2, 4.  
 ✓ *bhaj*: *ābhajāmi*, II, 4, 2; *vibhajate*, III, 1, 5 (*vibhajati*, Ś. VII, 12).  
*bhadram* (neut.), II, 3, 4.  
*bhāgaḥ*, III, 2, 4.  
*bhāginīyau* (acc.), II, 4, 2.  
*bhāvayitrī*, II, 5.  
 ✓ *bhās*: *bhāyate*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18; *bhā-sante*, III, 2, 5; *bhāsamāṇaḥ*, III, 2, 5; (gen. masc.) Ś. VIII, 11.  
 ✓ *bhid*: *nirabhidayata*, *nirabhidayetām*, II, 4, 1.  
 ✓ *bhī*: *bībhāya*, I, 3, 4.  
 ✓ *bhū*: *bhāvati*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *adhi-bhāvati*, II, 3, 1; *anubhāvati* (with acc.), II, 3, 5; *ābhāvati* (with acc.), II, 3, 7; *sambhāvati*, II, 1, 8; *abhisambhāvati* (with acc.), I, 3, 8; II, 3, 7; *parābhāvati*, II, 1, 4, &c.; *bhava-taḥ*, I, 1, 2; 3, 7; II, 4, 2; III, 1, 2; *abhi-sambhāvataḥ* (with acc.), II, 3, 7; *bhavanī*, I, 1, 1, &c.; S. VII, 21; *abhavat*, I, 1, 1; II, 1, 4; 2, 2; *sambhāvat*, II, 5; 6; *abha-vatām*, II, 1, 4; *abhavan*, II, 2, 2; *saṃ-bhāvet*, III, 2, 2; *bhūtāni* (= creatures), I, 3, 4; 8; II, 1, 2; 5; 6; 2, 3; (acc.) II, 2, 2; 4, 3; III, 1, 6; 2, 3; (dat.) II, 1, 3; 8; 2, 2; (gen.) II, 3, 7; III, 2, 4; Ś. I, 1; VIII, 7; (loc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VII, 22; *sambhūtām* (acc. masc.), II, 5; *bhāvitoḥ*, II, 3, 5; *bhūt-vā*, II, 3, 7; 4, 2; *sambhūya*, II, 2, 4; *bha-visyati*, II, 1, 4; III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 15; *ba-bhūva*, II, 2, 4; *babhūvuh*, II, 1, 8; *parā-babhūvuh*, II, 1, 8; *bhāvayati*, *adhibhāva-yati*, II, 5; *bhāvayan*, III, 2, 3; *bhāvayitavyā*, II, 5.  
 ✓ *bhuj*: *bhojayitvā*, III, 2, 4.  
*bhuvah* (interj.), I, 3, 2.  
*bhuvaneṣu*, I, 3, 4.  
*bhūh* (interj.), I, 3, 2; *bhūr bhūh*, II, 1, 8.  
*bhūtiḥ*, II, 1, 8.  
*bhūmih*, I, 2, 4.  
*bhūmiprā*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.  
*bhūyān*, I, 4, 2; II, 3, 6; *bhūyasā* (neut.), II, 3, 6.  
 ✓ *bhr*: *bibharti*, II, 2, 2; 5; *udbhyte*, I, 2, 3; *sambhrytāḥ*, II, 1, 8.  
*bhrātṛvyaḥ*, II, 1, 4, &c.
- majjā*, II, 1, 6; III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; *majjānaḥ*, III, 2, 1; 2; Ś. VIII, 1; 2; *majjānām*, III, 2, 1; 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*manjishṭhā*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*matih*, II, 6.  
 ✓ *mad*: *anumadati*, I, 3, 8; *anumadanti*, I, 3, 8; *pramādyet*, II, 1, 1; *parimattam*, Ś. I, 4.  
*madaḥ*, II, 2, 1.  
*madhu*, I, 1, 3; 3, 4; (acc.) I, 1, 3; 3, 4; III, 2, 4.  
*madhyataḥ*, I, 2, 3; II, 2, 1.  
*madhyandinaḥ*, I, 2, 2.  
*madhyamaḥ*, III, 1, 8; Ś. VII, 2.  
*madhyam*, II, 3, 5.  
 ✓ *man*: *manyate*, I, 3, 5; *manye*, III, 1, 5; 2, 3; Ś. VII, 13; *manyeta* (with *ati*), II, 3, 3; III, 1, 4; 2, 4; Ś. VII, 8; 9; VIII, 7; *mene*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2; *amataḥ*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *mīmāṃsante*, III, 2, 3.  
*manaḥ*, I, 3, 2; 8; 4, 2; II, 1, 3; 4; 5; 3; 8; 4, 1; 2; 6; III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; (instr.) I, 3, 2; II, 1, 7; 4, 3; III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2; (dat.) II, 3, 5; (abl.) II, 4, 1; (gen.) II, 1, 3; 7; Ś. VIII, 8; (loc.) I, 3, 2; Ś. X, 1; (nom. plur.) I, 3, 4.  
*manisā*, II, 6.  
*manomayaḥ*, III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1; 2; (acc.) III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1; 2.  
*manovākprāṇasamkṛataḥ*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2, which has *manovākprāṇas* in VII, 2; 3, for *prāṇas* only.  
*mayūragrīvāḥ* (?), III, 2, 6; *mayūragrīvā*, Ś. VIII, 7.  
*marah*, II, 4, 1; (acc.) II, 4, 1.  
*maricayaḥ*, II, 4, 1; *maricīḥ*, II, 4, 1; III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*Marutaḥ*, I, 2, 2.  
*Marutvatīyam*, I, 2, 2; (acc.) I, 2, 2; (gen.) I, 2, 1; Ś. I, 3.  
*markataḥ*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.  
*martyena* (neut.), II, 3, 2; *martyāni*, II, 1, 8.  
 ✓ *mah*: *mahoyati*, I, 3, 8.  
*mahān*, I, 1, 1; II, 1, 2; Ś. XI, 1; *mahat*, I, 2, 1, &c.; II, 2, 2; *mahati* (loc.), II, 4, 2; III, 2, 3.  
*mahadvat*, I, 2, 1, &c.; Ś. I, 2, &c.; *mahad-vatyā*, I, 5, 2.  
*mahaḥ*, I, 4, 3.  
*mahāpurusaḥ*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3.  
*mahābhūtāni*, II, 6; Ś. VII, 21.



- mahāmeghe*, III, 2, 4; *aḥ* or *āḥ* (1), Ś. VII, 3; °e, Ś. VIII, 7.  
*mahāvratam*, I, 1, 1; Ś. I, 1; (instr.) III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 6; (gen.) I, 1, 1; (loc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4.  
*mahāvratatvam*, I, 1, 1.  
*√ mā* : *saṃnirmimīṣe*, II, 3, 6; *mitam*, II, 3, 6; *saṃmitāḥ*, I, 2, 4.  
*māṃsam*, II, 1, 6; III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.  
*mātā*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 15.  
*mātrā*, III, 1, 5; Ś. VII, 13; *mātrāyām*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18; *mātrām*, Ś. XII, 8.  
*mātrāmātrām*, III, 1, 5; Ś. VIII, 12.  
*mānuṣī*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9; (acc.) I, 3, 1; *mānuṣyai* (gen.), I, 3, 1.  
*mām*, II, 1, 8; III, 2, 5; *mā*, III, 1, 4; *me* (dat.), II, 1, 4; III, 1, 1; *mahyam*, II, 1, 5; *mad*, II, 1, 8; II, 4, 3; *me* (gen.), I, 4, 3; 5, 1; 2; II, 2, 3.  
*mārutam*, I, 5, 3.  
*mālī*, see *nalada*°.  
*mitram*, I, 2, 2; II, 2, 1; 3; *mitrāṇi* (acc.), III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18.  
*mīthunam*, I, 2, 4, &c.; (acc.) I, 2, 4, &c.; (instr.) I, 3, 4; (abl.) II, 3, 6; *mīthunau*, I, 3, 4.  
*mīthunīkaroti*, II, 3, 6.  
*mukham*, II, 1, 2; (acc.) II, 4, 2; (abl.) II, 4, 1.  
*mukhataḥ*, I, 1, 2.  
*mukhyāḥ* (fem.), I, 3, 5.  
*muṣṭimātre*, I, 2, 4.  
*√ mūrck* : *amūrckayat*, II, 4, 1.  
*mūrṭiḥ*, II, 4, 3.  
*mūlam*, II, 1, 8; 3, 6.  
*mṛtyuḥ*, II, 1, 8; 4, 1; 2; *mṛtyave*, Ś. XI, 8; *punarmṛtyum*, Ś. XIII.  
*mṛṣā*, II, 1, 5.  
*meghe*, III, 2, 4.  
*yah*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *yo 'yam*, I, 2, 3, &c.; *ya*, *eta*, I, 2, 4; II, 2, 1; *yā*, I, 1, 2; *yat*, I, 1, 4, &c.; *yam*, II, 1, 5; *yām*, I, 2, 4; *yat*, I, 1, 4, &c.; *yasmāt* (neut.), II, 3, 1; *yasyai* (gen.), II, 3, 6; *yasmin* (masc.), II, 1, 4; 3, 8; *yasyām*, III, 2, 5; *yasmin* (neut.), II, 9, 2.  
*ye*, II, 1, 1; *yāḥ*, I, 3, 5; II, 1, 1; *yāni*, I, 3, 4; II, 2, 4; *yāḥ* (acc.), I, 3, 5; *yeṣām* (masc.), I, 1, 3, &c.; (indef. rel.) *yad yad* (acc.), I, 3, 7, and see *kaḥ*.  
*√ yaj* : *yakṣyāmahe*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11; *yajamānaḥ*, I, 1, 2; 2, 2; (acc.) I, 1, 2; 5, 1; (dat.) I, 1, 4.  
*yajuh*, II, 3, 6; (instr.) I, 3, 2; (abl.) I, 3, 2.  
*yajñāḥ*, II, 3, 3; (acc.) I, 1, 4; (gen.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3; (loc.) II, 3, 4; (gen. plur.) II, 3, 3; (loc. plur.) II, 2, 4.  
*√ yat* : *āyattāḥ*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3; cf. *nā-māyattāḥ*.  
*yataḥ*, II, 1, 8.  
*yatkāmaḥ*, I, 1, 4.  
*yatra-tatra*, II, 3, 8; Ś. VIII, 9; *yatra ha kva ca*, I, 3, 8; 5, 2; II, 1, 8; *yatra kva ca*, III, 2, 5; *tat-yatra*, I, 5, 2; *yatra-tat*, I, 3, 8.  
*yathā vai-evam*, I, 3, 1; *yathāyatanam*, II, 4, 2; *yathā* (no verb), II, 4, 1; III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *yathā-evam*, II, 1, 6; 3, 5; III, 1, 2; 2, 1; 5; *yathā-tathā*, II, 1, 2; 5; *yathā tu kathā ca*, III, 1, 3; 4; Ś. VII, 8; 9; *yathā-evam haiva*, Ś. XI, 1; 2.  
*yathāchandasaṃ*, I, 4, 1.  
*yathāprajñam*, II, 3, 2.  
*yathāvarṇam*, III, 1, 5.  
*yathopapādām*, I, 5, 1.  
*yat* (adv.) - *tat* (time), I, 1, 1, &c.; (causal) I, 3, 1, &c.; *yat* (causal), II, 1, 2, &c.; (condit.) II, 3, 6, &c.; after *abhyāsam eva* (with *syāt*), III, 1, 3; 4; Ś. VII, 8; 9.  
*yadā* (time), III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7. (The temporal sense is really practically conditional.)  
*yadī*, I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 10, &c.  
*√ yam* : *saṃprayachati*, II, 1, 7; 3, 7; *udaya-chaṇ*, I, 2, 1.  
*yalaḥ*, I, 4, 3; II, 3, 7; (dat.) I, 4, 2; (instr.) III, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.  
*yalaśvī*, II, 3, 5.  
*√ yā* : *yāti*, III, 2, 4; *āyāhi*, I, 1, 4.  
*yāvat-tāvān-tāvat*, II, 1, 7; *yāvati* (with *dyāvāpṛthivī* nom. du. as if sing.), I, 3, 8; *yāvatiḥ*, I, 5, 2.  
*√ yu* : *vijyā*, II, 3, 8; *yoyuvatyah*, I, 3, 5 (from *Rgveda*).  
*√ yuj* : *anu-yujyate*, II, 3, 8; *yuktam* (nom.), II, 3, 8; *yuktaḥ*, Ś. I, 8; *yukte* (du.), II, 3, 8; *yuktāḥ*, II, 3, 8; *yuktaiḥ* (masc.), III, 2, 4; *yujñāḥ* (v.l. *yujānaḥ*), Ś. XI, 8.  
*yujah* (plur.), II, 3, 8.  
*√ yudh* : *abhiyudhyati*, I, 3, 4.  
*yoṣā*, I, 2, 4, &c.; *yoṣām*, I, 4, 2; *yoṣālas* (dub.), ibid.

- ✓*rakṣ*: *rakṣayate*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 19.  
*rajjavah*, I, 2, 3.  
*rathasya*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; XI, 3.  
*rathanābhīḥ*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*rathanantaram*, I, 4, 2; II, 3, 4; (gen.) III, 1, 6; Ś. II, 4; VII, 19; VIII, 8.  
*raśmayah*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*rasah*, II, 3, 2; III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3; *rasam*, Ś. II, 1.  
 ✓*rāj*: *rājati*, II, 3, 7.  
*rājanam* (*sāma*), II, 3, 4; Ś. II, 1.  
*rātriḥ*, II, 1, 5; *rātrayah*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; *rātriḥ*, II, 2, 4.  
*rātrisūktena*, III, 2, 4.  
*rāddhikāmaḥ*, I, 1, 1.  
*rāntimat*, I, 2, 1.  
 ✓*ric*: *ricyate*, II, 3, 6; *riḥcyāt*, II, 3, 6;  
*riktam*, II, 3, 6; *atiriktam*, I, 9, 2.  
 ✓*riṣ*: *riṣyati*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 9; 10.  
 ✓*riḥ*: *reḥi reḥah*, III, 1, 6 (borrowed from a RV. passage); Ś. VII, 18.  
 ✓*ruc*: *viruruciṣeta* (v. l. *viruruciṣeta*), III, 2, 5.  
 ✓*rudh*: *avarundhe*, I, 1, 2; 3; 3, 7; *avarundhyai*, I, 1, 2; 3; 4; 2, 4; 3, 7; *avarundhati*, I, 4, 3.  
 ✓*ruh*: *adhirohanti*, *adhirohanti*, *adhirohet*, I, 2, 4; *anvadhirohataḥ*, I, 2, 4; *avarohet*, I, 2, 4; *samadhirohanti*, I, 2, 4; *samārohāṇi*, Ś. II, 9; 10.  
*rūpam*, I, 2, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 10, &c.; (instr.) I, 2, 3; 4; II, 2, 3; 3, 7; Ś. VII, 19; (abl.) I, 2, 2.  
*rūpasamṛddham*, I, 1, 3, &c.; *ṛddhaya*, I, 5, 2; *ṛddhau*, I, 5, 2.  
*retah*, I, 1, 2; 4, 2; II, 1, 3; 3, 3; 7; 4, 1; 2; 5; III, 1, 2; 2, 2; Ś. VII, 3; X, 7; (acc.) Ś. X, 7; (abl.) II, 4, 1; (gen.) II, 1, 2; Ś. VIII, 2; (loc.) Ś. X, 1, &c.  
*retasam* (?), see *devaretasam*.  
 ✓*labh*: *lebhe*, II, 2, 4; *alabhamānāḥ*, Ś. XI, 1.  
*lālātam*, II, 1, 2.  
*lokaḥ*, I, 4, 2; 3; II, 1, 3; 6, 6; III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14; (acc.) I, 4, 3; II, 1, 2; 2, 1; 3, 3; 7; 8; (instr.) III, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; (abl.) II, 3, 7; 6; (loc.) I, 4, 3; II, 1, 3; 8; 5; 6; Ś. XI, 4; (nom. plur.) I, 1, 2; 2, 3; 4; II, 4, 1; 3; 5; (acc.) II, 4, 1; Ś. I, 5; (gen.) I, 1, 2; 2, 5; (loc.) II, 3, 7; (nom. du.) I, 2, 3.  
*lokapālāḥ*, III, 2, 3; (acc.) II, 4, 1.  
*lokālokaḥ* (acc.), II, 3, 2.  
*lomāṇi*, II, 1, 6; 4, 1; Ś. I, 4 (*romāṇi*, Ś. VIII, 11); (acc.) II, 4, 2; (abl.) I, 3, 8; II, 4, 1.  
*lomaṣena* (neut.), III, 2, 5; (*romaṣena*) Ś. VIII, 9.  
*lohitam*, II, 3, 3; 7; III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.  
*lohini*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.  
*vaṁśah*, III, 1, 4; 2, 1; Ś. VII, 8; 9; VIII, 1; (acc.) III, 1, 4; Ś. VII, 8, 9; (nom. plur.) III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.  
*vahṅāvagadhāḥ* (? proper name), II, 1, 1.  
 ✓*vac*: *avocāma*, III, 2, 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 2; *avocata*, II, 2, 2; *avocam*, Ś. I, 6; *uvāca*, II, 2, 3; Ś. I, 6; *ūce*, Ś. I, 6; *uktam*, I, 3, 2, &c.; *aniruktaḥ*, I, 2, 2; Ś. II, 1; (acc.) I, 2, 2; *anūkte*, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 5; *anūcānaḥ*, I, 2, 2; *abhyanutam*, Ś. VII, 15.  
*vata*, II, 2, 2; 4, 2.  
 ✓*vad*: *vadati*, II, 1, 5; 3, 2; 6; 8; Ś. VII, 2; *vadate*, Ś. I, 8; *vadanti*, I, 3, 2; II, 1, 2; 3, 2; *abhiavadati*, II, 1, 6; *vadam*, I, 3, 5; II, 3, 8; *avadan*, II, 1, 4; *vadet* (?), Ś. XIII; *upavadet*, III, 1, 3; 4; Ś. VII, 8; 9; *udāyate*, I, 5, 2; *udyante*, I, 3, 7; *uditam*, II, 1, 5; *vādayet*, III, 2, 5; *abhyuditam*, Ś. VII, 15, &c.; *vāg vadati*, Ś. VIII, 9.  
*vanaspatiṣu*, III, 2, 3.  
 ✓*vap*: *āvapante*, I, 5, 2; *samopyate*, II, 3, 1.  
*vayam*, II, 1, 4; 6; III, 1, 5; 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11; *vām* (acc.), II, 4, 2.  
*vayāṁsi*, I, 2, 4; 4, 2; (? proper name) II, 1, 1; *vayasām*, I, 2, 4; 4, 2.  
*vayogataḥ*, II, 5.  
*varam* (acc.), II, 2, 3; Ś. I, 6.  
*varāḥah*, III, 2, 4; (instr.) III, 2, 4.  
*Varuṇah*, II, 1, 7; (gen.) II, 1, 7.  
*varṣam*, II, 1, 2; (gen.) II, 1, 2; (nom. plur.) I, 5, 2; II, 2, 1; (acc.) II, 2, 1; Ś. XI, 8.  
*vaśah*, I, 5, 2; II, 6; Ś. II, 11; (acc.) I, 5, 1; Ś. II, 10; 11; (loc.) I, 3, 4 (?); 5, 1; Ś. II, 11.  
*vaśatkṛtya*, I, 2, 4.  
 ✓*vas*: *uḥpya*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.  
 ✓*vas*: *vaste*, II, 1, 6.  
 ✓*vah*: *āvahati*, II, 1, 7; *pravahati*, III, 2, 4;



- vahanti*, II, 1, 6; *saṃvahan'i*, II, 3, 8; *abhisamvahan'ti*, II, 3, 8; *vahatu*, I, 1, 4.  
*vā* (=indeed), I, 2, 2; 4; 3, 8; II, 6; (=or) I, 4, 1; II, 1, 2; 8; III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 7, &c.; *vā-vā*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14.  
*√vā*: *vāyati*, III, 2, 4.  
*vāk*, I, 1, 1; 4; 3, 2; 8; 4, 2, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; (acc.) I, 1, 1; 4; 3, 1; 8; II, 1, 6; III, 1, 6; 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 8, &c.; (instr.) I, 3, 2; II, 1, 6; 7; 3, 5; 8; III, 1, 1; 6; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; (gen.) I, 3, 1, &c.; Ś. VIII, 8; (loc.) II, 3, 5; III, 1, 6; 2, 6; Ś. VII, 18, &c.; (acc. plur.) III, 2, 5.  
*vāgbrāhmaṇam*, III, 2, 6; *brāhmaṇam*, Ś. VIII, 10.  
*vāgrasaḥ*, III, 2, 5.  
*vāṇmāyāḥ*, III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1; 2; (acc.) III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1; 2.  
*vājimat*, I, 2, 1.  
*vādanam*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.  
*vāmaḥ*, II, 2, 1.  
*vāyuh*, I, 2, 3; II, 2, 1; 2; 7; 3, 1; 4, 1; III, 2, 4; Ś. VII, 3, &c.; (acc.) Ś. XI, 1; (gen.) II, 1, 7; III, 2, 5; (loc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 4.  
*vāraṇam*, I, 1, 3, &c.  
*vārtraghnam*, I, 2, 1.  
*Vālakhilyāḥ*, I, 5, 2.  
*vāva*, I, 3, 4; 5; II, 2, 1; 4, 2.  
*viṃśatīśatāni* (*saṃpā*), III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.  
*vikāraḥ*, II, 3, 6.  
*vikṛtayaḥ*, I, 5, 1.  
*vikṣudram*, I, 5, 1.  
*vichandasah*, I, 5, 1.  
*vijavaḥ*, I, 4, 1 (nom. sing. or nom. plur.?).  
*vijñānam*, II, 6; (gen.) III, 2, 5.  
*√vid*: *veda*, I, 1, 2, &c.; Ś. VII, 14, &c.; (1st pers.) II, 1, 5; 8; *viduḥ*, II, 3, 2; Ś. VIII, 9; *vidyāt*, I, 5, 2; II, 1, 5; III, 1, 4; Ś. VII, 8; *vidvān*, I, 1, 3, &c.; Ś. VIII, 11, &c.; *viduṣaḥ* (gen.), I, 3, 4; Ś. I, 8; (acc. pl.) Ś. VII, 14; *vidvāṃsaḥ*, Ś. VIII, 11; *viduṣām*, III, 1, 6; *vedayāṃ cakre*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2.  
*vid*, I, 3, 8.  
*√vid*: *anuvindan*, II, 3, 8; *vittvā*, I, 3, 5.  
*vidyut*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3; (acc.) III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; (nom. pl.) Ś. XI, 2; (acc.) Ś. XI, 1.  
*vidhā*, II, 3, 3; 4; *vidhām* (v. l. *anuvīdhāḥ*), II, 3, 1; *vidhāḥ*, II, 3, 3; 4.  
*vibhūtim*, *vibhūtayāḥ*, II, 1, 7.  
*virāḥ*, I, 1, 2; 3, 4; 4, 1; (acc.) I, 1, 2; (loc.) I, 3, 4; (instr. du.) I, 4, 2; (nom. plur.) I, 4, 1; 5, 2; (acc.) I, 5, 2.  
*virāṭcaturthānti*, I, 3, 4.  
*√viś*: *saṃviśati*, II, 1, 6; *abhinivīśate*, I, 2, 4; *prāviśat*, II, 1, 4; 4, 2; *prāviśāma*, II, 4, 2; *prāviśata*, II, 4, 2; *prāviśāma*, II, 1, 4; *viśṭāḥ*, I, 3, 8; *āviśṭāḥ*, II, 1, 1; *nivīṣtam* (acc. masc.), II, 1, 5; *viśṭāḥ* (fem.), I, 3, 8; *nivīṣṭāḥ* (fem.), II, 1, 1; *aveśayat*, Ś. XI, 1; *āviśeśa* *viśuḥ*, Ś. XI, 2; *pratyāvīviśuḥ*, Ś. XI, 1.  
*viśaḥ*, I, 1, 1.  
*viśvam*, I, 2, 2 (in an etymology); II, 2, 1; *viśve devāḥ*, I, 1, 4; III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14; *viśvair devaiḥ*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14; *viśva-bhūtam*, Ś. VII, 15.  
*viśvācī* (acc.), II, 1, 6 (from Rgveda).  
*viśvāpam*, II, 1, 2.  
*visrasā*, II, 3, 7.  
*√vi*: *āvayat*, II, 4, 3 (Monier-Williams' *Dict.*, but not Whitney, *Roots*, &c., and *√av* is much more probable).  
*vinā*, *vinām*, *vināḥ* (acc.), III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9; *vināyai* (gen.), Ś. VIII, 10.  
*viravat*, I, 2, 1.  
*viryam*, I, 1, 3; 2, 2; 4, 1; (acc.) I, 5, 1; 2; (loc.) I, 2, 2; (nom. plur.) I, 4, 2.  
*viryaṇān*, I, 1, 3; *viryaṇat*, I, 3, 7.  
*viryaṇattamaḥ*, I, 2, 4.  
*√vṛ*: *parivṛtaḥ*, II, 3, 5; *parivṛtā*, II, 3, 5; III, 2, 5; *āvṛtam* (nom.), II, 1, 6.  
*vṛkṣaḥ*, II, 3, 6; Ś. XI, 1; 2; (acc.) I, 2, 4.  
*√vṛt*: *udvartate*, II, 3, 6; *vivartayati* (*yanti*, Ś. VII, 10), II, 1, 3; 5; *vyāvartayati*, I, 3, 1; *āvarivartti*, II, 1, 6.  
*Vṛtram*, I, 1, 1.  
*vṛthā*, II, 3, 6.  
*√vṛj*: *varjati*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3.  
*vṛṣā*, I, 2, 4; 3, 1.  
*vṛṣaṇvat*, I, 2, 1.  
*vṛṣṭiḥ*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 2; *vṛṣṭim varjati* (*varjanti* B), Ś. VII, 3.  
*vṛṣiḥ* (acc.), I, 2, 4; better read *bṛṣiḥ*.  
*vedāḥ*, I, 3, 2; II, 2, 2; III, 1, 6; 2, 4; Ś. VII, 18; (acc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3; (gen. plur.) Ś. II, 1.  
*vedapurusaḥ*, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3.  
*vai*, I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.

vaiśvadevam, I, 5, 3.

vyāc: vīvyāce, I, 2, 2.

vyāñjanāni, II, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 11.

vyānaḥ, II, 3, 3; Ś. VIII, 8; X, 8, &c.

vyāyrtiḥ, I, 3, 1.

vyāyrtiḥ, II, 2, 2; (nom. plur.) I, 3, 2; (acc.) I, 3, 2; Ś. I, 6.

√vraj: vrājayati, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.

√saṃs: saṃsati, I, 1, 3, &c.; Ś. II, 1, &c.; VIII, 5, &c.; anusaṃsati, I, 5, 2; parisaṃsati (with acc. and instr.), I, 4, 2; saṃset, III, 2, 4; saṃsa, II, 2, 3; saṃsiyantam, II, 2, 3; °yate, Ś. I, 5; saṃvā, I, 5, 1; saṃsa, II, 2, 3; anusaṃsante, II, 3, 4; saṃtam, Ś. I, 1.

√śak: śaknoṣi, III, 1, 4; Ś. VII, 8, &c.; aśaknot, II, 4, 3; śaknuvan, śaknuvantam, III, 1, 4; Ś. VII, 8; 9; aśakaḥ, III, 1, 4; Ś. VII, 8; aśaknuvan, Ś. VII, 8; aśaknuvantam, Ś. VII, 9. śatam, I, 2, 2; 4, 2; II, 2, 1; 3, 4; (acc.) II, 2, 1; Ś. XI, 8; śatāni (ekādaśa), II, 3, 6; (sapta), III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 2.

śatarcinaḥ, II, 2, 1.

śatasamvatsarasya, II, 2, 4; Ś. II, 17.

śaphāḥ, II, 1, 4.

śabdavati, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.

śarīram, II, 1, 4; 2, 4; III, 2, 1; (acc.) II, 1, 4; (abl.) II, 1, 4; Ś. XI, 1; (gen.) II, 1, 4; (loc.) Ś. XI, 1; (nom. plur.) II, 1, 8; (acc.) II, 1, 8; (instr.) II, 3, 5.

śarīratvam (acc.), II, 1, 4.

śarīrapurusaḥ, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 3.

śarīrabhedāt, II, 5; 6.

śarīryai (gen.), I, 3, 4; śarīryām, I, 3, 4.

śaśvat, III, 1, 6.

śastrāyām, I, 2, 1; śastreṇa, Ś. I, 6.

śāntiḥ, I, 1, 3, &c.; śāntyai (dat.), I, 1, 3, &c.; Ś. I, 4, &c.; śāntyām (or ekāhāḥ?), I, 1, 3, &c.

śālāvaṃśe, III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.

śiraḥ, I, 4, 1; II, 3, 4; III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9; (gen.) II, 1, 4; Ś. II, 2; (loc.) III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3.

śirastvam, II, 1, 4; (acc.) II, 1, 4.

śinam, II, 4, 1; (acc.) II, 4, 2; (instr.) II, 4, 3; (abl.) I, 3, 5; II, 4, 1.

śi: aśayat, II, 1, 4; śayānaḥ, II, 5; adhīśete, Ś. II, 4.

śiṛṣan, I, 5, 2; II, 1, 4.

śiṛṣanyāḥ, I, 5, 1.

śukāḥ, I, 2, 4.

śuklam, II, 1, 5.

śuddhe (acc. du.), III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.

√śuḥ: śuyati, II, 3, 6.

√śr: aśārī, II, 1, 4; śiryate, II, 1, 4; aśīryata, II, 1, 4.

√śr: śrapayitvā, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4; °yati, Ś. II, 11.

śradhām, II, 1, 7.

√śri: śrayante, I, 3, 2; aśrayata, II, 1, 4; śritāḥ, I, 3, 2; (fem.) II, 1, 4.

śrīḥ, I, 1, 3; 2, 4; śriyam, I, 2, 4; śriyai (dat.), I, 4, 2; śriyaḥ (nom.), II, 1, 4.

śrīmān, I, 1, 3.

√śru: viśrṇoti, II, 1, 7; śrṇoti, II, 6; śrṇvanti, II, 1, 7; aśrṇvan, II, 1, 4; śrṇuyāt, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; upaśrṇuyāt, III, 2, 4 (upāsita, Ś. VIII, 7); aśrutāḥ, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; śrūṣānte, Ś. VIII, 9; śrutam (nom.), II, 4, 3; śrute, II, 3, 8; śrutvā, II, 4, 3.

śrutavadaṇaḥ, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 9.

śreṣṭham, I, 3, 3.

śreṣṭhatām, I, 1, 1.

śrotā, III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7.

śrotam, I, 3, 8; II, 1, 4; 4, 1; 2; Ś. VII, 4, &c.; (acc.) II, 1, 7; Ś. X, 6; (instr.) II, 1, 7; 4, 3; (abl.) II, 4, 1; (gen.) II, 1, 7; III, 2, 5; (loc.) Ś. X, 1; (nom. du.) II, 3, 8.

śrotamayaḥ, III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1; 2; (acc.) III, 2, 1; 2; 3; Ś. VIII, 1; 2.

śleṣmā, II, 3, 3; śleṣma, Ś. II, 1.

ślokāḥ, II, 3, 8.

√śvas: praśvasiti, II, 1, 8.

śvastanam (acc. neut.), II, 3, 2.

śaṭ, I, 3, 8; 4, 2; III, 2, 4.

śaṭtriṃśatam sahasrāṇi, II, 2, 4; 3, 8; śaṭtriṃśat-sahasrāṇi, Ś. II, 17.

śaṭpadāḥ, I, 5, 1.

śaṭrcam, I, 3, 8.

śaṭṭīśatāni (triṃś), III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.

sa, I, 1, 1, &c.; sā, I, 2, 2, &c.

saṃyogaḥ, II, 1, 5.

saṃvatsaraḥ, III, 2, 6; Ś. I, 1; X, 5; (acc.) III, 1, 6; Ś. X, 5; (adv.) I, 1, 1; (gen.) III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1; XI, 3; (instr.) Ś. X, 5; (nom. plur.) Ś. VII, 20.

saṃvatsarasatamānaḥ, III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 1; (acc.) III, 2, 3; Ś. VIII, 1.



- saṃsādī*, III, 2, 5.  
*saṃskṛtiḥ*, I, 3, 7.  
*saṃhitā*, III, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; (acc.) III, 2, 3; 6; *saṃhitāyai* (gen.), III, 1, 1; 2, 6; Ś. VII, 2; *saṃhitāḥ* (acc.), III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*sakṛt*, I, 2, 2.  
*saṃkalpaḥ*, II, 6.  
*saṃgrahitā*, II, 3, 8.  
*√saj*: *anuśajati*, I, 5, 2; *anuśaktā*, *ananuśaktā*, I, 5, 2.  
*saṃjanīyam*, I, 5, 2; Ś. II, 16.  
*saṃjñātyai*, I, 2, 2.  
*saṃjñānam*, I, 2, 2; II, 6.  
*saṃkāram*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*satīyam*, II, 1, 5; (gen.) II, 1, 5.  
*satīyatvam*, II, 1, 5.  
*satīyam*, I, 2, 2; II, 1, 1; 3, 6; 8; Ś. VII, 17; (acc.) II, 3, 6; (gen.) II, 3, 8; *satīyavat*, I, 2, 2.  
*satīyasamhitā*, Ś. VII, 17.  
*satīyānte*, II, 3, 6; (acc.) II, 3, 6.  
*√sad*: *upaniśasāda*, II, 2, 3.  
*satīyāḥ*, I, 3, 4.  
*sadhriciḥ* (acc.), II, 1, 6 (from Rgveda).  
*saṃtītyai*, II, 5.  
*saṃtīti*, I, 2, 2 (= Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, V, 16, 14).  
*saṃdhātā*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VIII, 3.  
*saṃdhānam*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 17.  
*saṃdhiḥ*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3, &c.; (acc.) III, 1, 3; 5; (nom. plur.) III, 2, 2; (acc.) III, 2, 2; (gen.) III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 1; 2.  
*saṃdhitvījñāpanī*, III, 1, 5; Ś. VII, 13.  
*saṃtī*, I, 5, 1; 2; III, 2, 4; with *vinīṣatī* *saṃtī*, III, 2, 1; Ś. II, 10; VIII, 1; *saṃtīdaśam*, II, 3, 4.  
*saṃtanavatiḥ*, I, 2, 2.  
*saṃtapadā*, I, 5, 1.  
*sabalām*, III, 2, 6.  
*sabrahmakūḥ*, I, 2, 4.  
*samam* (nom. neut.), I, 1, 2; (instr.) I, 1, 2.  
*samānaḥ* (a *prāṇa*), II, 3, 3.  
*samānaḥ*: *samānānam* (masc.), II, 3, 1; *samānam*, II, 1, 2; III, 1, 1; *samāne* (du.), III, 1, 1.  
*amānāyatanā*, I, 5, 2.  
*samānodarkam*, I, 5, 3.  
*samudraḥ*, II, 3, 3.  
*saṃpat*, I, 1, 2; (instr.) I, 3, 8.  
*saṃpānataṃ*, II, 3, 2; 3.  
*saṃpātāḥ*, I, 4, 2.  
*saṃpratīprāṇaḥ*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2.  
*saṃpratīvīt*, II, 3, 1; 6.  
*saṃbhavāḥ*, II, 3, 2.  
*sayoni*, II, 1, 8.  
*sarūpatām*, III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1; 2.  
*sarvāḥ*, I, 3, 5, &c.; Ś. VIII, 1, &c.; *sarvā*, II, 3, 6; Ś. VII, 22; *sarvam*, I, 1, 3, &c.; Ś. VII, 3; *sarvam* (acc. neut.), I, 3, 5; II, 2, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.; *sarvāyāi* (gen.), III, 2, 5; *sarve*, I, 1, 3, &c.; Ś. VIII, 1, &c.; *sarvāḥ*, II, 2, 2; *sarvāṇi*, I, 3, 4; II, 1, 2; 6; *sarvān*, I, 1, 3, &c.; *sarvāḥ*, II, 2, 3; *sarvāṇi*, II, 2, 2; *sarvāḥ* (neut.), I, 3, 4; *sarvebhyaḥ* (dat. neut.), II, 1, 3; 8; 2, 2; (abl. neut.) II, 5; *sarveṣām* (masc.), I, 1, 3; II, 2, 1; 2; (prot. neut.) III, 2, 4; Ś. VIII, 7; *sarveṣu* (neut.), III, 2, 3; Ś. VII, 22; *sarvāsu*, Ś. X, 1.  
*sarvataḥ*, II, 3, 5; Ś. VII, 3.  
*sarvayujāḥ*, II, 3, 8.  
*sarvalokam* (acc.), III, 1, 2.  
*sarvāḥ*, I, 2, 4.  
*salokatām*, III, 2, 1; 2; Ś. VIII, 1; 2.  
*savanāni*, II, 3, 3; (abl.) II, 3, 3; (gen.) I, 2, 1.  
*savyāḥ* (fem.), I, 2, 3.  
*saṃkāram*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*sahasram*, II, 3, 4; (nom. plur.) II, 2, 4; 3, 8.  
*sāṅgaḥ*, I, 3, 8.  
*sāṅgyasya*, I, 2, 2.  
*sāma*, III, 1, 5; 3, 6; Ś. II, 1; VII, 13; (acc.) III, 1, 5; Ś. VII, 13; (instr.) I, 3, 2; Ś. II, 1; (abl.) I, 3, 2; *sāmagāḥ*, Ś. I, 4.  
*sāmataḥ*, II, 3, 4.  
*sāyam*, II, 1, 5.  
*sāyujyam* (acc.), III, 2, 1; 2.  
*sāvitrām*, I, 5, 2.  
*√si*: *sītām*, II, 1, 6.  
*√sic*: *sīcati*, II, 5; *sīktam*, I, 4, 2; *sīcyate*, I, 1, 2; III, 2, 2; *sīcyeta*, III, 2, 2; (*sīcyet* (?)) Ś. VIII, 2.  
*sīmānam*, II, 4, 3.  
*√su*: *sutam*, I, 1, 4.  
*sukṛtam*, II, 4, 2; (gen.) III, 2, 4.  
*suparṇarūpam*, I, 4, 2.  
*suparṇasya*, I, 4, 2.  
*sūktam*, I, 2, 2; II, 2, 2; (acc.) II, 2, 2;

(instr.) I, 2, 2; (gen.) I, 5, 3; (nom. du.) I, 5, 2; (gen. plur.) I, 3, 8.  
*sūdadohāḥ*, I, 4, 1, &c.; Ś. II, 1; (instr.) I, 4, 2; (acc.) Ś. II, 1.  
 √*sr*: *upasrjtaḥ*, III, 1, 6 (*upasrjtaḥ*, Ś. VII, 14).  
 √*srj*: *saṁsrjati*, I, 3, 4; *utsrjati*, I, 5, 1; *asrjata*, II, 4, 1; *upasrjai*, Ś. XI, 1; *upa-*(*sa*)*srje*, Ś. XI, 1; *srjai*, II, 4, 1; 3; Ś. XI, 1; *srjtaḥ*, II, 1, 2; *visrjtaḥ* (nom.), II, 4, 3; *srjtau*, II, 1, 7; *srjtaḥ* (masc.), II, 1, 7; (fem.) II, 4, 2; *upasrjtaḥ* (fem.), Ś. XI, 1; *srjtaḥ*, II, 4, 3; *srjtaḥ*, III, 2, 6; *visrjya*, II, 4, 3; *prasrjyante*, I, 3, 5.  
 √*srp*: *udasarpāt*, II, 1, 4; *sarīrpyante*, I, 3, 5; *saṁutsrpya*, I, 2, 4.  
*somaḥ*, II, 3, 3.  
 √*skand*: *āskandayati*, III, 2, 4 (not in Ś. VIII, 7).  
 √*stan*: *stanayati*, I, 2, 1.  
*stanya*, I, 5, 1.  
 √*stabh*: *stabhamānam* (acc.), I, 4, 1; *viṣṭab-**dhāḥ*, *viṣṭabdhāni*, II, 1, 6.  
 √*stu*: *prastauti*, II, 3, 4; *stuvita*, III, 2, 4 (*stūyāt*, Ś. VIII, 6); *stuvīran*, *stuvate*, Ś. I, 4.  
*stobhasahasrāṇi*, II, 3, 8.  
*stomaḥ*, I, 4, 1; (gen. plur.) I, 4, 2; 5, 1.  
*stomachandasoh* (gen.), I, 4, 1.  
*stomataḥ*, II, 3, 4.  
*stomātīlāṁsanāyāi* (dat.), I, 4, 1.  
*striyam*, II, 3, 8; Ś. XI, 4; *striyām*, II, 3, 7; 5; *striyāi* (gen.), I, 4, 2; II, 5.  
*sthaviyāḥ*, I, 5, 1.  
 √*sthā*: *uttīṣṭhati*, II, 1, 1; 3, 1; *pratīṣṭhati*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *adhīṣṭhati*, II, 3, 8; *pratiṣṭhanti*, I, 1, 1, &c.; *anūpatiṣṭhante*, I, 5, 1; *udotiṣṭhat*, II, 1, 4; *utthāsyati*, II, 1, 4; *sthitam* (nom.), I, 1, 1; *pratiṣṭhitaḥ*, I, 2, 2; *pratiṣṭhitā*, I, 3, 4; *pratiṣṭhitam*, I, 1, 2; 6; *pratiṣṭhilaḥ*, II, 4, 2; Ś. X, 1; *pratiṣṭhāya*, I, 4, 2; *pratiṣṭhāpayati*, I, 1, 2; *tiṣṭhet*, Ś. XI, 1; 2; *tastha*, Ś. XI, 1; 2.  
*sthānābhyām* (abl.), III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*sthātipākam*, III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 6.  
*sthāvaram*, II, 6; (gen.) Ś. XI, 5; (loc.) Ś. XI, 5.  
*snāvāni*, II, 1, 6.  
*sparsāḥ*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8.

*sparsarūpam*, III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.  
*sparsōṣmabhiḥ*, II, 3, 6.  
 √*spri*: *upaspriset*, I, 2, 4; *spriṣṭā*, II, 3, 6; *spriṣṭam* (nom.), II, 4, 3; *spriṣṭvā*, II, 4, 3.  
*sma*, I, 1, 1, &c., in the form *u ha sma*, or *ha sma*, II, 1, 3, &c.; *atha ha sma*, Ś. VII, 2 (om. *sma*, A. III, 1, 1).  
*smṛtiḥ*, II, 6.  
 √*sraṇis*: *vyaśraṇisata*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11.  
*svam*, II, 5; *svena* (masc.), III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14; (neut.) Ś. II, 1.  
 √*svad*: *svadayati*, II, 1, 7.  
 √*swap*: *swapīti*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 18; *suṣṭaḥ*, II, 1, 8.  
*svapnāḥ*, II, 4, 3; III, 2, 4; Ś. XI, 4.  
*swayam*, III, 2, 4.  
*sva*, I, 3, 2.  
*svaṛaḥ*, II, 3, 6; *svaṛāḥ*, III, 2, 5; Ś. VIII, 8; 9; *svaṛaiḥ*, II, 2, 4.  
*svaṛarūpam*, III, 2, 1; Ś. VIII, 1.  
*svaṛāsvaram*, III, 1, 5; (*svaṛāt svaram*), Ś. VII, 12.  
*svargaḥ*, III, 1, 6; (acc.) II, 3, 8; (instr.) III, 1, 1; Ś. VIII, 2, &c.; (nom. plur.) I, 2, 4; (loc.) II, 5, 6 (always with *lokaḥ*).  
*svargakāmaḥ*, III, 1, 3; Ś. VII, 10.  
*svatīlāyāi*, I, 5, 2; 3.  
*svastyayanam*, I, 5, 2; 3; (acc.) I, 5, 2; 3; Ś. I, 4.  
*svādu*, I, 3, 4; (acc.) II, 6.  
 √*svid*: *svedate*, I, 3, 5.  
*ha*, I, 1, 1, &c.; Ś. VII, 2, &c.  
 √*han*: *hanti*, III, 2, 4; *apaghñate*, I, 1, 2; *apāhata*, I, 2, 2; 3, 4; *hanyāt*, II, 3, 6; *hatva*, I, 1, 1; *apahatya*, II, 3, 8; *atyaji-**ghāṁsat*, II, 4, 3.  
*hanta* (with subj.), II, 1, 4; Ś. XI, 1.  
*havam* (acc.), I, 1, 4.  
*haviḥ*, II, 4, 2.  
*hastinaḥ*, II, 6; (gen. sing.) Ś. XII, 8.  
*hastyāḥ*, I, 1, 2.  
 √*hā*: *hāsyati*, III, 1, 4; Ś. VII, 8; 9; *vihi-**ryete*, III, 2, 4 (*vipradhīryete*, Ś. VIII, 7); *vija-**hātī*, Ś. VIII, 7.  
*hi*, I, 1, 2, &c.  
 √*hims*: *hinasti*, II, 5; *ahimsanta*, II, 1, 4.  
*himpkāroḥ*, I, 3, 1; (instr.) I, 3, 1.  
*himpkṛtya*, I, 3, 1.



*hiraṇmayāḥ*, II, 1, 3.  
 ✓*hu*: *juhumaḥ*, III, 2, 6; Ś. VIII, 11; *kutvā*,  
 III, 2, 4; *juhōti*, Ś. XI, 4; *kutam*, Ś. X, 1;  
*juhuyāt*, Ś. XII, 8.  
 ✓*hu*: *hūyate*, II, 2, 4.  
 ✓*hr*: *viharati*, I, 3, 5; 7; 8; *vyāharati*, I,  
 3, 3; III, 1, 1; *abhivyaḥarati*, III, 1, 3; Ś.  
 VII, 10; *upodāharati*, III, 2, 6; (*udā*?) Ś.  
 VIII, 10; *pratiharati*, II, 3, 4; *vyāharat*,  
 I, 3, 3; *abhivyaḥarat*, III, 1, 6; Ś. VII, 14;

*haranti*, II, 1, 5; *āharata*, II, 1, 7; *abhivya-*  
*hārjan* (?), III, 1, 6 (*haran*, Ś. VII, 14);  
*parihṛtaḥ*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2; *aviparihṛ-*  
*taḥ*, III, 1, 1 (*parihṛtaḥ*, Ś. VII, 2); *abhivya-*  
*hṛtya*, II, 2, 3; 4, 3; *samudhṛtya*, II, 4, 1.  
*hrdayam*, II, 1, 3; 4, 1; 6; Ś. VII, 3, &c.; (acc.)  
 II, 4, 2; (abl.) II, 4, 1; (gen.) II, 1, 3.  
*hotā*, I, 1, 3, &c.  
*hotrakāḥ*, I, 2, 4.  
*hrasīyāḥ*, I, 5, 1.

WORDS IN ŚĀṆKHĀYANA ĀRANYAKA VII AND VIII WHICH ARE NOT  
 FOUND IN THE PARALLEL PASSAGES IN AITAREYA ĀRANYAKA III.

*akuśalena* (masc.), VIII, 10.  
*akṣarasamāmnāyāḥ*, VIII, 4.  
*aṅguliniḥgrahāḥ*, VIII, 9.  
*apravaktre*, VIII, 11.  
*abrahmacāriṇe*, VIII, 11.  
*abhāgāḥ*, VIII, 5.  
*abhivyaḥārartham*, VII, 14.  
*abbhre*, VIII, 7.  
*ardhamōṣāḥ*, VII, 20.  
*avedavide*, VIII, 11.  
*itiḥāsapurāṇam*, VIII, 11.  
*ihate*, VIII, 9.  
*upastaraṇāni*, VIII, 9.  
*ṛtvijam*, VIII, 3.  
*kalāḥ*, VII, 20.  
*kāmacārī*, VII, 22 (bis: ? *kāmacārī* in first  
 case).  
*kāmarūpi*, VII, 22 (bis: ? *kāmarūpi* in first  
 case).  
*kāṣṭhāḥ*, VII, 20.  
*kīrtayati*, VII, 2.  
*kṛtyā*, VIII, 11.  
*kṣaṇāḥ*, VII, 20.  
*gatiḥ*, VII, 20.  
*gatiṣṭhitinivṛttibhiḥ*, VII, 20; °*iḥ*, *ibid.*  
*tviṣiḥ*, VIII, 10.  
*daṇḍāḥ*, VIII, 9.  
*āirghaḥ*, VII, 2.

*dhvaṃsayāḥ*, VII, 20.  
*nimeṣāḥ*, VII, 20.  
*nivṛttiḥ*, VII, 20, and see *gati*°.  
*patiḥ*, VII, 15.  
*parīṣatsu*, VIII, 9.  
*brahmī* (?), VIII, 11.  
*bhavat*, VII, 20.  
*bhaviṣyat*, VII, 20.  
*bhūtam*, VII, 20.  
*mithaḥ* (*samhitāni*), VII, 21.  
*mukhanāsike*, VIII, 9.  
*yakāravakārau* (acc.), VII, 11.  
 ✓*rabh*: *ārabdhā*, VIII, 10.  
*vaktrā*, VIII, 10.  
*vacāḥ*, VIII, 10.  
*vatsaḥ*, VII, 18.  
*vādayitṛā*, VIII, 10.  
*vikṛtiḥ*, VIII, 11.  
*vidyā*, VII, 7.  
*śraddhā*, VII, 17.  
*sabhakṣatām*, VIII, 1, &c.  
*sarvabhūtasamhitā*, VII, 21.  
*sādhayati*, VIII, 10.  
*siddhiḥ*, VIII, 2.  
*sthiṭiḥ*, VII, 20, and see *gati*°.

WORDS IN ŚĀṆKHĀYANA ĀRAṆYAKA IX, X, XI, XII, 8, AND XIII, WHICH ARE NOT FOUND IN AITAREYA ĀRAṆYAKA I-III. (ĀRAṆYAKA IX IS MAINLY A REPETITION OF CHĀNDOGYA UPANIṢAD.)

*aṅgārāḥ*, X, 8; (acc.) X, 8.

✓*añc*: *udañcat*, XI, 1; *ācya*, XI, 4; XII, 8; cf. IX, 8.

*adhyātmiḥ*, X, 1.

*anvāhāryapācanaḥ*, X, 1.

*aparām* (nom. neut.: not in Bṛhadāraṇyaka), XIII.

*amṛtakumbhāḥ*, II, 5, 19; XI, 1.

*ayas*, XI, 7.

*avāntaradiśaḥ* (nom.), X, 6; (acc.) X, 6; (instr.) X, 6.

✓*aś*: *prāśya*, IX, 8.

*aśma*, XI, 7.

*ājyāvāśaḥ* (acc.), XI, 5.

*ājyāhutiḥ* (acc.), XI, 4.

*ātichandasam*, XI, 7.

*āntaram*, X, 1.

*ārdre*, XI, 2.

✓*ās*: *āsīnaḥ*, XII, 8.

*Īśānaḥ*, XI, 2; (acc.) XI, 1.

*ucchiṣṭam* (acc.), XI, 8.

*uttaram* (adv.), XII, 8.

*uttarataḥ* (with abl.), XII, 8.

*udūham* (?), XII, 8, n. 8.

*uṣṭrārohaṇam*, XI, 4.

*r̥abhaśr̥hḡgramanīm* (?), XII, 8.

*ekām*, *ekayā*, XII, 8.

*eraṇḍamanīm*, XII, 8.

*kaṇṣe*, XII, 8.

*kāṇṣyam*, IX, 8.

*kālīm*, XI, 4.

*kumbhāḥ*, see *amṛta*°.

*kṛṣṇāyāḥ* (gen.), XI, 4.

*kausumbhāparidhānam*, XI, 4.

*kṣamam* (?) (with dat.), XI, 1.

*khadīrasāramanīm*, XII, 4.

*gārhapatyāḥ*, X, 8.

*gītāni* (acc.), XI, 4.

*ghṛtaudane*, XII, 8.

*catasṛbhīḥ*, XII, 8.

*caturthīm*, IX, 8.

*carmaṇi*, XII, 8.

*jānu* (acc.), XI, 4; XII, 8; cf. IX, 8.

*tādṛk*, X, 8.

*tilaudane*, XII, 8.

*tr̥ptīḥ*, XI, 7.

*tailābhyaḥgam*, XI, 4.

*trirātram* (adv.), XII, 8.

*daśiṇam* (acc. neut.), XI, 4; XII, 8.

*dantaḥ*, X, 8; *dantān*, XII, 8.

*daśavidham*, X, 8.

✓*dhā*: *upasamādhāya*, XI, 4; XII, 8.

*dhūmaḥ*, X, 8.

*nadyāḥ*, *nadīm*, X, 7.

*nākam*, XI, 7.

✓*nī*: *samavaninīya*, XI, 5; 6; 8.

*pañcabhīḥ*, XII, 8.

*payaḥ*, X, 8; (loc.) XI, 4.

*pariśuṣīram* (v. l. °su°), XI, 1.

*pāṇḍuradarāṇām*, XI, 4.

*pāpiṣṭham*, IX, 2.

*pīṇvāmānaḥ*, XI, 1.

*pratodāgramanīm*, XII, 8.

*pratyrcam*, XII, 8.

✓*badh*: *badhniyāt*, XII, 8.

*Bṛhaspatiḥ*, XI, 7.

*baitvam*, XII, 8.

*brāhmayajñaniṣṭhaḥ*, XIII, 1.

*bhasmanī*, X, 8.

*bhūtikāmaḥ*, XII, 8.

*maṇim*, XII, 8.

*madhusarpīṣoḥ*, XII, 8.

*manyuḥ*, X, 8; (loc.) XI, 1.

*mahāvārohasya* (°rāh° B), XII, 8.

*māṇsaudane*, XII, 8.



*māsāḥ*, *māsān*, X, 5.  
*muktakelām*, XI, 4.  
*muṇḍām*, XI, 4.  
*muḍgaudana*, XII, 8.  
*muśalāgramanīm*, XII, 8.  
*mūkāḥ*, IX, 3.  
*mūrdhani*, XI, 1.  
*randrāya*, XI, 1.  
*ramati*, XI, 3.

√*vas* : *vāsayitva*, XII, 8.  
 √*vah* : *apohya*, X, 8; *parisamukhya*, XI, 4;  
 XII, 8; *udoham* (?), XII, 8.  
*vedaśiraḥ* (acc. ?), XIII.  
*vaiyāghre*, XII, 8.  
*vairāgyasamskrte*, XIII, 1.  
*vairājam*, X, 8.  
*vairājam* (possibly °*jyam* with B to balance  
*svārājyam*), XI, 7.

*śradhā*, X, 8.  
*śaḍbhīḥ*, XII, 8.  
*śaḍaśbhīḥ*, XII, 8.  
*samit*, X, 8.  
*samudraḥ*, X, 7; (acc.) X, 7; (instr.) X, 7.  
*sarūpavatsāyāḥ* (gen.), XI, 4.  
*savatsām*, XI, 4.  
*Sāvitri* (?), XI, 7.  
*śisam*, XI, 7.  
*sukham* (acc. neut.), XI, 1.  
 √*stṛ* : *paristīrya*, XI, 4; XII, 8.  
*sthātipākāvaleṣam*, XI, 6.  
*sruveṇa*, XI, 4.  
*svārājyam*, XI, 7.  
 √*han* : *upaghātam*, XI, 5.  
*hrdayaśulāgramanīm*, XII, 8.

#### RARE WORDS IN ŚĀṆKHĀYANA ĀRAṆYAKA I, II.<sup>1</sup>

*akṣitīm*, II, 17.  
*anantaryam* (acc.), II, 11.  
*argaleṣike* (acc.), II, 16.  
*avatardah*, I, 8.  
*aṣṭiḥ* (acc.), I, 4.

*udubrahmiyasya*, II, 6.  
*upasarjanyām*, II, 17.

√*ṛdh* : *samardhayati*, I, 1, &c.

*kadvān*, I, 2.  
*kāmaḥ*, I, 7.

√*dih* : *digdhena* (masc.), I, 8.  
*devachandāṇsi*, I, 5.

√*dhr̥* : *pradharsayati*, *pradharsya*, I, 8.

*nakṣatriyām*, II, 16.

*parārdhyam*, I, 7.  
*paricarmanyam*, II, 1.  
*parimādaḥ*, I, 4; *parimādānjapān*, I, 4.

*bahirdhā*, II, 11.

*bhūtechadāṇi sāmā*, I, 4.

√*mad* : *parimattam*, I, 4.

*yātātīyam*, II, 16.

*Viśvakarmā*, II, 17.

√*vye* : *parivyayet*, II, 16.

*vraje*, II, 16.

*vratacaryayā*, I, 6.

*saṁśleṣaṇam*, II, 1; *saṁśleṣaṇi*, II, 1.

√*sidh* : *saṁsiddhena*, II, 11; *saṁsiddhābhīḥ*,  
 II, 10.

*Hairanyastūpīyam*, II, 16.

<sup>1</sup> For Āraṇyaka III-VI see Jacob's *Concordance*. Bühler, *Z. D. M. G.*, XLVIII, 63, compares with *paraśvān*, III, 2, Pāli *palasate* (Aśoka's Pillar Edict, V) and *palāsāda* (Jāt., V, 406, v. 267), 'rhinoceros.' For *vijarā nadī*, III, 3, cf. Hopkins, *J. A. O. S.*, XXVI, 56; on III, 1 sq., see Windisch, *Sächs. Ber.*, 1907, pp. 111 sq., *Buddha's Geburt*, pp. 63 sq., 71 sq.

## INDEX VI

### WORDS OCCURRING IN ĀRANYAKA V, AND IN THE PARALLEL PASSAGES OF ŚĀNKHĀYANA ĀRANYAKA I AND II, OTHER THAN THOSE OCCURRING IN QUOTATIONS.

(When the case or gender is ambiguous, it is nom. or masc. unless otherwise specified. The words noted as occurring in quotations might also be classed in Index IV, but are of a slightly different type.)

- Agnih*, 1, 1; (acc.) 1, 2; (gen.) 1, 2.  
*agnipucham*, 1, 2.  
*agniṣṭomaḥ*, 3, 2; Ś. II, 18.  
*agreṇa*, 1, 2.  
*aṅkam*, 3, 2.  
*√aj*: *aktvā*, 3, 3; *abhyajya*, 3, 3.  
*ajapayā*, 1, 4.  
*ataḥ*, 1, 1.  
*atigrāhyān*, 3, 2.  
*atra*, 1, 1; 2; 6.  
*atha*, 1, 4, &c.; *atha ha*, 2, 4.  
*athātoḥ*, 3, 3.  
*adikṣiṭaḥ*, 3, 2; (loc.) 1, 5.  
*adhaḥ*, 3, 3.  
*adhyāyena*, 3, 3.  
*adhvaryuḥ*, 3, 2; (acc.) 3, 2; (nom. plur.) 1, 5.  
*√an*: *vyavānya*, 3, 2; *abhyanya*, Ś. I, 6; *abhyavāniti*, Ś. I, 6.  
*anagnau*, 3, 3.  
*anantevāsine*, 3, 2.  
*ananvṛcam*, 1, 1.  
*anārāṇṣeṣu*, 3, 3.  
*anidaṇṇidā*, 3, 3.  
*anuparikramaṇam*, 1, 4.  
*anurūpaḥ*, 1, 1; 3, 2.  
*anuvaśatkaroti*, 3, 2; cf. *ananuvaśatkr̥te*, Ś. II, 17.  
*anuṣṭupkāram*, 3, 1.  
*anekena*, 1, 5.  
*antareṇa* (with acc.), 3, 1.  
*antarvedī* (in quot.), 1, 1.  
*annam*, 2, 5; (acc.) 1, 5.  
*anyam*, 3, 3; *anyat*, 3, 2; 3; (acc.) 3, 3;  
*anyasmāt* (neut.), 3, 3; *anyebhyaḥ* (dat. masc.), 1, 4; *anyāsu*, 1, 6; 2, 1.  
*apareṇa*, 1, 2.  
*aparāhnye*, 3, 3.  
*apartau*, 3, 3.  
*api*, 1, 4; 6; 3, 3; *punar api*, 1, 4.  
*aprakampī* (acc.), 1, 3.  
*abrahmacāriṇe*, 3, 3.  
*abhītaḥ* (with acc.), 1, 3.  
*abhyātman* (acc.), 1, 4.  
*aratnī* (acc.), 1, 4.  
*arīham*, 1, 4.  
*ardhatṛtīyāsu*, 1, 5.  
*ardhatrayodaśāsu*, 1, 5.  
*ardharcam*, 3, 1; (instr.) 3, 1; (abl.) 3, 1; (acc. plur.) 3, 1.  
*ardharcyam*, 2, 1; *ardharcyāḥ* (fem.), 2, 5 (reading doubtful).  
*alam*, 3, 3.  
*avabṛtham* (acc.), 3, 2.  
*avamāḥ* (acc. or perhaps nom.), 1, 1.  
*avasyakarmaṇe*, 1, 4 (v. l. °karmaṇe).  
*avasāne*, 1, 6.  
*avratyam* (acc. neut.?), 3, 3.  
*ālitayāḥ*, 2, 5; °iḥ, Ś. II, 7.  
*āvam*, 1, 6.  
*aṣṭau*, 2, 2.  
*aṣṭamīm*, 2, 2.  
*√as*: *syāt*, 1, 3; 5; 3, 3; *syātām*, 1, 3; *satīḥ*, 2, 2.  
*√as*: *paryasya*, 1, 3.  
*asaṃvatsare*, 3, 3.  
*asaṃvatsarasavāsine*, 3, 3.



*asabrahmacāriṇe*, 3, 3.  
*asamāmnūtāḥ* (fem.), 2, 2; (loc. plur.) 1, 6; 2, 1.  
*asmāt* (neut.), 3, 3; *asya*, 1, 4; 5; 2, 4; 3, 2;  
 3; *asmin* (masc.), 3, 3.  
*asvāhākūraiḥ*, 1, 1.  
 ✓ *āḥ* : *āha*, 3, 3.  
*ahaḥ*, 1, 4; 3, 2; (acc.) 3, 3; *ahani*, 1, 5; 3, 3.  
*aha*, 1, 6.  
*ahih*, 1, 4.  
  
*āgnādhrīye*, 1, 1.  
*ācāryāya*, 3, 3; *Ś.* I, 1.  
*ājyapraūge*, 1, 1.  
*ājyāhutiḥ* (acc.), 1, 1; *Ś.* I, 4.  
*ātānaḥ*, 1, 1; cf. *ekāhātānaḥ*, *Ś.* I, 4.  
*ātmānam*, 1, 2; (dat.) 3, 3; (abl.) 1, 6; (gen.)  
 3, 3; *ātman*, 1, 6.  
*ādityam*, 1, 1.  
*ānuṣṭubham* (nom.), 3, 1.  
*ānubhadriyam*, 3, 2.  
 ✓ *āp* : *samāpayet*, 3, 3; *anabhiprāptāya*, 3, 3.  
*ābhiplāvikaḥ*, 3, 2.  
*āyatanam* (acc.), 3, 2.  
*āyusaḥ* (abl.), 3, 1.  
*ārdrayā*, 1, 4.  
*āvapanam*, 3, 1.  
 ✓ *ās* : *uparyāsinaḥ*, 3, 3; (dat.) 3, 3; *āsinaḥ*,  
 3, 2.  
*āsandīm*, 1, 4.  
*āsyasamīlitam* (acc.), 1, 3.  
*āhavam*, 1, 3; (nom. plur.) 1, 5.  
  
 ✓ *i* : *antariyāt*, 3, 3; *adhīyāt*, *adhīyāta*, 3, 3;  
*anadhīyan*, 3, 3; *ativitāḥ*, 3, 3; *itam*, 1, 2; 3;  
*adhītāt* (neut.), 3, 3; *upa - apīte* (loc. neut.),  
 3, 3; *pratyetya*, 1, 2.  
*itarah*, 1, 4; *itaram* (acc. masc.), 1, 4; *itare*  
 (acc. du. neut.), 1, 6.  
*itī*, 1, 1, &c.; enum., 1, 3.  
*idam*, 3, 2; (acc.) 3, 2.  
*idaṇvid*, 3, 3.  
*imam* (in quot.), 1, 1; *imāḥ* (acc.), 1, 6.  
*iva*, 3, 2 (= *eva* in sense).  
*iṣumātraḥ*, 1, 3.  
*iho eva*, *ihaiva*, 1, 6.  
  
*ījyāyai*, 3, 2.  
*īlūdam* (acc.), 3, 2.  
 ✓ *īṣ* : *saṁpreṣitāḥ*, 3, 2.

*ukthe*, 3, 1.  
*ukthadohaḥ*, 3, 1.  
*ukthapātram* (acc.), 3, 2.  
*ukthavīryasya*, 3, 1; *ukthavīryāṇi*, 1, 5; *uk-*  
*thavīryam* (acc.), *Ś.* II, 16.  
*ukthasaṁpadam*, 3, 1.  
*uttarah*, 2, 2; (acc. masc.) 1, 2; 3, 1; (acc.  
 fem.) 2, 3; 4; (instr. masc.) 3, 1; (gen.  
 neut.) 2, 5; 3, 1; *uttarasyaḥ* (gen.), 3, 1;  
*uttare* (loc.), 1, 1.  
*uttareṇa* (with acc.), 1, 3.  
*uttarataḥ*, 1, 1; 3, 4.  
*uttamāṇi*, 1, 1; 2, 1; 5; 3, 1; *uttamāt* (neut.),  
 3, 2; *uttamāyāḥ* (abl.), 3, 1; *uttame* (acc.  
 du. fem.), 2, 5; *uttamāḥ* (acc.), 1, 1; 2,  
 3; 5.  
*udakumbham* (in quot.), 1, 1.  
*udagagraḥ*, 1, 3.  
*udagdāre*, 1, 1.  
*udānīmukhaḥ*, 1, 2.  
*udaram*, 2, 5.  
*ulāhītatarah*, 1, 3.  
*udgātā*, 1, 4.  
*unmardanam*, 3, 3.  
*upāṁsu*, 1, 1.  
*upottamāyā*, 3, 1; *upottamāyāḥ* (abl.), 1, 1.  
*ubhau* (acc.), 1, 4; *ubhābhyām*, 1, 4.  
*ubhayataḥ*, 1, 3.  
*ubhayaśaṁsthānaviparyayaḥ* (?), 2, 1.  
*uṣṇihāḥ*, 2, 5.  
  
*ūrū*, 3, 1; *ūrūn*, 1, 1 (in quot.).  
*ūrdhvam*, 1, 3; 4; (with abl.) 3, 1.  
*ūrdhvaḥ*, 1, 3.  
*ūrdhvajñuḥ*, 3, 3.  
  
 ✓ *r̥ṣ* : *par̥yṣanti*, 1, 3.  
*r̥ṣabhaḥ*, 1, 1; *Ś.* I, 1.  
  
*ekaḥ*, 3, 3; *ekā*, 2, 2; 3; *ekayā*, 2, 4; *ekasmin*,  
 3, 3; *eke*, 1, 6.  
*ekacatvāriṁśatam*, 3, 2.  
*ekapadā*, 2, 5; 3, 1.  
*ekaviṁśatau*, 1, 1.  
*ekāśatam*, 2, 2.  
*ekādāśa*, 2, 4.  
*ekaikam* (acc.), 1, 6.  
*etatprabhṛtīnām*, 2, 3.  
*etadantah*, 2, 5.  
*etadādīḥ*, 1, 6; *etadādī*, 1, 6.

*enam*, 1, 4.

*eva*, 1, 2; 4; 3, 2.

*evam*, 1, 4; 6; 3, 3.

*ēṣa*, 1, 3; *etad*, 1, 3; 2, 1; 3, 1; *etam*, 2, 4;

3, 2; 3; *etām*, 1, 6; 2, 3; *etad*, 3, 2; 3;

*etayā*, 1, 6; *etasya* (neut.), 2, 4; 3, 1; 2; 3;

*etasmīn* (neut.), 1, 5; *ete* (acc. neut.), 1, 6;

*etayoḥ* (gen. neut.), 1, 6; *etāḥ* (nom. fem.),

2, 5; *etān*, 1, 6; *etāni* (acc.), 1, 6; *etaiḥ*, 1, 1.

*aikāhikau*, 3, 2.

*aindrīnām*, 3, 1.

*audumbaram* (acc. masc.), 1, 4; (instr.) 1, 1;

*audumbarāṇi*, 1, 3.

*audumbarīm*, *audumbarīyā*, 1, 4.

*auṣṇihī*, 2, 4; Ś. II, 7.

*kasmai cid* (*yadī*), 1, 4.

*kakṣodake*, 3, 3.

*kathām*, 3, 3.

*kartuḥ*, 1, 3.

*kāṇḍavīpāḥ* (acc.), 1, 5.

*kāmam* (adv.), 3, 3.

*kāmebhyaḥ* (dat.), 1, 4.

*kāṣṭhāni*, 1, 3.

*kīrtayīṣet*, 3, 3 (prob. *cikīrtayīṣet*).

*kuṣṭhāsu*, 1, 3.

*kūrcān*, 1, 4.

✓ *kr* : *karoti*, 2, 2; *kuryāt*, 1, 4; *upākṛte* (loc.),

1, 2; *kṛtvā*, 33; °*kāram*, 1, 6; 3, 1; *kūra-*

*yanti*, 1, 5; *kūrayitvā*, 3, 3.

✓ *kṛp* : *upakṛptaḥ*, 1, 2; *kṛptachandasah*, Ś. I, 2.

✓ *kram* : *atikramya*, 1, 2; *anukramya*, 1, 4;

*ākramya*, 3, 3; *niṣkramya*, 1, 1; 2.

✓ *kṣal* : *prakṣālya*, 1, 3.

✓ *khan* : *nikhāya*, 1, 3.

*khalu*, 1, 6.

✓ *khyā* : *vyākhyāsyāmaḥ*, 3, 3; *pratikhya*,

3, 2.

*gatāsum*, 3, 3.

✓ *gam* : *upagamyā*, 3, 3; *jigamīṣet*, 1, 4; Ś. II, 11.

*gūyatram*, 2, 1.

*gūyatrī*, 2, 3; Ś. II, 7; *gūyatrayaḥ*, 2, 4.

*gūyatrikāram*, 3, 1.

✓ *gr* : *āgūrya*, 3, 2.

✓ *grh* : *udgrhñīyāt*, 1, 4; *parigrhya*, 1, 4.

*goḥ*, 1, 6.

*grīvāḥ*, 2, 1.

*ca*, 1, 1; 2; 3; 4; 5; 6; 3, 2; *caiva*, 1, 1;

*na - cana*, 3, 3; *ca - ca*, 2, 4; 4.

*catasrah*, 1, 1; (acc.) 2, 2; 3, 1.

*caturāṅghulena*, 1, 3.

*caturuttarāṇi* (neut.), 1, 4; *caturuttarāṇi*, Ś.

II, 6.

*caturgrhitam* (acc.), 1, 1.

*caturvīṃśat*, 1, 1.

*camasān*, 3, 2.

✓ *car* : *caritvā*, 1, 4.

*carma* (acc.), 1, 5.

*cet*, 1, 6; 2, 1; 3, 2.

*cyaveta*, 3, 2.

*chandāmsi* (acc.), 1, 4; *chandobhīḥ*, 1, 4.

*chandogebhyaḥ* (dat.), 1, 4.

*chāyāsu*, 3, 3.

*chidrāṇi*, 1, 3.

*chuvukena*, 1, 4.

✓ *jap* : *japati*, 1, 4; 5; Ś. I, 4, &c.; *japema*, 3, 2.

*jāgaritah*, 1, 1.

✓ *jīva* : *jijīviṣet*, 3, 1; *jijīva*, Ś. II, 17.

✓ *takṣ* : *taṣṭāni*, 1, 3.

*tatra*, 1, 6; 3, 3.

✓ *tan* : *upasaṃtatya*, 3, 1.

*tam*, 1, 4; *tat* (nom.), 3, 3; (acc.) 3, 3; *tena*

(masc.), 1, 2; *tasya* (neut.), 3, 1; 2; *tasmin*

(masc.), 1, 1; *te* (acc. du. neut.), 3, 1; *tāḥ*

(acc.), 1, 6; *tāsām*, 2, 3.

*tāvatyah*, 1, 3; *tāvatiḥ*, 1, 6; 3, 2; *tāvanti*

(acc.), 3, 1.

*tīryaḥ*, 1, 3; *tīryaṅcam*, 1, 4.

*tisrah*, 1, 6; 2, 2; 3, 5; (acc.) 1, 1; 2, 3; 5;

*tisṛu*, 1, 5; *trayaḥ*, 1, 5; 2, 5; *trīṇi*, 1, 1;

3; 2, 2; 5.

*tīrthena*, 1, 3.

*tu*, 1, 4; 3, 3; *na tu*, 1, 5.

*trcāḥ*, 2, 5; *trcākṛptaḥ*, Ś. I, 2.

*trcālītiḥ*, 2, 3; 4; 5; (nom. plur.) 2, 5; (abl.) 3, 3.

*trītiye*, 'third period of life,' 3, 3.

*trītyavarjam*, 1, 6.

*trītyasavanam*, 3, 2.

*trayam*, 2, 1.

*trīṃśat* (*ekayā na*), 2, 4.

*triguṇe* (nom. du. fem.), 1, 3.



*trirātram*, 3, 3.  
*triṣṭubhagatīnām*, 3, 1.  
*triṣ*, 1, 3; 4; 6.  
*traidham*, 1, 2.

*dakṣiṇaḥ*, 2, 2; (acc. masc.) 1, 2; 4; Ś. I, 7;  
 (acc. neut.) 1, 4; (instr. fem.) 1, 3; (loc.) 1, 1;  
 (acc. plur. masc. in quot.) 1, 1; (instr. in quot.)  
 1, 1.

*dakṣiṇataḥ*, 1, 2; 3.  
*dakṣiṇottare* (acc.), 1, 3; cf. *dakṣiṇottariṇam*  
*upasthaṇi kṛtvā*, Ś. I, 7.

*daśa*, 1, 1; *daśabhiḥ*, 1, 4.

*daśataḥ*, 3, 1.

*daśatīnām*, 3, 1.

✓ *dah*: *saṇḍaheyaḥ*, 3, 2.

✓ *dā*: *dadyūt*, 1, 5.

✓ *dā*: *avadāya*, 1, 1.

*dārḥye* (nom. du. fem.), 1, 3.

✓ *dāḥ*: *samuddiṣet*, 3, 3; *ātiṣya*, 1, 4.

*dīkṣite* (loc.), 1, 5.

✓ *dṛś*: *dṛṣṭvā*, 3, 2.

*deśam*, 3, 3; (loc.) 3, 3.

*ḍve*, 1, 3; *ḍvayoḥ* (gen.), 1, 4.

*ḍvayī*, 3, 3.

*ḍvārā*, 1, 3.

*dvipadā*, 2, 5; (acc.) 2, 4; (loc. plur.) 2, 2;  
 (gen. plur.) Ś. II, 1.

*dvīṣatam*, 2, 2.

✓ *dhā*: *upadadhāti*, 1, 6; *atyādhadhāti*, 1, 3;  
*paridadhāti*, 3, 1; *pratyaavadadhāti*, 1, 6; 2,  
 3; 4; *dhatte*, 1, 6; *parihite* (loc. neut.), 3,  
 1; *upanidhāya*, 1, 1; Ś. I, 6.

*dhāyyā*, 2, 2.

*dhīṣṇyam* (acc. in quot.), 1, 1; (abl.) 1, 3;  
 (gen.) 1, 4; (acc. plur.) 1, 3.

*na* (no verb), 1, 5; 3, 3; (with opt.) 1, 4; 5;  
 3, 2; (with fut. and *iti* after *yathā*) 3, 2; *ekayā*  
*na triṣṭat*, 2, 4; *na vai*, 3, 1; *na - cana*,  
 V, 3, 3 (ex. conj.).

*nadavanti* (acc.), 1, 6.

*nova*, 2, 2; 4.

✓ *nah*: *apināhya*, 3, 3.

*nānāpāṇibhyām* (instr.), 1, 4.

*nāpītena*, 3, 3.

*nāma*, 3, 3; (acc.) 3, 3.

*nītyayā*, 3, 2.

*nīdarīanāya*, 1, 6.

*nimustikaḥ*, 1, 3.

*nividaḥ*, 1, 5. Cf. *Ind. Stud.*, XVIII, 96, n. 1.  
*nividdhānam*, 3, 1; (abl.) 3, 2.

*niṣkevalyāya*, 1, 5.

*niṣṭarkyam* (acc. masc.), 1, 3.

✓ *nī*: *pranayati*, 1, 4; *ninayātha* (in quot.), 1, 2.

*no eva*, 3, 3.

*pakṣaḥ*, 2, 2; (acc.) 1, 2; (dat. du.) 1, 6.

*pakṣapade*, 1, 6.

*pakṣtiḥ*, 2, 2.

*pañca*, 2, 2.

*pañcadaśa*, 2, 2; 4.

*pañcadaśastomaḥ*, 2, 2.

*pañcaviṃśasya*, 1, 5.

*pañcaviṃśatim*, 1, 1.

*pañcaviṃśāme* (nom. du.), 1, 3.

*patanāya*, 1, 6.

*patnyaḥ*, 1, 5.

✓ *pad*: *pratipadyate*, 1, 5; *abhipadyeta*, 1, 4;  
*saṃpannam* (neut.), 3, 2; *prapādyā*, 1, 3.

*pade* (acc.), 1, 6.

*padamātre*, 1, 3.

*parasmai*, 3, 3; Ś. I, 1.

*paridhāniyāyāḥ*, 1, 5.

*paścāt*, 1, 2; (with gen.) 4.

*paścārdhe*, 1, 4.

*pāṇi* (acc.), 1, 4; *pāṇibhiḥ* (in quot.), 1, 1.

*pādām* (acc.), 1, 4; *pādām*, 1, 6; 3, 1; *pādaiḥ*,  
 1, 6; 3, 1; *pādeṣu*, 1, 6.

*pālam*, 1, 4.

*pālāṇi*, 1, 3.

*pucham*, 1, 2; 2, 2; (gen.) 1, 2.

*punar api*, 1, 4.

*purastād*, 1, 1; 3; (with gen.) Ś. II, 1.

*purāṇe*, 3, 3.

*puruṣākṣarāṇi* (acc.), 1, 6.

*pūrṇakumbhāḥ* (acc. or perhaps nom. as part  
 of quot.), 1, 1.

*pūrvam* (acc. masc.), 1, 4; 3, 1; *pūrvasmāt*  
 (masc.), 3, 1; *pūrvayā*, 1, 3.

*pūrvam* (adv.), 1, 1.

*pūrvāhṇe*, 3, 3.

*prakṛtyā*, 3, 1.

*pragūtham*, 2, 2; *pragūthau*, 2, 2.

*pratigarah*, 1, 6.

*pratipadanucarau*, 3, 2.

*pratihāram*, 1, 5.

*pratyāñcam*, 3, 2.

*pratyāñmukhaḥ*, 1, 2.

- prathamam*, 1, 5; *prathamāyāḥ* (gen.), 3, 1; *prathamāyām*, 1, 6.  
*pradakṣiṇam* (adv.) (in quot.), 1, 1; 2; 3.  
*prabhūtam* (acc. neut.), 1, 5.  
*prastotāram*, 1, 5.  
*prān*, 1, 2; 4; 3; 2; *prāncam*, 1, 4.  
*prānmukhaḥ*, 1, 2; 3.  
*prāk* (with abl.), 1, 1; 6; 3, 1; 3.  
*prāgagrābhyām* (instr.), 1, 3.  
*prāgudagdvāre*, 1, 1.  
*prāgdvāre*, 1, 1.  
*prātaḥsavane*, 1, 1; (nom.) Ś. I, 2.  
*priyaḥ*, 1, 5.  
*preṅkhaḥ*, 1, 3; (acc.) 1, 4; 3, 2; Ś. II, 17; (abl.) 3, 2; (gen.) 1, 3; 3, 2; (loc.) 1, 4.  
*preśyāḥ* (acc.), 1, 1.  
*praiṣaḥ*, 3, 3.  
*phalakam* (acc.), 1, 4; (loc.) 1, 4; (nom. plur.) 1, 3; cf. *preṅkhaḥphalakam* (acc.), Ś. I, 6; II, 17.  
*√badh*: *badhnāti*, 1, 3; *avabadhnanti*, 3, 2.  
*bahu* (acc.), 3, 3.  
*bārhataḥ*, 2, 2; Ś. II, 5; *bārhati*, 2, 4; Ś. II, 7.  
*brhataḥ*, 2, 2.  
*brhatiḥ* (acc.), 2, 2.  
*brhatikāram*, 1, 6.  
*brhatīsaṃpannānām*, 3, 1.  
*brahmā*, 1, 4 (= priest).  
*brahma* (neut. nom.), 3, 3.  
*brahmacāripuṇṣṭicalyoh* (gen.), 1, 5.  
*√bru*: *brūyāt*, 1, 4; 5; *prabrūyāt*, 3, 2; *prabrūtāt*, 1, 5.  
*brāhmaṇācchaṃsī*, 1, 1.  
*√bhakṣ*: *bhakṣayati*, 3, 2; *bhakṣayisyantam*, 3, 2.  
*bhakṣam*, 3, 2.  
*bhādrām*, 2, 2.  
*√bhīd*: *saṃbhīnnāsu*, 3, 2.  
*√bhuj*: *bhujjīta*, 3, 3; *bhuktvā*, 3, 2.  
*√bhū*: *bhavati*, 1, 1; 3; 3, 2; 3; *bhavanti*, 1, 3; *bhūtasya* (neut.), 3, 3; *bhūtānām*, 1, 5.  
*bhūmidundubhim*, 1, 5.  
*bhūyaḥ*, 3, 3; *bhūyasīṣu*, 3, 2.  
*√mad*: *pramādyet*, 3, 3.  
*madhyandine*, 1, 1.  
*madhyamam* (acc. neut.), 1, 4.  
*marutvatīyam*, 1, 1; (gen.) 1, 1; (loc.) 1, 1.  
*mahataḥ* (gen. neut.), 3, 3.  
*mahāvratam*, 3, 2; (acc.) 3, 3; (gen.) 1, 1.  
*māṇsam*, 3, 2.  
*mādhyandine*, 1, 1.  
*mārjālīyaḥ*, 1, 1; (loc.) 1, 1; 2.  
*mīṣrāṇi*, 1, 3; *mīṣrāsu*, 2, 1.  
*muṣṭimātreṇa*, 1, 3.  
*mūladēśena*, 1, 4.  
*meghe*, 3, 3.  
*maithunam*, 1, 5.  
*yah*, 1, 5; 3, 3; *yat*, 3, 3.  
*√yaj*: *yajati*, 3, 2.  
*yajamānalabdah*, 1, 5.  
*yajñāyajñīyam*, 3, 2.  
*yatra*, 3, 3.  
*yathā* (with verb), 1, 2; 3; (with noun) *yathā vinām*, 1, 4; *yathāhiḥ*, 1, 4; *yathā na* (with fut.) *iti*, 3, 2.  
*yathākūlam*, 3, 2.  
*yathāsthānam*, 1, 6.  
*yadū*, 1, 4.  
*yadi*, 3, 2; *yadi kasmai cid*, 1, 4; *yady api*, 3, 3.  
*√yam*: *prayachati*, 1, 4.  
*yāvatiḥ* (acc.), 3, 1.  
*yūpam*, 1, 2.  
*rajjū*, 1, 3; *rajjubhyām*, 1, 3.  
*rāthantarasya*, 2, 2.  
*rājanena*, 1, 6.  
*rājanastotriyeṇa*, 1, 5.  
*rājaputreṇa*, 1, 5.  
*rāthantarāḥ*, 2, 2; Ś. II, 5; *rāthantaram*, 2, 2.  
*√ruh*: *avarohati*, 3, 2; *upāvarohati*, Ś. II, 17; *samārohati*, 1, 4; *samārohanti*, 1, 4; *ārohet* (or *rohet*), 1, 4; *avarukhya*, 1, 4.  
*√labh*: *upālambhaniyāḥ*, 1, 1; *°lambhyau*, Ś. I, 1.  
*√likh*: *ullikhāmi*, 1, 4; *ullikhati*, 1, 4; *avallikhya*, 3, 3; *ullikhya*, 3, 3.  
*√lip*: *anulīpya*, 3, 3.  
*lohitam* (acc.), 3, 2.  
*√vac*: *uktam*, 3, 2; *prokte* (loc. abs.), 1, 5; *vācayati*, 3, 2; *pravācayata*, 1, 5.  
*vatse*, 'in youth', 3, 3.  
*√vad*: *vadatyaḥ*, 1, 1.  
*√vap*: *āvapeta*, 1, 1; *āvaperan*, 3, 1.



*varṇakena*, 3, 3.  
*varṣe*, 3, 3; *varṣāṇi* (acc.), 3, 1.  
*vāśaḥ*, 2, 5.  
*vaśaṭkaroti* (anu), 3, 2.  
*vaśaṭkārānumantraṇam*, 3, 2.  
*✓vāḥ*: *adhyaḥ*, 3, 3; *°aḥ*, Ś. II, 3; *upohate*, 1, 4.  
*vā*, 1, 3; 4; 5; 2, 1; 3, 3; — *vā*, 1, 3; *vā*:  
*vā*, 3, 3; *vā*: *vā*: *vā*, 1, 1; *na vā*, 3, 1.  
*✓vā*: *udvayati*, 1, 3; *samulāḥ*, 1, 3.  
*vāṇam* (acc.), 1, 4.  
*Vāḥkilyānām*, 2, 4.  
*viṃśateḥ*, 3, 4.  
*vijavah*, 2, 1.  
*✓vid*: *veda*, 3, 3.  
*viḥhūmah*, 1, 3; *viḥhūmau* (acc.), 1, 4.  
*viśvajitāḥ* (abl.), 1, 1.  
*viśamsthitasamācareṇa*, 1, 1.  
*viḥaraṇaprabhṛti*, 1, 1.  
*viṇām*, 1, 4.  
*vivadhāḥ*, 1, 3; (acc.) 1, 3; (loc.) 1, 3.  
*✓vṛ*: *parivṛte* (loc.), 1, 1.  
*✓vṛt*: *parivṛtte* (loc. masc.); *āvṛtṭya*, 1, 1.  
*vṛtā* (instr.), 1, 4 (? *āvṛtā*).  
*vṛṣiḥ*, 3, 2; *vṛṣiḥhiḥ*, 1, 3; better *bṛṣiḥ*.  
*vai*, 3, 3.  
*vaidikena* (masc.), 3, 3.  
*vaiḥvadevāt*, 3, 2; (gen.) 3, 2.  
*✓vyadh*: *vyādhayanti*, 1, 5.  
*✓vraj*: *parivrajātha* (in quot.), 1, 1; *pari-  
vrajya*, 1, 3; *vrajan*, *vrajate*, 3, 2.  
*✓śamṣ*: *śamṣet*, 1, 6; 3, 3; *śastam*, 3, 3;  
*śastvā*, 3, 1.  
*śamṣitūram*, 3, 2.  
*śatatantum*, 1, 4.  
*śabdān*, 1, 5.  
*✓śam*: *śamayamānaḥ*, 3, 3.  
*śastram*, 1, 6.  
*śastrādīḥ*, 1, 5.  
*śākhayā*, 1, 4; *śākhābhiḥ*, 1, 3.  
*✓śās*: *śaṁśāsti*, 1, 1; 5.  
*✓śi*: *śayānaḥ*, 3, 3; (dat.) 3, 3.  
*✓śiḥ*: *pariśiḥṣāsu*, 1, 5.  
*śiraḥ*, 2, 1; (acc.) 1, 2.  
*śeṣaḥ*, 2, 3; 4; 3, 1; (acc.) 1, 2.  
*✓śram*: *śrāmyet*, 1, 4.  
*✓śri*: *anapāśritāḥ*, 3, 2.  
*śriyam*, 1, 6.  
*śat*, 1, 1 (perhaps nom.); 2, 2; 4; 5; 3, 1; 2.

*sa*, 1, 6.  
*saṁvatsarāt*, 3, 1.  
*saṁsthānaviparyayaḥ*, 2, 1.  
*sakṛdgadanāt*, 3, 3.  
*sakthi* (acc.), 1, 4.  
*✓saj*: *vyatiḥajati*, 1, 6; 3, 1; Ś. II, 4.  
*sadaḥ* (acc.), 1, 2.  
*sadhamādī*, 3, 3.  
*sanārāśamṣeṣu*, 3, 3.  
*sandhim*, 1, 4.  
*sapālasayā*, 1, 4.  
*sapta*, 2, 5; *saptabhiḥ*, 1, 4.  
*saptadāśastomah*, 2, 2.  
*saptamīm*, 2, 4.  
*sam* (with dative, w. r. for *śam*?), 1, 6.  
*samaḥ*, 1, 3.  
*samāmnātāsu*, 1, 6; 2, 1; *samāmnātasya*,  
 1, 6.  
*saṁpādā*, 2, 5.  
*saṁpātāḥ*, 2, 2.  
*saṁpravūdāḥ*, 1, 5.  
*sarvam* (nom. neut.), 2, 1; *sarvāḥ* (fem.), 2, 5;  
*sarvān*, 1, 3.  
*salilasya*, 3, 2; Ś. II, 18 (name of hymn).  
*savyam* (acc. neut.), 1, 4; *savyayā*, 1, 3.  
*savyadlakṣiṇe* (nom. du.), 1, 3.  
*śaśūkham* (acc. masc.), 1, 4.  
*saha*, 3, 3.  
*sāmnā*, 1, 5; 6.  
*sāmidhenyaḥ*, 1, 1.  
*sūkte* (du.), 2, 3; 4, 5; *sūktasya*, 2, 1; *sūk-  
tāni*, 2, 2; 4.  
*sūcyāḥ*, 1, 3; *sūcibhyām*, 1, 3.  
*sūdudohāḥ*, 1, 6; 2, 1; 2; 3; 4; 5; (abl.)  
 1, 6.  
*✓srj*: *upasṛjṣṭena*, 3, 2; cf. *upasṛjṣṭam*, Ś. II, 1.  
*✓srp*: *prasarpātī*, 1, 2; *srapsyan*, 1, 4; *sama-  
dhisṛpya*, Ś. I, 7.  
*✓stabh*: *avaṣṭabdhāḥ*, 3, 3; *pratistabdhāḥ*, 3, 3.  
*✓stu*: *stuvate*, 1, 5; Ś. I, 4; *stuvīran*, 1, 6;  
 2, 1; 3, 2; Ś. I, 4.  
*stotre*, 1, 1.  
*stotriyāḥ*, 1, 1; Ś. II, 1; (acc. pl.) Ś. II, 7.  
*stotriyānūrūpau*, 2, 2; 3, 2.  
*stomasya*, 1, 5.  
*striyam*, 3, 3.  
*✓sthā*: *upatiṣṭhate*, 1, 1; 2; Ś. I, 5; *saṁ-  
tiṣṭhate*, 3, 2; Ś. II, 18; *niṣṭhite* (loc. masc.),  
 1, 4; *saṁsthite* (loc. neut.), 1, 1; *tiṣṭhan*, 1,

1; 2; 3, 2; *tīṣṭhate*, 3, 2; *pratiṣṭhāpayati*,  
1, 4.

*sthāne*, 1, 6; 3, 1; 2; *sthānāni* (acc.), 1, 4;  
*sthānānām*, 1, 4.

*sthūṇe*, 1, 3; (acc. du.) 1, 3.

✓ *spṛś*: *upaspṛśet*, 1, 4.

*srajam*, 3, 3.

*sruveṇa*, 1, 1.

*svasya* (neut.), 1, 4.

*svādhyāyadharmam*, 3, 3.

*ha*: *atra ha*, 1, 6; *atha ha*, 2, 4; *haiva*, 3, 3;

*ha sma*, 3, 3.

✓ *han*: *āghnanti*, 1, 5; *upahanisyasi*, 3, 2.

✓ *hu*: *juhoti*, 1, 1.

✓ *hū*: *āhūya*, 1, 5.

✓ *hṛ*: *āharati*, 3, 2; *udharati*, 2, 3; 4; 5;

*viharati*, 1, 6; *atiharati*, 1, 4; *hareyuh*, 3,

2; *udāharisyāmaḥ*, 1, 6; *udhṛtya*, 1, 6; 2,

3; 4; *avihṛtaḥ*, 1, 6; *atiharan*, Ś. I, 7;

*upāvahṛtya*, Ś. I, 7.

*hotā*, 1, 1; 4; 3, 2.

*hotṛśastreṣu*, 3, 3.

*hotṛśadanam* (acc. v.l. °a), 1, 3.

*hotrāḥ*, 1, 1.

*hotrakāḥ*, 1, 4; (gen.) 3, 3.



## INDEX VII

### BEGINNINGS OF KHAṆḌAS OF ĀRANYAKAS.

*Agniṃ nava dīdhitibhir aranyor iti annādya-  
kāmaḥ*, I, 1, 2.

*atha Kauṇṭharavyaḥ*, III, 2, 2; Ś. VIII, 2.

*atha khalv āhur nirbhujavaktrāḥ*, III, 1, 5;  
Ś. VII, 11. Cf. *athato nirbhujapṛavādāḥ*, Ś.

VII, 10, and *atha vai vayanī brūmo nirbhū-  
javaktrāḥ*, Ś. VII, 12.

*atha khalv iyaṃ sarvasyai vāca upaniṣat*, III,  
2, 5.

*atha nirbhujapṛavādāḥ*, III, 1, 3. Cf. Ś.  
VII, 10.

*atha mahāvratam*, I, 1, 1.

*atha Śūkalasya*, III, 1, 2; Ś. VII, 3.

*atha sūdadohāḥ*, I, 4, 1.

*atha hūmā etat Kṛṣṇahārītāḥ*, III, 2, 6.

*athātāḥ saṃhitāyā upaniṣat*, III, 1, 1; Ś. VII, 2.

*athāto dakṣiṇaḥ pakṣaḥ*, I, 4, 2.

*athāto 'nuvṛyāhūrāḥ*, III, 1, 4; Ś. VII, 8.

*athāto retasaḥ syātīḥ*, II, 1, 3.

*aratnimātra upari bhūmeḥ*, I, 2, 4.

*asat su me jaritāḥ*, I, 2, 2.

*ātmā vā idam*, I, 4, 1.

*ā tvā rathaṃ yathotaye*, I, 2, 1; Ś. I, 3.

*āpā 3 ity āpa iti*, II, 1, 8.

*uktham uktham iti prajā vadanti*, II, 1, 2.

*upāhṛte stotre tṛaidham*, V, 1, 2.

*ūrū Indrāgnī*, V, 3, 1.

*eṣa imāṃ lokam abhyārcat*, II, 2, 1.

*eṣa u eva bibhradvajāḥ*, II, 2, 2.

*eṣa pañthā etat karma*, II, 1, 1.

*auṣṇihī tṛcāṣṭīḥ*, V, 2, 5.

*ko 'yam ātmeti vayam upāśmahe*, II, 6.

*gūyatraṃ pṛaūgaṃ kuryād ity āhuh*, I, 1, 3.

*gūyatrī tṛcāṣṭīḥ*, V, 2, 3.

*gūyatrīṃ tṛcāṣṭīṃ śaṃsati*, I, 4, 3.

*grīvā yasyedam*, V, 2, 1.

*catvāraḥ puruṣā iti Bādhrvāḥ*, III, 2, 3;  
(Vāts(y)āḥ) Ś. VIII, 3.

*tatṛaitē ślokaḥ*, II, 3, 8.

*tat Savitur vṛṇīmahe*, I, 5, 3; Ś. IX, 1; II, 18.

*tad āhuh kiṃ pṛekṣasya pṛekṣatvam*, I,  
2, 3.

*tad āhuh kailasyāhnaḥ pratipad iti*, I, 3, 2.

*tad iti pratipadyate*, I, 3, 3; 6.

*tad id āsa bhuvaneṣu jyeṣṭham iti pratipadyata  
etat vāva*, I, 3, 4.

*tad id āsa bhuvaneṣu jyeṣṭham iti pratipadyate  
yad vai*, I, 3, 7.

*tad id āsa bhuvaneṣu jyeṣṭhaṃ tāṃ su te kīrtim*,  
V, 1, 6.

*tad vā idam bṛhatīśahasraṃ saṃpannam tad  
yātāḥ*, II, 3, 7.

*tad vā idam bṛhatīśahasraṃ saṃpannam tad  
kīrtat*, II, 3, 5.

*tad vā idam bṛhatīśahasraṃ saṃpannam tasya  
yāni*, II, 2, 4.

*tad vā idam bṛhatīśahasraṃ saṃpannam tasya  
vā etasya*, II, 3, 6.

*taṃ devā prāṇayanta*, II, 2, 5.

*taṃ prapadābhyāṃ prāpadyata*, II, 1, 4.

*tasya ya ātmānam*, II, 3, 2.

*tasya vāk tantīḥ*, II, 2, 6.

*tasya vācā syātāu*, II, 2, 7.

*tā etā devatāḥ*, II, 4, 2.

*tā nadena viharatī puruṣo vai nadaḥ*, I, 3, 5.

*tā nadena viharatī prāṇo vai nadaḥ*, I, 3, 8.

*dugdhadhā asya vedā bhavanti*, III, 2, 4.

*nādikṣito mahāvratam laṁset*, V, 3, 3.

*niṣṭhite preṅkhe hotā vāyam audumbaram*, V, 1, 4.

*puruṣe ha vā ayam ādīto garbhah*, II, 5, 1.

*pra vo mahe mandamānāyāndhasah*, I, 5, 2.

*prastotāram saṁlāsti*, V, 1, 5.

*prāṇo vaṁśa iti Sthavirah Śākalyah*, III, 2, 1;  
Ś. VIII, 1.

*bārhaṭi tṛcāṣṭiḥ*, V, 2, 4.

*brhadbrāhmanantarayo rūpeṇa*, III, 1, 6; *brhadbra-*  
*hmanantarayo rūpeṇa*, Ś. VII, 19.

*mahāvratasya pañcaviṁśatīṁ sāmīdhenyah*, V,  
1, 1.

*mūrdhā lokānām asi*, V, 3, 2.

*yathetaṁ sadaḥ prasarpati*, V, 1, 3.

*yo ha vā ātmānam*, II, 3, 1.

*yo ha vai yajñe*, II, 3, 4.

*rāthantaro dakṣiṇaḥ pakṣaḥ*, V, 2, 2.

*vaṣaṁ laṁsati*, I, 5, 1; *atha vaṣaṁ laṁsati*,  
Ś. II, 11.

*vān me manasi*, II, 7, 1.

*vāyav ā yāhi*, I, 1, 4.

*vidā maghavan*, IV, 1, 1.

*Vilvāmītraṁ hy etad ahaḥ*, II, 2, 3.

*sa ikṣateme nu lokāḥ*, II, 4, 3.

*sa eṣa puruṣaḥ samudraḥ*, II, 3, 3.

*hiṁkāreṇaitad ahaḥ*, I, 3, 1.

## PRATĪKAS IN ŚĀNKHĀYANA ĀRANYAKA I, II, VII-XV.

*agnih pūrvarūpaṁ*, VII, 5.

*atha khalo iyaṁ daivī vīṇā*, VIII, 9.

*atha yadi mahaj jigamiṣet*, IX, 8.

*atha vāpnāḥ*, VIII, 4.

*atha ha smāsyā putrah*, VII, 13.

*athātā Tāṇḍavindasya vacaḥ*, VIII, 10.

*athāto 'dhyātmikam*, X, 1.

*athāto Vālīśikhāyanar vacaḥ*, VII, 21.

*athāto vairagyasaṁskṛte śarīre*, XIII.

*athāyaṁ puruṣaḥ*, XI, 3.

*athaitaṁ graivam*, II, 3.

*athaitad āvapanam*, II, 14.

*athaitad aindrōgnam*, II, 13.

*athaitaṁ triṣṭupchatam*, II, 11.

*athaitaṁ prahastakam*, II, 5.

*athaitaṁ ānuṣṭubham*, II, 15.

*athaitā alīṭiḥ*, II, 7.

*athaitā ājyāhutiḥ*, I, 4.

*athaitā dvīpadāḥ*, II, 12.

*athaitāni caturuttarāṇi*, II, 6.

*athaitāni śirṣānyāni*, II, 2.

*athaitām aksām*, II, 4.

*almā jōgataḥ*, XI, 7.

*almeva sthīro vasāni*, XI, 8.

*Indraḥ suteṣu someṣu*, II, 10.

*ud vāyaṁ tamasaḥ pari*, VIII, 5.

*ṛcāṇi mūrdhānam*, XIV.

*gatiḥ pūrvarūpaṁ*, VII, 20.

*Guṇākhyāc Chāṅkhāyanād asmābhīr adhītam*,  
XV.

*caḥsur hockakrāma*, VIII, 4.

*candramā ivādītyaḥ*, VIII, 7.

*citraṁ devānām*, VIII, 4.

*jōyā pūrvarūpaṁ*, VII, 16.

*tad etad saḥyechastūyām*, II, 17.

*tad vā audumbaram bhavati*, I, 7.

*tasya viśo viśo vo atithim*, I, 2.

*tāni vā etāni*, I, 5.

*prthivī pūrvarūpaṁ dyaur uttararūpaṁ kālāḥ*  
*saṁkhitā*, VII, 6.

*prthivī pūrvarūpaṁ dyaur uttararūpaṁ vāyuh*  
*saṁkhitā*, VII, 4.

*prthivyā rūpaṁ sparśāḥ*, VIII, 8.

*Prajāpatiḥ prajāḥ 1ṛṣṭvā*, VIII, 11.

*Prajāpatir vā imam puruṣam udañcat*, XI, 1.

*Prajāpatir vai saṁvatsaraḥ*, I, 1.



*prajā pūrvarūpam*, VII, 17.  
*prāṇo hoccakrāma*, IX, 7.

*mano hoccakrāma*, IX, 6.  
*mahān Indrah*, II, 8.  
*mātā pūrvarūpam*, VII, 15.

*yas tityāja sacividaṁ*, VIII, 6.  
*yā Indra bhujah*, II, 9.  
*yo ha vai jyeṣṭham ca*, IX, 1.

*vāk pūrvarūpam*, VII, 7.  
*vāk prāṇena saṁdhiyate*, VII, 14.  
*vāk saṁhiteti*, VII, 18.  
*vāñ mameti*, XI, 2.  
*vāci me 'gniḥ pratiṣṭhitaḥ svāhā*, XI, 5.  
*vāci me 'gniḥ pratiṣṭhito vāg hrdaye*, XI, 6.

*Vikvāmitro ha vā*, I, 6.

*śrotraṁ hoccakrāma*, IX, 5.

*saṁ vāk prāṇena*, I, 8.  
*sa tṛptaḥ prāṇaṁ tarpayati*, X, 3.  
*sa tṛptaḥ cakṣur tarpayati*, X, 4.  
*sa tṛptaḥ śrotraṁ tarpayati*, X, 6.  
*sa tṛptaḥ tad etad*, X, 8.  
*sa tṛpto manas tarpayati*, X, 5.  
*sa tṛpto retas tarpayati*, X, 7.  
*sa tṛpto vācam tarpayati*, X, 2.  
*sa yadī prāṇaṁ*, VII, 9.  
*sarvā vāg brahmeti*, VII, 22.  
*sā ha vāk*, VIII, 3.

*hastivarcasaṁ prathatām*, XII.  
*hiṁkāreṇa pratipadyate*, II, 1.

## VIII. INDEX TO INTRODUCTION AND NOTES

(Only the more important points are here referred to. References to the Introduction are to pages, to the Notes to the *Āraṇyakas*.)

- Abuse, employment of, in ritual, V, 1, 5, n. 17.
- Āgnimāruta Śastra, 28.
- Agniṣṭoma, 27, 33.
- Aitareya *Āraṇyaka*, MSS. of, I-II; commentaries on, 11-15; divisions of, 15-26; the Mahāvratā in, 26-39; the Upaniṣads of, 36-52; style and grammar, 51-74; relation of I and V, I, 2, 3, n. 5; date of III, III, 1, 1, n. 2.
- Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, 16 sq.; relation to Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, 30-33; style and grammar, 52, 66, 67.
- Ānandatīrtha, *ṭīkā* on Śaṅkara's *bhāṣya*, 11, 12; *bhāṣya*, 12.
- Āpastamba, knows Vedānta (?), 26.
- Āraṇyaka, meaning of, 15; III, 2, 6, n. 11.
- Āśvalāyana, 'author' of *Āraṇyaka* IV (?), 18, 19; Śrauta Sūtra quoted in *Āraṇyaka*, V, 3, 2, n. 14; relation to Śaunaka, *ibid*.
- Atharvaśiras Upaniṣad, known to Gautama, 26.
- Ātman, doctrine of, 40 sq.
- Bahvṛca Brāhmaṇa Upaniṣad, 38.
- Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad, relation to Aitareya *Āraṇyaka* II, III, 41, 44-46.
- Bṛhaddevatā, comparison of grammar of, with Aitareya *Āraṇyaka*, 72.
- Buddhism, relation to Aitareya *Āraṇyaka* II, III, 47-49.
- Chāndogya Upaniṣad, relation to Aitareya *Āraṇyaka* II, III, 41, 44-46.
- Chariots (*trīcakra*), I, 5, 3, n. 6.
- Deussen, discussion of theory of significance of Upaniṣads, 41 sq.
- Epic, date of, 50; I, 5, 2, n. 19.
- Fire, significance of use of, in ritual, V, 3, 1, n. 21.
- Fire altar, bird form of, 50 sq.; V, 1, 2, notes 2 and 5.
- Gautama, knows Atharvaśiras Upaniṣad, 26.
- Gavāmāyana, 17, 26.
- Gopatha Brāhmaṇa, date of, 25, 26; cf. *V.O.J.*, XVIII, 191 sq.
- Grammar (including Accidence, Syntax, and Vocabulary<sup>1</sup>).

### a. ENGLISH INDEX.

Cases, 58, 59, 68, 69; Accus. with  $\sqrt{\text{man}}$  alternating with nom., III, 1, 4, n. 3; with *brū* (two accus.), III, 1, 3, n. 6, *J. A. O. S.*, XXVIII, 378 sq., 398 sq.; Instr. with *antar* +  $\sqrt{\text{i}}$ , V, 3, 3, n. 21; with causative of  $\sqrt{\text{bhuj}}$ , III, 2, 4, n. 16; Dat. with *saṃ*, V, 1, 6, n. 3; Gen. predicative, I, 2, 2, n. 8; 3, 4, n. 10; II, 1, 4, n. 7; V, 3, 3, n. 2; partitive, with positive adj., I, 2, 3, n. 6; with verb (*yaja*), V, 3, 3, n. 3; absolutely, II, 3, 1, n. 6; defining, IV, 1, n. 3; V, 1, 6, n. 3; construction of whole and part, V, 1, 4, n. 5; nom., II, 3, 8, n. 11.

<sup>1</sup> What is given in the Introduction is not repeated in the Index.



- Compounds*, disjunctive adjectival Dvandva, I, 3, 3, n. 4.
- Concord*, attraction of predicate, V, 1, 1, n. 14; plural for dual (?), I, 1, 2, n. 7; V, 2, 2, n. 12; superlative agrees with subject, I, 2, 4, n. 6; masc. after masc. and neut., II, 1, 7, n. 1; neut. adj. pred., III, 1, 2, n. 4.
- Metrical lengthening of vowels*, II, 3, 8, n. 9; V, 2, 2, n. 12; in prose, III, 1, 2, n. 2.
- Moods*, 62-63; Conditional, III, 1, 4, n. 3; Imperative in *-āt*, V, 1, 5, n. 1; Optative of characteristic, II, 1, 2, n. 2; III, 2, 3, n. 3; indefinite, III, 2, 1, n. 1; V, 3, 3, n. 11; *J. R. A. S.*, 1909, p. 152; Injunctive, I, 5, 2, n. 8.
- Numerals*, use of acc. for nom., II, 2, 4, 3, 8; V, 1, 1, n. 2.
- Particles*, 65, 66; use of *iva*, I, 1, 2, n. 3; use of *no*, V, 3, 3, n. 12; use of *cana*, III, 1, 3, n. 6; use of *yat*, II, 1, 2, n. 10, 5, n. 5.
- Prepositions*, 59; *adhi* with acc., II, 3, 1, n. 6; *abhi* with acc., I, 4, 2, n. 7; *api* with acc., II, 2, 5, n. 8; *abhiṣat* with acc., V, 3, 1, n. 6; *uttareṇa* with acc., V, 3, 1, n. 6; *pari* with acc., I, 5, 1, n. 13; *pascāt* with gen., V, 1, 4, n. 15.
- Pronouns*, 58; *enam*, III, 1, 4, n. 3.
- Sandhi*, 55; irregular contraction of vowels, III, 1, 3, n. 2; 2, 4, n. 11; V, 3, 2, n. 9; of *om*, V, 1, 6, n. 4.
- Tenses*, 59-62; Perfect and Imperfect, I, 2, 2, n. 6; cf. *J. R. A. S.*, 1909, p. 150; Perfect, original force of, II, 1, 8, n. 8.
- Verbal Nouns and Participles*, 64, 65; infin. in *toḥ*, I, 1, 1, n. 4; gerund and partic. with *√man*, III, 1, 4, n. 3; 2, 4, n. 7; gerund (time of), I, 3, 1, n. 1.
- Voice*, use of middle as passive in perfect forms, III, 1, 1, n. 3; in present and imperfect, V, 2, 2, n. 14; in participle, I, 2, 2, n. 5.

## b. SANSKRIT INDEX.

- aṁṣaphalakam*, I, 2, 2, n. 11.
- akṣaḥ*, I, 2, 2, n. 11; V, 1, 6,
- atithi*, I, 1, 1, n. 6.

- annatamām*, I, 4, 1, n. 11.
- anyo 'nyam*, III, 1, 6, n. 7.
- abhivṛyāhārjan* (?), III, 1, 6, n. 5.
- āvīr edhi*, II, 7, n. 1.
- aikyā bhāvayan*, III, 2, 3, n. 4.
- kakṣasi*, I, 2, 2, n. 11.
- kakṣodake*, V, 3, 3, n. 17.
- cikīrtayīṣet*, V, 3, 3, n. 22.
- dutāḥ*, I, 4, 1, n. 9.
- nakulī* (?), III, 2, 5.
- nānā*, V, 1, 4, n. 11.
- parān*, II, 4, 3, n. 3. Cf. *Ind. Stud.*, XVII, 190.
- brahma*, III, 2, 3; 304, 367.
- rūthantarāya*, V, 1, 2, n. 3.
- līpi*, 23.
- vāṇa*, V, 1, 4, n. 3.
- vyāthiḥ*, V, 2, 1, n. 2.
- saṁbāḥṭatamāḥ*, I, 4, 1, n. 10.
- smīn* (?), III, 1, 2, n. 4.

- Jaiminiya Upaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, 46; V, 3, 2, n. 3.
- Kātyāyana, grammarian, date of, 22, 24.
- Kātyāyana, author of Sarvānukramaṇī, 21, 24.
- Kauṣītaki Brāhmaṇa, relation to Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, 31-33, 39.
- Kauṣītaki Upaniṣad, relation to Aitareya Āraṇyaka II, III, 4, n. 2; 46.
- Kṣatriyas, interest in philosophy, 50; III, 2, 6, n. 11; *J. R. A. S.*, 1908, pp. 868 sq.
- Magic rites, I, 2, 3, n. 1; V, 1, 5, notes 13, 14, 15, and 17.
- Mahaduktha, 28.
- Mahaitareya, Rṣi, 39.
- Mahaitareya Upaniṣad, 39.
- Mahānāmni, 18; IV, n. 1.
- Mahāvratā, 26-39; see my *Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka*, pp. 73-85.
- Mahidāsa Aitareya, 16, 17; I, 1, 1, n. 4; II, 3, 5, n. 4; III, 2, 6, n. 13.
- Mantras, style of, V, 1, 5, n. 7; V, 3, 2, n. 17.
- Manuscripts, description of, 2-8; value of, 8, 15.
- Marutvatiya Śāstra, 28.
- Metre, II, 3, 8, n. 1.
- Nirbhujā, 17.
- Niṣkevalya Śāstra, 28.

- Palaeography, confusion of *kṛ* and *khy*, 59; II, 4, 3, n. 11; of *s* (*ś*) and *sy* (*śy*), III, 1, 6, n. 5; omission of *m*, V, 2, 1, n. 5; of *visarga*, V, 3, 6, n. 2; V, 1, 1, n. 18; V, 2, 1, n. 6; interchange of *m* and *n* (*ñ*), II, 1, 5, n. 5; 3, 3, n. 2; III, 1, 4, n. 3; of *t* and *s*, II, 7, 1, n. 3; of *d* and *t*, III, 2, 6, n. 1; of *a* and *ā*, 3; of *a* and *i*, 3; of *a* and *e*, 3; of *r* and *ri*, 3; of *r* and *ṛ*, II, 3, 6, n. 2. Cf. also p. 305.
- Pāṇini, date of, 21-24.
- Parimāds, V, 1, 1, n. 23.
- Patañjali, date of, 21, 22.
- Prāṇa, 41 sq.; I, 3, 7, n. 6; 4, 1, n. 5; 5, 1, n. 6; 2, n. 13.
- Pratṛṇa, 17.
- Puriṣapadas, 18, IV, 1.
- Puruṣa, 40 sq.
- Religion in India, 47.
- Śākalya, date of, 73; III, 1, 2, n. 1.
- Śakvari, see Mahānāmī.
- Śaṅkara, *bhāṣya*, 13, 14.
- Śāṅkhāyana Āraṇyaka, relation to Aitareya Āraṇyaka I, 34-36; I, 1, 3, n. 2; to Aitareya Āraṇyaka II, III, 29, 30; grammar, 67, 68.
- Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra, XVII, XVIII, 70, 71.
- Śānti verses, I, 1, 1, crit. note; II, 7.
- Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa, relation to Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, 32; to Aitareya Āraṇyaka, 36-39.
- Śaunaka, author of Āraṇyaka V, 18, 19; relation to Āśvalāyana, V, 3, 2, n. 14.
- Sacrifice, only Brahmins can perform, V, 3, 3, n. 1.
- Samhitā Upaniṣad, 40.
- Samhitopaniṣad Brāhmaṇa, relation to Aitareya Āraṇyaka III, 52.
- Sāṃkhya philosophy, derivation of Buddhism from, 50.
- Sāyaṇa, *bhāṣya*, 13, 14; probably author of part of *bhāṣya* on Taittirīya Āraṇyaka III, 2, 4, n. 1; 2, 3, n. 5.
- Style of Āraṇyaka, 52-54.
- Svādhyāya, rules of, V, 3, 3.
- Taittirīya Āraṇyaka, relation to Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, 33.
- Taittirīya Samhitā VI, relation to Aitareya Brāhmaṇa, 33.
- Taittirīya Upaniṣad, relation to Aitareya Āraṇyaka II, III, 41, 46, 52.
- Tapas, 46; Ś. I, 6.
- Ubhayamantareṇa, 17.
- Uktha, 41.
- Ukthadoha, V, 3, 1, n. 9.
- Ukthasampad, V, 3, 1, n. 9.
- Ukthavīrya, V, 1, 5, n. 6.
- Upaniṣads, interpretation of, 40, 45; dates of, 49; meaning of name, III, 1, 1, n. 8.
- Vaiśvadeva Śastra, 28.
- Vernacular, use of, I, 3, 1, n. 5; 5, 2, n. 19.
- Viśvant, 27, 34.
- Viśveśvaratīrtha, super-commentary on Ānandatīrtha's *bhāṣya*, 12, 13.
- Yaska, date of, 24, 25.
- Yavanāni, 23, 24. See also Bühler, *S. B. E.*, II, lxi; *Indian Studies*, III, 26, n. 1.



OXFORD

PRINTED AT THE CLARENDON PRESS  
BY HORACE HART, M.A.  
PRINTER TO THE UNIVERSITY

Col-  
N<sup>o</sup> 51176



Central Archaeological Library,

NEW DELHI.

23677

Call No. S a 2 v 6 / Kei

Author—Keith Arthur  
Berrie'dale

Title—The Ailaveya  
Aranyaka. v: 9.

Borrower No.

Date of Issue

Date of Return

*"A book that is shut is but a block"*

CENTRAL ARCHAEOLOGICAL LIBRARY

GOVT. OF INDIA  
Department of Archaeology  
NEW DELHI.

Please help us to keep the book  
clean and moving.